18 S K

AN

HISTORICAL JOURNAL

of the TRANSACTIONS at

PORT JACKSON AND NORFOLK ISLAND,

with the Discoveries which have been made in

NEW SOUTH WALES AND IN THE SOUTHERN OCEAN

since the publication of

PHILLIP'S VOYAGE,

compiled from the Official Papers;

Including the JOURNALS of Governors PHILLIP and KING, and of Lieut. BALL;

AND THE

VOYAGES

From the first Sailing of the Sirius in 1787, to the Return of that

Ship's Company to England in 1792.

T. Stothard delin. From a Sketch by I. Hunter I. Hall direxit

By IOHN HUNTER, Esqr.

POST CAPTAIN IN HIS MAJESTY'S NAVY.

Illustrated with seventeen Maps, Charts, Views, & other embellishments,

Drawn on the Spot by

Captains Hunter, & Bradley, Lieutenant Dawes, & Governor King.

LONDON.

Printed for John Stockdale, Piccadilly.

Jos: Banks

A
LIST
OF
SUBSCRIBERS.

A.

ALTAMONT, Counteſs of

Andrews, James Pettit, Eſq;

Abercorn, Marquis of

Atkins, Edwin Martin, Eſq; Kingſton-Liſle

Addington, Right Hon. Henry, Speaker of the Houſe of Commons

Arden, Sir Richard Pepper, Maſter of the Rolls

Arden, John, Eſq; Aſhley-Hall, Cheſhire

Appleyard, Mr. 6 Copies

Arch, J. and A. 6 Copies

Anderſon, Mr. J. 2 Ditto

Archer, Mr. John, Dublin, 12 Ditto

Aſtley, Mrs. Duckenfield Lodge, Cheſhire

B.

Banks, Sir Joſeph, Bart.

Bolton, Duke of

Berkeley, Captain

Bath, Marquis of

Buckingham, Marquis of

Badcock, Colonel, Little Miſſenden-Abbey, Bucks.

Beſt, Richard, Eſq; Chatham

Buccleugh, Duke of

Bradſhaw, Mr.

Beaufort, Duke of

Bunbury, Sir Charles, Bart.

Barnard, Mr. jun.

Bredalbane, Earl of

Barker, Lieutenant-Colonel

Barwell, Richard, Eſq;

Bayham, Lord

Browne, Mr. William, Briſtol

Baldwin, Mr. 6 Copies

Becket, Mr. 6 Ditto

Bell, Mr. 6 Ditto

Brown, Mr. 3 Ditto

LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS.

C.

Curzon, Lady Charlotte
Cheſterfield, Earl of
Cherry, George, Eſq;
Chalmers, George, Eſq;
Charlſton Library
Charlſton, Senate of
Chicheſter, Sir John, Bart.
Chatham, Earl of
Caſtera, J. Paris
Clarke, George Hyde, Eſq; Hyde-Hall, Cheſhire
Cock, Thomas Theophilus, Eſq; Meſſing, Eſſex
Clarke, Edward, Eſq;
Cadell, Mr. 2 Copies
Clarke and Son, 2 Ditto
Crowder, Mr. 2 Ditto
Cole, Lieutenant George
Coxe, Daniel, Eſq;

D.

Dacre, Lord
Darby, W. T. Eſq;
Dartmouth, Earl of
Dorſet, Duke of
Dalrymple, Alexander, Eſq;
Daviſon, Alexander, Eſq;
Dimſdale, R. J. Eſq;
Delaval, Lord
Donowell, Mr. John, Architect
Dover, Lord
Deighton, Mr. 7 Copies
Donegal, Marquis of
De Lancy, Colonel
De la Pole, Sir John, Bart.
De Sauſſure, H. W. Eſq; Charlſton
Darton and Harvey, 6 Copies
Dilly, Mr. 12 Ditto
Dangerfield, Mr.

E

Elgin, Earl of
Ekins, Charles, Eſq;
Eardley, Lord
Eliot, Lord
Enys, John, Eſq;
Enderby, Samuel, Eſq;
Edwards, Mr. R. 8 Copies
Edwards, Mr. J. 6 Ditto
Egerton, T. and J. 6 Ditto
Evans, Mr. James, 6 Ditto
Edwards, John, Eſq;

F.

Forbes, Hon. John, Admiral of the Fleet
Fife, Earl of
Frederick, Sir John, Bart.
Fitzhenry, Thomas, Eſq;
Faulder, Mr. 30 Copies
Faden, Mr. W. 6 Ditto

G.

Glouceſter, His Royal Highneſs the Duke of
Grenville, Lord
Grote, George, Eſq;
Gardner, Alan, Eſq;
Green, Sir William, Bart.

LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS.

Græme, Charles, Eſq;
Grantham, Lady
Goldſmith, Mr. 4 Copies
Goulding, Mr.
Gray, Mr. 2 Copies

H.

Hillſborough, Earl of
Hobart, Major
Hardwicke, Earl of
Howe, Hon. Mrs.
Howe, Counteſs
Howe, Lady Mary
Hall, Rev. Mr.
Howard de Walden, Lord
Heathcote, Thomas, Eſq;
Home, Patrick, Eſq;
Hood, Lord
Hopetoun, Earl of
Hunter, John, Eſq;
Hawkeſbury, Lord
Hawke, Lord
Haydon and Son, Plymouth, 3 Copies
Hamilton, Mr. 3 Ditto
Hookham and Carpenter, 6 Ditto
Hodgſon, Mr. 2 Ditto
Hanmer, Job, Eſq; Holbrook-Hall, Suffolk

J.

Jackſon, Sir George, Bart.
Jones, Robert, Eſq; Fonmore-Caſtle, Glamorganſhire.
Jeffery, Mr. 3 Copies
Johnſon, Mr. 12 Ditto

K.

Kelly, Earl of
Kirby, Mr. 2 Copies

L.

Leeds, Duke of
Lenox, Lord George
Law, Thomas, Eſq;
Lucadou, James, Eſq;
Lettſom, Dr.
Leſlie, Mr. George, Edinburgh
Legg, Mr. Baſingſtoke
Loveden, Edward Loveden, Eſq;
Long, Charles, Eſq;
Long, Samuel, Eſq;
Law and Son, 12 Copies
Lowndes, Mr. 2 Ditto
Lackington, Mr. 2 Ditto
Longman, Mr. 6 Ditto

M

Montroſe, Duke of
Martindale, John, Eſq;
Moſſop, Rev. Mr. Academy, Brighton
Mac Leod, Colonel
Macdonald, Sir Archibald, Attorney-General
Mitchell, Captain
Meyrick, John, Eſq;
Macaulay, Mr. Alderman
Montagu, M. Eſq;
Madden, James, Eſq;
Mornington, Earl of
Miller, Lady
Madox, John, Eſq;
M'Queen, Mr. 2 Copies
Murray, Mr. 25 Ditto
Miller, Mr. 3 Ditto

N.

Newcaſtle, Duke of
Nepean, Evan, Eſq;
Nelthorpe, John, Eſq; Lincoln
Nicholls, Mr.
Northeſk, Earl of

O.

Otridge, Mr. 4 Copies
Ogilvie and Co. 2 Ditto

P.

Pitt, Right Hon. William
Peachy, John, Eſq;
Peachy, Sir James, Bart.
Petrie, William, Eſq;
Patterſon, John, Eſq; Norwich
Putland, William, Eſq;
Pye, Henry James, Eſq;
Pinckney, Charles, Eſq; Charleſton
Payne, Mr. 6 Copies
Phillips, Mr. 6 Ditto

R.

Rivers, Lord
Roſe, George, Eſq;
Rittſon, John, Eſq;
Raſtall, Rev. Mr. Newark
Robinſon, Thomas, Eſq;
Rolt, Colonel, Bagden-Lodge, Marlborough
Regiment, 73d Bengal
Rudge, Samuel, Eſq;
Robſon, Mr. 27 Copies
Robinſons, Meſſrs. G. G. J. and J. 50 Ditto
Rivingtons, Meſſrs. F. and C. 6 Ditto
Richardſon, Mr. 6 Copies
Redhead, Henry, Eſq;

S.

Saliſbury, Marquis of
Stafford, Marquis of
Sydney, Viſcount
St. John, Lord
Sanderſon, Sir James, Lord Mayor of the City of London
Smyth, John, Eſq;
Saliſbury, E. W. V. Eſq;
Spencer, Earl
Stanley, Colonel
Smith, Sir John, Bart.
Stephens, Phillip, Eſq;
Sotheron, William, Eſq;
Sturt, Charles, Eſq;
Scawen, James, Eſq;
Spence, George, Eſq;
Sylveſter, Mr. John
Stockdale, Mr. Jeremiah, Mill-Maker to his Majeſty
Scott, Rev. George
Sael, Mr. 2 Copies
Southern, Mr. 3 Ditto
Sewell, Mr. 6 Ditto
Strachan, Mr. 6 Ditto
Scatchard and Co. 6 Ditto
Symonds, Mr. 12 Ditto
Steel, Mr. 6 Ditto

T.

Thornton, Robert, Eſq;
Townſhend, Hon. J. T.
Tihe, Robert Stearne, Eſq; Clanville Lodge, Andover
Thornton, Mr.

LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS.

U.

Urry, Captain, R. N.
Vanſittart, Nicholas, Eſq;
Vernor and Hood, 6 Copies

W.

Walſingham, Lord
Warren, Dr.
Worceſter, Marquis of
Weymouth, Lord
Wray, Sir Cecil, Bart.
Woodford, Sir Ralph, Bart.
Warwick, Earl of
Wedgewood, Joſiah, Eſq;
Wentworth, Lord
Wright, Mr. William, Academy, Apſley, Wooburn, Bedfordſhire
Wenman, Right Hon. Viſcount
W. W.
Wood, Mr. Hutton
Worceſter Society
Watts, Lieutenant John, R. N.
Warren, Sir John Borlaſe, Bart.
Wilkie, Mr. 6 Copies
White and Sons, 6 Ditto
Walker, Mr. David, 2 Ditto
Walker, Mr. John, 6 Ditto
Walter, Mr. 12 Ditto

Y.

Young, Arthur, Eſq;
Yates, Joſeph, Eſq;
Young, Sir George
Yorke, Charles, Eſq;

LIST

LIST OF PLATES.

1. Captain Hunter to face the Title.
2. Vignette on the Title Page, for the Deſcription, ſee Page 140
3. A Map of New South Wales, - - - to face Page 1
4. View of the Settlement on Sydney Cove, Port Jackſon, 77
5. The Southern Hemiſphere, ſhewing the Track of the Sirius, 126
6. A Chart of Botany-Bay, Port Jackſon, and Broken-Bay, with the Coaſt and Soundings, - - - - 160
7. View at Roſe-Hill, - - - - - - 201
8. A Man of Lord Howe's Groupe, - - - - 222
9. A Man of the Duke of York's Iſland, - - - 233
10. Canoes of the Duke of York's-Iſland, - - - 237
11. Canoes of the Admiralty Iſlands, - - - - 240
12. Track of the Waakſamheyd Tranſport - - - 265
13. A Plan of Norfolk-Iſland, - - - - - - 393
14. A Family of New South Wales, - - - - 414
15. Non-Deſcript Shells, of New South Wales, Plate I. - 581
16. Ditto, - - - - - - Plate II. 582
17. Ditto, - - - - - - Plate III. 583

CON-

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

Page

The ſhips deſtined for Botany-Bay rendezvous at the Mother-Bank.—Leave that place, and proceed on the voyage.—The convicts on board one of the tranſports attempt an inſurrection.—Are timely diſcovered, and the ringleaders puniſhed.—Arrival at Santa Cruz.—Tranſactions there.—Attempt of a convict to eſcape.—Deſcription of Laguna, and the adjacent country.—Departure from Santa Cruz.—Paſs Cape Frio.—Arrive at Rio Janeiro.—Tranſactions there.—City of St. Sebaſtian deſcribed.—Table of Winds, Weather, &c. - - 1

CHAPTER II.

Anchor in Table-Bay.—Refreſhments procured there.—Depart from the Cape of Good Hope.—Captain Phillip quits the Sirius, and proceeds on the voyage in the Supply.—The Sirius arrives in Botany-Bay.—Finds the Supply at anchor there.—Arrival of the Buſſole and Aſtrolabe.—Leave Botany-Bay, and anchor in Port Jackſon.—The Table of Winds, Weather, &c. - - - - - 29

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER III.

Page

Frequent interviews with the natives.—Weapons deſcribed.—Ornaments.—Perſons, manners, and habitations.—Method of hunting.—Animals deſcribed.—Birds, and inſects.—Diary of the weather.—Departure of the Buſſole and Aſtrolabe.—A convict pretends to have diſcovered a gold mine.—The fraud detected.—Obſervations for the longitude, &c. - - - - - - - - - 52

CHAPTER IV.

The Sirius leaves Port Jackſon.—Sails for the Cape of Good Hope, by the Eaſtern Paſſage.—Falls in with many large iſlands of ice.—Caſts anchor at Robin's Iſland.—Tables of the winds, weather, &c. 89

CHAPTER V.

Depart from Robin's Iſland, and anchor in Table Bay.—The ſick ſent on ſhore.—Arrival of the Alexander tranſport.—Proviſions procured for the ſettlement at Port Jackſon.—Departure of the Sirius.—In great danger from a violent tempeſt.—Arrives ſafe at Port Jackſon. Tables of the winds, weather, variation of the compaſs, &c. 110

CHAPTER VI.

The ſmall-pox makes its appearance among the natives.—Its fatal effects.—A criminal court held.—Six marines tried and convicted.—Governor Phillip viſits Broken-Bay.—Explores its various inlets.—Returns to Port Jackſon.—Broken-Bay ſurveyed.—Botany-Bay ſurveyed.—Two natives brought to the ſettlement, and kindly treated.—One of them makes his eſcape. - - - - - - - - 132

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER VII.

Page

The Sirius and Supply ſail for Norfolk-Iſland.—Land the marines and convicts.—Wreck of the Sirius.—Some proviſions ſaved.—Martial Law eſtabliſhed.—Ratio of proviſions ſettled.—Vaſt numbers of birds caught.—In diſtreſs for proviſions.—Receive a ſupply from Port Jackſon.—Officers and crew of the Sirius leave Norfolk-Iſland, and arrive at Port Jackſon.—Norfolk-Iſland deſcribed.—Its ſituation and extent.—Soil.—Climate, &c.—Table of Winds, &c. - - 171

CHAPTER VIII.

Great improvement of the country at Roſe-Hill.—Viciſſitude of the climate.—Norfolk-Iſland remarkably healthy.—A native runs away from the ſettlement.—Frequent viſits from the natives.—Governor Phillip wounded by the natives with a ſpear.—Natives again viſit the ſettlement.—Entertain the governor, &c. with a dance.—Decorate themſelves for that purpoſe.—Method of dancing deſcribed.—Muſic and ſinging. - - - - - - - 201

CHAPTER IX.

Captain Hunter leaves Port Jackſon in the Waakſambeyd tranſport.—In danger amongſt ſome iſlands.—Iſle of Pines deſcribed.—Stewart's iſland diſcovered.—Fall in with Bradley's ſhoals.—Diſcover a cluſter of iſlands.—Name them Lord Howe's groupe.—The natives deſcribed.—Attempt to find anchorage on the coaſt of New-Britain.—Are diſappointed.—Anchor at the Duke of York's Iſland.—Attempt to procure water.—Are attacked by the natives.—A few ſhots fired.—The natives diſperſed.—A reconciliation effected.—Natives deſcribed.—

Page

Weapons.—Ornaments, &c.—Produce and ſoil.—Leave the Duke of York's Iſland.—Natives from the Admiralty Iſlands viſit the ſhip.—Their canoes deſcribed.—Phillip's Iſlands diſcovered.—Anchor at Hummock Iſland.—Refreſhments procured.—Viſited by the Raja.—A quarrel enſues.—Several of the natives killed.—Articles of barter in requeſt.—Canoes deſcribed.—Leave Hummock Iſland.—Anchor at Batavia.—Tables of latitude and longitude, &c. - - 214

CHAPTER X.

Captain Hunter waits on the Governor at Batavia.—Applies for a paſſage to England.—Purchaſes the Waakſamheyd for that purpoſe.—Leaves Batavia.—Paſſes the Keelings.—Arrives at the Cape of Good Hope.—Leaves that place, and anchors at Saint Helena.—Departs from Saint Helena.—Arrives at Portſmouth.—Tables for the variation of the compaſs.—Captain Hunter's letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, - - - - - - - - 274

CHAPTER XI.

Lieutenant King viſits Monſieur De la Perouſe at Botany-Bay.—Polite reception there.—An account of his adventures.—Lieutenant King returns to Port Jackſon.—Sent by Governor Phillip to form a ſettlement on Norfolk-Iſland.—Leaves Port Jackſon.—An iſland diſcovered.—Arrival at Norfolk-Iſland.—Difficulty in finding a landing-place.—Land the convicts, proviſions, and ſtores.—Ground cleared, and tents fixed.—A ſtore-houſe erected.—Vegetables and various ſorts of grain ſown.—Diſtreſſed by rats.—General orders for the regulation of the ſettlement, - - - - - - - - 289

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XII.

Page

Regular employment of the convicts.—Meet with an unlucky accident.—Thefts detected.—The robbers puniſhed.—Peſtered with rats.—Method of deſtroying them.—Live ſtock on the ſettlement.—Trees diſcovered which afford food for hogs.—Some of the ſettlers poiſoned.—Cured with ſweet oil.—A convict puniſhed for uſing ſeditious language.—Birds on the iſland.—Deſcription of Arthur's Vale.—His Majeſty's birth-day kept.—Flouriſhing ſtate of the gardens.—Arrival of the Supply.—Four perſons drowned.—Proviſions and ſtores received.—Queries from Governor Phillip, and the anſwers.—Ball-Bay deſcribed. The landing-place cleared.—Arrival of the Golden Grove tranſport. Marines and convicts brought in the Golden Grove.—Proviſions and ſtores, - - - - - - - - - 310

CHAPTER XIII.

Quantity of proviſions received by the Golden Grove.—Timber ſent to Port Jackſon.—Obſervations on the navigation near Norfolk-Iſland. —Number of perſons on the ſettlement.—Nepean and Phillip Iſlands deſcribed.—Corn reaped.—A party ſent to Ball-Bay.—Taſk-work of the convicts.—The free-people exerciſed.—Plot to ſeize the iſland diſcovered.—Orders made public for the preſervation of regularity.—Oath of allegiance adminiſtered.—Proviſions aud ſtores examined, 335

CHAP-

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XIV.

Page

A violent hurricane at Norfolk-Iſland.—Arrival of the Supply.—Convicts ſent from Port Jackſon.—Proviſions and ſtores.—Departure of the Supply.—Robberies committed.—Employment of the convicts.—Wheat infeſted with caterpillars.—A ſtore-houſe erected.—Arrival of a party of marines from Port Jackſon.—Thefts committed.—Orders read for preſerving regularity.—A female convict puniſhed.—Pernicious effects of the grub-worm.—Gardens plundered.—A granary erected.—Wheat deſtroyed by parroquets.—Number of inhabitants on the iſland, - - - - - - - - 356

CHAPTER XV.

The arrival of the Sirius and Supply at Norfolk-Iſland.—The loſs of the Sirius.—Captain Hunter and the crew ſaved.—A general meeting of the officers convened.—Sundry regulations adopted.—Martial-Law proclaimed.—Lieutenant-Governor Roſs takes the command.—Lieutenant King leaves Norfolk-Iſland.—Deſcription of Norfolk-Iſland.—Face of the country.—Water—Soil—Climate—Timber—Inſects—Fiſh—Seaſons—Winds—Coaſt, and Bays,—Preſent ſtate of cultivation.—General behaviour of the convicts.—Number of inhabitants on the iſland.—Grain and live-ſtock.—Lieutenant King arrives at Port Jackſon.—Finds the country greatly improved.—Manners and cuſtoms of the natives.—Vocabulary of the language, - - - 381

CHAPTER XVI.

Lieutenant King leaves Port Jackſon.—Meets with a dangerous ſhoal.—Diſcovers Tench's-Iſland.—Short deſcription of the inhabitants.—Prince William-Henry's Iſland deſcribed.—Touch at Kercolang.—

Refreſhments

Page

Refreſhments procured there.—Deſcription of the inhabitants, their cloathing and utenſils.—Paſs through the Straits of Salayer.—Error on Dunn's chart found out.—Arrival at Batavia.—Interview with the governor.—Batavia deſcribed.—Situation and extent.—Manners and cuſtoms of the inhabitants.—Government and police.—Annual exports.—Onruſt deſcribed.—Departure from Batavia.—Mortality amongſt the ſailors.—Arrival at the Iſle of France.—Short account of that place.—Productions, &c.—Leave the Iſle of France.—Paſs St. Helena and Aſcenſion.—Arrival in the Engliſh Channel, 415

CHAPTER XVII.

The Lady Juliana tranſport arrives at Port Jackſon.—Loſs of the Guardian.—A ſettlement made at Sydney-Cove.—A ſtate of the ſettlements at Sydney-Cove and Roſe-Hill.—A general return of male convicts, with their employments, - - - - - - 449

CHAPTER XVIII.

An excurſion into the country.—An interview with the natives.—Governor Phillip wounded with a ſpear.—A ſecond interview with the natives.—Occurrences on that occaſion.—Five convicts effect their eſcape in a boat.—The ſettlement viſited by the natives.—Their cuſtoms.—Arrival of the Supply from Batavia, - - - - - 458

CHAPTER XIX.

Fruits in ſeaſon deſcribed.—The manners of the natives.—Diſputes with them.—Arrival of a veſſel from Batavia, - - - - - 478

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XX.

Page

The depredations of the natives.—Bannelong's behaviour.—The Supply ſails for Norfolk-Iſland.—The quantity of proviſions brought in the Waakſambeyd from Batavia.—The appearance of a prodigious number of bats.—The return of Bannelong.—The manners of the natives further deſcribed, - - - - - - - - 498

CHAPTER XXI.

An excurſion into the country.—Occurrences on the journey.—Surpriſing dexterity of the natives in climbing trees.—Their ſuperſtition.—Their method of curing wounds.—Their language.—Their manners and diſpoſition, - - - - - - - - - 512

CHAPTER XXII.

A ſecond excurſion into the country.—The firſt grants of land to ſettlers. A barter with the natives eſtabliſhed.—The arrival of ſeveral veſſels from England.—A new harbour diſcovered.—The names of the firſt ſettlers, - - - - - - - - - - - 530

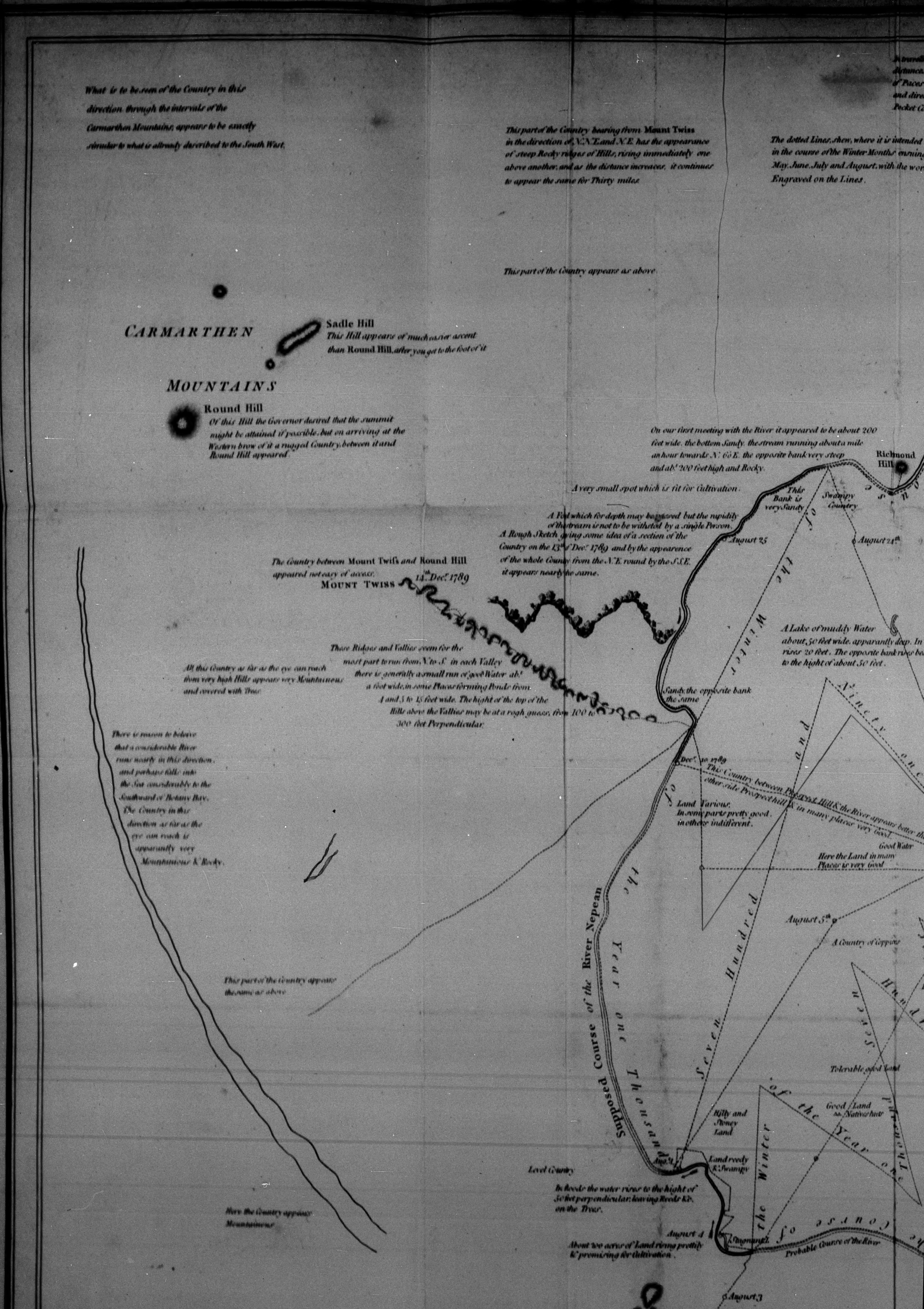
CHAPTER XXIII.

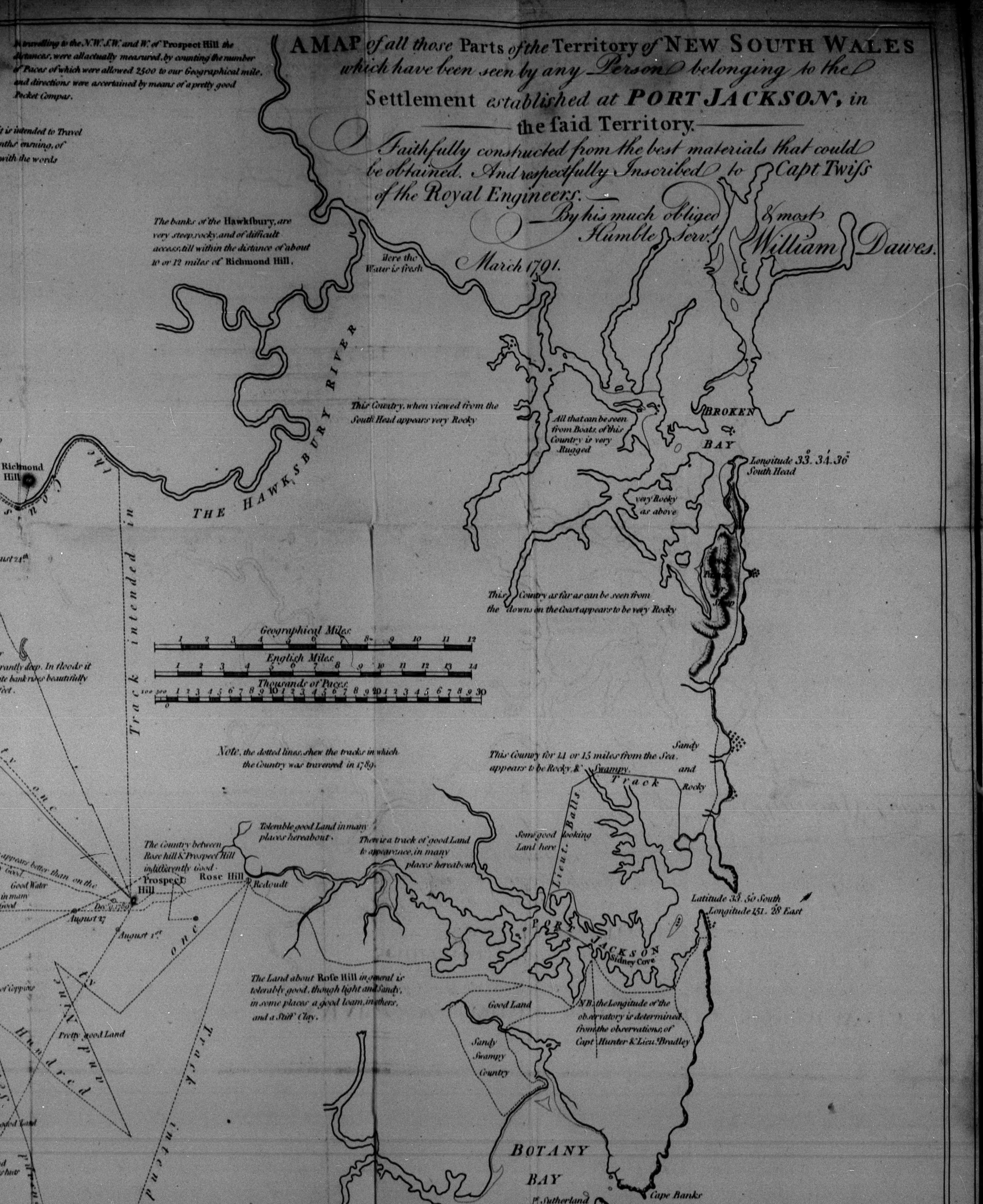
Arrival of the Gorgon, and ſeveral tranſports at Port Jackſon.—The number of convicts brought out in theſe veſſels.—A whale-fiſhery eſtabliſhed on the Coaſt of New South Wales, - - - 552

CHAPTER XXIV.

The Supply leaves Port Jackſon.—Receives ſome damage in a ſtorm.—Doubles Cape Horn.—Paſſes Staten's land.—Anchors at Rio Janeiro.—Refreſhments procured.—Departure from Rio Janeiro.—Proceeds towards England.—Arrives off the Lizard.—Particulars reſpecting Norfolk-Iſland. - - - - - - - - - - 568

A VOYAGE


What is to be seen of the Country in this direction through the intervals of the Carmarthen Mountains, appears to be exactly similar to what is already described to the South West.
This part of the Country bearing from Mount Twiss in the direction of N.N.E. and N.E. has the appearance of steep Rocky ridges of Hills, rising immediately one above another; and as the distance increaces, it continues to appear the same for Thirty miles.
The dotted Lines, shew, where it is intended
in the course of the Winter Months ensuing
May, June, July and August, with the wor
Engraved on the Lines.
In travelli
distance
of Paces
and dire
Pocket C
This part of the Country appears as above.
CARMARTHEN
MOUNTAINS
Sadle Hill
This Hill appears of much easier ascent than Round Hill, after you get to the foot of it
Round Hill
Of this Hill the Governor desired that the summit might be attained if possible, but on arriving at the Western brow of it a rugged Country, between it and Round Hill appeared.
On our first meeting with the River it appeared to be about 200 feet wide, the bottom Sandy, the stream running about a mile an hour towards N. 65 E. the opposite bank very steep and abt 200 feet high and Rocky.
Richmond Hill
A very small spot which is fit for Cultivation.
This Bank is very Sandy
Swampy Country
A Ford which for depth may be passed but the rapidity of the stream is not to be withstood by a single Person.
A Rough Sketch giving some idea of a section of the Country on the 13th of Decr 1789 and by the appearence of the whole Country from the N.E. round by the S.S.E. it appears nearly the same.
August 25
August 24th
The Country between Mount Twiss and Round Hill appeared not easy of access.
MOUNT TWISS
14th Decr 1789
A Lake of muddy Water about 50 feet wide, apparantly deep. In
rises 20 feet. The opposite bank rises be
to the hight of about 50 feet.
These Ridges and Vallies seem for the most part to run from N. to S. in each Valley there is generally a small run of good Water abt a foot wide, in some Places forming Ponds from 4 and 5 to 15 feet wide. The hight of the top of the Hills above the Vallies may be at a rogh guess, from 100 to 300 feet Perpendicular.
All this Country as far as the eye can reach from very high Hills appears very Mountainous and covered with Trees.
Sandy the opposite bank the same
There is reason to believe that a considerable River runs nearly in this direction, and perhaps falls into the Sea considerably to the Southward of Botany Bay. The Country in this direction as far as the eye can reach is apparantly very Mountainous & Rocky.
Decr 10 1789
This Country between Prospect Hill & the River appears better th
other side Prospect hill & in many places very Good.
Land Various, In some parts pretty good, in others indifferent.
Good Water
Here the Land in many Places is very Good
of the Winter of the Year one Thousand Seven Hundred and Ninety one
August 5th
A Country of Coppice
This part of the Country appears the same as above
Supposed Course of the River Nepean
Seven Hundred
Tolerable good Land
Good Land Natives huts
Hilly and Stoney Land
of the Winter of the Year one Thousand
Aug. 4
Level Country
Land reedy & Swampy
In floods the water rises to the hight of 50 feet perpendicular, leaving Reeds &c. on the Trees.
Here the Country appears Mountainous
August 4
About 200 acres of Land rising prettily & promising for Cultivation.
Probable Course of the River
August 3
Pyramid Hill
It appears more Level towards the South
Rough Mountainous Country like that in the way to Carmarthen Mountains



A MAP of all those Parts of the Territory of NEW SOUTH WALES which have been seen by any Person belonging to the Settlement established at PORT JACKSON, in the said Territory.

Faithfully constructed from the best materials that could be obtained. And respectfully Inscribed to Capt Twiss of the Royal Engineers.

By his much obliged & most Humble Serv.t William Dawes.

March 1791.

In travelling to the N.W. S.W. and W. of Prospect Hill the distances, were all actually measured, by counting the number of Paces of which were allowed 2500 to our Geographical mile, and directions were ascertained by means of a pretty good Pocket Compas.
it is intended to Travel
nths ensuing, of
with the words
The banks of the Hawksbury, are very steep, rocky, and of difficult access, till within the distance of about 10 or 12 miles of Richmond Hill.
Here the Water is fresh
THE HAWKSBURY RIVER
Richmond Hill
This Country, when viewed from the South Head appears very Rocky
All that can be seen from Boats, of this Country is very Rugged
BROKEN BAY
Longitude 33°. 34'. 36" South Head
very Rocky as above
This Country as far as can be seen from the downs on the Coast appears to be very Rocky
ust 24th
Track intended in
Geographical Miles
1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12
English Miles
1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14
Thousands of Paces
100 300 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 20 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 30
0
rantly deep. In floods it
te bank rises beautifully
feet.
Note, the dotted lines, shew the tracks in which the Country was traversed in 1789.
This Country for 14 or 15 miles from the Sea appears to be Rocky, & Swampy.
Sandy and Rocky
Lieut. Balls Track
Some good looking Land here
Tolerable good Land in many places hereabout.
There is a track of good Land to appearance, in many places hereabout
The Country between Rose hill & Prospect Hill indifferently Good.
Prospect Hill
Rose Hill
Redoubt
appears better than on the
Good Water
in many
Good
Dec. 9. 1789
August 27
August 1st
PORT JACKSON
Sidney Cove
Latitude 33°. 50' South
Longitude 151°. 28' East
The Land about Rose Hill in general is tolerably good, though light and Sandy, in some places a good loam, in others, and a Stiff Clay.
Good Land
N.B. the Longitude of the observatory is determined from the observations of Capt Hunter & Lieu.t Bradley
Sandy Swampy Country
of Coppice
Pretty good Land
Hundred
one
Track intended in
BOTANY BAY
Pt. Sutherland
Cape Banks
Point Solander
Swampy Land
River
d towards the South West

Stockdale, Piccadilly

A VOYAGE TO NEW SOUTH WALES.

CHAPTER I.

The ſhips deſtined for Botany-Bay rendezvous at the Mother-Bank.—Leave that place, and proceed on the voyage.—The convicts on board one of the tranſports attempt an inſurrection.—Are timely diſcovered, and the ringleaders puniſhed.—Arrival at Santa Cruz.—Tranſactions there.—Attempt of a convict to eſcape.—Deſcription of Laguna, and the adjacent country. Departure from Santa Cruz.—Paſs Cape Frio.—Arrive at Rio Janeiro. Tranſactions there.—City of St. Sebaſtian deſcribed.—Table of Winds, Weather, &c.

CHAP. I.

IT being the intention of government to remove the inconvenience, which this country ſuffered, from the gaols being ſo exceedingly crouded with criminals, who had been by the laws condemned to tranſportation, the eaſt coaſt of New Holland was the place determined upon to form a ſettlement for this ſalutary purpoſe. The eaſt coaſt of New Holland is that country, which was diſcovered and explored by

CHAP. I. Captain James Cook, in his firſt voyage round the world, and by him called New South Wales. Botany Bay, the only place he entered with the ſhip, which could be called a harbour, having been mentioned in the narrative of that voyage, as a convenient place for a ſettlement, was fixed upon by government for the intended deſign.

October 25, 1786. On the 25th of October, 1786, his Majeſty's ſhip Sirius, lying in the dock at Deptford, was commiſſioned, and the command given to Arthur Phillip, Eſq; the Supply armed tender was alſo put in commiſſion, and Lieutenant Henry Lidgbird Ball was appointed to command her.

The Sirius was a ſhip of about 540 tons burthen, exceedingly well calculated for ſuch a ſervice; ſhe mounted 20 guns, and had a ſpar deck over them, was of a round full built, and was all together a very capacious and convenient veſſel. The Supply armed tender was a brig, and was one of the veſſels which were employed in carrying naval ſtores from one of his Majeſty's dock-yards to another; ſhe was a very firm ſtrong little veſſel, very flat floored, and roomy, mounted eight guns, and had a deep waiſt, which I feared would be found a very great, if not a dangerous inconvenience in ſo low a veſſel on ſo long a voyage. The Sirius's compliment was 160 men; that of the Supply, 55 men. Theſe two ſhips were intended, after having performed the ſervice of eſcorting the convicts to the place of their deſtination, to remain in the country to be employed as the governor might find neceſſary for the public ſervice, until they ſhould be relieved by other ſhips from England.

I had ſome reaſon, during the equipment of thoſe ſhips, to think I might be employed upon this ſervice, in ſome way or other; and as Captain Phillip was appointed governor of the new ſettlement, and of

1786. courſe had much buſineſs to tranſact in London, I frequently viſited the Sirius, and frequently received his directions in any thing that related to the fitting her: ſhe was out of the dock and the rigging in hand when I firſt went on board. December 9. On the 9th of December, the ſhip being ready to fall down the river, we ſlipped the moorings and ſailed down to Long-Reach, where we took in the guns and ordnance ſtores. 15th. On the 15th, I was informed by a letter from Mr. Stephens, Secretary to the Admiralty, that there was a commiſſion ſigned for me in that office, and deſiring I would come to town and take it up. The nature of the ſervice upon which the Sirius might be employed in thoſe ſeas to which ſhe was bound, having been conſidered, it was judged neceſſary that an officer, bearing a certain rank, ſhould command that ſhip in the abſence of Captain Phillip, whoſe preſence, it was to be ſuppoſed, would be requiſite at all times wherever the ſeat of government in that country might be fixed. In conſequence of Mr. Stephens's letter, I repaired to the Admiralty, and received a commiſſion, appointing me Second Captain of his Majeſty's ſhip Sirius, with the rank of Poſt Captain, and with power to command her in the abſence of her principal Captain; ſubject nevertheleſs to his controul, and to ſuch orders and directions for my proceedings as he might ſee occaſion to give me, for the good of the ſervice. This appointment of a Second Captain, to a private ſhip, being the firſt inſtance in our ſervice, it could not, conſiſtent with the eſtabliſhed regulations of the navy, take place, but by the authority of the King's order in council: an order from his Majeſty in council, authorizing the Lords of the Admiralty to make ſuch appointment, was therefore given.

January 30, 1787. On the 30th of January, 1787, two tranſports, one having male, the other female convicts on board, dropt down to Long-Reach, but they having buſineſs to tranſact with the owners of the ſhips, relative to their ſhips companies, were permitted to proceed as low as Graveſend, where the Sirius joined them the next day, and proceeded immediately to the Nore, where we anchored the ſame day, and were joined by his Majeſty's February 4. armed tender Supply: on the 4th of February, we anchored in the Downs, and were detained there by bad weather and contrary winds, until the 19th, 19th, when we put to ſea in company with the Supply and tranſports, 21ſt, and arrived on the Mother-Bank on the 21ſt: at this anchorage, all the tranſports and ſtore-ſhips were directed to rendezvous; the latter were already arrived, and, while we lay here, the other tranſports joined us from the weſtward.

May 9. On the 9th of May, Captain Phillip arrived in Portſmouth, and the next day came on board, and iſſued the ſignals and other neceſſary orders to Lieutenant John Shortland, the agent for tranſports, to be delivered to the maſters of the different ſhips.

13th, On Sunday the 13th, we ſailed from the Mother-Bank, in company with the Supply armed tender, ſix tranſports, having on board 600 male, and 200 female convicts, and three ſtore-ſhips, carrying proviſions and various other ſtores: on board the ſhips carrying convicts, were embarked 160 marines, with their proper officers; Major Robert Roſs was commandant of the battalion, and appointed lieutenant-governor of the new ſettlement; a ſurgeon and three aſſiſtants were alſo embarked in the tranſports, with medicines and neceſſaries for the people under their care. The wind being eaſterly, we ran out at the Needles, and were accompanied by his Majeſty's ſhip Hyena, Captain De Courſey, who had received orders from the Admiralty to ſee us 100 leagues to the weſtward. We had light breezes with fair and pleaſant weather down the

1787.
May 15th.

the channel, but had the mortification to find that two of our tranſports ſailed exceedingly bad; one of which, the Hyena towed two or three days. On the 15th, at ſun-ſet, the Start Point bore north-eaſt half eaſt, by compaſs, diſtant ſeven or eight leagues: at noon on this day (which finiſhes the nautical and begins the aſtronomical day) the longitude, by account, was 5° 01′ weſt of the meridian of Greenwich, and by a time-piece made by Mr. Kendal, with which the Board of Longitude had ſupplied us, it was 4° 59′ weſt; we had a variety of weather from this time till the 21ſt, when being in latitude 47° 52′ north, and longitude 12° 14′ weſt, Captain Phillip put his diſpatches on board the Hyena; ſhe ſaluted us with three cheers, and we parted company; the wind was now, and had been for ſome days before, in the ſouth-weſt quarter, with hazy weather, our progreſs to the ſouthward was therefore but ſlow; much attention was required on our part to the rate of ſailing of the different tranſports, in order to prevent ſeparation. At this time a report was made from one of the tranſports, both by the commanding marine officer on board, and the maſter of the ſhip, that a diſcovery had been made of an intended inſurrection amongſt the convicts in that ſhip; in which, if they had ſucceeded, they were to have quitted the fleet in the night, and afterwards to have made ſuch uſe of the ſhip, as they ſhould, upon farther conſideration of the matter, determine amongſt themſelves. Captain Phillip had very humanely, a few days previous to this ſcheme, directed that the irons with which moſt of the male convicts had hitherto been confined, ſhould be taken off them generally, that they might have it more in their power to ſtrip their cloaths off at night when they went to reſt, be alſo more at their eaſe during the day, and have the farther advantage of being able to waſh and keep themſelves clean; this indulgence had no doubt left it more in the power of thoſe who might be diſpoſed to exert their ingenuity, in ſo daring an attempt, to carry their plan

CHAP. I. 1787. plan into execution with a greater probability of ſucceſs; but I am thoroughly convinced, that ſo ſtrict an attention to duty was paid by the whole of the marines employed on this ſervice, that ſuch an attempt would have terminated in the deſtruction of thoſe who appeared moſt active and forward in it. Two of the principals were brought on board the Sirius, ſeverely puniſhed, and ſent on board another tranſport, properly ſecured in heavy irons.

May 23d. On the 23d, the wind inclined to the north-weſt, and, after heavy rain, ſettled in that quarter; by the favour of this change we proceeded to the ſouthward, at the rate of between 70 and 100 miles in 24 hours.
26th. On the 26th, the wind ſhifted to the northward, and from that to the north-eaſt; our latitude at this time was 42° 10′ north, and the longitude 11° 36′ weſt; variation of the compaſs, 20° 19′ weſt.

29th. On the 29th in the evening, (as we intended making the iſlands of Porto Sancto and Madeira) being but a little diſtance from the former, and the weather being hazy, we ſhortened ſail, to prevent the convoy from falling ſuddenly in with the land in the night: at day-light the next morning, we ſaw the Deſerters off Madeira, bearing weſt-ſouth-weſt, five leagues diſtant; we had paſſed the iſland of Porto Sancto in the night, having ſteered to paſs eight or nine leagues to the eaſtward of it; we found the ſhip ſet this laſt 24 hours 12 miles to the ſouthward of the log. At noon the ſouth-eaſternmoſt Deſerter bore by compaſs north 17° weſt, by which we made its latitude 32° 29′ north, and its longitude by the time-keeper 16° 38′ weſt of Greenwich; the variation of the compaſs was here 17° 00′ weſt: from hence, with a light breeze from the northward, we ſteered ſouth half weſt, by compaſs, and at five
June 1. P. M. on the 1ſt of June, we made the Salvages; which was rather

ſooner than we expected, by the diſtance we had run from the Deſerters off Madeira, and the latitude obſerved the preceding noon, by which we judged ourſelves not leſs than 17 leagues from them. At midnight we were exactly in their parallel, and ſaw them very diſtinctly by the light of the moon, which was very clear; their latitude, deduced from the preceding, as well as following meridian obſervations, is 30° 12′ north, which is 12 miles to the northward of what they are generally placed, either in tables or charts; their longitude, by our time-keeper, is 15° 53′ weſt. I had never ſeen theſe rocks before, and always underſtood them to be ſmall inconſiderable ſpots, but the largeſt is ſo high as to be ſeen at the diſtance of ſeven or eight leagues, and appears to be about a mile and a half in length, from north-weſt to ſouth-eaſt; there are a few ſcattered rocks appear above water, to the weſtward; and I have been told, that a reef of conſiderable extent ſtretches out from them to the weſtward. From the time of our paſſing theſe rocks until the evening of the 3d, we had very light airs and variable, but moſtly from the ſouth-weſt quarter, and every day found we were affected by a ſoutherly current of 10 or 12 miles in 24 hours. The wind now ſprung up from the northward, and we ſteered for the iſland of Teneriffe, directing our courſe by the longitude determined from the time-keeper, the account being 1° 04′ to the weſtward of it, and our lunar obſervations within three miles of it: at day-light in the morning we ſaw the iſland of Teneriffe, and at noon Point de Nagara, or north-eaſt point, bore ſouth-weſt by ſouth, diſtant five leagues; ſome of the convoy being conſiderably aſtern we brought to, and in the afternoon, there being a freſh of wind from the north-eaſt, we bore away and made the ſignal for the convoy to make all the ſail poſſible, in order, as we were ſtrangers to Santa Cruz road, that we might ſave day-light to the anchorage, which we effected, and had the whole convoy in before dark;

CHAP. I. 1787. at half paſt ſix in the evening we anchored in 15 fathoms water, ſoft ground, being a mixture of ſand and black mud: we moored with the bower anchors, and had the church of St. Franciſco ſouth 73° 00′ weſt, the eaſternmoſt point in ſight, called Point Roquet, (from a ſmall rock which lies a little detached from it) north 78° 00° eaſt, and a fort to the ſouth-weſt of the town, ſouth 45° 00′ weſt, diſtant from the neareſt ſhore about two and a half cables length. The ground all over this bay is ſaid to be foul; we therefore buoyed up our cables, but had no reaſon, upon examining them afterwards, to believe there was any foul ground where we lay. The next morning, Captain Phillip ſent an officer to wait on the governor with the uſual information of whom we were, and our buſineſs at that iſland; but, previous to our anchoring, the maſter attendant, and ſome other officers, were on board the Sirius for this very purpoſe; a ceremony which I believe is ſeldom neglected. When the officer returned, he brought a very polite reply from the governor, ſignifying his ſincere wiſhes that the iſland might be capable of ſupplying us with ſuch articles as we were in want of, and his aſſurances that every refreſhment the place afforded we ſhould certainly have. Captain Phillip then waited on the governor, accompanied by Major Roſs, myſelf, and ſeveral other officers; we were moſt politely received by him, and he repeated his hope that Teneriffe might afford every refreſhment which we had occaſion for.

Two days after this viſit, the governor, who was then the Marquis Branceforte, and captain-general of the whole of the Canary Iſlands, notwithſtanding he had the day before returned Captain Phillip's viſit by an officer, came on board himſelf, attended by ſeveral officers. He remained about an hour on board, and aſked many queſtions reſpecting the extent of our voyage, and ſituation of the place where we were going to ſettle, all of which we explained to him by a general chart of the world. A day or two after this viſit, Captain Phillip received an invitation to dine with him, and to bring as many of the principal officers as could be ſpared from the ſhips: we waited on him in a party about twelve, and were very hoſpitably and politely entertained; in ſhort, on the whole, I never met with ſo polite and ſo pleaſant a man in any foreign port I have ever viſited.

During the time we lay in this road, the ſhips companies, the marines, and convicts, were every day ſupplied with freſh proviſions, of which there appeared to be great abundance on the iſland: vegetables and fruit were at this time ſcarce; potatoes, onions, and pumpkins *only* were to be had, and thoſe but in ſmall quantities. It was Captain Phillip's intention, when we arrived here, to have remained only three or four days, but we found that the watering of the ſhips was a buſineſs which could not be completed in ſo ſhort a time. During our ſtay, the watering the ſhips was our principal conſideration, and it was often unavoidable to be employed in this neceſſary buſineſs on board the tranſports after dark; the watering-place being only contrived to load two boats at a time. A convict one evening, while every body was employed in clearing a boat of water, contrived to ſlip into a ſmall boat, and dropt away from the ſhip unperceived; when he got to ſome conſiderable diſtance off, he then exerted himſelf at his oars, and got on board a foreign Eaſt-India ſhip, which was lying here, and offered himſelf as a ſeaman, but was refuſed; finding himſelf diſappointed in his hope of getting off in that ſhip, he judged it neceſſary, knowing that he would very ſoon be miſſed, and ſearch made after him, to quit that ſhip; he landed to the weſtward of the town, but on a place where there was a good deal of ſurf, and where the rocks behind him were inacceſſible. The officer of marines on

CHAP. I. 1787.

board that tranſport, having ordered the convicts to be muſtered as uſual at ſetting the watch, when they were always put below, found this man was miſſing, and immediate information of it ſent to Captain Phillip; who next morning ſent an officer from the Sirius to the governor, requeſting his aſſiſtance in recovering the deſerter; orders were immediately given by the governor for that purpoſe; in the morning early, boats were diſpatched from the ſhips to row along ſhore to the weſtward, to endeavour to recover the boat he had taken away, and a little to the weſtward of the town, they diſcovered the boat beating on the rocks; and rowing in to pick her up, they diſcovered the fellow concealing himſelf in the cliff of a rock, not having been able to get up the precipice: the officer preſented a muſket at him, and threatened if he did not immediately come down and get into the boat he would ſhoot him; the fellow complied, rather than run the hazard of being ſhot, and was taken on board, puniſhed, and put in irons until we got to ſea, when he was liberated in the ſame manner as the reſt.

Before we were ready to put to ſea, a party of us had determined to make a ſhort excurſion into the country, where we had no doubt of finding its aſpect more inviting than the proſpect from the ſhips: for this purpoſe, we ſet out one morning very early, accompanied by two Britiſh gentlemen, who were merchants reſident here, (Mr. Little and Mr. Armſtrong,) and who had ſhewn us upon every occaſion much civility and attention: thoſe gentlemen had previouſly provided horſes, mules, proviſions, &c. We directed our journey to the city of Laguna, which was, and is ſtill called the capital of the iſland; it is ſaid to be but three or four miles from Santa Cruz; but, whether from the badneſs of the road, (which is certainly the worſt I ever ſaw in any country,) or the ſlowneſs of our progreſs from that cauſe, I thought it not leſs than

twice

twice that diſtance. When we arrived at Laguna, we walked through many of the ſtreets, which are very regular, and croſs each other at right angles; the buildings in general are good, and ſome of the ſtreets are wider than you generally ſee them in any of the Spaniſh or Portugueſe towns: there are two pariſh churches, which have ſhort ſquare ſteeples, but they appear above all the other buildings; there are alſo two nunneries, and three or four convents, which are built in a quadrangular form, and have good gardens. In the middle of the town is a conduit, which ſupplies the inhabitants with water. This city ſtands on a plain of conſiderable extent, over part of which we rode, until we came to the foot of the hill from whence the town is ſupplied with water. We aſcended the mountain, and traced the ſtream to its fountain-head, where we found it iſſuing from cavities in ſeveral parts of the hill, and was conveyed down the declivity in ſtone-troughs, and received on the plain by troughs of wood, ſupported about ſeven or eight feet above the ground by props; through this aqueduct, the water is carried to the center of the city, over a plain, from a diſtance of four or five miles.

The plain on which Laguna ſtands, is pleaſant and fertile; it was now the height of their harveſt, and many people were employed in cutting down the corn, with which this plain ſeemed to be well planted; there were alſo many pleaſant gardens here, and the ſoil in general appeared rich. The plain is ſurrounded by very high mountains, down the ſides of which in the rainy ſeaſon, (for their rains are periodical,) vaſt torrents of water run, from which cauſe, I apprehend, its unhealthineſs muſt proceed; for I was told, when remarking how thinly the town of Laguna appeared to be inhabited, that very few, who had it in their power to chooſe their place of reſidence, would continue in Laguna. The governor has a palace here, but generally reſides at Santa

Cruz;

1787.

Cruz; and this city, once the reſidence of perſons in great authority, is now quite deſerted by people of any diſtinction. I ſaw nothing of the lake from which it derives its name, but was given to underſtand that it was now a very inconſiderable piece of water; probably the accounts given of there having been a large lake here, may have originated from the plain being quite a ſwamp during the fall of the heavy rains. We returned to Santa Cruz the ſame evening, very much pleaſed with our excurſion: I regretted much, that the time propoſed for ſettling our buſineſs here, would not admit of a viſit to the Peak, a mountain ſo much ſpoken of by all who have viſited this iſland, for its wonderful height.

The bay of Santa Cruz is defended by many ſmall batteries of four or five guns each, which are placed at certain diſtances from each other, round the bay, and cloſe to the water-ſide, which expoſes them much to the annoyance of ſhips; but their principal fort is near the landing place, and is a ſtrong work, but the water being deep very near in, they are all expoſed to the attack of ſhips: on the whole, it is ſaid, they mount near one hundred pieces of cannon.

The town of Santa Cruz is very irregularly built; the principal ſtreet is broad, and has more the appearance of a ſquare than a ſtreet; the governor's houſe ſtands at the upper end; it is but a mean looking building, and has more the appearance of a country inn, than the palace of a governor: at the lower end of the ſtreet there is a ſquare monument, commemorating the appearance of Notre Dame to the Guanches, the original inhabitants of the iſland. The out-ſkirts of the town have more the appearance of a place deſerted and in ruins, than a place of trade, for many of the houſes there are either left half built, or have fallen to decay from ſome other cauſe, and the ſtone walls, which were their principal fences, are broken down and in ruins.

June 9.

On the 9th of June, in the afternoon, the tranſports having completed their watering, the ſignal was made from the Sirius for every perſon of our fleet to repair immediately on board their reſpective ſhips, and on the 10th, in the morning, we put to ſea with a light air of wind from the land.

The iſland of Teneriffe is ſituated in latitude as obſerved in the road, 28° 29′ 5″ north, and longitude, determined by the time-keeper, 16° 18′ 00′ weſt.

18th,

We ſteered to the ſouth-weſt until we were near the meridian of the iſland of Sal, the northernmoſt of the Cape De Verde Iſlands, and then ſhaped our courſe ſo as to fall in a little to the eaſtward of it. At ten in the evening of the 18th, being at no great diſtance from the iſland, we made the ſignal for the convoy to ſhorten ſail, the diſtance not being ſufficient to admit of our carrying ſail all night; at nine the next morning we ſaw the iſland bearing north-weſt by north, diſtant four leagues: I make the latitude of the north end 16° 48′ north, and its longitude, determined by the time-keeper, is 23° 03′ weſt; the ſouth end is in latitude 16° 39′ north. We ſteered from abreaſt the center of this iſland, ſouth half eaſt by compaſs, which carried us about three or four miles wide of the reef, which extends from the north-eaſt part of Bonaviſta, and runs from the ſhore in a ſouth-eaſt direction three or four miles: it was about two o'clock in the afternoon when we made the iſland of Bonaviſta, ſo that we had a very good opportunity of ſeeing the reef, from which I obſerve Captain Cook ſays, in one of his voyages, CHAP. I. 1787. voyages, he was in great danger, and that it lies off the ſouth-eaſt part of the iſland; which is certainly a miſtake, for we ran down the eaſt ſide of the iſland, at the diſtance of three miles from the reef, and I make its latitude and longitude as follows:——

Iſland of Bonaviſta	Latitude of the north end	-	16° 13′ north.
	Longitude by time-keeper	-	22° 51′ weſt.
	Latitude of the ſouth end	-	16° 00′ north.
	Variation of the compaſs	-	11° 19′ weſt.

At twelve o'clock at night, having an intention of anchoring in Port Praya Bay, in the iſland of Saint Jago, we made the ſignal and brought to till day-light; we then made ſail, the weather very hazy, which is generally the caſe among theſe iſlands: we ran cloſe round the ſouth end of the iſle of May, and ſtretched over for the ſouth end of Saint Jago; but when we opened Port Praya Bay, we were ſuddenly taken aback with the wind from the north-weſt, and every ſhip appeared to have the wind in a different direction. In this ſituation it was thought that any attempt to gain the anchorage under ſuch unfavourable circumſtances might be attended with the danger of ſome of the ſhips getting on board each other; it was therefore determined to give up the intention, and the ſignal was made for that purpoſe. The object for which we endeavoured to get into this bay, was a ſupply of freſh vegetables for the ſhips companies and convicts, an article with which we had been but ſcantily provided at Teneriffe. Port Praya Bay, on the iſland of Saint Jago, is ſituated in latitude 14° 54′ north, and longitude 23° 37′ weſt. This was about noon of the 20th of June, June 20. and we took our leave of theſe iſlands, and ſteered to the ſouthward, intending to croſs the equator, if poſſible, two or three degrees to the eaſtward

1787.

eaſtward of the meridian of Saint Jago. We had a freſh gale from the north-eaſt until we were in the latitude of 10° 30′ north; the north-eaſt trade now became faint and variable, and in 9° 30′ north we had frequent calms, with dark cloudy weather, and heavy ſhowers of rain; ſqualls were ſeen now riſing from every part of the horizon, and appeared to threaten much wind, but they ſeldom contained any thing but torrents of rain; the breezes, which were very light, and were generally from the ſouthward, very much retarded our progreſs towards the line. In latitude 8° 30′ north, the wind fixed in the ſouth-weſt quarter (rather an extraordinary circumſtance in theſe latitudes) and blew a freſh gale, with which we ſtood to the eaſtward; but as it was generally far ſoutherly, we were ſoon in longitude 18° 26′ weſt, by the time-piece, on which we had more reliance than on the dead reckoning, for here we found a current ſetting conſiderably ſtrong to the eaſtward; our lunar obſervations, which we never failed to make at every opportunity, conſtantly confirmed the truth of the watch. Finding no proſpect of a change of wind by continuing to ſtand to the eaſtward, we tacked in the above longitude, and latitude 6° 48′ north, and ſtood to the weſtward; for the wind now appeared fixed between ſouth-weſt and ſouth, a ſteady gale with a large ſea from the ſouthward; many of the convoy ſailed ſo heavy, and were ſo leewardly, that to gain ground thus circumſtanced was impoſſible; we had therefore only to hope, that by ſtanding off to a greater diſtance from the coaſt of Africa, we might find the wind incline to the eaſtward of ſouth: we, therefore, kept working in this manner for twelve days, in the courſe of which time our dead reckonings were four degrees to the weſtward of the truth, occaſioned by the ſtrong eaſterly currents; in the latitude of 4° 30′ north, and longitude, by the time-keeper, 19° 40′ weſt, the wind began to incline to the ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, which gave us ſome reaſon to hope that

CHAP. I. 1787. that the ſouth-eaſt trade wind was at no great diſtance. It continued wavering between the ſouth by eaſt and ſouth-eaſt until we had got another degree to the ſouthward, when it ſettled at ſouth-eaſt a ſteady breeze; but the eaſterly current, which would now have been an advantage to us by keeping the tranſports to windward, had ceaſed, and we found a ſtrong weſterly one running for ſeveral days, from 30 to 45 miles in 24 hours, by which our account was brought back to its original agreement with the time-keeper and lunar obſervations. The greateſt velocity of the weſterly current, was between latitude 3° 00′ north of the line, and its direction appeared to have been nearly weſt, for we never found our obſervations for the latitude materially affected by it; the ſame was the caſe with the eaſterly current, which may account for the ſhips from the northward, bound to the coaſt of Brazil, who may have no other way of determining their longitude but by account, ſcarcely having been ſenſible of any current; ſo very nearly does the weſterly ſet, counteract, in the paſſage, that to the eaſtward.

July 14. On the 14th of July, in the evening, we croſſed the equator in longitude 26° 10′ weſt, and with 5° 00′ of weſt variation. The ſouth-eaſt trade wind now made us ample amends for the failure of the north-eaſt, for it blew a freſh and ſteady breeze from eaſt-ſouth-eaſt to eaſt, which I believe is rather uncommon when the ſun has ſo great north declination: if the wind had not favoured us ſo much, we muſt have fallen in with the coaſt of Brazil, far to the northward, which, with this convoy, would have been attended with much loſs of time, and ſome degree of danger; however, with this favourable ſlant, we carried all the ſail poſſible, and were enabled to keep at a diſtance from the coaſt, but not ſo far as to be able to make the iſland of Trinidada, which it was Captain Phillip's intention to have done, had the wind permitted. We paſſed its parallel

August 3.

4° 30′ to the weſtward of it, and had for ſeveral days kept a look out for an iſland, which the Portugueſe call Aſcencao, and is ſaid to lie between Trinidada and the coaſt of Brazil; but the exiſtence of which there is much reaſon to doubt. We did not ſee any thing until the 3d of Auguſt, when we made Cape Frio; at 12 o'clock at night we were right abreaſt of it, and had it bearing north half weſt five or ſix miles; its longitude, by the time-keeper, is 41° 40′ weſt of the meridian of Greenwich *; and its latitude is 22° 58′ ſouth. This cape is an iſland diſtant two or three miles from the main land; we had very light airs and variable weather between the Cape and Rio Janeiro, which is a diſtance of 18 or 20 leagues; we never approached the ſhore nearer than five or ſix miles, at which diſtance we had 30 fathoms water, over a ſoft bottom, and at four leagues diſtance had 42 and 43 fathoms, with the ſame ſoft ground.

6th.

On the 6th of Auguſt, a light breeze from the ſea carried us within the iſlands which lie off the harbour, where we anchored for the night, with the convoy, in 14 fathoms water, clear ſoft ground, the iſland Raz (a low flat iſland) bearing ſouth by weſt two miles, and Rodondo (a high round iſland) ſouth-weſt by ſouth. The next morning an officer was ſent to the town, to wait on the viceroy, and give him information who we were, and for what purpoſe we had viſited that port: in the afternoon of the 7th, with a breeze from the ſea, we weighed, and, with the whole convoy, ſailed into the harbour. As we paſſed Fort Santa Cruz, we ſaluted with 13 guns, which was returned by an equal number from the fort; we anchored off the town in 17½ fathoms water,

---

* It will appear hereafter that we had not the true rate of the watch, and conſequently that the above longitude is not correct.

CHAP. I.
1787.

over a good ſoft bottom, and moored with beſt bower to the ſouth-eaſt, and the ſmall bower to the north-weſt; Fort Santa Cruz ſouth 36° 00′ eaſt; the Sugar-loaf ſouth, 7° 00′ eaſt; and the Flag-ſtaff, on the Iſland Cobres, north 78° 00′ weſt, diſtant from the town one mile and a half. In going into the harbour, there being very little wind, ſome of our convoy were alongſide of each other, and were drifting in with the tide; at which the maſter of the port, who was on board the Sirius, expreſſed much uneaſineſs; but he was told our ſeamen knew very well how to manage their ſhips, and that there was no danger: the Portugueſe will not allow more than one of their ſhips in the narrows at a time.

The ſhips in general had been remarkably healthy; the whole number buried ſince we left England was ſixteen, ſix only of that number had died between Teneriffe and this place, which certainly is a very trying part of the voyage to people who have not been accuſtomed to warm climates, and being fed wholly on ſalt proviſions; many of thoſe whom we had loſt ſince we left Portſmouth, had been lingering under diſeaſes with which they were afflicted when they embarked; conſequently little hope could be entertained of their recovery in ſuch a ſituation and under ſuch circumſtances. On our arrival here, there were but four out of the whole number in fevers, and a few others with various but trifling complaints; and between 20 and 30, in whom ſymptoms of the ſcurvy had lately appeared, the ſeeds of which, it was hoped and expected, would be effectually eradicated before we left this place. Freſh proviſions were immediately provided on our arrival, and ſerved to the ſhips companies, marines, and convicts; vegetables were alſo provided, of which they were to have a proportion ſerved with their other proviſions every day whilſt we remained here; oranges and other tropical fruits were in vaſt abundance at this time; the convicts alſo had a proportion of oranges with their other proviſions, this fruit being in ſuch great plenty, that the expence attending the purchaſe of a few for each individual a day, was too inconſiderable to be noticed. Indeed, it was no uncommon thing to ſee the country boats, as they paſſed the ſhips, throw in a ſhower of oranges amongſt the people.

We had not been ten days in this harbour, before we found the convicts in every ſhip much more healthy than when we left Spithead. Much pains had been taken by ſome (who, from whatever cauſe, were averſe to the expedition) to make the world believe that we were, whilſt lying at the Mother-Bank, ſo very ſickly as to bury eight or ten every day; and that a malignant diſeaſe raged with great violence on board the tranſports: how far thoſe reports were true, will beſt appear by the returns which will no doubt be ſent to England from this place. Among ſuch a number of people confined in ſmall ſhips, to have no ſick on board, was not to be expected; but the reports ſpread by ſome induſtrious perſons exceedingly exaggerated our numbers. I may, without a probability of being much miſtaken, venture to ſay, that there are few country towns in the iſland of Great-Britain, which contain 1500 inhabitants, (the number which the ſhips employed on this ſervice had on board) which have not frequently as many ſick as we had, at the time it was given out we buried ſuch numbers daily.

At this place we met with every thing that was civil and polite; a day or two after our arrival, the whole of the officers were introduced and paid their reſpects to the Vice-King, who ſeemed deſirous of making the place as convenient and pleaſant as poſſible, conſiſtent with his inſtructions, relative to foreigners, from the court of Portugal. It has

CHAP. I. 1787.

ever been a cuſtom here, that when any foreign ſhips are in this harbour, a guard boat rows conſtantly night and day, and when any boat from ſuch foreign veſſel goes on ſhore, a ſoldier is put into the boat, and continues on board her during her ſtay on ſhore: this cuſtom is intended to prevent ſmuggling, a crime which is puniſhed here with the utmoſt ſeverity; and when any foreign officer lands, an officer from the guard is ordered to attend him wherever he goes: this reſtraint, which would certainly have been very ill reliſhed by us, however neceſſary it might have been for our own convenience to have complied with it—was not even in the beginning offered, but every officer permitted to walk where he pleaſed, except in the forts; a liberty never granted to ſtrangers; nor was any centinel ever placed in any of the King's boats at landing, not even in thoſe of the tranſports; an extraordinary mark of civility and confidence, and of which every officer in our fleet was perfectly ſenſible. But when the maſters of the tranſports went on ſhore, a non-commiſſioned officer from the guard attended them wherever they went, and their ſailors were attended by a private ſoldier.

During our ſtay here, we were permitted to erect a tent on the iſland Enchados, (a ſmall iſland about a mile and a half farther up the harbour than where we lay with the ſhips,) for the purpoſe of landing a few of the aſtronomical inſtruments which were neceſſary for aſcertaining the rate of the time-keeper; they were put under the charge and management of Lieutenant William Dawes, of the marines, a young gentleman very well qualified for ſuch a buſineſs, and who promiſes fair, if he purſue his ſtudies, to make a reſpectable figure in the ſcience of aſtronomy.

The weather was rather unfavourable, during the time the inſtruments were on ſhore, for aſcertaining the rate of the time-keeper, but as conſtant attention was paid, every opportunity that offered was made uſe of, and the watch was found to be 2″-27, which is near a ſecond more than was its rate at Portſmouth.

August 21. The 21ſt of Auguſt being the anniverſary of the Prince of Brazil's birth-day, at ſun-riſe in the morning we diſplayed the flag of Portugal at the fore top-maſt head, and that of our own nation at the main and mizen: half an hour after ten, the Vice-King received compliments upon that occaſion; all the officers of our fleet which could be ſpared from duty on board, landed, and in a body went to the palace to make their compliments upon this public day; the Viceroy upon this, as well as upon every other occaſion, ſhewed us particular attention. We were the firſt company admitted into the levee-room, then the clergy and military, after which, the civilians and ſome of the military promiſcuouſly. When we entered the room a ſignal was made from the palace, and the fort began to fire. Orders had been left with the commanding officer on board the Sirius, to begin to ſalute after the fort had fired two guns, which was particularly attended to, and a ſalute of twenty-one guns was given. It is rather uncommon upon ſuch occaſions, for an Engliſh ſhip of war to ſalute at ſo early an hour, but certainly the greateſt compliment which we could at ſuch time pay them, was to obſerve in this caſe the cuſtom practiſed by their own ſhips.

September 3. On Monday the 3d of September, the watering of the convoy, and every other part of their refitting being compleated, the ſignal was made from the Sirius for every perſon to repair immediately on board their reſpective ſhips, and at the ſame time the ſignal for unmooring was

CHAP. I. 1787. September 4.

ſhewn; and on Tueſday morning, with a light breeze from the land, we weighed with the convoy. When the Sirius had got within about half a mile of Fort Santa Cruz, that caſtle ſaluted us with 21 guns, which was anſwered by us with the ſame number; a very high and uncommon compliment, and ſuch I believe as is ſeldom paid to any foreigner; but was no doubt meant as a ſuitable return to the attention paid by his Majeſty's ſhip to the birth-day of the Prince of Brazil. We carried wind enough out to run us clear without the iſlands before night.

The harbour of Rio de Janeiro may be known when you are off it, by a remarkable hill at its entrance, called Pao d'Aſucar, from its reſemblance to a loaf of ſugar; but there is a hill to the ſouth-eaſt of the harbour, which is called by ſome the Falſe Sugar-loaf; but which, as you view it from the eaſtward, I think has more the appearance of a church, with a ſhort ſpire ſteeple; this hill points out the harbour to ſhips at a diſtance, much better than Pao d'Aſucar. The land to the weſtward of the harbour is high and broken, and is commonly ſo covered with clouds, that you cannot diſcover the true make of it. Right off the harbour lie ſeveral ſmall iſlands, all ſteep to, or nearly ſo; a few rocks project a very ſmall diſtance from ſome of them, but which cannot be conſidered dangerous, as no perſon poſſeſſed of common prudence would ever take a ſhip ſo near as they lye; within thoſe iſlands (if you have not wind to carry your ſhip into the harbour) you may anchor; the beſt birth for getting under way with any wind, is to bring the iſland Raz (a low iſland) to bear ſouth or ſouth half weſt one mile, in 14 or 15 fathoms water, ſoft bottom; there is nothing in the way between this anchorage and the harbour; you will obſerve in the entrance a ſmall iſland or rock, fortified, called Lage; you ſail about mid-channel between this iſland and Fort Santa Cruz, obſerving that the tide of flood ſets upon Santa Cruz point, and the ebb upon the iſland: the ſoundings from the outer anchorage decreaſe from 14 fathoms, where we lay, regularly, till near abreaſt of the Sugar-loaf, where it is ſix and a half fathoms: from this depth you drop into 12, 14, and 16 fathoms. Run up, and anchor off the town in 17 or 18 fathoms, clear ſoft ground.

CITY OF ST. SEBASTIAN.

	Deg.	Min.	Sec.	
Latitude - - - - - - -	22	54	13	ſouth.
Longitude, deduced from our time-keeper of the meridian of Greenwich, and which agrees with that laid down in the new requiſite tables, but which certainly are not correct.	42	44	00	weſt
Longitude, determined by two aſtronomers ſent from Portugal for that and other purpoſes	43	18	45	weſt.
Longitude, by an eclipſe of Jupiter's third ſatellite, taken by Lieutenant Dawes, on the iſland Enchados - - - -	43	19	00	weſt.
Longitude, by a mean of ſeveral diſtances of ☉ and ☽ taken by me at the outer anchorage	43	11	15	weſt.
Ditto, by Lieutenant Bradley - -	43	33	00	weſt.

The tide flows here at full and change of the moon, north-eaſt by north and ſouth-weſt by ſouth, and riſes between ſix and ſeven feet.

The harbour is very extenſive and commodious; there are many convenient bays in it, where a vaſt many ſhips may be laid up in perfect ſecurity from any bad weather. The town is large, well built, and populous, but ill ſituated for the health of its inhabitants: it ſtands upon

CHAP. I. 1787. upon low ground, which was formerly ſwampy, and is ſurrounded with hills of immenſe height, which entirely exclude the benefit of the refreſhing ſea and land breezes; ſo that in the ſummer time, it is really ſuffocating hot, and of courſe very unhealthy. The ſtreets, ſome few of them, are pretty wide, the others in general rather narrow, and moſtly interſect each other at right-angles. The ſquare, or parade, oppoſite to which the boats land, is large, and the buildings round it are good, and on the ſouth ſide of this ſquare ſtands the viceroy's palace. The churches are very good buildings, and their decorations exceedingly rich, and they ſeem to have excellent organs in them; all thoſe which I ſaw here, as well as at Teneriffe, had what in a large church I conceive to be a conſiderable improvement, and it is what I never have ſeen applied to any of our organs, even in the largeſt churches in England; each pipe of the organ has a tube which projects from its lower part in a horizontal direction, and is wide at the outer end, like a trumpet: theſe tubes throw every note diſtinctly into the church, and prevent, what I have frequently obſerved, in many of our organs, ſome of the tones being almoſt loſt in the body of the inſtrument.

I obſerved here, that the different mechanics carry on their buſineſs in diſtinct parts of the town, particular ſtreets being ſet apart for particular trades; you find one ſtreet filled with taylors, another with ſhoemakers, a third with carpenters, &c. &c.

As far as numerous forts and guns can be ſaid to give ſtrength to any place, the city of Saint Sebaſtian may be conſidered as ſtrong; the iſland of Cobres, which overlooks and lies cloſe to the town, has a ſtrong work upon it, the eaſt end of it is rather low, and there is good depth of water off it, ſo that ſhips of very large ſize may come very near in, and there are many hills very near, which command the town and moſt of the works which defend it.

The annual exports from Rio de Janeiro are, 3,200 arobes of gold, which are ſent to Portugal, and of which the King has a tenth part; 6,000 caſes of ſugar, each weighing 40 arobes; 5,000 caſes of rice, and 1,500 caſks of rum, each caſk containing eight almudas *.

Before we left this port, we took on board the following ſeeds and plants, viz.

Coffee plant and ſeed, cocoa-ſeed, jalap, ipecacuhana, tamarind, banana, orange, lime, and lemon-trees, guava ſeed, prickly pear, with the cochineal in ſeed upon it, pomroſe, grape, tobacco, and rice for ſeed.

feeding? ✓

---

* An arobe is thirty-two pounds; an almuda, four gallons and a half.

A TABLE of the WINDS and WEATHER, &c. &c. in the Paſſage from the Iſland of Teneriffe to Rio de Janeiro, Coaſt of Brazil, on board His Majeſty's Ship SIRIUS.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude.		Longitude from meridian of Greenwich		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.		Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1787.	North.		Weſt.						Day.	
June	°	′	°	′						
10	28	16	16	18	Eaſterly. Variable.	72	30	02	26	Fair.
11			16	16	S. E. to S. S. W.	71½	30	07	27	Light winds and hazy.
12	27	34	16	24	Variable.	73	30	01	28	Clear, inclinable to calm.
13	26	24	17	31	N. W. to N. N. E.	72	30	00	29	Moderate breezes and cloudy.
14	25	10	18	34	North to N. E.	73½	30	00		Moderate and cloudy, with ſmall rain.
15	23	20	19	41	N. E.	74	30	1	1	A freſh breeze and cloudy.
16	21	21	21	10	N. E.	73½	30	0	2	Freſh breeze and hazy.
17	18	55	22	22	N. E. E. N. E.	73½	30	11	3	Freſh breezes and clear.
18	16	24	22	51	N. E.	75½	30	0	4	Half paſt 10 A. M. Iſle of Sall, N. 78° 00′ W. 4 leagues. Freſh breezes and cloudy.
19	14	53	23	33	E. N. E. N. E.	76½	29	96	5	Freſh breezes and hazy. South end of St. Jago, W. by S. 4 or 5 miles.
20	13	29	23	16	N. E. Eaſt.	80½	30	9	6	Moderate and hazy.
21	11	51	23	09	Eaſt. N. E. by E.	80	30	14	7	Moderate breezes and hazy.
22	10	44	23	23	N. E. N. by E.	82	30	14	8	Light breezes with lightning in the night.
23	9	48	23	02	N. E. to North.	80½	30	4	9	Light breezes and hazy, with ditto.
24	9	02	22	54	N. N. E. Variable.	79½	30	3	10	Ditto, with lightning in the night. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
25	8	30	22	55	N. E. Variable.	81½	30	3	11	Light airs, cloudy, and unſettled.
26	8	45	22	35	Variable.	82½	30	3	12	Ditto, with frequent ſqualls.
27	8	12	21	45	Variable.	80½	30	4	13	P. M. ditto. A. M. light airs and fair.
28	7	29	21	41	Variable.	80	30	2	14	Light airs, with rain, thunder, and lightning.
29	7	27	20	40	S. W. South.	81	30	5	15	Moderate and cloudy. Lightning in the night.
30	7	19	19	43	South. S. W.	82	30	4	16	Moderate and cloudy.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude from meridian of Greenwich		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.		Moon's Age.	Weather, &c.
1787. July	North.		Weſt.						Day.	
	°	′	°	′		°	°	′		
1	6	48	18	51	S. W. Weſt.	80½	30	07	17	Squally with heavy rain.
2	6	32	19	09	S. S. W. South	80½	30	06	18	Moderate, but frequent ſqualls with rain.
3	6	32	19	41	South.	80½	30	06	19	Moderate and fair.
4	6	17	19	46	South.	81	30	08	20	Light airs and fair.
5	5	54	19	55	S. by E.	81	30	07	21	Light breezes and fair.
6	5	36	18	26	S. S. W.	81	30	01	22	Moderate and cloudy.
7	5	16	18	57	South. S. S. E.	81	30	04	23	Freſh breezes and hazy.
8	4	39	19	34	S. S. E.	80	30	07	24	Moderate and hazy.
9	3	56	20	17	S. S. E.	80	30	07	25	Moderate and fair.
10	3	29	21	00	S. S. E.	79	30	06	26	Moderate and clear.
11	3	00	22	33	S. S. E.	79	30	06	27	Moderate and clear.
12	2	20	24	00	S. S. E. S. E. by S.	78	30	06	28	Fine moderate.
13	1	18	25	09	S. S. E. S. E.	79	30	06	29	Moderate and cloudy.
14	0	18	25	55	S. E. by E.	79	30	03	1	At 5 P. M. croſſed the equator in 26° 10′ weſt Longitude. A Moderate breeze, and fair.
	South.									
15	0	28	26	32	E. S. E.	79	30	05	2	Ditto.
16	1	24	26	51	E. S. E. E. by S.	79	30	07	3	Moderate and clear.
17	2	49	27	19	E. by S.	79	30	07	4	Moderate and cloudy.
18	4	18	27	42	Eaſt E. by S.	80	30	06	5	Moderate breezes and clear.
19	6	03	27	41	Eaſt.	81	30	07	6	Moderate breezes and clear.
20	6	57	27	42	Eaſt E. by S.	80	30	07	7	Light breezes and fair.
21	8	03	28	00	E. by S. E. S. E.	80	30	08	8	Squally with light ſhowers of rain.
22	9	08	28	21	S. E. Eaſt.	79	30	09	9	Moderate and cloudy.
23	10	03	28	31	E. by S. Eaſt.	77	30	13	10	P. M. moderate and fair. A. M. ſqually with rain.
24	11	51	28	40	E. by S.	78	30	07	11	Freſh breezes and ſqually.
25	13	29	29	07	E. S. E.	76	30	20	12	Moderate breezes and cloudy.
26	15	07	29	40	E. S. E.	76	30	20	13	Ditto.
27	16	36	30	05	E. S. E. S. E.	75	30	20	14	Freſh breezes and ſqually, with rain.
28	18	10	31	15	E. S. E.	74	30	22	15	P. M. ditto. A. M. freſh gales and fair.
29	19	37	33	18	E. S. E. Eaſt.	73	30	24	16	P. M. freſh gales. A. M. moderate and fair.
30	20	42	34	50	Eaſt N. E.	74	30	26	17	Moderate and fair.
31	21	55	36	04	N. E. by F.	74	30	24	18	Moderate and fair.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude.	Longitude from meridian of Greenwich	Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1787.	South.	Weſt.				Day.	
Auguſt	° ′	° ′	N. E. by E.				
1	22 41	37 53	N. N. E.	74	30 17	19	Moderate and cloudy.
2	23 04	40 30	N. N. E. N. by E.	75	30 10	20	Freſh breezes and fair.
3	23 14		N.E. by N. N. by E.				Cape Frio N. E. by E. ½ E. 12 leagues. Light breezes and variable.
4	23 17		Variable.	72	30 26	22	Light variable airs.
		Entrance of Rio Janeiro N. W. by W. ½ W. 8 or 9 leagues.					
5	30 06	42 25	Variable.	71	30 26	23	Light airs, frequent calms, and flying fogs.

An ACCOUNT of Obſervations for the Variation of the Compaſs made on board His Majeſty's Ship SIRIUS, between England and the Cape of Good Hope, in 1787.

Latitude in	Longitude from meridian of Greenwich	Variation by Azimuth.	Variation by Amplitude
° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′
42 16 N.	11 50 W.	20 26W.	
40 10	12 00	20 04	20 40W.
33 31	15 40	18 06	
29 43	15 18	18 27	
22 55	19 23	15 40	
18 13	22 33	12 00	
15 51	22 59	11 30	
12 15	23 23	10 23	
11 35	23 16	10 40	
4 30	19 43	7 40	
1 04	25 12	5 50	
00 00	26 10	5 30	
1 44 S.	26 51	5 09	
3 07	27 19	5 06	
4 38	27 44		5 00
12 10	28 08		3 44
18 33	30 15	0 01 E.	
19 50 S.	31 44 W.	1 40W.	
20 58	33 03		4 40 E.
22 02	34 23	5 12	
22 47	38 16	6 01	
In the harbour of Rio Janeiro 6° 12′ E.			
26 12	37 57	4 40 E.	
30 38	31 33	2 40	
31 50	22 32	2 20W.	
32 24	22 52		2 30W.
33 54	3 10	7 40	
35 11	0 41 E.	12 08	
36 20	5 05	16 40	16 20
36 52	8 11	16 40	16 18
36 06	10 10	17 00	
34 43	16 38	19 00	
34 20	17 11	21 30	

CHAPTER

CHAPTER II.

Anchor in Table-Bay.—Refreſhments procured there.—Depart from the Cape of Good Hope.—Captain Phillip quits the Sirius, and proceeds on the voyage in the Supply.—The Sirius arrives in Botany-Bay.—Finds the Supply at anchor there.—Arrival of the Buſſole and Aſtrolabe.—Leave Botany-Bay, and anchor in Port Jackſon.—The Table of Winds, Weather, &c.

WE had light and variable winds for the two firſt days after leav- CHAP. II.
ing Rio de Janeiro, then it veered round to the north-eaſt, and 1787.
freſhened up, and was ſome times as far to the northward as north by
eaſt; we ſteered off eaſt-ſouth-eaſt and ſouth-eaſt. In latitude 25° 50′
ſouth, the weather became dark and cloudy, with much rain and light-
ning all round the horizon, which ſhifted the wind to the ſouthward,
and the weather cleared up. On the 19th, we ſaw ſeveral Pentada Sept. 19.
birds. On the 29th, having had thick hazy weather during the night, 29th,
ſome of the convoy had been inattentive to the courſe, and were found
at day-light conſiderably ſcattered and to leeward; we bore down and
made the ſignal for cloſing. Nothing worth relating happened this
paſſage. On the 12th of October, as we were expecting every hour to October 12.
make the land, the weather being hazy, with a ſtrong weſterly wind,
at midnight we made the ſignal and brought to; at day-light we bore
away and made ſail, and at ſix o'clock ſaw the land, diſtant 10 leagues;

CHAP. II. at noon, the entrance of Table-Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope, bore eaſt three leagues. 1787. At the diſtance of ſeven or eight leagues from the land, the Supply armed tender being ordered to wait for the ſternmoſt of the convoy, Lieutenant Ball took that opportunity of ſounding, and at the before-mentioned diſtance had 115 fathoms, over a black ſandy bottom; and at five leagues diſtance he had 90 fathoms, ſand with ſmall ſtones. The water appeared, at a much greater diſtance, conſiderably diſcoloured, from which I think there is reaſon to ſuppoſe that the ſoundings from this part of the coaſt run farther off to the weſtward. We were all this time in the parallel of 34° ſouth. On the October 14. 14th of October, at five in the evening, we anchored with all the convoy in Table-Bay, Cape of Good Hope, and at ſun-riſe the next morning we ſaluted the fort with 13 guns, which was anſwered by the ſame number.

By altitudes taken this morning for the time-keeper, it appeared that we had not had ſufficient time at Rio Janeiro for aſcertaining the true rate of the watch's going, having determined what we have allowed this paſſage, viz. 2″-33 from a very few obſervations, and thoſe not to be relied on, the weather having been very unfavourable; for, by the difference of time between the meridian of Rio Janeiro and the cape, both which places are well determined, the watch has loſt at the rate of 3″-17, which we ſhall hereafter allow to be the true rate; and as a proof of that having been really its rate all along, by allowing it from the time of our leaving Portſmouth, until our arrival at Rio Janeiro, we ſhall have the longitude of that place 43° 33′ 30″ weſt of the meridian of Greenwich, which is 45′ 45″ to the weſtward of that laid down in the new Requiſite Tables, and which agrees very nearly with the obſervations made on the ſpot.

1787.

As Table-Bay was the laſt port at which we could touch for refreſhments during our voyage, ſuch articles as we were in want of, both for preſent conſumption, and for ſtocking the intended ſettlement, were applied for, in ſuch quantities as we could find room for on board the different ſhips. Eight or ten days elapſed before any anſwer could be obtained from the council, what neceſſaries and in what quantities they could ſupply us with: this delay occaſioned our paſſing more time here than was at firſt intended or expected.

A few days before we ſailed, having compleated ſuch articles of proviſions as we wanted, we embarked on board the Sirius ſix cows with calf, two bulls, one of which was ſix or ſeven months old, with a number of ſheep, goats, hogs, and poultry of different kinds; on board one of the tranſports were put three mares, each having a colt of ſix months old, and a young ſtallion; a quantity of live ſtock was alſo put on board the ſtore ſhips; ſo that the whole on government account, I think, amounted nearly to one ſtallion, three mares, three colts, ſix cows, two bulls, forty-four ſheep, four goats, and twenty-eight hogs. The officers on board the tranſports, who were to compoſe the garriſon, had each provided themſelves with ſuch live ſtock as they could find room for, not merely for the purpoſe of living upon during the paſſage, but with a view of ſtocking their little farms in the country to which we were going; every perſon in the fleet was with that view determined to live wholly on ſalt proviſions, in order that as much live ſtock as poſſible might be landed on our arrival.

Nov. 12.

November 12th, having completed all our buſineſs at the Cape, we made preparations for our ſailing; and on the 13th, we weighed with the whole convoy, and ſtood out of the bay.

13th.

During the time we lay in this bay, I took a conſiderable number of lunar obſervations, by a mean of which I make Cape Town, in longitude 18° 24′ 30″ eaſt of the meridian of Greenwich: latitude obſerved in the bay, 33° 55′ ſouth, and variation of the compaſs, obſerved about 18 leagues to the weſtward, 21° 52′ weſt.

We had freſh gales from the ſouth-ſouth-eaſt and ſouth-eaſt, and ſometimes at ſouth, for the firſt eight days, which, with a large ſea, ſo very much diſtreſſed our cattle, that we were very apprehenſive we ſhould loſe ſome of them. Nov. 25. On the 25th, being in latitude 38° 40′ ſouth, and longitude 25° 05′ eaſt, Captain Phillip embarked on board the Supply, in order to proceed ſingly in that veſſel to the coaſt of New South Wales, where he made ſure of arriving a fortnight or three weeks before us, as ſome of the convoy ſailed very heavy; he took with him from the Sirius, Mr. Philip Gidley King, ſecond lieutenant, and Lieutenant Dawes, of the marines, who had hitherto kept an account of the time-keeper, which he alſo took with him; ſeveral carpenters, ſawyers, and blackſmiths were likewiſe put on board the Supply, in order, if they arrived in ſufficient time, to examine the place attentively; and the governor had fixed on the moſt eligible ſpot to build upon, there to erect ſome temporary ſtore-houſes for the reception of the ſtores, when the convoy arrived; but as a number of working people would be wanted in carrying on ſuch ſervice, three of the beſt ſailing tranſports, under the command of Lieutenant Shortland, the agent, were alſo directed to quit the convoy, and make the beſt of their way to Botany-Bay; Major Roſs, the lieutenant-governor, embarked in one of thoſe tranſports; the remaining tranſports and ſtore-ſhips were left under the care of the Sirius. The next day, after parting company, the Supply was in ſight from the maſt-head, and the three tranſports were about ſeven or eight miles from us, but the wind having ſhifted to the ſouth-eaſt in the night of the 27th, we ſtood to the ſouthward and ſaw no more of them. I was at this time of opinion, that we had hitherto kept in too northerly a parallel to enſure ſtrong and laſting weſterly winds, which determined me, as ſoon as Captain Phillip had left the fleet, to ſteer to the ſouthward and keep in a higher latitude. We had the winds from the north-eaſt with ſqualls and hazy weather, until the 29th, when it backed round to the weſtward again, and the weather became fair. After the time-keeper was taken from the Sirius, I kept an account of the ſhip's way by my own watch, which I had found for a conſiderable time, to go very well with Kendal's; I knew it could be depended on ſufficiently to carry on from one lunar obſervation to another, without any material error; for although its rate of going was not ſo regular as I could have wiſhed, yet its variation would not in a week or ten days have amounted to any thing of conſequence; it was made for me by Mr. John Brockbank, of Cornhill, London, upon an improved principle of his own. The lunar obſervation, which I never failed to take every opportunity, and which Lieutenant Bradley alſo paid conſtant attention to, gave me reaſon to think, by their near agreement with the watch, that it continued to go well. On the 1ſt of December our longitude, by account, was 36° 42′ eaſt; by the watch 36° 48′ eaſt; and by diſtance of ☉ and ☽ 36° 24′ eaſt: latitude 40° 05′ ſouth, and the variation of the compaſs 29° 40′ weſt. For three ſucceſſive days both Mr. Bradley and myſelf had a variety of diſtances, by which our account ſeemed to be very correct. I now determined (if I could avoid it) never to get to the northward of latitude 40° 00′ ſouth, and to keep between that parallel and 43° or 44° ſouth. After the 3d, I found, by altitudes taken for the watch, that we went farther to the eaſtward than the log gave us, and no opportunity offered for getting a

1787.
Nov. 27.

29th.

Dec. 1.

lunar

CHAP. II. lunar obſervation to compare with it until the 13th, when both Mr. Bradley and I got ſeveral good diſtances of the ☉ and ☽, by which our 1787. Dec. 13. longitude was 70° 22′ eaſt, by the watch 70° 07′ eaſt, and by account 14th. 67° 37′ eaſt. On the 14th, the weather being very clear, we had another ſet of diſtances, which gave our longitude 73° 06′ eaſt, by the 15th. watch 73° 09′ eaſt, and by account 70° 34′ eaſt. Again, on the 15th, I obſerved with two different inſtruments, one by Ramſden, and the other by Dolland, and the reſults agreed within ten miles of longitude; the mean was 75° 18′ eaſt, by the watch 75° 16′ eaſt, and by account 72° 49′ eaſt. Mr. Bradley's mean was alſo 75° 18′ eaſt; ſo that, as I have already obſerved, the ſhip ſeemed gaining on the account; but there was no reaſon to believe, that in the middle of this very extenſive ocean we were ever ſubject to much current: I therefore attribute this ſet to the eaſtward, to the large following ſea, which conſtantly attended us, ſince we had taken a more ſoutherly parallel. The variation of the compaſs continued to increaſe pretty faſt, until we were as far to the eaſtward as 39° 00′ eaſt, where we found it 31° 00′ weſt; from that longitude to 54° 30′ eaſt, it increaſed very ſlowly to 32° 00′ weſt, which was the higheſt we had; during all that time we were in the parallels of 40° 00′ and 41° 00′ ſouth. We ſaw many whales, of a very large 16th. ſize, during this part of our paſſage, but very few birds. On the 16th, we ſaw a quantity of ſea weed, which I ſuppoſe might have come from the iſland of Saint Paul, as we were now near its meridian, and not more than 60 leagues from it. We had at preſent every proſpect of an excellent paſſage to Van Diemen's Land: for although the wind ſometimes ſhifted to the north-eaſt, it ſeldom continued more than a few hours; then backed round again to north-weſt and ſouth-weſt, between which quarters it ſeemed to blow as a trade wind; from north-north-eaſt to the weſtward, and round to ſouth-ſouth-weſt are in general its limits:

1787.

we had frequently hazy weather, but not ſo thick as to be called foggy; the wind in general very freſh.

Whenever there was an appearance of hazy weather coming on, the ſignal to cloſe was always made, and the convoy kept in as cloſe order as poſſible, to prevent thoſe ſhips which ſailed heavy from the riſk of being ſeparated from the Sirius. On the 20th, the wind increaſed and was ſteady between weſt-north-weſt and ſouth-weſt; we ſeldom ſailed leſs than 50 leagues in the 24 hours, and frequently more. With the north-weſt winds we generally had foul weather, but whenever the wind changed to the ſouth-weſt quarter, it cleared up and became pleaſant. It ſeems to be exactly the reverſe of the effects produced by thoſe winds in the northern hemiſphere, where it is well known to ſeamen, that ſoutherly and ſouth-weſt winds are generally attended with hazy and foul weather, often accompanied with ſtrong gales; it was exactly ſo here with the wind from the north-weſt. We knew by experience, when in the open ocean at a diſtance from land, in either hemiſphere, that the winds which blow from thoſe quarters of the compaſs next to the elevated pole, are generally dry and clear, and from the oppoſite, generally wet and hazy.

January 1, 1788.

On the 1ſt of January we had a very heavy gale of wind from north-north-weſt to weſt-north-weſt, attended with frequent and very violent ſqualls or guſts, and hazy weather; the convoy in general were brought under a reefed fore top-ſail, and the Sirius carried her three ſtorm ſtay-ſails; ſo that the tranſports ſhould not find it neceſſary to attempt carrying more ſail than was conſiſtent with ſafety: the ſea was very high and irregular, and broke with great violence on ſome of the ſhips; the rolling and labouring of our ſhip exceedingly diſtreſſed the cattle, which

CHAP. II. 1788. were now in a very weakly ſtate, and the great quantities of water which we ſhipped during this gale, very much aggravated their diſtreſs; the poor animals were frequently thrown with much violence off their legs, and exceedingly bruiſed by their falls, although every method, which could be contrived for their eaſe and comfort, was practiſed; the ſhip was very ill fitted for ſuch a cargo; and the very lumbered condition ſhe had conſtantly been in rendered it impoſſible to do more for them, except by putting ſlings under them; a method which, when propoſed, was rejected by thoſe to whoſe care and management they were intruſted; from an idea, that they would entirely loſe the uſe of their legs by ſuch means, although it were only practiſed in bad weather.

We perceived the ſea now covered over with luminous ſpots, much reſembling ſo many lanthorns floating on its ſurface; whether this appearance proceeded from the ſpawn of fiſh, which may ſwim in ſmall collected quantities, or from that animal of a jelly-like ſubſtance, which is known to ſailors by the name of blubber, I cannot tell, but I believe the latter, as we had ſeen in the day ſome of a large ſize. We had now alſo many ſea-birds about the ſhip, ſuch as albatroſſes, gulls of different kinds, and a large black bird, which, in the motion of its wings, had much the appearance of a crow, but its neck and wings are longer than thoſe of that bird, and it is altogether larger.

January 4. On the 4th of January we had a number of good obſervations for the longitude, and as it was probable they might be the laſt we ſhould have an opportunity of taking, before we ſhould make Van Diemen's Land, the reſult, which gave 135° 30′ eaſt, was marked with chalk in large characters on a black painted board, and ſhewn over the ſtern to the convoy; at the ſame time a ſignal was made which had been previouſly appointed.

January 6. On the 6th in the evening, as I intended running in for the land all night, I made the ſignal for the convoy to cloſe, and to drop into the Sirius's wake, under an eaſy ſail; the night was dark, but clear in the horizon, ſo that we could ſee near two leagues a-head. This night the aurora auſtreales were very bright, of a beautiful crimſon colour, ſtreaked with orange, yellow, and white, and theſe colours were conſtantly changing their places: the higheſt part was about 45° above the horizon, and it ſpread from ſouth by eaſt to ſouth-ſouth-weſt. 7th. On the next morning at ſun-riſe, one of the tranſports having puſhed a little a-head, made the ſignal for ſeeing the land, in which, however, ſhe was miſtaken: we at this time judged ourſelves not leſs than 33 or 34 leagues from it, deducing our diſtance from the laſt lunar obſervation.

It may not be improper, before I proceed farther, to obſerve of the compaſs, that its weſterly variation decreaſed from the longitude of 54° 30′ eaſt, where it was greateſt, (viz. 32° 10′ weſt,) to longitude 135° 30′ eaſt, where it was 1° 00′ eaſt.

We continued ſteering in for the land, and the weather being cloudy, in order to make ſure of our latitude, which, in our preſent ſituation, was of conſequence, we took two altitudes before noon, by which we were in 44° 05′ ſouth, which being ſeventeen miles to the ſouthward of the rock, called the Mewſtone, we hauled from eaſt-north-eaſt to north-eaſt, and at three P.M. of the 8th, (by log,) we made the land in that direction, ſtood well in with the Mewſtone, and, as the wind was freſh from the weſtward, I would have gone within it, and ranged along the coaſt from point to point; but having a convoy of tranſports and ſtore-ſhips aſtern, who were to be led by the Sirius, I was apprehenſive, in caſe it fell little wind under the land, and night ſet in, an accident might have happened to ſome of thoſe ſhips, which all the knowledge I could have gained, by a nearer examination of the coaſt, would not have compenſated: I therefore ſtood on without the Mewſtone, and ſteered in for the ſouth cape, which we paſſed at three miles diſtance, leaving the rocks Swilly and Eddiſtone without us. The ſouth cape terminates in a low rocky point, and appears to be a bold ſhore, and the hills within it, which are moderately high, appear to have many tall trees upon them, which are very ſtreight, and ſeem to have no branches, except near the top; from which circumſtance, I ſuppoſe them to be the palm or cabbage tree. To the eaſtward of the ſouth cape, between that and the next point of land, which is called Taſman's-head, is a large bay, at the bottom of which there appears to be an iſland or two; from the ſouth-weſt cape to the ſouth cape there are ſeveral bays, and pretty deep bights, which may probably afford ſome good harbours; there are alſo ſeveral appearances of iſlands on this part of the coaſt, but moſt of them ſeem to lie pretty near the land, except the Mewſtone, (a high ragged rock) which is about ten miles off, and Swilly and Eddyſtone, which lie about ſouth by eaſt from the ſouth cape, about five leagues diſtant. Swilly is a high rock, and the Eddiſtone has, at a diſtance, the appearance of a ſail; theſe two rocks are at the oppoſite ends of a ledge of ſunken rocks, on which the ſea ſeemed to break very high: this ledge lies eaſt-north-eaſt and weſt-ſouth-weſt; the two rocks are in one with that bearing.

The latitudes and longitudes of the different points or capes, ſeem to have been very correctly determined by Captains Cook and Furneaux, when

CHAP. II.
1788.

when they were here; it would therefore be ſuperfluous to mention them here from any other authority; they have ſettled them as under:

		° ′ ″		° ′ ″	
South-weſt cape - -	latitude	43 37 00 S.	longitude	146 07 00	E. of Greenwich.
South cape - - -	ditto	43 42 00	ditto	146 56 00	
Taſman's-head - -	ditto	43 33 00	ditto	147 28 00	
Swilly iſland, or rock,	ditto	43 55 00	ditto	147 06 00	
Adventure bay - -	ditto	42 21 20	ditto	147 29 00	

Such obſervations as we had an opportunity of making near this coaſt, agree very well with the above.

We had juſt got to the eaſtward of the ſouth cape as it became dark, and were about four miles from it when it fell calm, and ſoon after a very light air ſprung up from eaſt-north-eaſt, which, with a large weſterly ſwell, ſcarcely gave the ſhips ſteerage way: this ſituation gave me ſome anxiety, as I was uncertain whether the ſternmoſt ſhips had ſeen Swilly, and they were at this time a little ſcattered; the breeze, however, favoured us, by freſhening up at north-eaſt, which enabled the whole of us to weather thoſe rocks, without the apprehenſion of paſſing too near them in the dark: in the morning at day-light they bore weſt-ſouth-weſt three leagues.

Here we ſaw many animals playing along-ſide, which were at firſt taken for ſeals; but, after having ſeen a conſiderable number of them, I did not think they were the ſeal, at leaſt they appeared to me a very different animal from the ſeals to be met with on the coaſt of America and Newfoundland; for they have a ſhort round head, but theſe creatures heads were long, and tapered to the noſe; they had very long whiſkers, and frequently raiſed themſelves half the length of the body out of the water, to look round them, and often leaped entirely out; which I do not ever recollect to have ſeen the ſeal do: from theſe circumſtances, I judged them to be ſomething of the ſea-otter.

January 8, On the night of the 8th, it blew ſo ſtrong from north-north-eaſt and north, as to bring us under cloſe reefed main top-ſail and fore-ſail; this gale was accompanied with thunder, lightning, and rain, which ſoon changed it to the ſouth-weſt quarter, and immediately cleared the weather. 10th. On the 10th, we had two very violent white ſqualls from north-weſt, with lightning, thunder, and rain: theſe ſqualls came on ſo very ſuddenly, that ſome of the convoy were taken with too much ſail out, which obliged them to let go their tacks and ſheets, by which means one ſhip carried away her main-yard in the ſlings, another had her three top-ſails blown from the yards, and a third loſt her jibb, and ſome other trifling accident: this occaſioned a ſhort delay, but as ſoon as theſe accidents were repaired we made ſail, and availed ourſelves of every ſlant of wind, to get in with the coaſt. I was deſirous of falling in with it about Cape Howe, which is in latitude 37° 30′ ſouth, and longitude 150° 00′ eaſt, and from thence to have run down along the coaſt to Botany-bay; but the wind prevailed ſo long from the northward and north-weſt, that we could not fetch that part of the coaſt. 15th, On the 15th, by a good lunar obſervation, I found our longitude to be 152° 43′ eaſt, which was twenty-five leagues farther from the coaſt than I expected we were. Every endeavour was exerted to get to the 19th, weſtward, and on the 19th in the evening, judging from the laſt obſervation, (the dead reckoning being out,) that we could not be above eight or nine leagues from the land, the wind being from the eaſtward, I made the ſignal and brought to with the convoy till day-light, when we made the land in latitude 34° 50′ ſouth, ſix or ſeven leagues diſtant. We ſteered in ſlanting to the northward, until we were within about ſix or ſeven miles of the ſhore, and then ſteered along the coaſt at that diſtance, not chooſing, as the wind was eaſterly, to carry the convoy nearer. At noon, we were abreaſt of Red-point, which is well determined by Captain Cook: I obſerved its latitude to be 34° 29′ ſouth; this point being only ten leagues from Botany-bay, I made ſail a-head of the convoy, in order if poſſible, to get ſight of its entrance before night. There are a number of projecting points hereabout, which by being ſo near in ſhore deceived us a good deal; however, we perceived from the maſt-head before dark, what I had no doubt was the entrance of the bay, as we were now near its latitude; which is certainly the only true guide whereby you can find it; for the coaſt has nothing ſo remarkable in it as to ſerve for a direction for finding this harbour. About three leagues to the ſouthward of Botany-bay, there is a range of whitiſh coloured cliffs on the coaſts, which extend ſome diſtance farther ſouth, and over theſe cliffs the land is moderately high and level; on this level land there is a ſmall clump of trees, ſomething like that on Poſt down hill, near Portſmouth: theſe, I think, are the only remarkable objects here. As ſoon as we had brought the entrance of the bay to bear north-north-weſt, we brought to, and made the ſignal for the convoy to paſs in ſucceſſion under the Sirius's ſtern, when they were informed, that I intended, as the wind was eaſterly, to keep working off under an eaſy ſail till day-light, and that the entrance of the harbour bore north-north-weſt ſeven or eight miles; which I ſuppoſed they could not have been near enough to have ſeen before dark. The next morning being fair, with a ſouth-eaſt wind, we made ſail at day-light for this opening, and, by ſignal, ordered the ſhips into the Sirius's wake. When the bay was quite open, we diſcovered the Supply and the three tranſports

January 20.

at

CHAP. II. 1788. at an anchor; the former had arrived the 18th, and the three latter the 19th. At eight A. M. of the 20th, we anchored with the whole of the convoy in Botany-bay, in eight fathoms water. As the ſhips were ſailing in, a number of the natives aſſembled on the ſouth ſhore, and, by their motions, ſeemed to threaten; they pointed their ſpears, and often repeated the words, wara, wara. The Supply had not gained more than forty hours of us, and the three tranſports twenty. We probably met with freſher winds than they had done, otherwiſe I think theſe ſhips, all ſailing well, ſhould have had much more advantage of the heavy ſailing part of the convoy. On the firſt day of my arrival, I went with the governor to examine the ſouth ſhore, in order to fix on a ſpot for erecting ſome buildings; but we found very little freſh water, and not any ſpot very inviting for our purpoſe: we had a ſhort converſation with a party of the natives, who were exceedingly ſhy. During the time we lay here, we ſounded the bay all over, and found a conſiderable extent of anchorage in four, five, ſix, and ſeven fathoms water, but wholly expoſed to eaſterly winds, and no poſſibility of finding ſhelter from thoſe winds in any part of the anchorage. We anchored on the north ſhore, off a ſandy bay, which I think as good a birth as any in the bay; Cape Banks bore eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, and Point Solander ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, the ground clear and good. The wind, either from the north-eaſt or ſouth-eaſt quarters, ſet in a prodigious ſea. Higher up the bay there is a ſpot of four fathoms, where a few ſhips might be laid in tolerable ſecurity, but they muſt be lightened, to enable them to paſs over a flat of twelve feet, and that depth but of narrow limits.

January 21. The day after my arrival, the governor, accompanied by me and two other officers, embarked in three boats, and proceeded along the coaſt to the northward, intending, if we could, to reach what Captain Cook

1788.

has called Broken-bay, with a hope of diſcovering a better harbour, as well as a better country; for we found nothing at Botany-bay to recommend it as a place on which to form an infant ſettlement. In this examination, a large opening, or bay, about three leagues and a half to the northward of Cape Banks, was the firſt place we looked into: it had rather an unpromiſing appearance, on entering between the outer heads or capes that form its entrance, which are high, rugged, and perpendicular cliffs; but we had not gone far in, before we diſcovered a large branch extending to the ſouthward; into this we went, and ſoon found ourſelves perfectly land-locked, with a good depth of water. We proceeded up for two days, examining every cove or other place which we found capable of receiving ſhips; the country was alſo particularly noticed, and found greatly ſuperior in every reſpect to that round Botany-bay. The governor, being ſatisfied with the eligibility of this ſituation, determined to fix his reſidence here, and returned immediately to the ſhips.

January 25.

On the 25th, we received the time-keeper from the Supply, which I am ſorry to ſay, had been let down while on board her, during the paſſage from the Cape of Good Hope; and the ſame day, the governor ſailed in the Supply, with a detachment of marines, to the new harbour, which Captain Cook had obſerved as he ſailed along the coaſt, and named Port Jackſon; he did not enter it, and therefore was uncertain of there being a ſafe harbour here: it has the appearance from ſea of being only an open bay.

26th.

The convoy was again left to my care, the maſters of the ſhips having had previous orders from Captain Phillip to prepare for ſea. On the 26th, I made the ſignal for the tranſports to get under way. We perceived this morning two large ſhips in the offing, ſtanding in for the

bay,

bay, under French colours: theſe ſhips had been obſerved two days before, but the wind blowing freſh from north-weſt, they were not able to get in with the land. I ſent a boat with an officer to aſſiſt them in, and about an hour after, a breeze ſprung up from the ſouth-eaſt, and they were ſafely anchored in the bay. I then got under way, and with the tranſports worked out of the bay, and the ſame evening anchored the whole convoy in Port Jackſon.

The two ſtrangers proved to be the Buſſole and Aſtrolabe, which ſailed from Breſt in June, 1785, upon diſcoveries, and were commanded by Monſ. de la Perouſe; Monſ. de L'Angle, who commanded one of the ſhips when they left France, had been lately, when the ſhips were at the Iſlands of Navigators, murdered, with ſeveral other officers and ſeamen, by the natives; who had, before that unfortunate day, always appeared to be upon the moſt friendly and familiar terms with them. This accident, we underſtood, happened when ~~their~~ launches were on ſhore filling water, on the laſt day which they intended remaining at thoſe iſlands: during the time they were employed in filling their water-caſks, having the moſt perfect confidence in the friendly diſpoſition of the natives, the ſailors had been inattentive to the keeping the boats afloat; ſome miſunderſtanding having happened between ſome of the ſeamen and the natives, an inſult had been offered by one or other, which was reſented by the oppoſite party; a quarrel enſued, and the impoſſibility of moving the boats, expoſed the officers and crews to the rage of the multitude, who attacked them with clubs and ſhowers of ſtones, and would inevitably have maſſacred the whole, if there had not been a ſmall boat at hand, which picked up thoſe, who depending on their ſwimming, had quitted the ſhore. Many of the natives were killed upon this occaſion; and the loſs of the ſhips was ſaid to have been fourteen perſons killed, including Captain de L'Angle, and ſome other officers; ſeveral were much wounded; and the boats were entirely deſtroyed.

This account of the accident is by no means to be conſidered as a correct ſtatement of it; as it is only collected from little hints dropt in the courſe of converſation with different officers of thoſe ſhips: they did not appear diſpoſed to ſpeak upon that ſubject, we therefore did not preſume to interrogate. The voyage of thoſe ſhips will no doubt be publiſhed by authority; till then we muſt wait for the particulars of that, and another unfortunate accident which happened to them upon the weſt coaſt of America, where they loſt two boats and twenty-two men, including ſix officers, in a ſurf.

A TABLE of the WINDS and WEATHER, &c. &c. on a Paſſage from Rio de Janeiro to the Cape of Good Hope; and from thence to Botany-Bay, on the Eaſt Coaſt of New Holland, on board His Majeſty's Ship SIRIUS, in 1787, and Beginning of 1788.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.		Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1787. Sept.	South.								Day		
	°	″				°	°	′			
5	23	18	Maricao Iſland N. ½ W. 7 leagues		Variable.	73	30	09	25	6	Light airs and fair.
			Weſt.								
			°	′							
6	24	33	42	22	Eaſt. E. N. E.	73	30	07	26	6	P. M. light airs. A. M. freſh breezes and cloudy.
7	25	46	40	34	N. E. N. N. E.	74	30	09	27	7	Freſh breezes and cloudy.
8	25	56	39	39	Variable.	70	30	21	28	7	Moderate breezes in the night. Squally with thunder, lightning, and rain.
9	26	08	38	09	South.	68	30	26	29	7	Moderate and fair.
10	25	55	37	07	South. E. S. E.	68	30	22	30	7	Moderate and fair.
11	27	07	37	07	E. S. E. E. N. E.	71	30	16	1	8	Freſh breezes and ſqually.
12	28	42	36	04	E. N. E. N. N. E.	71	30	14	2	8	Freſh breezes and ſqually.
13	29	34	33	56	N. by E. N. by E.	70	30	14	3	9	Freſh gales and ſqually, with rain.
14	30	28	33	22	Variable.	70	30	13	4	9	Squally and heavy rain till 8 A. M. then light airs and fair.
15	30	37	31	39	Variable. Calm.	68	30	21	5	9	Light airs, frequent calms, and hazy.
16	30	54	31	00	Variable.	70	30	25	6	9	Light airs and fair.
17	31	36	28	54	North.	68	30	17	7	8	P. M. ditto. A. M. freſh breezes and clear.
18	32	01	26	27	North. N. N. W. W. N. W. N. N. E.	66	30	14	8	8	Freſh gales and ſqually, with rain.
19	32	10	24	30	South. S. by W. South.	60	30	13	9	10	Squally and unſettled.
20	31	55	22	41	S. E. by S.	60	30	22	10	10	Freſh breezes and ſqually, with rain.
21	32	07	22	45	S. E.	59	30	35	11	9	P. M. cloudy. A. M. moderate and fair.
22	33	04	22	33	South. Eaſt. N. E.	60	30	28	12	9	Moderate breezes and clear.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.		Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1787.	South.		Weſt.						Day		
Sept.	°	′	°	′		°	°	′			
23	33	38	22	00	N. N. E. North.	63	29 ·	96	13	9	P. M. ſqually. At noon ſtrong gales and hazy.
24	34	08	17	09	North. S. W. S. S. W.	57	29	94	14	9	Strong gales with heavy ſqualls and a heavy ſea.
25	34	26	14	07	S. W. by S. Weſt.	54	29	43	15	9	Freſh gales and ſqually, with thunder, lightning, and rain.
26	34	20	9	25	W. S. W. W. N. W.	57	30	20	16	7	Freſh gales and ſqually; cleared up at noon.
27	34	25	7	08	W. N. W.	60	30	26	17	6	Freſh gales and clear.
28	34	25	4	30	N.W.byW.	62	29	96	18	4	Freſh gales and hazy.
29	34	25	3	07	W. N. W. S. S. W. S. by E.	59	30	01	19	5	Freſh gales and ſqually, with rain.
30	33	54	3	10	S. S. E. Variable.	56	30	04	20	5	P. M. freſh gales and cloudy. A. M. fair.
October			Eaſt.								
1	34	42	0	51	North. N. N. W. W. S. W.	60	29	97	21	5	P. M. freſh breezes and clear. A. M. hazy with rain.
2	35	10	0	36	S. W. N. W.	60	30	17	22	9	P. M. ſqually. A. M. moderate and fair.
3	35	20	2	58	W. by S. to N. E.	62	30	22	23	8	Light breezes and fair.
4	35	32	4	33	N. E.	64	30	14	24	8	Light airs and hazy, with ſmall rain.
5	35	34	5	51	North. Variable.	63	30	20	25	9	P. M. moderate and cloudy. A. M. hazy with rain.
6	36	17	6	24	Eaſt. N. E. Variable.	63	30	08	26	9	P. M. light airs and hazy. A. M. fair.
7	36	50	6	50	Eaſt. N. E.	62	29	93	27	9	Moderate breezes and cloudy.
8	36	55	7	55	N. E. by N. W. N. W.	60	29	97	28	8	Moderate and cloudy. A. M. fair.
9	36	04	10	10	N. W.	60	29	99	29	8	Freſh breezes and fair.
10	35	28	13	08	W. N. W. W. S. W.	60	30	46	1	8	Freſh breezes and ſqually.
11	35	00	15	23	W. S. W. S. W.	60	30	31	2	9	P. M. ditto. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
12	34	29	17	00	South. S. E. by S.	62	30	23	3	8	Moderate and cloudy.

From 14th of October to the 13th of November, lying in Table-Bay, Cape of Good Hope, Thermometer from 61 to 67.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.		Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c.
1787. Nov.	South.		East.						Day.		
	°	′	°	′		°	°	′			
13	34	08	16	41	S. S. W. S. by E.	63	30	40	5	7	Moderate breezes and cloudy.
14	35	14	15	00	S. S. E. South	63	30	33	6	9	Freſh breezes and clear.
15	35	24	13	21	South.	62	30	53	7	8	Freſh breezes and cloudy.
16	35	43	12	54	South. S. S. E.	64	30	25	8	8	Moderate breezes and clear.
17	36	39	11	43	South. S. S. E.	61	30	14	9	7	Freſh breezes and fair.
18	37	13	10	49	S. S. E. E. S. E.	61	30	33	10	7	Moderate breezes and cloudy.
19	37	40	10	27	E. S. E. Variable.	65	30	10	11	7	Light airs and hazy.
20	37	40	10	23	S. S. E. to N. E.	64	29	99	12	7	Light airs and cloudy.
21	38	42	12	57	N. by E.	65	29	38	13	7	Moderate breezes and clear.
22	39	00	15	40	N. W. W. N. W.	65	29	91	14	8	Freſh breezes and ſqually.
23	39	08	18	42	W. N. W. Weſt.	65	29	95	15	7	Squally with rain in the night. A. M. moderate and hazy.
24	39	05	20	49	Weſt S. W.	63	30	07	16	7	Moderate and clear.
25	38	47	22	03	Weſt. W. N. W.	61	30	01	17	8	Moderate and clear.
26	38	11	26	46	W. N. W. W. S. W.	62	30	20	18	7	Freſh breezes and clear.
27	38	29	26	29	S. W. S. E.	61	30	20	19	7	Light breezes and cloudy.
28	39	13	28	34	E. N. E.	72	29	08	20	7	Moderate and fair firſt part. A. M. ſqually; at noon ſtrong gales and rain.
29	39	56	30	44	N. E. N. W. S. W.	64	29	92	21	7	P. M. freſh gales and ſqually. A. M. light airs and fair.
30	40	00	32	06	South. N. E. N. W.	66	30	09	22	8	Light airs and variable.
Dec. 1	40	08	35	50	N. W. S. W.	60	30	16	23	8	Moderate and clear.
2	40	02	37	14	Weſt. N. N. W.	61	30	24	24	8	Moderate breezes and clear.
3	40	19	41	06	W. N. W. E. N. E.	62	29	87	25	8	Freſh gales and fair.
4	40	37	44	54	North. N. W. S. W.	60	29	08	26	8	Strong gales and ſqually.

Dec. 5

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in	Longitude in	Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1787. Dec.	South. ° ′	Eaſt. ° ′		°	° ′	Day		
5	40 14	46 51	S. W. Weſt. Variable.	58	29 88	27	9	At 8 P. M. little wind. A. M. fair.
6	40 49	48 49	E. N. E. W. N. W.	60	29 62	28	9	Freſh breezes and hazy.
7	40 33	51 34	Weſt. N. W.	61	29 87	29	9	P. M. moderate and fair. A. M. little wind.
8	40 20	53 51	N. W. S. W.	58	30 02	30	10	Light breezes. At 8 freſh gales and ſqually.
9	40 26	56 45	S. W. N. N. E.	61	29 76	1	9	P. M. light breezes. A. M. freſh breezes and clear.
10	41 12	59 47	N. by E. Calm. W. S. W.	59	29 81	2	10	Freſh breezes. At 8 P. M. calm. A. M. freſh breezes and hazy.
11	40 58	62 20	Weſt. N. N. W.	59	29 98	3	10	Freſh breezes and cloudy.
12	40 58	65 36	N. N. W. N. N. E.	64	29 99	4	9	Freſh breezes and fair.
13	40 58	69 48	N. by E. W. S. W.	62	29 86	5	10	Freſh gales and ſqually.
14	41 04	☉ and ☽ 73 16	W. S. W.	60	30 00	6	9	Freſh gales and hazy.
15	40 55	☉ and ☽ 75 20	W. S. W. N. W. N. by E.	61	30 29	7	8	Moderate and fair. A. M. freſh breezes and cloudy.
16	41 09	☉ and ☽ 79 00	North.	61	30 16	8	8	Freſh gales and cloudy.
17	41 11	☉ and ☽ 81 20	North. Variable.	61	30 09	9	8	Light airs and cloudy.
18	41 08	☉ and ☽ 83 35	N. E. Weſt. S. W.	55	30 08	10	8	Moderate and cloudy.
19	41 09	☉ and ☽ 86 25	S. W. Weſt.	55	30 08	11	9	Freſh breezes and fair.
20	41 05	☉ and ☽ 88 20	S. W. S. S. W.	55	29 96	12	9	Moderate and fair.
21	41 10	90 21	S. W. N. W.	56	29 80	13	10	Moderate breezes and hazy, with ſhowers.
22	41 22	93 36	N. N. W. N. W.	59	29 82	14	7	Freſh breezes and hazy.
23	41 31	96 36	W. N. W. W. S. W.	63	29 89	15	7	Freſh breezes and cloudy.
24	41 44	98 53	Weſt. N. W.	59	30 05	16	7	Moderate and clear.
25	42 10	102 37	N. by W.	62	29 88	17	7	Freſh gales and hazy.
26	42 20	105 26	North to S. W.	57	30 02	18	6	P. M. freſh gales. A. M. moderate and fair.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in	Longitude in	Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1787. Dec.	South. ° ′	East. ° ′		°	° ′	Day		
27	42 32	108 40	W. N. W. N. N. W.	59	30 04	19	7	P. M. moderate and fair. A. M. fresh gales and cloudy.
28	42 53	112 00	W. N. W.	58	30 11	20	7	Fresh gales and cloudy.
29	43 35	115 12	N. W. North.	60	29 73	21	8	Fresh gales and hazy.
30	43 53	⊙ and ☽ 118 10	N. by E. S. W. N. N. W.	55	29 56	22	8	P. M. strong gales and squally. A. M. fresh breezes and fair.
31	43 55	⊙ and ☽ 121 50	N. W. W. N. W.	56	29 65	23	8	P. M. strong gales with squalls. A. M. fair
1788. Jan.								
1	44 05	⊙ and ☽ 125 18	W. N. W. N. by W.	57	29 36	24	8	Strong gales. A. M. hard gales with heavy squalls.
2	43 33	⊙ and ☽ 128 48	N. W. West.	57	29 63	25	8	P. M. more moderate; fresh gales and squally.
3	43 49	⊙ and ☽ 132 40	W. S. W. N. W.	56	29 69	26	8	Fresh gales and hazy.
4	44 00	135 20	N. W.	59	29 99	27	8	Fresh gales and squally.
5	44 03	139 00	W. N. W. West.	55	29 88	28	7	Fresh breezes and cloudy.
6	44 04	142 40	W. S. W. W. by N.	56	29 95	29	7	Fresh gales and cloudy.
7	44 06	145 42	West. N. W.	62	29 96	1	9	Fresh gales and hazy.
8	43 51	147 45	N. W.	64	29 29	2	8	Fresh breezes until 9 P. M. then fell little wind.
	At 2 P. M. saw the Mewstone, Van Diemen's Land, N. 36°; east, 5 leagues. At 7 passed the South Cape at 3 miles distance.							
9	43 55	149 00	Variable.	66	29 60	3	8	P. M. light breezes and hazy. A. M. squally with thunder and lightning.
10	43 39	149 30	West. Calm. N. W.	61	29 52	4	8	Ditto. Midnight calm. A. M. moderate and fair.
11	42 27	150 30	N. W. W. S. W. N. W.	64	29 65	5	8	P. M. squally with thunder and lightning. At 12 moderate and fair. A. M. fresh gales.
12	41 18	150 47	W. N. W. Calm. South.	62	29 85	6	3	Moderate and cloudy; in the night, squalls with rain, thunder, and lightning; at noon, light airs.
13	40 00	151 25	N. W. West.	66	29 70	7	3	Light airs and fair till 7, then fresh gales and frequent squalls.
14	38 11	⊙ and ☽ 152 50	West. Variable.	65	29 96	8	3	P. M. squally. A. M. light breezes and clear.
15	37 40	151 50	N. E. North.	74	30 29	9	4	P. M. light breezes and clear. A. M. hazy with rain.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in	Longitude in	Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Barometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1788. Jan.	South. ° ′	Eaſt. ° ′		°	° ′	Day		
16	37 40	151 30	North. N. N. W.	75	29 60	10	3	Freſh breezes and hazy; at noon, moderate and fair.
17	37 18	151 46	North. Eaſt. South.	72	29 84	11	4	Light airs and variable; heavy rain in the night.
18	35 50	151 37	N. W. Calm. South.	72	29 99	12	4	Calms and light airs. A. M. freſh breezes and cloudy.
19	34 29	150 43	S. S. E. S. E.	70	30 33	13	4	Moderate breezes and fair.
	Red Point W. ½ N. a round hill to the northward of it, W. by N. Off ſhore 6 miles.							
20	At 8 A. M. anchored in Botany-Bay with the convoy.							

An ACCOUNT of Obſervations for the Variation of the Compaſs, made on board His Majeſty's Ship SIRIUS, between the Cape of Good Hope and Botany-Bay, in 1787 and 1788.

Latitude in South.	Longitude in Eaſt.	Variation by		Latitude in South.	Longitude in Eaſt.	Variation by	
		Azimuth.	Amplitude.			Azimuth.	Amplitude.
° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′
34 20	17 11	21 30 W.		40 18	74 25	25 30 W.	
35 23	14 44	22 33		40 59	76 06		23 00 W.
36 11	13 43		21 03 W.	41 08	86 44		20 30
37 23	10 49		20 56	41 36	97 30	17 40	18 00
37 40	10 23		18 00	42 13	103 37	16 30	
38 44	13 44		20 03	42 23	106 05	16 30	
39 07	21 29	20 54		43 08	113 01		15 00
38 47	22 20	21 10		43 43	127 46	9 00	
38 15	25 59		25 00	43 51	133 51	1 22	1 00
38 10	26 05	26 40		44 00	136 34	1 00 E.	
38 39	26 42		27 30	43 45	146 13		5 24 E.
39 54	29 52		27 45	43 56	147 52	5 30	
39 55	29 58		28 30	43 31	149 13	6 40	6 10
40 09	36 13		28 30	43 11	149 44	7 27	
40 04	38 01	30 22	31 20	42 46	150 08	8 20	
40 10	46 50	30 00		42 14	150 30	8 30	
40 52	49 21	29 50		41 43	150 38	8 40	
40 20	54 11	32 12		40 27	151 16		9 30
40 54	63 09	29 09	30 30	38 25	151 11	10 43	10 45
41 00	64 40	30 08		37 47	152 13	10 45	
41 01	70 48	28 55	27 30	36 19	151 45	9 40	
41 01	73 25	25 30					

CHAPTER III.

Frequent interviews with the natives.—Weapons deſcribed.—Ornaments.—Perſons, manners, and habitations.—Method of hunting.—Animals deſcribed.—Birds, and inſects.—Diary of the weather.—Departure of the Buſſole and Aſtrolabe.—A convict pretends to have diſcovered a gold mine.—The fraud detected.—Obſervations for the longitude, &c.

CHAP. III.

1788. February.

A FEW days after my arrival with the tranſports in Port Jackſon, I ſet off with a ſix oared boat and a ſmall boat, intending to make as good a ſurvey of the harbour as circumſtances would admit: I took to my aſſiſtance Mr. Bradley, the firſt lieutenant, Mr. Keltie, the maſter, and a young gentleman of the quarter-deck. During the time we were employed on this ſervice, we had frequent meetings with different parties of the natives, whom we found at this time very numerous; a circumſtance which I confeſs I was a little ſurprized to find, after what had been ſaid of them in the voyage of the Endeavour; for I think it is obſerved in the account of that voyage, that at Botany-bay they had ſeen very few of the natives, and that they appeared a very ſtupid race of people, who were void of curioſity. We ſaw them in conſiderable numbers, and they appeared to us to be a very lively and inquiſitive race; they are a ſtraight, thin, but well made people, rather ſmall in their limbs, but very active; they examined with the greateſt attention, and expreſſed the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, at the different covering we had on; for they certainly conſidered our cloaths as ſo many different ſkins, and the hat as a part of the head: they were pleaſed with ſuch trifles as we had to give them, and always appeared chearful and in good humour: they danced and ſung with us, and imitated our words and motions, as we did theirs. They generally appeared armed with a lance, and a ſhort ſtick which aſſiſts in throwing it: this ſtick is about three feet long, is flattened on one ſide, has a hook of wood at one end, and a flat ſhell, let into a ſplit in the ſtick at the other end, and faſtened with gum; upon the flat ſide of this ſtick the lance is laid, in the upper end of which is a ſmall hole, into which the point of the hook of the throwing ſtick is fixed; this retains the lance on the flat ſide of the ſtick; then poiſing the lance, thus fixed, in one hand, with the fore-finger and thumb over it, to prevent its falling off ſide-ways, at the ſame time holding faſt the throwing-ſtick, they diſcharge it with conſiderable force, and in a very good direction, to the diſtance of about ſixty or ſeventy yards *. Their lances are in general about ten feet long: the ſhell at one end of the throwing-ſtick is intended for ſharpening the point of the lance, and for various other uſes. I have ſeen theſe weapons frequently thrown, and think that a man upon his guard may with much eaſe, either parry, or avoid them, although it muſt be owned they fly with aſtoniſhing velocity.

While employed on the ſurvey of the harbour, we were one morning early, in the upper part of it, and at a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhip, going to land, in order to aſcertain a few angles, when we were a little ſurprized to find the natives here in greater numbers than we had ever ſeen them before in any other place: we naturally conjectured from their

---

* I have ſince ſeen a ſtrong young man throw the lance full ninety yards; which, till then, I did not believe poſſible. I meaſured the diſtance.

CHAP. III.

1788.

numbers, that they might be thoſe who inhabited the coves in the lower part of the harbour, and who, upon our arrival, had been ſo much alarmed at our appearance, as to have judged it neceſſary to retire farther up; they appeared very hoſtile, a great many armed men appeared upon the ſhore wherever we approached it, and, in a threatening manner, ſeemed to inſiſt upon our not preſuming to land. During the whole time we were near them, they hailed each other through the woods, until their numbers were ſo much increaſed, that I did not judge it prudent to attempt making any acquaintance with them at this time: for, as I have already obſerved, we had only a ſix-oared boat and a ſmaller one; our whole number, leaving one man in each boat, amounted to ten ſeamen, three officers, and myſelf, with only three muſkets; we therefore for the preſent, contented ourſelves with making ſigns of friendſhip, and returned to the ſhip. In two days after, we appeared again in the ſame place, better armed and prepared for an interview. Their numbers were not now ſo many, at leaſt we did not ſee them, although it is probable they were in the wood at no great diſtance; but having occaſion to put on ſhore to cook ſome proviſions for the boats crews, I choſe a projecting point of land for that purpoſe, which we could have defended againſt ſome hundreds of ſuch people: I ordered two marine centinels upon the neck, in order to prevent a ſurprize, and immediately ſet about making a fire. We ſoon heard ſome of the natives in the wood on the oppoſite ſhore; we called to them, and invited them by ſigns, and an offer of preſents, to come over to us, the diſtance not being more than one hundred yards acroſs: in a ſhort time, ſeven men embarked in canoes and came over; they landed at a ſmall diſtance from us, and advanced without their lances; on this I went up to meet them, and held up both my hands, to ſhew that I was unarmed; two officers alſo advanced in the ſame manner; we met them and ſhook hands,

hands; but they ſeemed a good deal alarmed at our five marines who were under arms by the boats, upon which they were ordered to ground their arms and ſtay by them; the natives then came up with great chearfulneſs and good humour, and ſeated themſelves by our fire amongſt us, where we ate what we had got, and invited them to partake, but they did not reliſh our food or drink.

I was one day on ſhore in another part of the harbour, making friendſhip with a party of natives, when in a very ſhort time, their numbers encreaſed to eighty or ninety men, all armed with a lance and throwing-ſtick, and many with the addition of a ſhield, made of the bark of a tree; ſome were in ſhape an oblong ſquare, and others of theſe ſhields were oval; theſe were the firſt ſhields we had ſeen in the country *. Upon examining ſome of theſe ſhields, we obſerved that many of them had been pierced quite through in various places, which they by ſigns gave us to underſtand had been done with a ſpear; but that thoſe ſhields will frequently turn the ſpear, they alſo ſhewed us, by ſetting one up at a ſmall diſtance, and throwing a ſpear at it, which did not go through. They were much ſurprized at one of our gentlemen who pulling a piſtol out of his pocket, that was loaded with ball, and ſtanding at the ſame diſtance, fired the ball through the thickeſt part of the ſhield, which they examined with aſtoniſhment, and ſeemed to wonder, that an inſtrument ſo ſmall ſhould be capable of wounding ſo deep. Our numbers at this time were what I firſt mentioned, with only three muſkets, one of which I carried. The natives were very noiſy, but did not appear diſpoſed to quarrel; we gave them ſuch little preſents as we had with us, with which they ſeemed well pleaſed; although we had much reaſon

---

* It has ſince been found that the ſhields are in general made of wood.

CHAP. III. 1788.

afterwards to believe, that ſuch trifles only pleaſed them, as baubles do children, for a moment: for at other times we had frequently found our preſents lying diſperſed on the beach, although caught at by theſe people with much apparent avidity at the time they were offered. While we were employed with this party, we obſerved at a diſtance, a number of women, who were peeping from their concealments, but durſt not gratify their natural curioſity, by appearing openly and converſing with us; as the men appeared here to be very abſolute. I ſignified to the men that we had obſerved the women, and that I wiſhed to make them ſome preſents, if they might be permitted to come forward and receive them. The men ſeemed unwilling to ſuffer them to advance; for we had frequently obſerved, that they took particular care upon every occaſion to keep the women at a diſtance, and I believe wholly from an idea of danger. They deſired to have the preſents for the women, and they would carry and deliver them, but to this propoſal I poſitively refuſed to agree, and made them underſtand, that unleſs they were allowed to come forward, they ſhould not have any. Finding I was determined, an old man, who ſeemed to have the principal authority, directed the women to advance, which they did immediately, with much good humour; and, during the whole time that we were decorating them with beads, rags of white linen, and ſome other trifles, they laughed immoderately, although trembling at the ſame time, through an idea of danger. Moſt of thoſe we ſaw at this time were young women, who I judged were from eighteen to twenty-five years of age; they were all perfectly naked, as when firſt born.

The women in general are well made, not quite ſo thin as the men, but rather ſmaller limbed. As ſoon as the women were ordered to approach us, about twenty men, whom we had not before ſeen, ſallied from the wood, compleatly armed with lance and ſhield; they were painted with red and white ſtreaks all over the face and body, as if they intended to ſtrike terror by their appearance: ſome of them were painted with a little degree of taſte, and although the painting on others appeared to be done without any attention to form, yet there were thoſe who, at a ſmall diſtance, appeared as if they were accoutred with croſs-belts: ſome had circles of white round their eyes, and ſeveral a horizontal ſtreak acroſs the forehead: others again had narrow white ſtreaks round the body, with a broad line down the middle of the back and belly, and a ſingle ſtreak down each arm, thigh, and leg. Theſe marks, being generally white, gave the perſon, at a ſmall diſtance, a moſt ſhocking appearance; for, upon the black ſkin the white marks were ſo very conſpicuous, that they were exactly like ſo many moving ſkeletons. The colours they uſe are moſtly red and white; the firſt of which is a kind of ochre, or red earth, which is found here in conſiderable quantities; the latter is a fine pipe-clay. The bodies of the men are much ſcarified, particularly their breaſts and ſhoulders; theſe ſcarifications are conſiderably raiſed above the ſkin, and although they are not in any regular form, yet they are certainly conſidered as ornamental. The men, thus armed and painted, drew themſelves up in a line on the beach, and each man had a green bough in his hand, as a ſign of friendſhip; their diſpoſition was as regular as any well diſciplined troops could have been; and this party, I apprehend, was entirely for the defence of the women, if any inſult had been offered them. We alſo obſerved at this interview, that two very ſtout armed men, were placed upon a rock, near to where our boats lay, as centinels; for they never moved from the ſpot until we left the beach: I therefore ſuppoſe they were ordered there to watch all our motions. We left theſe people, after a viſit of

CHAP. III. 1788.

about four hours, both parties apparently well ſatisfied with all that paſſed.

In the different opportunities I have had of getting a little acquainted with the natives, who reſide in and about this port, I am, I confeſs, diſpoſed to think, that it will be no very difficult matter, in due time, to conciliate their friendſhip and confidence; for although they generally appear armed on our firſt meeting, which will be allowed to be very natural, yet, whenever we have laid aſide our arms, and have made ſigns of friendſhip, they have always advanced unarmed, with ſpirit, and a degree of confidence ſcarcely to be expected: from that appearance of a friendly diſpoſition, I am inclined to think, that by reſiding ſome time amongſt, or near them, they will ſoon diſcover that we are not their enemies; a light they no doubt conſidered us in on our firſt arrival.

The men in general are from five feet ſix inches, to five feet nine inches high; are thin, but very ſtraight and clean made; walk very erect *, and are active. The women are not ſo tall, or ſo thin, but are generally well made; their colour is a ruſty kind of black, ſomething like that of ſoot, but I have ſeen many of the women almoſt as light as a mulatto. We have ſeen a few of both ſexes with tolerably good features, but in general they have broad noſes, large wide mouths, and thick lips; and their countenance altogether not very prepoſſeſſing; and what makes them ſtill leſs ſo, is, that they are abominably filthy; they never clean their ſkin, but it is generally ſmeared with the fat of ſuch animals as they kill, and afterwards covered with every ſort of dirt; ſand from the ſea beach, and the aſhes from their fires, all adhere

---

* See a plate of the natives in Phillip's Voyage.

to their greaſy ſkin, which is never waſhed, except when accident, or the want of food, obliges them to go into the water. Some of the men wear a piece of wood or bone, thruſt through the ſeptum of the noſe, which, by raiſing the oppoſite ſides of the noſe, widens the noſtril, and ſpreads the lower part very much; this, no doubt, they conſider as a beauty; moſt of thoſe we had hitherto met, wanted the two foremoſt teeth on the right ſide of the upper jaw; and many of the women want the two lower joints of the little finger of the left hand, which we have not as yet been able to diſcover the reaſon or meaning of. This defect of the little finger we have obſerved in old women, and in young girls of eight or nine years old; in young women who have had children, and in thoſe who have not, and the finger has been ſeen perfect in individuals of all the above ages and deſcriptions; they have very good teeth in general; their hair is ſhort, ſtrong, and curly, and as they ſeem to have no method of cleaning or combing it, it is therefore filthy and matted. The men wear their beards, which are ſhort and curly, like the hair of the head. Men, women, and children go entirely naked, as deſcribed by Captain Cook; they ſeem to have no fixed place of reſidence, but take their reſt wherever night overtakes them: they generally ſhelter themſelves in ſuch cavities or hollows in the rocks upon the ſea ſhore, as may be capable of defending them from the rain, and, in order to make their apartment as comfortable as poſſible, they commonly make a good fire in it before they lie down to reſt; by which means, the rock all round them is ſo heated as to retain its warmth like an oven for a conſiderable time; and upon a little graſs, which is previouſly pulled and dryed, they lie down and huddle together.

And here, we ſee a ſtriking inſtance of the particular care of Providence for all his creatures. Theſe people have not the moſt diſtant idea

CHAP. III.

1788.

of building any kind of place which may be capable of ſheltering them from the ſeverity of bad weather; if they had, probably it would firſt appear in their endeavours to cover their naked bodies with ſome kind of cloathing, as they certainly ſuffer much from the cold in winter. Their ignorance in building, is very amply compenſated by the kindneſs of nature in the remarkable ſoftneſs of the rocks, which encompaſs the ſea coaſt, as well as thoſe in the interior parts of the country: they are a ſoft, crumbly, ſandy ſtone; thoſe parts, which are moſt expoſed to, and receive the moſt ſeverity of the weather, are generally harder than ſuch parts as are leſs expoſed; in the ſoft parts time makes wonderful changes; they are conſtantly crumbling away underneath the harder and more ſolid part, and this continual decay leaves caves of conſiderable dimenſions: ſome I have ſeen that would lodge forty or fifty people, and, in a caſe of neceſſity, we ſhould think ourſelves not badly lodged for a night. Wherever you ſee rocks in this country, either on the ſea-ſhore, or in the interior parts, as they are all of this ſoft ſandy kind, you are ſure of finding plenty of ſuch caves.

In the woods, where the country is not very rocky, we ſometimes met with a piece of the bark of a tree, bent in the middle, and ſet upon the ends *, with a piece ſet up againſt that end on which the wind blows. This hut ſerves them for a habitation, and will contain a whole family; for, when the weather is cold, which is frequently the caſe in winter, they find it neceſſary to lie very cloſe for the benefit of that warmth to which each mutually contributes a ſhare. Theſe bark huts, (if they deſerve even the name of huts) are intended, as we have lately diſcovered, for thoſe who are employed in hunting the kangaroo, opoſ-

---

* For an exact deſcription and repreſentation of this hut, ſee Governor Phillip's Voyage.

ſums, or in ſhort, any other animals which are to be found in the woods; for at certain ſeaſons, when thoſe animals are in plenty, they employ themſelves frequently in catching them. As moſt of the large trees are hollow, by being rotten in the heart, the opoſſum, kangaroo rat, ſquirrel, and various other animals which inhabit the woods, when they are purſued, commonly run into the hollow of a tree: in order, therefore, to make ſure of them, which they ſeldom fail in, when they find them in the tree, one man climbs even the talleſt tree with much eaſe, by means of notches at convenient diſtances, that are made with a ſtone hatchet; when he is arrived at the top, or where there may be an outlet for the animal, he ſits there with a club or ſtick in his hand, while another perſon below applies a fire to the lower opening, and fills the hollow of the tree with ſmoak; this obliges the animal to attempt to make its eſcape, either upwards or downwards, but whichever way it goes, it is almoſt certain of death, for they very ſeldom eſcape. In this manner they employ themſelves, and get a livelihood in the woods; they alſo, when in conſiderable numbers, ſet the country on fire for ſeveral miles extent; this, we have generally underſtood, is for the purpoſe of diſturbing ſuch animals as may be within reach of the conflagration; and thereby they have an opportunity of killing many. We have alſo had much reaſon to believe, that thoſe fires were intended to clear that part of the country through which they have frequent occaſion to travel, of the bruſh or underwood, from which they, being naked, ſuffer very great inconvenience. The fires, which we very frequently ſaw, particularly in the ſummer-time, account alſo for an appearance, which, when we arrived here, we were much perplexed to underſtand the cauſe of; this was, that two-thirds of the trees in the woods were very much ſcorched with fire, ſome were burnt quite black, up to the very top: as to the cauſe of this appearance we differed much in our opinions;

but

CHAP. III. 1788.

but it is now plain, that it has ever been occaſioned by the fires, which the natives ſo frequently make, and which we have ſeen reach the higheſt branches of the trees: we ſometimes, upon our arrival here, conjectured that it proceeded from lightning, but upon looking farther, it appeared too general amongſt the woods to have been occaſioned by ſuch an accident.

We had reaſon to believe, that the natives aſſociate in tribes of many families together, and it appeared now that they have one fixed reſidence, and the tribe takes its name from the place of their general reſidence: you may often viſit the place where the tribe reſides, without finding the whole ſociety there; their time is ſo much occupied in ſearch of food, that the different families take different routs; but, in caſe of any diſpute with a neighbouring tribe, they can ſoon be aſſembled. We are well informed by thoſe whom we have had among us, that they ſometimes have quarrels, and that they endeavour from concealments, to deſtroy thoſe they are at war with. They are by no means a brave and determined people, except when paſſion overcomes them, and when they act as all ſavages do, like madmen. In all their quarrels with one another, they put themſelves under the direction of a chief: how thoſe chiefs are choſen we have not learnt, but have reaſon to believe it is from an opinion of their dexterity in war.

All the human race, which we have ſeen here, appear to live chiefly on what the ſea affords, and conſequently we find the ſea-coaſt more fully inhabited than the interior, or that part of the country which we have had an opportunity of viſiting more remote from the ſea. The men fiſh with a ſpear, or fiſh-gig, in the uſe of which, it is apparent they are very dextrous. The fiſh-gig is in length ſomething more than the war lance, but they can, according to the depth of water, increaſe its length, by a variety of joints; ſome have one, ſome two, three, or four prongs, pointed and barbed with a fiſh, or other animal's bone. We have ſometimes, in fine weather, ſeen a man lying acroſs a canoe, with his face in the water, and his fiſh-gig immerſed, ready for darting: in this manner he lies motionleſs, and by his face being a little under the ſurface, he can ſee the fiſh diſtinctly; but were his eyes above, the tremulous motion of the ſurface, occaſioned by every light air of wind, would prevent his ſight: in this manner they ſtrike at the fiſh with ſo much certainty, that they ſeldom miſs their aim. The women are chiefly employed in the canoes, with lines and hooks; the lines appear to be manufactured from the bark of various trees which we found here, of a tough ſtringy nature, and which, after being beaten between two ſtones for ſome time, becomes very much like, and of the ſame colour as a quantity of oakum, made from old rope: this they ſpin and twiſt into two ſtrands: in fact, I never ſaw a line with more than two. Their hooks are commonly made from the inſide, or mother of pearl, of different ſhells; the talons of birds, ſuch as thoſe of hawks, they ſometimes make this uſe of; but the former are conſidered as beſt. In this neceſſary employment of fiſhing, we frequently ſaw a woman with two or three children in a miſerable boat, the higheſt part of which was not ſix inches above the ſurface of the water, waſhing almoſt in the edge of a ſurf, which would frighten an old ſeaman to come near, in a good and manageable veſſel. The youngeſt child, if very ſmall, lies acroſs the mother's lap, from whence, although ſhe is fully employed in fiſhing, it cannot fall; for the boat being very ſhallow, ſhe ſits in the bottom, with her knees up to her breaſt, and between her knees and body, the child lies perfectly ſecure. The men alſo dive for ſhell-fiſh, which they take off from the rocks under water; we frequently ſaw them leap

1788.

from a rock into the ſurf or broken water, and remain a ſurprizing time under: when they riſe to the ſurface, whatever they have gathered they throw on ſhore, where a perſon attends to receive it, and has a fire ready kindled for cooking. They have no other method of dreſſing their food, than that of broiling. Boiling water they have no conception of, as appeared very lately; for when one of our boats was hauling the ſeine, one of the ſailors had put a pot on the fire ready to dreſs ſome fiſh, and when the water was boiling, ſome fiſh were put in; but ſeveral natives, who were near, and who wiſhed to have more fiſh than had been given them, ſeeing the fiſh put into the pot, and no perſon watching them, a native put his hand into the boiling water to take the fiſh out, and was of courſe ſcalded, and exceedingly aſtoniſhed.

With reſpect to religion, we have not been able yet to diſcover that they have any thing like an object of adoration; neither the ſun, moon, nor ſtars ſeem to take up, or occupy more of their attention, than they do that of any other of the animals which inhabit this immenſe country. Their dead they certainly burn, of which I have been well convinced lately, when employed on the ſurvey of a diſtant branch of Port Jackſon. Some of my boat's crew having, when on ſhore, diſcovered a little from the water-ſide, upon a riſing ground, what they judged to be a freſh grave, I went up and ordered it to be opened; when the earth was removed, we found a quantity of white aſhes, which appeared to have been but a very ſhort time depoſited there: among the aſhes we found part of a human jaw-bone, and a ſmall piece of the ſcull, which, although it had been in the fire, was not ſo much injured, as to prevent our diſtinguiſhing perfectly what it was. We put the aſhes together again and covered it up as before; the grave was not ſix inches under the ſurface of the ground, but the earth was raiſed the height of our graves in Europe.

In the months of March and April, we found the natives to decreaſe in their numbers conſiderably; but we have no reaſon to ſuppoſe that they retire back into the interior parts of the country; for in all the excurſions which have been made inland, very few have been ſeen. The ſea-coaſt, we have every reaſon at preſent to believe, is the only part of this country which is inhabited by the human race; the land ſeems to afford them but a very ſcanty ſubſiſtence. We have ſeen them roaſt and chew the fern-root. There is a ſmall fruit here, about the ſize of a cherry; it is yellow when half grown, and almoſt black when ripe; it grows on a tree, which is not tall, but very full and buſhy at the top; of this fruit we have often ſeen them eat: it has a good deal the taſte of a fig, and the pulp, or inſide, very much reſembles that fruit in appearance: but the ſea is their principal reſource, and ſhell, and other fiſh, are their chief ſupport. They frequently attended our boats when hauling the ſeine, and were very thankful to the officer for any fiſh he might give them, as in cold weather the harbour is but thinly ſtocked; indeed, when we arrived here it was full of fiſh, and we caught as many as we could uſe, but in the winter they ſeem to quit our neighbourhood. I had reaſon to think, that the people who inhabited Port Jackſon when we firſt entered it were gone farther to the northward, and that it is their conſtant cuſtom, as the cold weather approaches, to ſeek a warmer climate, by following the ſun; and in this practice they have another very powerful incitement, as well as the comfortable warmth of the ſun, which is, that the fiſh incline to the northward, as the cold weather comes on: this conjecture ſeems, in ſome degree, to account for Captain Cook's having ſeen ſo few natives while he lay in Botany-bay, and that it appeared to him the ſea-coaſt was thinly inhabited; for I think it was in April, or May, that he was there.

The animal deſcribed in the voyage of the Endeavour, called the kangaroo, (but by the natives patagarang) we found in great numbers; one was lately ſhot which weighed 140 pounds; its tail was 40 inches long, and 17 in circumference at the root; it is very well deſcribed in Phillip's Voyage: we ate the fleſh with great reliſh, and I think it good mutton, although not ſo delicate as that which we ſometimes find in Leadenhall-market. The ſtrength this animal has in its hind quarters is very great: in its endeavours to eſcape from us, when ſurprized, it ſprings from its hind legs, which are very long, and leaps at each bound about ſix or eight yards, but does not appear ever in running to let its fore-feet come near the ground; indeed they are ſo very ſhort, that it is not poſſible that the animal can uſe them in running: they have vaſt ſtrength alſo in their tail; it is, no doubt, a principal part of their defence, when attacked; for with it they can ſtrike with prodigious force, I believe with ſufficent power to break the leg of a man; nor is it improbable but that this great ſtrength in the tail may aſſiſt them in making thoſe aſtoniſhing ſprings. We for ſome time conſidered their tail as their chief defence, but having of late hunted them with greyhounds very ſucceſsfully, we have had an opportunity of knowing that they uſe their claws and teeth. The dog is much ſwifter than the kangaroo: the chaſe, if in an open wood, (which is the place moſt frequented by that animal,) is ſeldom more than eight or ten minutes, and if there are more dogs than one, ſeldom ſo long. As ſoon as the hound ſeizes him, he turns, and catching hold with the nails of his fore-paws, he ſprings upon, and ſtrikes at the dog with the claws of his hind feet, which are wonderfully ſtrong, and tears him to ſuch a degree, that it has frequently happened that we have been under the neceſſity of carrying the dog home, from the ſeverity of his wounds: few of theſe animals have ever effected their eſcape, after being ſeized by the dog, for they have generally caught them by the throat, and there held them until they were aſſiſted, although many of them have very near loſt their lives in the ſtruggle. Some of the male kangaroos are of a very large ſize; I have ſeen ſome, that when ſitting on their haunches, were five feet eight inches high; ſuch an animal is too ſtrong for a ſingle dog, and although he might be much wounded, would, without the dog had aſſiſtance at hand, certainly kill him. We know that the native dogs of this country hunt and kill the kangaroo; they may be more fierce, but they do not appear to be ſo ſtrong as our large greyhound; there was one not long ago ſeen in purſuit of a kangaroo, by a perſon who was employed in ſhooting, who miſtaking the two animals as they paſſed him to be of the kind he was looking for, he fired at the hindmoſt and brought him down, but when he came up it proved to be a native dog. Of thoſe dogs we have had many which were taken when young, but never could cure them of their natural ferocity; although well fed, they would at all times, but particularly in the dark, fly at young pigs, chickens, or any ſmall animal which they might be able to conquer, and immediately kill, and generally eat them. I had one which was a little puppy when caught, but, notwithſtanding I took much pains to correct and cure it of its ſavageneſs, I found it took every opportunity, which it met with, to ſnap off the head of a fowl, or worry a pig, and would do it in defiance of correction. They are a very good natured animal when domeſticated, but I believe it to be impoſſible to cure that ſavageneſs, which all I have ſeen ſeem to poſſeſs.

CHAP. III.

1788.

The opoſſum is alſo very numerous here, but it is not exactly like the American opoſſum; it partakes a good deal of the kangaroo in the ſtrength of its tail and make of its fore-legs, which are very ſhort in proportion to the hind ones; like that animal, it has the pouch, or falſe belly, for the ſafety of its young in time of danger, and its colour is nearly the ſame, but the fur is thicker and finer. There are ſeveral other animals of a ſmaller ſize, down as low as the field-rat, which in ſome part or other partakes of the kangaroo and opoſſum: we have caught many rats with this pouch for carrying their young when purſued, and the legs, claws, and tail of this rat are exactly like the kangaroo. It would appear, from the great ſimilarity in ſome part or other of the different quadrupeds which we find here, that there is a promiſcuous intercourſe between the different ſexes of all thoſe different animals. The ſame obſervation might be made alſo on the fiſhes of the ſea, on the fowls of the air, and, I may add, the trees of the foreſt. It was wonderful to ſee what a vaſt variety of fiſh were caught, which, in ſome part or other, partake of the ſhark: it is no uncommon thing to ſee a ſkait's head and ſhoulders to the hind part of a ſhark, or a ſhark's head to the body of a large mullet, and ſometimes to the flat body of a ſting-ray.

With reſpect to the feathered tribe, the parrot prevails; we have ſhot birds, with the head, neck, and bill of a parrot, and with the ſame variety of the moſt beautiful plumage on thoſe parts for which that bird here is diſtinguiſhed, and a tail and body of a different make and colour, with long, ſtreight, and delicate made feet and legs; which is the very reverſe of any bird of the parrot kind. I have alſo ſeen a bird, with the legs and feet of a parrot, the head and neck made and coloured like the common ſea-gull, and the wings and tail of a hawk. I have likewiſe ſeen trees bearing three different kinds of leaves, and frequently have found others, bearing the leaf of the gum-tree, with the gum exuding from it, and covered with bark of a very different kind.

There are a great variety of birds in this country; all thoſe of the parrot tribe, ſuch as the macaw, cockatoo, lorey, green parrot, and parroquets of different kinds and ſizes, are cloathed with the moſt beautiful plumage that can be conceived; it would require the pencil of an able limner to give a ſtranger an idea of them, for it is impoſſible by words to deſcribe them *. The common crow is found here in conſiderable numbers, but the ſound of their voice and manner of croaking, is very different from thoſe in Europe. There are alſo vaſt numbers of hawks, of various ſizes and colours. Here are likewiſe pigeons and quails, with a great variety of ſmaller birds, but I have not found one with a pleaſing note. There have been ſeveral large birds ſeen ſince we arrived in this port; they were ſuppoſed, by thoſe who firſt ſaw them, to be the oſtrich, as they could not fly when purſued, but ran exceedinglyfaſt; ſo much ſo, that a very ſtrong and fleet greyhound could not come near them: one was ſhot, which gave us an opportunity of a more cloſe examination. Some were of opinion that it was the emew, which I think is particularly deſcribed by Dr. Goldſmith, from Linneus; others imagined it to be the caſſowary, but it far exceeds that bird in ſize; it was, when ſtanding, ſeven feet two inches, from its feet to the upper part of its head; the only difference which I could perceive, between this bird and the oſtrich, was in its bill, which appeared to me to be narrower at the point, and it has three toes, which I am told is not the caſe with the oſtrich: it has one characteriſtic, by which it may

---

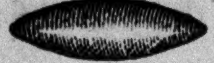
* See very accurate repreſentations, drawn from nature, and deſcribed by that ingenious and able naturaliſt, John Latham, Eſq; in Phillip's Voyage.

be known, and which we thought very extraordinary; this is, that two diſtinct feathers grew out from every quill *. The fleſh of this bird, although coarſe, was thought by us delicious meat; it had much the appearance, when raw, of neck-beef; a party of five, myſelf included, dined on a ſide-bone of it moſt ſumptuouſly. The pot or ſpit received every thing which we could catch or kill, and the common crow was reliſhed here as well as the barn-door fowl is in England.

Of inſects there are as great a variety here as of birds; the ſcorpion, centipede, ſpider, ant, and many others; the ants are of various ſizes, from the ſmalleſt known in Europe, to the ſize of near an inch long; ſome are black, ſome white, and others, of the largeſt ſort, reddiſh; thoſe of this kind are really a formidable little animal; if you tread near the neſt, (which is generally under ground, with various little paſſages or outlets) and have diſturbed them, they will ſally forth in vaſt numbers, attack their diſturbers with aſtoniſhing courage, and even purſue them to a conſiderable diſtance; and their bite is attended for a time with a moſt acute pain. Some build their neſts againſt a tree, to the ſize of a large bee-hive; another kind raiſes little mounts on the ground, of clay, to the height of four feet. In ſpeaking of the ſpider, it would be improper to be ſilent upon the induſtry of this little creature; I call them little, although, if compared with our common ſpider, they are very large; they ſpread their web in the woods between trees, generally to a diſtance of twelve or fourteen yards, and weave them ſo very ſtrong, that it requires conſiderable force to break them. I have ſeen the ſilk of which the web is compoſed, wound off into a ball, and think it equal to any I ever ſaw in the ſame ſtate from the ſilk worm; it is of the ſame colour, a pale yellow, or ſtraw colour. None of the gentlemen employed here have as yet made any particular obſervations upon the manner in

---

* See an elegant engraving of the Caſſowary in Phillip's Voyage.

which this animal is produced, or how they prepare their ſilk. I have found upon buſhes, on which the web has been hanging in cluſters, a thin ſhell, ſomething like that wherein the ſilk-worm prepares its ſilk, but of this ſhape,  and, upon opening them, I have ſeen a quantity of this ſilk within, in which a ſpider was found wrapped up.

Of reptiles, there are ſnakes from the ſmalleſt ſize known in England, to the length of eleven feet, and about as thick as a man's wriſt; and many lizards of different kinds and ſizes.

The natives we have ſeen accompanied by dogs, which appear to be domeſticated the ſame as ours in Europe; they are of the wolf kind, and of a reddiſh colour. When ſpeaking of birds, I ſhould have mentioned, that ſome of our gentlemen have ſeen in the lagoons and ſwamps which they have fallen in with, in their ſhooting excurſions, the black ſwan, which is ſaid to have been found in ſome parts of the weſt coaſt of this country; the extremity of their wings are deſcribed to be white, and all the reſt of the plumage black. I have ſeen one which has been ſhot. It anſwered the above deſcription as to colour, but the bill was a pale pink or crimſon; it was about the ſize of a common white ſwan, and was good meat.

The vaſt variety of beautiful plants and flowers, which are to be found in this country, may hereafter afford much entertainment to the curious in the ſcience of botany; but I am wholly unqualified to deſcribe the different ſorts with which we find the woods to abound; we ſometimes met with a little wild ſpinach, parſly, and ſorrel, but in too ſmall quantities to expect it to be of any advantage to the ſeamen. The flax plant has been found here in ſeveral places, but not in any conſiderable quantity; I have heard it reckoned a good kind, but in that alſo I muſt confeſs my ignorance.

In the infancy of a diſtant ſettlement, the want of timber to carry on the neceſſary buildings, will be allowed to be a very great inconvenience; but we were here in the middle of a wood, in which were trees from the ſize of a man's arm to twenty-eight feet in circumference; but they were either ſo very crooked, ſo rent, or ſo very rotten in the heart, that we could ſcarcely get one ſound or ſerviceable in a dozen; and what in our ſituation was a very great misfortune, we had not as yet found one piece of timber that would float in water. The wood is ſo exceedingly heavy, that when a large tree was cut down, in order to clear a piece of ground, it would ſometimes take a party of men three or four days to diſpoſe of it, or move it from the place.

Weather. We arrived in this country in the end of January, 1788; the weather was then very fine, though warm; the ſea and land breezes pretty regular, and Farenheit's thermometer was from 72° to 80°.

February. In February, the weather was ſultry, with lightning, thunder, and heavy rain; this ſort of weather continued for a fortnight, with few and very ſhort intervals of fair weather; a flaſh of lightning fell one night near the camp, and ſtruck a tree near to the poſt of a centinel, who was much hurt by it; the tree was greatly rent, and there being at the foot of it a pen in which were a few pigs and ſheep, they were all killed. Towards the latter end of the month the weather was more ſettled, little thunder, lightning, or rain, and the thermometer from 65° to 77°. In the middle of this month, Lieutenant King of the Sirius, a maſter's mate, and ſurgeon's mate, with four other men from the

1788.

the ſhip, together with a few men and women convicts, embarked on board the Supply armed tender, and ſhe ſailed with them for Norfolk Iſland. In the paſſage thither, they fell in with a ſmall iſland which had not before been diſcovered; it lies in latitude 31° 36′ ſouth, and about 140 leagues to the eaſtward of this coaſt; lieutenant Ball named it Lord Howe's Iſland. After having landed the party intended to remain on Norfolk Iſland, with their proviſions and ſtores, Mr. Ball, in his return to Port Jackſon, called at Lord Howe's Iſland, in order to examine it more particularly. He found anchorage on the weſt ſide of it, but the bottom was coral rock. He landed, with his boat, within a reef, and caught a number of excellent turtle upon a ſandy beach: this iſland alſo abounded with a variety of birds, which were ſo unaccuſtomed to being diſturbed, that the ſeamen came near enough to knock down as many as they wanted with ſticks.

March.

In March, the weather was variable, ſometimes ſtrong gales from the ſouthward and ſouth-eaſt, with moiſt and hazy weather; a great ſea rolling in upon the coaſt. This month the marines were ordered to clear ground and begin to build huts and barracks for the winter; the convicts were alſo directed to employ certain hours in the ſame neceſſary work for themſelves. The mornings and evenings were now rather cold; the thermometer from 60° to 75°.

April.

In the month of April the weather was much the ſame as in March; rather variable; a few days of cloudy weather with rain, which generally fell in the night, and ſoutherly and ſouth-eaſt winds; but when the wind ſhifted to the weſtward or north-weſt, the weather became fair and pleaſant, and this weather was frequently attended with ſea and land breezes; the mornings and evenings cold, and the middle of the day (if calm) very hot. Thermometer from 68° to 72°.

1788.

May. The beginning of this month much bad weather; ſtrong gales from ſouth to ſouth-eaſt, generally attended with rain in the night; middle of the month fair and ſettled weather for ſeveral days together, with a regular land and ſea wind; towards the end of the month the wind prevailed between ſouth-weſt and ſouth-eaſt, weather unſettled, ſhowers of rain commonly in the night; in the day little wind and warm weather. The thermometer from 56° to 67°.

June. The beginning of June fair and pleaſant weather, attended with land and ſea breezes; from the middle to the latter end, ſtormy weather with much rain, wind chiefly from the ſouth-eaſt quarter. The thermometer from 52° to 62°.

July. This month begun as the laſt ended, with bluſtering, rainy weather; the middle was leſs windy, though cloudy and dull, with frequent ſhowers; the end of the month fair weather with weſterly winds. The thermometer from 52° to 63°.

Auguſt. This month commenced with cloudy weather and much rain, ſoutherly and ſouth-eaſt winds; the middle moderate and fair with variable winds; the latter part was fair weather with light and variable winds. The thermometer from 56° to 72°.

September. From the beginning till about the 20th, the weather was cloudy with frequent ſhowers of rain; but the latter part had ſtrong gales from the ſouth-eaſt quarter.

I was furniſhed with the following months by Lieutenant William Dawes, of the marines.

1788. October.

The firſt and middle parts of this month the weather was moderate and cloudy, and the wind very variable, frequent thunder and lightning with ſhowers of rain; the latter part was clear, fine weather in general, with diſtant thunder and lightning, and a few violent ſqualls of wind, which happened generally in the night. The Thermometer from 49° to 81°.

November.

In the beginning of this month the weather was generally cloudy and hazy, the wind from the eaſtward; the middle part alſo cloudy with frequent light ſhowers of rain, thunder, and lightning, ſometimes diſtant and ſometimes very heavy; latter part, cloudy and hazy, with violent thunder, lightning, and rain; wind from north-eaſt to ſouth-eaſt; and the thermometer from 53° to 93°.

December.

The firſt part was cloudy and hazy, with ſome thunder, attended with light rain; middle, ſame kind of weather, with frequent and light ſhowers of rain; latter part, moderate weather with a good deal of rain; the wind chiefly from the northward and eaſtward. The thermometer from 53° to 102°.

1789. January.

During the whole of this month, the weather was cloudy and hazy, with light ſhowers of rain, and ſometimes diſtant thunder; the wind chiefly, though from the north-eaſt and ſouth-eaſt, and during the night, weſterly, or land winds. The thermometer from 63° to 112°.

☞ The thermometer, as marked for theſe laſt four months, was in the open air occaſionally expoſed to the ſun and wind.

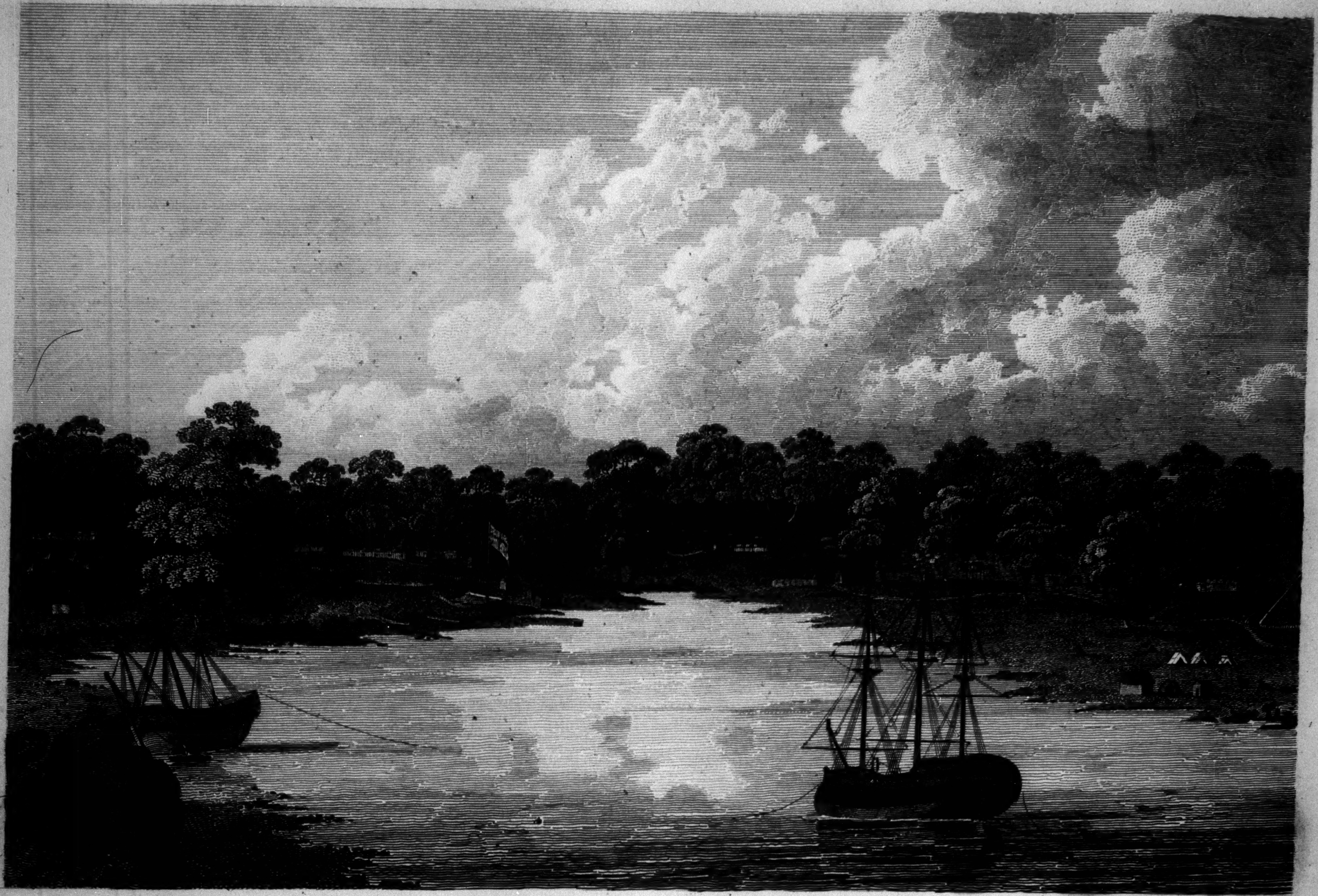
CHAP. III.

1788.

March.

I judged it better, while mentioning the weather during the different months, to go on with that by itſelf, and not to mix it with any other occurrences: I muſt, therefore, return back as far as the beginning of March, at which time, as the two French ſhips already ſpoken of were preparing to leave this coaſt, I determined to viſit Monſieur de la Perouſe before he ſhould depart; I accordingly, with a few other officers, ſailed round to Botany-Bay, in the Sirius's long-boat. We ſtaid two days on board the Buſſole, and were moſt hoſpitably and politely entertained, and very much preſſed to paſs a longer time with them: when I took my leave the weather proved too ſtormy to be able to get along the coaſt in an open boat; I therefore left the long-boat on board the Buſſole, took my gun, and, with another officer and two ſeamen, travelled through the woods and ſwamps, of which there were many in our route. We directed our courſe by a pocket compaſs, which led us within a mile of our own encampment; the diſtance from Botany-Bay to Port Jackſon, acroſs the land, and near the ſea ſhore, is, in a direct line, eight or nine miles; and the country about two miles to the ſouthward of Port Jackſon abounds with high trees, and little or no underwood; but between that and Botany-Bay, it is all thick, low woods or ſhrubberies, barren heaths, and ſwamps; the land near the ſea, although covered in many places with wood, is rocky from the water-ſide to the very ſummit of the hills. Whilſt walking on ſhore with the officers of the French ſhips at Botany-Bay, I was ſhewn by them a little mount upon the north ſhore, which they had diſcovered, and thought a curioſity; it was quite rocky on the top, the ſtones were all ſtanding perpendicularly on their ends, and were in long, but narrow pieces; ſome of three, four, or five ſides, exactly (in miniature) reſembling the Giants Cauſeway in the north of Ireland. The Buſſole and Aſtrolabe ſailed from Botany-Bay the 11th of March.

As



Drawn by E. Dayes from a Sketch of J. Hunter

VIEW of the SETTLEMENT on SYDNEY COVE, PORT JACKSON 20th AUGUST, 1788.

Publish'd Oct.r 18 1792 by I. Stockdale. Piccadilly.

1788.

As I have mentioned ſomething of the country between Botany-Bay and Port Jackſon, I muſt farther obſerve, that in the neighbourhood of Sydney Cove, which is that part of this harbour in which Governor Phillip has fixed his reſidence, there are many ſpots of tolerably good land, but they are in general of but ſmall extent; excluſive of thoſe particular ſpots, it is rather a poor ſteril ſoil, full of ſtones; but near, and at the head of the harbour, there is a very conſiderable extent of tolerable land, and which may be cultivated without waiting for its being cleared of wood; for the trees ſtand very wide of each other, and have no underwood: in ſhort, the woods on the ſpot I am ſpeaking of reſemble a deer park, as much as if they had been intended for ſuch a purpoſe; but the ſoil appears to me to be rather ſandy and ſhallow, and will require much manure to improve it, which is here a very ſcarce article; however, there are people whoſe judgment may probably be better than mine, that think it good land; I confeſs that farming has never made any part of my ſtudies. The graſs upon it is about three feet high, very cloſe and thick; probably, farther back there may be very extenſive tracts of this kind of country, but we, as yet, had no time to make very diſtant excurſions into the interior parts of this new world.

May 6. On the 6th of May, three of the tranſports, which were chartered by the Eaſt-India Company to load tea at China, ſailed from this port; the Supply alſo ſailed for Lord Howe Iſland.

The carpenter of the Sirius, with his crew, had been conſtantly employed on ſhore ſince our arrival in this country, aſſiſting in erecting ſtore-houſes, and other neceſſary buildings. The ſhip's company were variouſly employed out of the ſhip upon the buſineſs of the ſettlement.

The

CHAP. III. 1788.

The ſcurvy had, for ſome time paſt, appeared more amongſt the ſeamen, marines, and convicts, than when on board the ſhips, which will appear ſtrange, after having enjoyed the advantage of being much upon the land, and eating various vegetable productions; but this the gentlemen of the faculty ſay is no uncommon thing, particularly when men are under the neceſſity of continuing the ſame ſalt diet; ſetting aſide this, and a few with dyſenteries, the health of the people cannot be ſaid to be bad. About the middle of this month a convaleſcent, who had been ſent from the hoſpital to gather wild ſpinach, or other greens, was murdered by the natives; there were two of them together, the one eſcaped, but was wounded, the other has never been heard of ſince; but as ſome part of his cloaths were found which were bloody, and had been pierced by a ſpear, it was concluded he had been killed. A ſhort time after this accident, a report prevailed, that part of the bones of a man had been found near a fire by which a party of the natives had been regaling themſelves; this report gave riſe to a conjecture, that as this man had been killed near this place, the people who had committed the murder had certainly ate him. Whether any of the natives of this country are cannibals is yet a matter on which we cannot ſpeak poſitively; but the murder of two other men, as related immediately after this, ſeems to contradict the conjecture that they are cannibals, as the men were left on the ſpot where they were killed: however, the following circumſtance may, in ſome degree, incline us to believe, that although the natives in general do not eat human fleſh, yet that that horrid cuſtom is ſometimes practiſed. I was one day preſent when two native children were interrogated on the ſubject of the quarrels of their countrymen; they were particularly aſked, what the different chiefs did with thoſe they killed; they mentioned ſome who burnt and buried the ſlain, but they alſo particularly named one who ate thoſe he killed.

Some ſhort time after the before-mentioned accident happened, two convicts who had been employed at a little diſtance up the harbour, in cutting ruſhes for thatching, were found murdered by the natives. It has been ſtrongly ſuſpected that theſe people had engaged in ſome diſpute or quarrel with them, and as they had hatchets and bill-hooks with them, it is believed they might have been raſh enough to uſe violence with ſome of the natives, who had, no doubt, been numerous there; be that as it might, the officer who went to look after thoſe unfortunate men, and to ſee what work they had done, after hailing ſome time for them without any reply, ſet his boat's crew upon the ſearch, who, having found a conſiderable quantity of blood near their tent, ſuſpected what they ſoon found to be the caſe: for they diſcovered the two men immediately after, lying in different places, both dead; the one had his brains beat out with a club or ſtone, beſides ſeveral other wounds; the other had many wounds, and part of a ſpear, which had been broke, ſticking quite through his body. Their tent, proviſions, and cloaths remained, but moſt of the tools were taken away.

June 4. The 4th of June being the birth-day of our much beloved ſovereign, and the firſt we had ſeen in this moſt diſtant part of his dominions, it was celebrated by all ranks with every poſſible demonſtration of loyalty, and concluded with the utmoſt chearfulneſs and good order.

Having at this time of the year much bad weather, and very heavy gales of wind, I muſt obſerve, that I had, as well as many others, believed till now, that the gales had never blown upon the coaſt in ſuch a direction, but that a ſhip, on being cloſe in with the land when ſuch a gale commenced, might gain an offing on one tack or the other; but we now found, that thoſe gales are as variable in their direction upon

CHAP. III. 1788. this coaſt as any other during the winter ſeaſon: I would, therefore, recommend it to ſhips bound to any port here to the ſouthward of latitude 30° 00′ ſouth, at this time of the year to get in or near the parallel of their port, before they attempt to make the land; as in that caſe, if a gale from the eaſtward ſhould take them when near the land, they would have their port under their lee, for it would be next to an impoſſibility for a ſhip to keep off the land with ſuch a ſea as theſe gales occaſion.

July. In the month of July, our ſcorbutic patients ſeemed to be rather worſe; the want of a little freſh food for the ſick was very much felt, and fiſh at this time were very ſcarce: ſuch of the natives as we met ſeemed to be in a miſerable and ſtarving condition from that ſcarcity. We frequently fell in with families living in the hollow part of the rocks by the ſea-ſide, where they eagerly watched every opportunity of moderate weather to provide ſhell or other fiſh for their preſent ſubſiſtence: if a bird was ſhot, and thrown to them, they would immediately pluck off the feathers, put it upon the fire without taking out the inteſtines, and eat the whole; ſometimes they did not pull off the feathers, and, if it were a ſmall bird, did not even throw the bones away. This ſeaſon, in which fiſh is ſo ſcarce, ſubjects theſe poor creatures to great diſtreſs, at leaſt we were apt to believe ſo; they were frequently found gathering a kind of root in the woods, which they broiled on the fire, then beat it between two ſtones until it was quite ſoft; this they chew until they have extracted all the nutritive part, and afterwards throw it away. This root appears to be a ſpecies of the orchis, or has much of its nutritive quality. Large fires were frequently ſeen in this ſeaſon upon ſome of the hills, and we had been much at a loſs to know for what purpoſe they were ſo frequently lighted, at this time of the year; but in going down the harbour one day, with an intention to get upon the North Head, for the purpoſe of aſcertaining its exact latitude, we obſerved on a hill near that point, one of thoſe large fires, which (with the firſt lieutenant and ſurgeon who were with me) we determined to viſit; and as we thought it might probably be ſome funeral ceremony, which we were very deſirous of ſeeing, we took our guns, and intended getting up amongſt them unperceived; but when we arrived at the place, to our very great diſappointment, not a perſon was to be ſeen: I believe there were not leſs than three or four acres of ground all in a blaze; we then conjectured that theſe fires were made for the purpoſe of clearing the ground of the ſhrubs and underwood, by which means they might with greater eaſe get at thoſe roots which appear to be a great part of their ſubſiſtence during the winter. We had obſerved that they generally took the advantage of windy weather for making ſuch fires, which would of courſe occaſion their ſpreading over a greater extent of ground.

July 14.

On the 14th of July four tranſports, under the command of Lieutenant Shortland, ſailed for England; they intended going to the northward, and paſſing through the ſtreights of Macaſſar and Sunda, the ſeaſon being too early either to attempt going round Van Diemen's land, and to endeavour to get to the weſtward by that tract, or to go to the eaſtward by Cape Horn.

Auguſt 12.

The 12th of Auguſt being the birth-day of His Royal Highneſs the Prince of Wales, a ſalute of 21 guns was fired from the Sirius and Supply, and the officers of the ſettlement and ſhips dined with the governor, as on His Majeſty's birth-day.

CHAP. III.

1788. Auguſt 17.

We began at this time to take equal altitudes for aſcertaining the exact rate of the time-keeper. On the 17th, the governor directed two boats from the Sirius, with a proper officer in each, to go up the harbour; one to take the north, the other the ſouth ſide; they were to enter every cove in their way up, in order to aſcertain, as exactly as poſſible, the number of canoes and natives within the harbour of Port Jackſon; for the ſame purpoſe, two other boats went down the harbour; in one of which the governor went, and I proceeded in the other; in the lower or north part of the harbour there was a conſiderable number of canoes, ſome of which were then employed in catching fiſh. Upon my going round the coves, they all left their work and puſhed with great precipitation for the land, which convinced me that they were women who were thus employed; as they had always ſhewn a deſire, as much as poſſible, to avoid us. I did every thing in my power to prevent their being alarmed, or in any reſpect uneaſy, by keeping at a diſtance from them, and making every friendly ſignal I could, but to no purpoſe; for although there was no other boat in company, they did not ſeem diſpoſed to truſt us near them: there were many men upon the ſhore, who ſpoke to us in their uſual familiar and chearful manner, and invited us with much apparent earneſtneſs and friendſhip to come on ſhore, which, however, I declined, in order to proſecute the buſineſs I was engaged in; although I own I thought the counting them from the boat was a very uncertain method of coming at their numbers. It blew freſh, and there was ſo much ſurf on ſhore, that it was impoſſible to land where the people ſtood, without the danger of hurting the boat, otherwiſe it is probable that I, together with Lieutenant George Johnſton, of the marines, who was in the boat with me, ſhould have landed: we went as near as poſſible to the ſhore, I believe within twenty yards, and whilſt in friendly converſation with them, and lying upon our oars, we obſerved one of them place his lance upon the throwing-ſtick, but had no idea that he meant to throw it amongſt us, after ſo friendly an invitation as we had received from them to land: but I was now convinced, that they only wanted us within their reach, no doubt from an opinion that we had no fire arms, as they did not appear: as ſoon as they thought that they could throw it with effect, a lance was diſcharged, which paſſed about ſix feet over our heads; I ſaw the lance in the air, and immediately ſnatched up my gun, which, as they run off the moment they had ſhewn their hoſtile intention, I was determined to diſcharge amongſt them, and ſhould probably have killed one of their number, if my gun had not miſſed fire. Mr. Johnſton, upon my gun having miſſed, immediately diſcharged his into the buſhes in which they had ſheltered themſelves from our ſight; but as it was charged only with ſmall ſhot, I think it could not have hurt any of them: what reaſon they could have had for this treacherous kind of conduct, I am wholly at a loſs to gueſs, for nothing hoſtile or miſchievous had appeared on our part; on the contrary, the moſt friendly diſpoſition had been manifeſted in every thing we ſaid or did; even when their women took the alarm upon our approach, I ſpoke to them, and made ſuch ſigns of friendſhip as we judged they would underſtand, and went round at a diſtance to prevent their apprehenſion of any inſult. It was perhaps fortunate that my gun did not go off; as I was ſo diſpleaſed at their treachery, that it is highly probable I might have ſhot one of them.

On comparing the accounts, which were taken by the different boats employed upon this buſineſs, it appeared that we had ſeen—Canoes 67—men 94—women 34—children 9,—which is by no means a juſt account of the

numbers

numbers who, at that time, lived in and about this harbour; for I have ſince ſeen in one part of the harbour more than that number.

1788.

August 27. On the 27th, the Supply tender arrived from Norfolk Iſland, where ſhe had been with a quantity of proviſions and ſtores for that ſettlement; ſhe brought the melancholy account of the loſs of Mr. James Cunningham, and four others, who were drowned in the ſurf, by their boat being overſet in landing the ſtores from the Supply; ſo exceedingly difficult of acceſs is the ſhore of that iſland, from an almoſt continual ſurf breaking on a reef which encompaſſes the coaſt on that part where the ſettlement is formed.

In this month a report prevailed in the ſettlement, which ſeemed at firſt to gain ſome credit:—It was, that one *Dailey*, a convict, had diſcovered a piece of ground, wherein he had found a conſiderable quantity of a yellow coloured ore, which, upon its being tried, appeared to have a certain proportion of gold in it; at this time the governor happened to be abſent on a ſhort excurſion into the country, to the northward: the report having been made to the lieutenant-governor, he, of courſe, examined the man, who had made the diſcovery, and who told his ſtory with ſo much plauſibility, that it was not doubted but an ore of ſome kind had been found. Dailey was interrogated as to the place, but this he refuſed to give any information of until the return of the governor, to whom he would give a full account of the diſcovery, provided he would grant him what the diſcoverer conſidered as but a ſmall compenſation for ſo valuable an acquiſition; this reward was, (as there were ſhips upon the point of ſailing) his own and a particular woman convict's enlargement, and a paſſage in one of the ſhips to England, together with a ſpecified ſum of money, which I do not now recollect. The lieutenant-governor inſiſted, that as he had already mentioned the diſcovery he had made, he ſhould alſo ſhew what part of the country it was in, otherwiſe he might expect puniſhment, for daring to impoſe upon thoſe officers to whom he had related this buſineſs: the fear of puniſhment diſpoſed him to incline a little, though apparently with much reluctance; he propoſed to the lieutenant-governor, that an officer ſhould be ſent down the harbour with him, for the mine, which, he ſaid, was in the lower part of the harbour, and near the ſea ſhore, and he would ſhew the place to the officer: accordingly, an officer, with a corporal and two or three private ſoldiers were ſent with him; he landed where he ſaid the walk would be but ſhort, and they entered the wood in their way to the mine; ſoon after they got among the buſhes, he applied for permiſſion to go to one ſide for a minute upon ſome neceſſary occaſion, which was granted him; the officer continued there ſome hours without ſeeing the diſcoverer again, who, immediately on getting out of his ſight, had puſhed off for the camp by land, for he knew the road very well, and he had cunning enough to perſuade the officer to ſend the boat away as ſoon as they had landed, as he ſuppoſed he would not chooſe to quit the place until a good guard came down; for which purpoſe, the officer was to have diſpatched a man by land, as ſoon as he arrived at the place, and was ſatiſfied that it merited attention. The convict arrived in camp pretty early in the afternoon, and informed the lieutenant-governor, that he had left the officer who went down with him in full poſſeſſion of the gold mine; he then got a few things out of his own tent, and diſappeared; the party, after waiting for ſome hours hooping and ſearching through the woods for the cheat, left their ſtations and marched round to the camp, where they arrived at duſk, heartily tired, and not a little chagrined at the trick the villain had played them. The want of proviſions ſoon brought him from his concealment,

CHAP. III. 1788.

cealment, and a ſevere puniſhment was the neceſſary conſequence of this impoſition: however, he ſtill gave out, that he had made the diſcovery which he before had mentioned, and that his reaſons for quitting the officer who went with him was, that he thought, if he gave the information to the governor himſelf, he ſhould certainly get what he had aſked. When the governor returned, another officer was ſent with him, although every perſon now believed that there was no truth in what he had hitherto reported. This officer informed him, in going down in the boat, that he would not ſuffer him to go three yards from him when landed, and that he would certainly ſhoot him if he attempted to run from him; for which purpoſe he ſhewed him, that he was loading his gun with ball: this ſo terrified the cheat, that he acknowledged he knew of no gold mine. He was then interrogated reſpecting the ore which he had produced, and he confeſſed he had filed down part of a yellow metal buckle, and had mixed with it ſome gold filed off a guinea, all which had been blended with ſome earth, and made hard. The man who tried the ore was bred a ſilverſmith, and upon ſeparating the different parts, he diſcovered that it contained a ſmall quantity of gold: the inventor was, of courſe, well puniſhed for his trick.

The obſervations which I made here, both for the latitude and longitude, as well as thoſe that were made by Lieutenant Bradley, were the ſame as are inſerted in the following tables.

OBSERVATIONS for the LONGITUDE, made in PORT JACKSON, by JOHN HUNTER.

	Time when	What Objects.	N° of Diſtances.	Longitude determined eaſt of Meridian of Greenwich.			Latitudes obſerved, &c. &c.
	March			°	′	″	
	14	☉ & ☽	8	151	08	00	On the North Head, Latitude 33° 49′ 20″ S.
	18	☽ & ∗ Aldebaran	8	151	19	30	On the South Head, Latitude 33° 51′ 08″
	27	☉ & ☽	8	151	03	00	Mean Latitude, Entrance of the Harbour - - } 33° 50′ 14″
Different Inſtrument.		☉ & ☽	8	151	32	00	
	28	☉ & ☽	12	151	13	00	On Point Maſkeline, Sydney-Cove - - - } 33° 51′ 50″
Different Inſtr.		☉ & ☽	12	151	11	00	
	April						
	10	☉ & ☽	8	151	18	00	Variation of the Compaſs 8° 30′ E.
		☽ & ∗ Regulus	9	151	38	00	Tide, full and change, 8ʰ 15′
	11	☉ & ☽	10	151	26	00	Riſes between ſix and ſeven feet.
	15	☽ & ∗ Spica	8	151	34	00	Longitude of the Entrance of the Harbour,
		☽ & ∗ Aldebaran	8	151	38	00	deduced from theſe Obſervations, will be
	25	☉ & ☽	10	150	58	40	151° 25′ 00″ E.
	26	☉ & ☽	8	151	49	00	
	27	☉ & ☽	10	151	04	00	N. B. The Obſervations for the Longitude
Different Inſtr.		☉ & ☽	10	151	10	00	were taken on board the ſhip, lying off the
	28	☉ & ☽	5	150	58	50	entrance of Sydney-Cove, and the Altitudes
Different Inſtr.		☉ & ☽	5	151	40	00	were computed.
			147	151	19	58	Mean of the above Obſervations for the Long.

Observations for the Longitude, made in Port Jackson, by Lieutenant William Bradley, in 1788.

Time when	What Objects.	Nº of Diſtances.	Longitude determined. Meridian of Greenwich.			Latitudes obſerved.	
March			°	′	″		
15	⊙ & ☽	12	151	33	30 E.	North Head, - -	33° 49′ 20″ S.
18	☽ & * Aldebaran	12	151	32	00	South Head, - -	33° 50′ 43″
	☽ & * Spica	3				Mean Latitudes of the Entrance of the Harbour,	33° 50′ 01″ S.
19	☽ & * Pollux	12	151	10	52		
	☽ & * Spica	3					
27	⊙ & ☽	12	151	08	00		
28	⊙ & ☽	12	151	26	52		
	⊙ & ☽	12	151	09	00		
	⊙ & ☽	6	151	22	00		
29	☽ & * Antares	12	151	09	07		
	⊙ & ☽	6					
30	⊙ & ☽	3	151	46	30		
April							
11	⊙ & ☽	6	151	25	10		
	☽ & * Regulus	3					
25	☽ & * Antares	10	151	19	51		
	⊙ & ☽	5					
26	⊙ & ☽	6	151	11	30		
	⊙ & ☽	10	151	25	15		
27	⊙ & ☽	10	151	18	45		
	⊙ & ☽	10	151	23	37		
		165	151	20	53 E.	Mean Longitude.	

The Mean of Mr. Bradley's and my Obſervations, gives Port Jackſon in
Latitude - - - - - - 33° 50′ 08″ South.
Longitude - - - - - - 151° 25′ 25″ Eaſt of the Meridian of Greenwich.

CHAPTER IV.

The Sirius leaves Port Jackſon.—Sails for the Cape of Good Hope, by the Eaſtern Paſſage.—Falls in with many large iſlands of ice.—Caſts anchor at Robin's Iſland.—Tables of the winds, weather, &c.

CHAP. IV.

1788. September.

IN the month of September, Governor Phillip ſignified to me, that it was his intention very ſoon to diſpatch the Sirius to the Cape of Good Hope, in order to purchaſe ſuch quantity of proviſions as ſhe might be capable of taking on board; and that ſhe might be made as light as poſſible for that purpoſe, he deſired I would land eight or ten of her guns and carriages, with any other articles which I judged the ſhip could ſpare, for the time ſhe might be abſent, and which might anſwer the purpoſe of lightening the ſhip and the making of room. In conſequence of this order, eight guns, with their carriages, and 24 rounds of ſhot for each gun, 20 half barrels of powder, a ſpare anchor, and various other articles, were put on ſhore at Sydney-cove: he alſo directed that I ſhould leave the ſhip's long-boat behind for the uſe of the ſettlement: this order I confeſs I with reluctance obeyed, as the want of ſuch a boat has often been very ſeverely felt; at the ſame time I was deſired to endeavour, on my arrival at the Cape, to purchaſe ſuch a boat for the ſettlement; and that written directions for that and other purpoſes would be given me, when I received my final inſtructions. Whilſt upon this ſubject, I thought it a proper opportunity to repreſent, that

the

CHAP. IV. 1788. the Sirius was (except in the carpenter's department,) perfectly ready for ſea; but the carpenter's crew, together with the carpenter of the ſhip himſelf, having all been employed conſtantly on the buſineſs of the ſettlement, ſince our arrival in this country, the ſhip had, in conſequence, been much neglected in that department; and as ſhe was ſoon to go to ſea, it was highly neceſſary that thoſe people ſhould be immediately ſent on board to prepare her for a voyage.

We had, it is true, (upon my repreſenting the abſolute neceſſity of having the ſhip's decks and ſides caulked,) employed an old man, the carpenter's yeoman, and a convict caulker, upon the weather work of the ſhip; but that work, we had afterwards reaſon to know, had not been ſo well executed as it might have been, had the carpenter of the ſhip been permitted to ſtay on board and attend ſo neceſſary a duty.

Sept. 30, On Tueſday the 30th of September, I received my final orders, and October 1, on Wedneſday the 1ſt of October, unmoored the ſhip; the governor and his family dined on board, and the wind being eaſterly, we got under weigh and worked down to the lower anchorage, where we came to, intending to take advantage of the land wind in the morning to put to ſea. The Golden Grove ſtore-ſhip alſo came down and anchored below, having on board proviſions and other ſtores, for Norfolk Iſland; ſhe had alſo on board a number of men and women convicts for that iſland; I think twenty men and twelve women, together with ſix marines and three ſeamen from the Sirius. In the evening, the governor and the other gentlemen who were with him took their leave, and early in the morning October 2, of the 2d, with the wind at ſouth-weſt, we ſailed out of the harbour.

As I have not at any time, when ſpeaking of this harbour, given any deſcription of it, or any directions for ſailing into it, I will take this opportunity.

The entrance of the harbour of Port Jackſon has nothing in its appearance, when ſix leagues from the land, by which it may be known; your latitude will be your moſt infallible guide to this harbour, or indeed to any other upon this coaſt. Steer in for the land, which here lies about north by eaſt half eaſt and ſouth by weſt half weſt; keep as near as you can in latitude 33° 50′ ſouth; the entrance, when you come near, will ſhew itſelf, by the heads on each ſide, which are high, ſteep, perpendicular cliffs, of a light reddiſh colour; a ſhip bound in here, may run in without fear between the heads, which are diſtant from each other one mile and three quarters; there is nothing in the way, and the ſhore pretty ſteep to on each ſide; the ſea breaking, which it does even in fine weather, will ſhew any rocks which may lie near under the ſhore. Steer in between the heads for a high bluff point, which is called Middle Cape or Head, and is ſteep to, until you open to the ſouthward of you a very extenſive arm of the harbour. If the wind be ſufficiently large to run up this branch, (which lies by compaſs ſouth-weſt by ſouth) on either ſhore, haul round the eaſt-moſt point of this arm, which is called the Inner or South Head; it is a low rocky point; give it a birth of two-thirds of a cable, and ſteer right in for the firſt ſandy cove above it, on the ſame ſide, called Camp Cove; keep at a convenient, but ſmall diſtance from the ſhore, in three and a half and four fathoms, and obſerve, that right off this cove, and near mid-channel, lies a patch of rocks, which appear at half-tide; the ſhoaling toward them is gradual all round, upon a ſmooth ſandy bottom; it is rocky only about half a cable's length from the dry part; you may keep near the upper point of

CHAP. IV. 1788.

Camp Cove, in ſix and ſeven fathoms, and from thence ſteer directly up the harbour. If you intend to go on the weſt ſhore, and to leave this patch of rocks to the eaſtward of you, ſteer in as before for Middle Head, and when within a cable's length of it, ſteer up for the next point above it, on the ſame ſide, obſerving not to make too free with that point, as it is rocky ſomething more than half a cable's length off. In this channel, which is much the beſt, being rather broader than the eaſtern channel, you will have four, four and a half, and five fathoms. When you are above this ſecond point, on the weſt ſhore, you may take what part of the channel you pleaſe, or anchor wherever you wiſh, there being nothing in the way from ſhore to ſhore.

The chart will certainly be the beſt guide in going in. If the wind ſhould be ſoutherly, a ſtranger would not venture to work up, but he might anchor with ſafety in the north part of the harbour, which he will perceive by the chart, to which I would refer him, rather than to a written deſcription *.

We were no ſooner clear of the harbour, than the wind veered more to the ſouthward, and began to blow ſtrong, with thick, hazy, and dirty weather; and, what gave me privately a good deal of concern, the carpenter reported, that the ſhip, which had hitherto been very tight, now made water. This piece of information, with ſuch a voyage as the Sirius was now entered upon, was no doubt very unwelcome; and more particularly ſo, when it was conſidered, that the ſhip's company, from having been long upon ſalt diet, without the advantage of any ſort of vegetables, were not ſo healthy and ſtrong as a leaky ſhip might

---

* For an accurate ſurvey of this harbour, ſee a Chart of Port Jackſon, by Captain Hunter, in Phillip's Voyage, 4to. Edition.

require. I had often obſerved, that when this voyage, upon which we were now entered, was the ſubject of converſation, in company with the governor, he always ſpoke in favour of the paſſage round Van Diemen's land, and to the weſtward; but when I ſignified a wiſh that he would direct by what route I ſhould endeavour to perform the voyage, he declined that; and ſaid that I ſhould be governed by circumſtances, and that he ſhould leave it to my diſcretion and judgment; at the ſame time expreſſing his opinion ſtrongly in favour of the weſtern route; which I confeſs I was a little ſurpriſed at, as it had never yet been attempted, not even by ſhips employed in that kind of ſervice which leaves it in their power to make experiments. I do not ſay that the paſſage from Van Diemen's land to the Cape of Good Hope, by the weſtward, is impracticable, as that remains yet to be tried; but from my own experience of the prevalence of ſtrong weſterly winds acroſs that vaſt ocean, I am inclined to think it muſt be a long and tedious voyage; and at the ſame time ſo very uncertain, that the time for which the Sirius was victualled, (for four months, and of ſome articles not more than two weeks, for the number of men on board; having left a conſiderable quantity of our proviſion for the uſe of the ſettlement,) and the nature of the ſervice ſhe was going upon, which was no doubt of conſiderable conſequence to the colony, was not an opportunity for trying ſuch an experiment; as the conſequence of a diſappointment would have been, that I muſt have returned again to Port Jackſon for a freſh ſupply of proviſions, and the ſeaſon for another paſſage would have been too far advanced. I therefore determined, judging from the experience of thoſe who had before made the eaſtern paſſage, to paſs to the ſouthward of New Zealand and round Cape Horn.

CHAP. IV.

1788. October 5.

October 6.

We ſtood off to the eaſtward, determined as early as poſſible to get an offing of fifty or ſixty leagues; the wind continued to the ſouthward with the ſame hazy and ſqually weather, until the 5th, when it ſhifted to ſouth-ſouth-eaſt; by this time we were about 70 leagues from the coaſt, which enabled us to tack and ſtand to the ſouth-weſt: with this change of wind from the ſouth-weſt to the ſouth-eaſt quarter, the ſame ſqually and unſettled weather continued. The ſhip upon the larboard tack made much more water than on the ſtarboard, ſo much as to render it neceſſary to pump her every two hours, to prevent too long a ſpell; ſhe made in general from ten to twelve inches in two hours. There was reaſon to conjecture, from this difference on the oppoſite tacks, that the leak was ſomewhere about the ſtarboard bow, and near the ſurface of the water, and if it proved ſo, I had a hope that we might, the firſt moderate weather, with ſmooth water, be able to come at and ſtop it. I was the more ſanguine in this expectation, as the carpenter, in a few days after, diſcovered it to be under the after part of the fore-channel, a little below the ſurface of the water; and ſeemed to think it proceeded from one of the butt-bolts being corroded by the copper, which I now underſtood had never been taken off ſince the ſhip's being firſt ſheathed, which was now more than eight years. On the 6th, the weather cleared up, and both Mr. Bradley and myſelf had a few diſtances of the ⊙ and ☽, by which our longitude was 157° 10′ eaſt, by the time-keeper 156° 55′ eaſt, and by account 156° 17′ eaſt; the latitude 34° 49′ ſouth; variation per Azimuth 11° 40′ eaſt. At noon, the wind got round to eaſt and eaſt by north, with which I ſteered ſouth-ſouth-eaſt; ſtill favouring our endeavours to get to the ſouthward; it next came to north-eaſt and north, and in latitude 40° 33′ ſouth, it came to north-weſt, but the weather ſtill continued ſqually and unſettled. As the weather began now to be rather cold, and as in the track I meant

1788.
October 9.

12th.

to proſecute my voyage by I might expect to have it conſiderably colder, and conſequently the ſhip's company would require a ſhift of cloathing, ſlops were ſerved to all who ſtood in need of them. On the 9th, we were near as far to the ſouthward as Van Diemen's Land, or South Cape of New Holland; and the wind being apparently ſettled in the ſouth-weſt quarter, I ſteered a courſe for the ſouth cape of New Zealand. From Port Jackſon to Van Diemen's Land we had run parallel to the coaſt, at the diſtance of 60 leagues from it, and have not ſeen any thing; ſo that we may venture to ſay, that there are no iſlands lie off that part of the coaſt, at the above diſtance from it. On the afternoon of this day (9th) we had ſeveral good ſetts of diſtances of the ☉ and ☽, by which our longitude was 157° 26′ eaſt, by the time-keeper 157° 19′ eaſt, and by account 157° 48′ eaſt; the latitude 43° 30′ ſouth; the thermometer was now 57°. On the 12th, we paſſed the ſouth cape of New Zealand, but the weather being very hazy and ſqually, we did not attempt to make it, but kept a degree and a half to the ſouthward of it; here we met with vaſt numbers of birds of various kinds, moſtly aquatic, ſuch as albatroſſes, pentada birds, divers, peterels, and a variety of gulls; ſome of a kind I had not before ſeen during the voyage, very large, of a dark brown or mouſe colour; and another ſort not quite ſo large, with a white body, dark wings, and the head of a light blue or lead colour: much ſea-weed was alſo ſeen here in very large patches. We now had the wind freſh from the north-weſt quarter, with frequent ſqualls, attended with rain, and the weather cold. We found the variation of the compaſs 40 leagues ſouth-ſouth-eaſt from the ſouth cape of New Zealand, to be 16° 54′ eaſt. Mr. Worgan, the ſurgeon, having recommended the eſſence of malt to be ſerved at this time to the ſhip's company, a certain quantity of wort was made every morning, and a pint ſerved to each man.

On

CHAP. IV.

1788. October 15. On the 15th, by an obſervation of the moon's diſtance from the ſtar aquila, our longitude was 171° 16′ eaſt, the latitude was 50° 45′ ſouth, and the variation of the compaſs 16° 20′ eaſt; longitude by the time-keeper 171° 32′ eaſt, and by account 172° 10′ eaſt. From this time to the 22d, we had light and variable winds, ſometimes from the ſouth and ſouth-eaſt, and ſometimes from the northward, with moiſt and hazy weather. 22d. On the 22d, the wind inclined from the weſtward, and the weather became fair; we had this day a ſet of diſtances of the ☉ and ☽, which gave our longitude 182° 46′ eaſt, the time-keeper 182° 37′ eaſt, and the account 184° 10′ eaſt; the latitude 51° 03′ ſouth; the variation was now 13° 45′ eaſt, and the thermometer 48°. For three ſucceſſive days we had lunar obſervations, by which it appeared that the reckoning a few days before had been more than a degree and a half to the eaſtward of the obſervations and time-keeper; but by our laſt 26th. diſtances of the ☉ and ☽ (26th) the ſhip was gaining on the account; theſe differences ſeem wholly to proceed from the ſea, occaſioned by the prevailing winds for the time; the eaſterly variation was decreaſing, being now only 11° 00′ eaſt, in latitude 52° 42′ ſouth, and longitude 196° 11′ eaſt. We now very frequently heard the divers in the night, and as often ſaw them in the day; it is really wonderful how theſe birds get from or to the land, at ſuch an immenſe diſtance from it as from 800 to 1000 leagues: they undoubtedly lay their eggs, and hatch them on ſhore, and yet we plainly perceived that thoſe we met were of the penguin kind, and could not fly: from the ſlow progreſs ſuch a bird can make in the water, it might be ſuppoſed that it would take them many years (were inſtinct to point out the direct and ſhorteſt courſe for them) before they could poſſibly reach any land, unleſs there are iſlands in theſe ſeas, and not far from our track, which have not yet been diſcovered. I endeavoured, in ſailing from New Zealand to Cape Horn, to keep as much as poſſible in a parallel between the tracks of the Reſolution and Adventure; ſo that if any iſland lay between the parallels in which theſe ſhips ſailed, we might have a chance of falling in with them. We have had very variable weather for ſome days paſt, with equally variable winds, and a confuſed jumble of a ſea, which the very frequent ſhifting of the wind occaſioned.

November 2. On the 2d of November, by a lunar obſervation, we were in longitude 214° 27′ eaſt; the time-keeper gave 214° 19′ eaſt, and by account 213° 02′ eaſt; the latitude 55° 18′ ſouth, the variation was here 11° 00′ eaſt, and the height of the thermometer was 50°. From the 2d to the 6th, we had the winds from north by weſt to north-north-eaſt: 6th. on the 6th and 7th, we had very good obſervations for the longitude by the ☉ and ☽; the former gave 223° 57′ eaſt, and the latter 227° 58′ eaſt; the longitude by account was 226° 20′ eaſt, the latitude 56° 12′ ſouth: the variation increaſed again, being in this ſituation 12° 20′ eaſt, thermometer 46°. 7th—17th. From the 7th until the 17th, the weather was very variable, and the wind very unſettled, between the ſouth-eaſt and ſouth-weſt quarters, attended with ſtrong gales and dark hazy weather, with frequent ſhowers of ſnow and hail; the thermometer was down at 42° in the cabin, where we ſometimes had a fire, but in the open air it was at 35°; the ſhowers were commonly accompanied with heavy guſts or ſqualls of wind. Notwithſtanding we were, with theſe winds from the ſouthward, ſubject to ſnow and hail, yet we frequently found that ſome of the gales which had blown from the northward were attended with a more piercing degree of cold. 18th. On the 18th, the weather became more moderate and fair, and the wind ſhifted to weſt, with a moderate breeze: we were now in longitude 261° 50′ eaſt, and latitude 55° 23′ ſouth, and had 14° 43′ eaſt variation. 19th. On the 19th, we found that the

1788. Nov. 22d. variation had increaſed, in a run to the eaſtward of 25 leagues, to 17° 30′ eaſt. On the 22d, we had ſeveral good diſtances of the ☉ and ☽, and found our longitude to be at noon 280° 22′ eaſt, by the time-keeper 281° 08′ eaſt, and by account 283° 09′ eaſt; the latitude was 57° 15′ ſouth; the variation of the compaſs increaſed very faſt as we approached Cape Horn, being now 20° 30′ eaſt; and on the next day 23d. (23d) 22° 30′ eaſt; but a table of the variation will be inſerted at the end of the chapter, where it will appear at one view.

We now very frequently fell in with high iſlands of ice. On the 24th. 24th, we had freſh gales with hazy and cold weather, and met ſo many ice iſlands, that we were frequently obliged to alter our courſe to avoid 25th. them. On the 25th, we had ſtrong gales with very heavy and frequent ſqualls: as we were now drawing near Cape Horn, and in all the charts of Terra del Fuego which I had ſeen, there is an iſland laid down, bearing from the Cape about ſouth-ſouth-weſt, and called Diego Ramirez, diſtant from the land ten or twelve leagues; and as I do not find that the exiſtence of ſuch an iſland has ever been contradicted by any perſon who has ſailed round this promontory, I determined to keep as near as poſſible in its parallel, the wind being from weſt-north-weſt to weſt-ſouth-weſt, and the weather rather hazy; if I ſhould make it, I could paſs either within or without, as might be convenient; and it would be as good a land-fall as the Cape itſelf, as, in caſe the wind ſhould incline to the ſouthward, we ſhould have offing enough to clear the land, which, to us who were upon a ſervice that would not admit of 26th. any loſs of time, was of conſequence. At noon on the 26th, we had a good meridian obſervation, and were exactly in the parallel of Diego Ramirez; and at eight A. M. an opportunity offered, for about an hour, for taking a ſet of diſtances of the ☉ and ☽, of which both

Mr.

1788.

Mr. Bradley and myſelf availed ourſelves; the reſult of which was (taking the mean of both obſervations, which agreed within a few miles) 292° 38′ eaſt, at the time of obſervation; ſo that we muſt then have been very near the place in which this iſland is laid down, for we could rely upon the obſervations: but as nothing appeared, we hauled in for the land, the looming of which we frequently ſaw, but the heavy black ſqualls which were conſtantly gathering upon it, rendered it too indiſtinct to be able to determine any particular point: at this time ſeveral long ſtrings of wild ducks flew paſt the ſhip: in the evening the weather cleared a little in the horizon, and we ſet the extremes of Terra del Fuego from north by weſt to weſt-north-weſt, diſtant about 10 leagues. We continued our courſe north-eaſt, and I think we may ſafely venture to determine, that there is no iſland ſo ſituated from Cape Horn as this Diego Ramirez is ſaid to be.

Nov. 27.

For ſeveral days before we made the land, and every day after we left it, until the 27th, we fell in with a great number of very high ice iſlands. Here alſo we met with divers and ſeals. We had got but a very ſmall diſtance to the eaſtward of the cape, when the winds inclined to the northward, and from that to the north-eaſt, and blew a freſh gale. From the 27th of November until the 12th of December, we had the wind conſtantly in the north-eaſt quarter, which I believe to be rather uncommon near Cape Horn for ſuch a length of time; as ſhips in general, that are bound into the ſouth ſea, find it rather tedious getting to the weſtward round this cape.

Dec. 12.

The ſhip's company now began to ſhew much diſpoſition to the ſcurvy, and what made it more diſtreſſing, we had nothing in the ſhip with which we could hope to check the progreſs of that deſtructive diſ-

caſe,

CHAP. IV. 1788. eaſe, except a little eſſence of malt, that we continued to ſerve to the ſhip's company. We had only to hope for a ſpeedy paſſage to the Cape of Good Hope, where we ſhould, without a doubt, with the good things which were to be had there, be able to re-inſtate their health perfectly: I was ſo far from being ſurpriſed at this appearance of the ſcurvy amongſt the company of the Sirius, ſo ſoon after leaving her port, that it was with me rather a matter of wonder that it had not ſhewn itſelf ſooner; and ſo it muſt be with every perſon who conſiders how they had lived ſince we left the Cape outward bound; during that time (about 13 or 14 months) they had not taſted a bit of freſh proviſions of any kind, nor had they touched a ſingle blade of vegetables.

We began now to be ſubject to hazy moiſt weather, with frequent very thick fogs; the latitude 55° 30′ ſouth, and longitude 306° 00′ eaſt; the weather was very cold, and very high iſlands of ice were ſeen in every quarter, ſome of a prodigious ſize: for fourteen days after we got to the eaſtward of Cape Horn, we were beating to the north-eaſt, anxious to get ſo far to the northward as to feel the influence of the ſummer ſun, by which it was to be hoped and expected our ſcorbutic patients might be much relieved. In latitude 52° 30′ ſouth, and longitude 318° 20′ eaſt, the wind inclined to the ſouthward of eaſt, with hazy moiſt weather, and we ſteered to the north-eaſt. We found many large whales here; they ſeemed to go in droves of from five and ſix to fifteen and twenty together, ſpouting within a cable's length of the ſhip, and ſometimes ſo near that it would have been no difficult matter to harpoon them from the fore part of the ſhip as they paſſed under the bows. Dec. 12. On the 12th of December, Henry Fitz-Gerald, a ſeaman, departed this life; he was troubled with a diſeaſe in his lungs, but the ſcurvy was his principal malady. 13th. On the 13th, in the morning, we paſſed one of the largeſt ice-iſlands we had ſeen; we judged it not leſs than three miles in length, and its perpendicular height we ſuppoſed to be 350 feet. 1788.

In latitude 51° 33′ ſouth, and longitude 321° 00′ eaſt, the wind ſeemed ſet in at ſouth-weſt, and blew a freſh ſteady gale, frequently attended with ſhowers of ſnow or hail; the variation of the compaſs decreaſed faſt, as will appear in the table annexed. On the 16th the wind ſhifted Dec. 16, ſuddenly to the north-weſt quarter, and blew a ſteady gale. On the 19th, it blew very ſtrong from weſt-north-weſt, with hazy weather, 19th, and frequent ſhowers of rain, which again changed the wind to the ſouth-weſt quarter, and the weather, as uſual upon thoſe changes, became fair and pleaſant. We now ſeemed to have got out from among the ice-iſlands, with which, from South Georgia to the latitude of 46° ſouth, this ocean ſeems at this ſeaſon of the year to be overſpread. In latitude 44° 00′ ſouth, we ſaw the laſt piece of ice, and in the whole, we had been twenty-eight days among the ice, and ſailed a diſtance of 800 leagues. We had run for ſeveral days together, at the rate of from 50 to 60 leagues in the 24 hours, in a north-eaſt direction; and had paſſed through a lane or ſtreet, if it may be ſo called, of ice-iſlands, the whole of that diſtance: in general they were from the ſize of a country church, to the magnitude of one, two and three miles in circumference, and proportionably high. Were it not that at this ſeaſon of the year we had in ſuch high latitudes very ſhort nights, and ſcarcely an hour which could be called dark; it would certainly be attended with conſiderable danger to run in the night, the ice iſlands were in ſuch vaſt numbers; indeed, we ſeldom ſailed more than three or four miles, without having ſeveral upon each beam. I think the direction, in which thoſe pieces of ice ſeemed to have been driven, is a ſtrong proof of the prevalence of ſouth-weſt winds in this part of the ocean. It is highly probable that they had been formed upon the coaſt of South Georgia and Sandwich Land, and ſeparated from the ground early in the ſpring, or probably in a gale of wind during the winter. Many of them were half black, apparently with earth from the land to which they had adhered, or elſe, with mud from the bottom on which they had lain: for it is well known, that ice-iſlands, after having been driven about at ſea for a length of time, become ſo light and ſpungy in that part which has been immerſed in the water, that the upper part becomes heavier, and thereby they frequently overſet, and may, by ſuch a change, ſhew ſome part of the ground on which they had reſted. Others had large and diſtinct portions of them thoroughly tinged with a beautiful ſea-green, or bright verdigreaſe colour.

In latitude 45° 30′ ſouth, and longitude 342° 00′ eaſt, the variation of the compaſs, which had decreaſed very gradually, was only 00° 4′ eaſt. We carried on ſtrong weſterly winds with us, which amply compenſated for the northerly and eaſterly gales which detained us ſo long between Cape Horn and South Georgia; and it was exceedingly fortunate for us that we were ſo favoured by the winds, for the ſhip's company were falling down very faſt with the ſcurvy; and as I have already obſerved, we had nothing on board with which we could hope to check its progreſs, much leſs to cure it. Nothing certainly can promiſe ſo fair to effect ſo deſireable a purpoſe, as carrying a good ſtock of various vegetable acids in every ſhip, but particularly in ſhips employed upon ſuch ſervices as the Sirius was. The elexir of vitriol, hitherto allowed, and *formerly conſidered*, not only as a preventive, but as a cure, was found by no means to anſwer the purpoſe of the former, far leſs of the latter. The vegetable acids, which might be provided for the uſe of ſhips upon long voyages, I apprehend would be found to occaſion a very ſmall additional expence, if any; and I am convinced in the end would be found a conſiderable ſaving.

Having on the 25th of December arrived upon the meridian of Dec. 25.
Greenwich, from which we had ſailed in an eaſterly direction, and com-
pleted 360° of eaſt longitude, and conſequently gained 24 hours, I
dropt 360° and repeated, Thurſday, 25th December. On the 30th, 30th,
John Shine, a ſeaman, died of the ſcurvy. On the 31ſt, I had a few 31ſt,
ſets of diſtances of the ☉ and ☽, by which our longitude at noon was
17° 16′ eaſt; by Mr. Bradley, it was 16° 58′ eaſt; the mean of both
gave 17° 07′ eaſt, and by the time-keeper it was 18° 10′ eaſt; and we
had not yet made the land; the latitude was 33° 48′ ſouth. This was
a proof that the time-keeper muſt have altered its rate ſince we left Port
Jackſon; we had then determined it to be loſing 4″-77. This change
of its rate, ſince we left Port Jackſon, I had ſome time ſuſpected, and
attributed it to the effects of the weather we had off, and near, Cape
Horn. This evening we made a ſhort trip off till midnight, when we
tacked and ſtood for the land again: Joſeph Caldwell, a ſeaman, died of
the ſcurvy. At day-light we ſaw the land; the neareſt, or that part
which we were a-breaſt of, was diſtant about four leagues, and the Table
Mountain bore ſouth by eaſt about nine or ten leagues; the wind, for
the laſt twenty-four hours, had been ſtrong from the ſouthward, and
we had, occaſioned by there being too much of it, fallen to leeward.
Nothing could have been more correct than our obſervations for the
longitude. The wind coming from the ſea, we ſtood along ſhore to the
ſouthward, and in the afternoon were a-breaſt of Robin's Iſland, but January 1
could not fetch round the reef, and into Table Bay. The weakly con- 1789.
dition of that part of the ſhip's company, who were able to do duty
upon

CHAP. IV.

1789.

upon deck, and the very dejected ſtate of thoſe who were confined to their beds, determined me, if poſſible, to bring the ſhip to an anchor before night; as the very idea of being in port, ſometimes has an exceeding good effect upon the ſpirits of people who are reduced low by the ſcurvy; which was the caſe with a great many of our ſhip's company; and indeed, a conſiderable number were in the laſt ſtage of it. After endeavouring in vain to weather the reef off the ſouth end of the iſland, I bore away, and ran round the north end, and anchored within, right off the flag-ſtaff and landing-place, in nine fathoms water, coarſe ground; the flag-ſtaff bearing weſt, and the ſouth end of the iſland, juſt on with the Lyon's Rump.

A TABLE

A TABLE of the Winds and Weather, &c. &c. on a Paſſage from the Coaſt of New South Wales to the Cape of Good Hope (by the Route of Cape Horn) in His Majeſty's Ship Sirius, in the Months of October, November, and December, 1788.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1788. Octob.	South. °	′	Eaſt. °	′			Day		
3	34	23	153	35	S. S. W.		5	2	Freſh gales and hazy.
4	34	50	155	05	S. S. W. S. W.		6	4	Squally with ſhowers of rain.
5	34	49	156	17	S. S. W. S. S. E.		7	4	P. M. ſqually. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
6	35	23	156	35	S. E. to E. by N.	60½°	8	4	Moderate and clear.
7	37	40	156	30	E. N. E.	60	9	4	Moderate and fair.
8	40	33	157	07	E. N. E. N. E. W. N. W. North.	59	10	4	P. M. freſh gales and hazy. A. M. ſqually with rain.
9	43	34	157	20	N. W. to North.	58	11	4	P. M. ſtrong gales and ſqually. A. M. heavy ſqualls.
10	44	25	159	04	E. N. E. S. S. W. W. N. W.	57	12	4	Moderate and hazy.
11	45	36	160	52	S. W. N. W. N. E.	54	13	7	Moderate winds and cloudy, with ſhowers of rain.
12	47	44	163	32	N. N. W. N. W.	54½	14	8	Freſh breezes and hazy.
13	49	15	166	38	W. N. W. Weſt. N. W.	52	15	8	P. M. freſh breezes and hazy. A. M. ſqually with rain.
14	50	29	170	28	N. N. W. Weſt.	50	16	9	P. M. light breezes with rain. A. M. freſh breezes and hazy.
15	51	05	173	48	Weſt. N. W.	50	17	9	Moderate and hazy.
16	51	06	176	29	N. N. W. S. W. Variable.	48	18	6	P. M. freſh breezes and hazy. A. M. moderate and clear.
17	50	54	179	10	S. S. E. S. E. South.	45	19	8	Moderate and fair.
18	50	28	180	39	S. E. Variable.	49	20	9	Moderate and clear. A. M. paſſed very near to the antipodes of London.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1788. Octob.	South.		East.				Day		
	°	′	°	′		°			
19	50	14	181	25	E. S. E. S. E.	47	21	9	Light breezes and hazy.
20	50	16	182	27	S. by E. Variable.	47½	22	9	Light breezes and cloudy.
21	50	18	182	41	N. E.	49	23	7	Light airs and cloudy.
22	51	06	182	54	N. E. Variable.	48	24	7	Moderate and cloudy.
23	51	30	186	49	N. W. to S. W.	48	25	7	Freſh breezes and cloudy.
24	52	00	190	05	W. S. W.	47½	26	5	Freſh breezes and cloudy.
25	52	19	192	26	W. S. W. Weſt.	54½	27	6	Moderate and hazy.
26	52	42	195	25	W. N. W. Weſt.	53	28	5	Moderate and cloudy.
27	53	04	198	31	N. N. W. W. N. W	54	29	6	Ditto.
28	53	19	200	39	W. N. W. to W. S. W.	54	30	8	Light airs and hazy.
29	53	36	203	19	S. W.	54	1	8	P. M. moderate breezes and thick fog. A. M. hazy with rain.
30	53	36	204	25	W. S. W. Variable.	53	2	8	Light airs, thick, and hazy, with ſmall rain.
31	54	09	206	11	Weſt to N. E.	53½	3	10	Light breezes and hazy.
Nov.									
1	54	58	208	18	North.	51	4	10	Freſh breezes and hazy.
2	55	18	211	53	N. N. W.	50	5	10	P. M. moderate and hazy. A. M. clear.
3	55	22	218	47	North.	50	6	10	Freſh breezes and hazy.
4	55	38	221	33	N. N. E.	49½	7	10	Moderate and cloudy.
5	55	47	224	46	North.	48	8	10	Freſh breezes and clear.
6	56	10	227	03	N. N. E. N. E.	47½	9	9	Moderate and clear.
7	56	34	229	00	N. E. E. N. E.	46	10	10	Strong gales and cloudy.
8	55	42	229	07	Eaſt. S. E. by S.	46	11	9	Freſh gales and hazy, with rain.
9	55	32	232	32	S. S. E. South.	46	12	10	P. M. freſh gales and hazy. A. M. ſtrong gales with ſmall rain.
10	55	52	236	46	W. S. W. Weſt.	49½	13	10	P. M. ſtrong gales and ſqually. A. M. moderate and hazy.
11	55	52	241	58	S. W. South.	44½	14	10	P. M. freſh breezes and drizzling rain. A. M. ſtrong gales and ſqually, with ſnow and hail.
12	55	53	247	24	S. W. to W. N. W.	51	15	10	Freſh gales, thick and hazy.
13	55	14	252	39	S. W. by W.	46	16	8	Firſt and latter parts ditto. Middle, ſtrong gales and ſqually with rain.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1788.	South.		Eaſt.				Day		
Nov.	°	′	°	′		°			
14	54	52	254	01	S. W. S. S. E. Variable.	44	17	10	P. M. freſh breezes and cloudy, with hail. A. M. thick with ſnow.
15	54	23	256	35	E. S. E. to S. S. W.	42	18	9	Firſt part, moderate with light falls of ſnow. Middle, ſqually. Latter, moderate and cloudy.
16	54	49	261	04	S. S. W.	45	19	9	P. M. ſqually with ſnow and hail. A. M. freſh gales and cloudy.
17	55	16	264	42	S. W. to S. S. E.	45	20	10	P. M. ſtrong gales and ſqually. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
18	55	38	266	30	Weſt.	50	21	10	P. M. freſh breezes and fair. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
19	56	36	269	37	S. W.	51	22	10	P. M. moderate and cloudy. A. M. ſqually, with ſmall rain.
20	56	56	271	44	S. W. W. S. W.	49	23	10	Freſh gales and ſqually, with ſleet.
21	57	17	276	52	W. N. W. W. S. W.	48	24	10	Squally with ſnow and ſleet.
22	57	15	280	22	S. W. to N.W. by W.	49	25	10	Moderate gales and cloudy.
23	57	07	284	44	N. W. North.	49	26	10	Freſh gales and cloudy; many ice iſlands about the ſhip.
24	57	31	287	54	N. N. E. W. N. W.	49	27	10	Freſh gales, thick and hazy. Paſſed an iſland of ice.
25	56	30	292	53	W. S. W.	50	28	10	P. M. ditto. A. M. ſtrong gales and ſqually. Many ice iſlands in ſight.
26	55	44	296	03	Weſt. N. W. North.	50	29	13	Strong gales, thick and rainy. Paſſed ſeveral ice iſlands. P. M. ſaw the land of Terra del Fuego.
27	55	52	297	26	N. N. E. N. E.	46	30	12	Strong gales, thick, and foggy; ſaw ſeveral ice iſlands.
28	54	59	298	24	Eaſt. Variable.	46½	1	13	P. M. moderate and cloudy. A. M. ſmall rain.
29	53	54	298	50	E. N. E. Variable.	45½	2	13	Moderate and hazy, with ſmall rain; ſaw many ice iſlands.
30	54	40	299	14	Eaſterly. Variable.	46	3	13	Light breezes and cloudy.
Dec. 1	55	07	300	37	N. N. E. Calm. Variable.	46½	4	13	P. M. ditto. A. M. ſqually with ſmall rain. Paſſed many iſlands of ice.
2	55	19	304	13	N. by W North.	47	5	13	Freſh breezes and thick. Saw many ice iſlands.
3	55	30	305	59	N. N. E. N. E.	42	6	14	P. M. freſh breezes and clear. A. M. freſh gales and hazy.
4	54	54	306	35	E. N. E. Variable.	44	7	14	P. M. freſh gales and hazy, with drizzling rain. A. M. light airs.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1788. Dec.	South.		Eaſt.				Day		
	°	′	°	′		°			
5	54	50	308	04	N. by E. North. N. by W.	49	8	14	Light breezes and fair.
6	54	59	309	39	North. N. N. W.	47	9	14	Moderate and clear.
7	55	03	311	40	North. N. N. W.	48½	10	15	P. M. light airs and foggy. A. M. thick and hazy. Saw ſeveral ice iſlands.
8	54	38	313	30	N. by E. Variable. North.	45½	11	18	P. M. light airs and thick. A. M. foggy.
9	54	00	312	37	N. N. E. E. N. E.	48	12	20	P. M. foggy. A. M. ſtrong gales and ſqually. Paſſed ſeveral large ice iſlands.
10	53	28	314	20	N. W. W. N. W.	45½	13	24	P. M. ſtrong gales and ſqually. A. M. moderate. Saw ſome ice iſlands.
11	52	58	317	02	N. W. North.	47	14	26	P. M. freſh breezes and hazy. A. M. moderate and clear.
12	52	40	317	38	N. N. E. to S. S. E.	46	15	26	Moderate and hazy. Paſſed a very large ice iſland.
13	51	33	320	45	S. S. E. to S. S. W.	45½	16	26	P. M. freſh breezes and cloudy. A. M. light breezes and foggy.
14	49	49	324	23	S. W.	44½	17	27	Freſh gales and hazy. Paſſed many ice iſlands.
15	48	36	327	24	S. W.	46½	18	25	Freſh gales with ſhowers of hail, ſnow, and ſleet. Saw many ice iſlands.
16	47	35	330	20	S. W. W. N. W.	47	19	26	Freſh breezes and ſqually with rain. Paſſed ſeveral ice iſlands.
17	47	03	334	03	N. W. N. N. W.	54	20	25	Moderate and fair. Paſſed ſeveral ice iſlands.
18	46	23	338	05	N. N. W. S. W. Weſt.	51	21	26	P. M. freſh gales and ſqually with rain. A. M. ſtrong gales with rain.
19	45	18	341	34	S. W.	48½	22	22	P. M. ſtrong gales and ſqually. A. M. More moderate and cloudy.
20	44	14	343	58	S. W. W. S. W.	51½	23	24	Freſh breezes and cloudy. A. M. paſſed ſeveral ice iſlands.
21	43	27	346	35	Weſt. W. N. W.	54	24	24	P. M. moderate and hazy. A. M. foggy. P. M. the laſt ice was ſeen.
22	42	27	349	44	N.W. by W. N. N. W.	56½	25	28	P. M. moderate and foggy. A. M. moderate and hazy.
23	42	26	353	00	North. N. N. E. W. N. W.	56½	26	28	P. M. moderate and clear. A. M. freſh gales and ſqually.
24	41	34	356	16	N. W. by N.	55	27	28	Freſh breezes and fair.
25	40	35	359	38	N. W. N. N. W.	59	28	28	Moderate and fair.

Dec. 25

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1788. Dec.	South.		Eaſt.				Day		
	°	′	°	′		°			
25	39	30	3	18	N. W.	60	29	28	Moderate and fair. At 2 P. M. croſſed the meridian of Greenwich, and therefore deducted 360°, and repeated the 25th December.
26	38	50	4	56	W. N. W.	61	1	32	Freſh breezes and hazy.
27	38	24	7	34	N. N. E. N. E. North.	63½	2	33	Light breezes and cloudy.
28	37	15	10	06	W. N. W. W. S. W.	59½	3	36	Freſh breezes and hazy.
29	36	06	12	11	S. W.	61½	4	35	Moderate and clear.
30	35	10	14	24	S. W.	61½	5	38	Moderate and fair.
31	33	48	17	16	South. S. S. E.	65½	6	38	Freſh gales and cloudy.
1ſt January, 1789, anchored within Robin's Iſland, and next day ſailed up to Table-Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope.									

An ACCOUNT of Obſervations for finding the Variation of the Compaſs, made on board His Majeſty's Ship SIRIUS, between Port Jackſon and the Cape of Good Hope, by the Route of Cape Horn, in 1788.

Latitude in South.		Longitude in Eaſt.		Variation by Azimuth.			Variation by Amplitude.		
°	′	°	′	°	′		°	′	
34	44	156	40	11	40	E.			
50	09	169	14	16	54				
50	39	171	05	15	30		17	10	E.
51	08	174	05	14	20				
50	50	179	26				14	11	
51	08	183	21	13	13				
51	37	187	27	13	44				
52	24	193	30	10	35		11	00	
53	06	199	28				10	41	
55	03	211	25	12	05		11	30	
55	12	219	19	10	30				
56	23	228	20	7	30		8	00	
55	14	250	06	8	03		9	25	
55	24	261	48	14	45				
55	54	264	09	17	30				
57	17	277	46	20	30				
57	07	282	20	22	30				
57	18	290	01	25	00				
55	38	298	15	24	10		24	30	
54	41	298	52	22	40				
54	06	299	18	22	15				
54	54	299	24	20	23	E.			
55	12	303	13	17	50				
55	36	304	50	17	30				
54	54	307	00	18	40		18	45	E.
53	18	315	58	15	30				
49	32	325	30	9	30				
48	19	328	52	7	30				
47	55	329	57	6	10				
47	19	331	27	3	34				
47	08	332	54				2	34	
45	32	342	02	00	04				
44	29	343	35	1	41	W.			
42	22	350	22	7	00				
42	13	353	50	10	30		10	00	W.
41	21	357	05	12	11		11	50	
		360	00						
40	19	00	18	14	30				
39	19	3	47	16	00				
38	09	8	11	18	13				
37	03	10	36	18	30		19	00	
35	29	14	19				22	30	

CHAPTER

CHAPTER V.

Depart from Robin's Iſland, and anchor in Table Bay.—The ſick ſent on ſhore.—Arrival of the Alexander tranſport.—Proviſions procured for the ſettlement at Port Jackſon.—Departure of the Sirius.—In great danger from a violent tempeſt.—Arrives ſafe at Port Jackſon.—Tables of the winds, weather, variation of the compaſs, &c.

CHAP. V.

1789. January.

AS ſoon as the ſhip was anchored, we ſent a boat with the firſt lieutenant on ſhore to the iſland, for ſuch news from Europe as the commanding officer there might be able to give; I wiſhed alſo to know if Governor Van de Graaff was ſtill at the Cape, and if Colonel Gordon was ſtill commander in chief of the troops in garriſon there. The officer commanding at the iſland was exceedingly civil to the lieutenant who went on ſhore, and gave him every information he could; but it was unfortunate that the one could not ſpeak a word of Engliſh, nor the other underſtand a word of Dutch: however, it was obſerved, that he wore a large orange cockade in his hat, and although he could not converſe, he made the officer ſufficiently underſtand, by broken expreſſions of half Engliſh and half Dutch, that the Engliſh and Dutch were very good friends again, and that the French had no connection at all with Holland: from all which I conjectured, that ſome conſiderable changes had taken place in the affairs of the republic, ſince our departure from England, and that the Stadtholder had been reinſtated in

1789.

all his rights. On hearing what a long voyage we had come, the officer was ſo kind as to ſend a baſket of ſuch fruit as his garden afforded; which, (to make the dejected ſick well aſſured we were really in port,) were ſent down and divided among them, for until then ſome of them very much doubted. In the morning of the 2d of January, with a fine breeze from the northward, we got under way, and ſailed up to Table Bay. I had generally underſtood, that the depth of water between this iſland and the anchorage in Table Bay, was ſo very conſiderable as to be unſafe for anchorage, in caſe of being becalmed, or otherwiſe not able to reach the proper anchoring ground. I was the more inclined to believe that to be the caſe, from never having ſeen the ſoundings laid down in any chart of this bay, except where ſhips commonly anchor: I thereſore, to aſcertain whether that were the caſe or not, determined to go up under an eaſy ſail, and to keep the lead going; the ſoundings were regular, and the deepeſt water was 15 fathoms; the ground was hard and probably not very clear, but ſtill there is anchorage, which I did not before know. At ten o'clock in the morning, we anchored in Table Bay, in ſeven and a half fathoms, and moored a cable each way. As ſoon as the ſhip was ſecured, I ſent an officer to wait on the governor, and to inform him of the buſineſs I was come upon: he very politely informed the officer, that there was great abundance of every thing to be had, and that I had nothing to do but to ſignify in writing the quantity of each article wanted, and directions would be immediately given reſpecting it. His excellency alſo took that opportunity of ſending me information, that he ſhould in a few days, ſend a ſhip for Amſterdam; and, that if I had any diſpatches to forward, and would ſend them to his houſe, he would anſwer for their being delivered into the cuſtody of the Britiſh ambaſſador, at the Hague, as far as the ſafety of the ſhip could be depended on. The governor alſo confirmed the political accounts we

January 2,

1789.

had (though imperfectly,) received at the iſland: he ſent me the treaty of alliance formed between the Kings of Great-Britain and Pruſſia, and alſo that between the States-General and theſe two ſovereigns, which was a very pleaſing piece of intelligence. Every perſon here, either military or civil, wore a mark of their attachment to the Orange party and the old conſtitution; the former by an orange cockade, the latter, by a bit of ribbon of that colour, either at the breaſt, button-hole, or ſleeve. Immediately after our arrival, I directed that ſick-quarters ſhould be provided for the ſick, which was done; and the invalids, to the number of forty, were landed under the care of Mr. Worgan, the ſurgeon of the ſhip. Their expeditious recovery was of much conſequence to the ſervice upon which I was at that time employed; and it was alſo of conſequence to that ſervice, that they ſhould be perfectly recovered before they were taken on board again; as we had yet a very long voyage to perform before we could arrive at any port, after leaving the Cape. When we arrived in this bay, we had juſt twelve men in each watch, and half that number, from ſcorbutic contractions in their limbs, were not able to go aloft. Every perſon here, with whom any of the officers fell in company, ſpoke of our voyage from the eaſt coaſt of New Holland, by Cape Horn, to the Cape of Good Hope, with great ſurpriſe, not having touched at any port in our way, and having ſailed that diſtance in ninety-one days. I was now very anxious to get ſome account of the tranſports, which, under the command of Lieutenant Shortland, the agent, had left Port Jackſon on the 14th of July, 1788, and which I was ſorry to underſtand had not been in this bay: for I thought it highly probable, that as their route was to the northward, by the Molucca Iſlands and Batavia, they would certainly touch here in their way home. It being now ſeven months ſince they ſailed, I was apprehenſive for their ſafety; particularly when I conſidered the very weakly condition of ſome of their crews, by the ſcurvy, when they left us, and not a ſurgeon in any one of the ſhips. This muſt be allowed to be very improper œconomy in the owners of thoſe ſhips, when the extent of the voyage they had undertaken is conſidered, together with the well known impoſſibility of their being able to procure ſeamen, or any recruit of ſtrength to their ſhips companies, in that inhoſpitable and far diſtant part of the world.—I cannot help here taking the liberty of ſaying, that it is much to be lamented, when ſhips are hired for the ſervice of government, to perform ſuch long and trying voyages to the health of thoſe employed in them, that it is not made a part of the contract and practice, that they carry a ſurgeon; for I know well, that ſeamen, when taken ill upon ſuch long paſſages, are, at the very idea of being without the aſſiſtance of a ſurgeon, (although careleſs and void of thought at other times, when in perfect health,) apt to give way to melancholy, and a total dejection of ſpirits; and that many a valuable ſubject has been loſt to the country by ſuch a trifling ſaving. Out of the nine tranſports which were employed on this ſervice, one only had a ſurgeon; and that one, had ſhe not been bound upon ſome other ſervice, after leaving Port Jackſon, would in all probability have been without one alſo.

January 5. On the 5th, a Dutch India ſhip arrived here from Rio de Janeiro: by this ſhip I received information of the arrival at that place of two veſſels from the eaſt coaſt of New Holland; that they arrived ſingly, and in very great diſtreſs, from ſickneſs, and the death of many of their people; that the firſt which arrived, had her name on her ſtern, (*Prince of Wales, of London*;) from which circumſtance, there could be no doubt of its being one of our tranſports: the other veſſel was alſo ſo well deſcribed, that I knew it to be the Borrowdale ſtore-ſhip. The officers of this India ſhip obſerved farther, that they were ſo weak, that had they

not

CHAP. V. 1789. not been boarded by boats without the harbour, they had been unable to bring their veſſels into ſafety. Theſe ſhips, I apprehended, had parted company with Lieutenant Shortland, ſoon after ſailing from Port Jackſon, and had then determined to go to the eaſtward by Cape Horn; but they were wrong in my opinion, (and I judge from my own experience,) after paſſing Cape Horn, in preferring a port at Rio de Janeiro to the Cape of Good Hope, which laſt place, I have no doubt, they would have reached in leſs time, and with conſiderable leſs fatigue to their ſickly crews; beſide the advantage of being able to procure more ſeamen, if they were in want; which I apprehend they will find much difficulty in obtaining at Rio de Janeiro. As weſterly winds are prevalent between Cape Horn and the Cape of Good Hope, if it ſhould ſo happen that theſe winds blow more from the north-weſt than the ſouth-weſt quarters, their progreſs to the northward would be but ſlow along the coaſt of South America; but from both theſe quarters it is fair, if bound over to the coaſt of Africa: and farther, with reſpect to a paſſage to Europe, they would have been more conveniently ſituated at the Cape of Good Hope, than at Rio de Janeiro, for making that paſſage with expedition; for at Rio you are within the limits of the ſouth-eaſt trade, and upon that coaſt are conſequently to leeward; ſo that you may be obliged to ſtretch as far from thence to the ſouthward as the latitude of 30° 00′ ſouth, and ſometimes 32° 00′ along that coaſt, before you can tack and ſtand to the north-eaſt, in order to be able to croſs the equator far enough to the eaſtward, to enſure a tolerable paſſage acroſs the north-eaſt trade; but at the Cape, you are far to windward, and ſteer to the northward with a large wind. January 19. On the 19th, a ſmall Dutch frigate arrived here from Batavia; from which I learned, that Lieutenant Shortland had arrived at that port with a ſingle ſhip, about the beginning of December, in a very diſtreſſed condition; that he had buried the greateſt part of the ſhip's company, and was aſſiſted by the officers and company of the above frigate to ſecure his veſſel and hand the ſails, which he could not have done without aſſiſtance; and that he had been reduced to the neceſſity, ſome time before he arrived, to ſink the other veſſel which was in company with him, for the purpoſe of manning one out of the remaining part of the two ſhips companies; without which, he never could have reached Batavia with either: for when he arrived there, he had only four men out of the two crews, who were capable of ſtanding on the deck. I was now particularly anxious for the arrival of Mr. Shortland at the Cape, that I might have ſomething more authentic than theſe reports to give Governor Phillip, on my return to Port Jackſon.

By altitudes taken for the time-keeper, ſince we had been here, we found its error to be 1° 31′ eaſterly, and Brockbank's watch erred 3° 01′ eaſterly alſo; from which I conjecture, that the very cold weather which we experienced ſome time before we reached, and for a conſiderable time after we paſſed, Cape Horn, had affected the watch's going: when we made Terra del Fuego, it appeared to be about 1° 00′ to the eaſtward. I made a preſent of a dog from New South Wales, to a gentleman who came on board, and thought it a curioſity: it was taken by many who viſited the Sirius for a jackall, as it was much of that make and colour.

February 18. On the 18th of February, to my no ſmall ſatisfaction, (for I was preparing to ſail the next day,) Mr. Shortland arrived in the Alexander tranſport. I was going off from the ſhore, when I diſcovered the ſhip coming round Green Point; I rowed directly on board, and his people were ſo happy to ſee their old friends in Table-Bay, that they cheered

CHAP. V. 1789. us as we came alongſide. I now received from Mr. Shortland an exact confirmation of all the intelligence which I had received concerning him from the officers of the Dutch frigate. The two ſhips which I had collected ſome accounts of from Rio de Janeiro, he told me, had parted company with him two days after he left Port Jackſon; and that he was nineteen weeks and four days on his paſſage to Batavia.

February 20. On the 20th of February, I ſailed from Table-Bay, after having taken on board twelve months proviſions for the ſhip's company; and, in addition, about ſix months flour for the whole ſettlement; together with various ſtores for the colony, and many private articles for the different officers, &c. &c. in ſhort, the ſhip's hold, between decks, every officer's apartment, and all the ſtore-rooms were completely filled.

During the time we lay in Table-Bay, I received many civilities, indeed many marks of the moſt polite and friendly attention from Governor Van de Graaf, Colonel Gordon, and many other officers of this ſettlement.

Before we embarked any of the proviſions, we heeled the ſhip, to endeavour to ſtop the leak, which had kept the pumps ſo much employed during the voyage, and which I mentioned before, I was in hopes of being able, in fine weather, to get at, and ſtop at ſea; but, after ſeveral attempts, we found it impracticable: we were now ſo fortunate as to get at it; it proceeded from an iron bolt, which had been corroded by the copper, and by the working of the ſhip had dropt out, and left a hole of more than an inch in diameter. A wooden plug was put in, and covered again with copper. But beſide this leak, there were many other ſmaller holes, which were occaſioned by the decay of long ſpike-nails with which the ſkirting-board (which ſecures the upper edge of the copper) had been faſtened on, and had gone quite through the main plank of the ſhip's bottom. All were cloſed, as far as we examined, and the ſhip for the preſent made leſs water, but was not ſo tight as formerly; it was therefore my intention, upon my arrival at Port Jackſon, to repreſent to Governor Phillip the neceſſity there was to lighten and examine the ſhip ſome diſtance below the wales; that ſuch defects as we might find might be remedied while they were trifling.

The time-keeper, which I have already mentioned to have had upon our arrival here an error of 1° 31′, ſeemed, during the time we lay in Table-Bay, to have gradually recovered its original rate, (viz. 4″-77,) it was now loſing 4″-78; this ſerved to convince me of the juſtice of my conjecture, that it had been conſiderably affected by the very cold weather we had near Cape Horn.

After we left the Cape of Good Hope, we had, for three weeks, ſtrong gales from the ſouthward, with ſqually diſagreeable weather, which ſometimes reduced our ſails as low as courſes; we did not meet with weſterly winds quite ſo ſoon as I expected, or as we had done the laſt time we made this paſſage. In latitude 38° 30′ and in the meridian of the Cape, we had, for two days, a current to the northward of 44 miles each day; and in latitude 40°, and longitude 22° eaſt, we were, in two days, ſet 68 miles to the ſouthward, and by the watch, 60 miles to the eaſtward, more than the log gave. In latitude 41° 50′ ſouth, and longitude 28° 09′ eaſt, the wind ſhifted from the ſouthward to the north-north-eaſt, and blew a very ſtrong gale for two days; it then ſettled in the north-weſt quarter. At that time, being in latitude 43° 00′ ſouth, and longitude 37° 30′ eaſt, we found the variation of the compaſs had encreaſed as high as 32° 20′ weſt, before we had reached as

much

CHAP. V. much eaſt longitude as we found that variation in laſt paſſage; but we were now in a higher latitude, as will appear by the variation table which is annexed at the end of this chapter.
1789.

March 20. On the 20th of March, having ſprung the truſsle trees of the main-top-maſt, we ſtruck and unrigged them, and fitted new ones. On the 22d, we had a very heavy gale of wind from north-north-eaſt and north, with a prodigious high broken ſea; our courſe (eaſt-ſouth-eaſt) being at right angles to the wind, we kept the ſhip in the trough of the ſea, which occaſioned our ſhipping ſeveral heavy ſeas, and made me very apprehenſive for the ſafety of the boats and booms; I was therefore under the neceſſity of laying the ſhip to, under a balanced mizzen, for about four hours; when the wind ſhifting ſuddenly to north-weſt, enabled me to bear away and ſet the reefed fore-ſail; it continued to blow very hard all night, and we ſhipt much water, but the ſhip having a fluſh deck, no weight could lay on it, the only danger was that of filling the boats; to prevent which, I, after this gale, had them turned bottom up; the ſhip now made about as much water as ſhe did on the former paſſage. The wind continued in the north-weſt quarter, and blew ſtrong until the
April 8. 8th of April, when it inclined a little to the eaſtward of north for two or three days, but it had not ſo much eaſting in it as to be unfavourable
16th. for our courſe. On the 16th, we were in latitude 44° 45′ ſouth, and in longitude 135° 30′ eaſt; and at night we perceived the ſea ſpread over with luminous ſpots, reſembling lanthorns floating on its ſurface; when nearly about the ſame longitude on the laſt voyage we diſcovered the ſame appearance upon the ſea: this obſervation may have its uſe, and ſerve as a hint for your being at no great diſtance from Van
20th. Diemen's Land. On the 20th, we had a ſtrong gale from weſt-north-weſt to north-north-weſt, which ſuddenly moderated in the night, and

1789.

veered round to the weſtward, with a light air at ſouth-weſt by ſouth, by which we were encouraged to make all the ſail poſſible; but we had no ſooner got every thing ſet, than the wind veered round to the ſouthward, and began to blow; in a few hours it increaſed to a very violent gale of wind; we were now in latitude 44° 29′ ſouth, by account, and longitude 144° 30′ eaſt, being ſo near Van Diemen's Land, and ſo well to the ſouthward as I ſuppoſed we were, I had no doubt of being able to croſs it, and, availing myſelf of this ſoutherly wind, to run along the coaſt to the northward, and reach Port Jackſon in a few days; but as we drew near the meridian of the ſouth cape, the gale increaſed to a mere tempeſt, attended with thick hazy weather, and a moſt aſtoniſhing high ſea; this brought us under a reefed fore-ſail, balanced mizzen, and the three ſtorm ſtay-ſails. At day-light on the morning of the 21ſt, the fore, main, and mizzen ſtay-ſails were all ſplit by the violence of the wind; by this accident we were reduced to the reefed fore-ſail and balanced mizzen; and for ſome time we were under the neceſſity of handing the fore-ſail, the gale ſtill continuing to increaſe rather than abate; and inclining to the eaſtward of ſouth, was in our ſituation at this time particularly unfortunate: for we were now ſo far advanced to the eaſtward as to hope that in a few hours we ſhould have been able to have made a fair wind of it, if it had continued to the ſouthward. I ſtill flattered myſelf, that we were ſo far to the ſouthward, as not to have a doubt of paſſing ſome diſtance to the ſouthward of Rock Swilley, and conſequently at a ſufficient diſtance from the ſouth cape, which is the ſouthern point or extremity of this promontory; for this rock, or ledge of rocks, is not leſs than fifteen miles from the ſouth cape, and we were now about its meridian, both by the longitude carried on from the laſt lunar obſervations, which were taken five days before, and by our time-keeper, from which our ſituation had been determined ſince theſe obſervations, as long as the ſun was to be ſeen in any part of the day: it now blew a moſt violent gale of wind, with thick hazy weather. It may not be improper here to obſerve, that three days had now elapſed without a ſight of the ſun during the day, or a ſtar during the night, from which we could *exactly* determine our latitude; but as every allowance had been made for the drifting of the ſhip to leeward, under a very low ſail, and an exceeding heavy ſea, and for every other diſadvantage attending ſuch a ſituation; there remained not a doubt with me, or any officer on board, but that we were near half a degree to the ſouthward of the ſouth cape, and as the diſtance from weſt to eaſt, acroſs this promontory, is not more than a degree and a half of longitude, or about twenty or twenty-two leagues in diſtance, (that is, from the ſouth-weſt cape to Taſman's Head) we had every reaſon to think we were near round it; but at half paſt three in the afternoon it cleared a little in the horizon, and we ſaw the land bearing eaſt; the haze was ſuch that we could not well gueſs the diſtance, but it was very near; on this we wore the ſhip immediately, and ſtood to the weſtward: the wind had now got to ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, but continued to blow with great violence, the ſhip upon this tack lying up ſouth-weſt, we ſet the reefed main-ſail, and at half paſt ſix we ſaw the land again, through the haze cloſe under our lee bow, and the ſea breaking with prodigious force upon it it, was impoſſible to weather it; therefore we wore the ſhip immediately, while there was a chance of having room for doing ſo. I now found that we were embayed, and the gale not in the leaſt likely to abate, and the ſea running mountain high, with very thick weather, a long dark night juſt coming on, and an unknown coaſt I may call it, (for although it has been ſeen by ſeveral navigators, it is not yet known) cloſe under our lee; nothing was now left to be done but to carry every yard of canvaſs the ſhip was capable of bearing, and for every perſon on board to conſtantly keep the deck, and attentively to look out under the lee for the land, and as often as it might be diſcovered, to wear, and lay the ſhip's head the other way: but as we knew not what bay, or part of the coaſt we were upon, nor what dangerous ledges of rocks might be detached ſome diſtance from the ſhore; and in our way, we had every moment reaſon to fear that the next might, by the ſhip ſtriking, launch the whole of us into eternity. Our ſituation was ſuch that not a man could have eſcaped to have told where the reſt ſuffered: however, whatever might have been the private feelings of each individual, I never ſaw orders executed with more alacrity in any ſituation; every officer and man took his ſtation for the look-out; and, the ſhip being wore to the eaſtward, notwithſtanding the ſtrength of the gale, the cloſe reefed fore and main top-ſails were ſet over the reefed courſes. Fortunately at this inſtant the wind favoured us near two points, and the ſhip lay better up upon this tack, than her courſe upon the other had promiſed, but ſtill the weather was ſo thick, the ſea ſo high, the gale ſo ſtrong, and ſo dead upon the ſhore, that little hope could be entertained of our weathering the land. We ſtood on to the eaſtward, and the ſhip, to my aſtoniſhment, as well as to that of every perſon on board, bore ſuch a preſs of ſail wonderfully. We had, about midnight, run back the diſtance made from the firſt land we ſaw to the ſecond, and perceived, through the haze, the looming of that land under our lee, nearly on the beam; this advantage we had gained by the ſhifting of the wind two points: we now ſtood on, and I had hopes that this might be the moſt projecting land; but at two in the afternoon, as I was looking from the quarter deck very anxiouſly to leeward, I obſerved the looming of a high and very ſteep point of rocky land, and the ſea foaming with frightful violence againſt it. I made no mention of it; but juſt at that inſtant it was diſcovered

CHAP. V. 1789.

by the ſailors ſtationed forward, and they called out, "Land, cloſe under our lee;" I replied it was very well, I had ſeen it ſome time, and that as it was now upon our beam (which it really was, for I diſcovered it through the main ſhrouds) there could be no danger from it, we ſhould ſoon paſs it: if this land had been ſeen a little ſooner, the fear of not being able to weather it might have occaſioned our wearing, which would have been unfortunate, as the weather juſt cleared up at a time when we could ſee that no danger was to be apprehended from it. The ſhip was at this time half buried in the ſea by the preſs of ſail, ſince ſhe was going through it (for ſhe could not be ſaid to be going over it) at the rate of four knots. We ſoon ſhot paſt this head, and from the courſe we had made, I was convinced it was Taſman's Head, which is the eaſtern point of a bay, of which the ſouth cape is the weſtern, and was called by Taſman, *Storm-Bay*. The firſt land we had ſeen was within the bay, on the eaſt ſhore, not ſo far out as Taſman's Head; and the weſtern land, under which we wore at half paſt ſix, was the ſouth cape. After paſſing Taſman's Head, we kept our wind ſtill, and carried ſail, in order, if poſſible, to weather Maria's Iſlands, which lay about ſix leagues to the north-eaſt, for we had no ſooner got round the laſt head, than the wind headed us, and we fell off from eaſt by ſouth to eaſt by north; had this change taken place a little ſooner, it muſt have proved fatal to us. At eight the next morning, we paſſed to the windward of Maria's Iſlands, which, from the hazineſs of the weather, we did not ſee until they were upon the lee quarter. If I had found it impoſſible to have got round thoſe iſlands, it was my intention to have ſtood back to the weſtward, and have got ſight of the land, between Taſman's Head and Adventure-Bay; to have run along the coaſt, cloſe in, until I found the opening of that road, and there to have depended upon our anchors. In this trying ſituation, the ſhip being leaky, our pumps during ſuch a night were a diſtreſſing tax upon us; as they were kept conſtantly at work. I do not recollect to have heard of a more wonderful eſcape. Every thing which depended upon us, I believe, was done; but it would be the higheſt preſumption and ingratitude to Divine Providence, were we to attribute our preſervation wholly to our beſt endeavours: his interference in our favour was ſo very conſpicuouſly manifeſted in various inſtances, in the courſe of that night, as I believe not to leave a ſhadow of doubt, even in the minds of the moſt profligate on board, of his immediate aſſiſtance! 1789.

After having weathered Maria's Iſlands, we continued to ſtand on with a preſs of ſail to the eaſtward, for I was anxious to gain an offing from the coaſt, the ſhip being exceedingly diſabled. All the rails of the head, round houſes, and figure of the head, were waſhed entirely away; and the rails to which the bumkins were ſecured were ſo much weakened as to require to be frapped down to the knee of the head; the jib-boom, the ſprit-ſail-yard, and the fore-top-gallant maſt were neceſſarily kept down upon deck to eaſe the bow-ſprit, in caſe any of its ſecurities ſhould be in danger from the ſhattered condition of the cutwater.

We were no ſooner to the eaſtward of Maria's Iſlands, than the wind ſhifted round to ſouth-eaſt and eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, which brought us again upon a lee ſhore, for we could not weather Maria's Iſlands upon one tack, nor Shooten's Iſles and Bay of Shoals upon the other; however, as it did not now blow ſo hard, and the land was near 20 leagues diſtant, I was not under any apprehenſions from it. On the 26th, the April 26.
wind ſet in from the northward, and blew freſh, frequently attended with the moſt violent ſqualls; it continued northerly until the 2d of May 2.
May, when it inclined to the ſouthward, and from that to the eaſtward:

I had

1789.
May 6.

I had on this day ſeveral diſtances of the ☉ and ☽, the reſult of which was 155° 25′ eaſt longitude, which was little more than one degree to the eaſtward of the time-keeper. On the 6th, in the morning, we made the land in latitude 33° 30′ ſouth; and at noon Cape Three Points bore weſt by ſouth, diſtant off ſhore four leagues. Here, upon a rough examination of the error of the time-keeper, it appeared to be a degree or little more to the weſtward of the Truth, but we expected, upon our arrival at Port Jackſon, to examine its error more particularly. On recurring back to the laſt altitudes taken for the time-keeper before our making Van Diemen's Land, and carrying it on by the log, we found that the error on making that land was but a very few miles of longitude, and that error moſt probably was in the carrying on the log; ſo that there was every reaſon to think, that the violent agitation of the ſhip during that time, was the cauſe of that change in the watch, and which I own I was not at all ſurpriſed at, but think it highly probable, as the watch lay in a box upon ſoft cuſhions, and that box ſcrewed down to a place ſecurely and firmly fixed for that purpoſe: I cannot help thinking but that ſo very valuable a piece of watch-work (for I do really think, from the experience I have had of it, that a ſuperior piece of work was never made) would be better fixed upon a ſmall horizontal table, made on purpoſe, and well ſecured; and under the box which contains the watch, a kind of ſpiral ſpring or worm, which, with every jerk or pitch of the ſhip, would yield a little with the weight of the watch, and thereby take off much of that ſhock which muſt in ſome degree affect its going. The winds now (rather unfortunately for us), after 24 hours calm, inclined again to the ſouthward, and we kept plying to windward with all the ſail we could carry. Right off Cape Three Points, at ſix leagues diſtance from the ſhore, we ſounded in 75 fathoms, over a bottom of fine grey ſand. On the 8th, a light air from the

8th,

the northward in the night, carried us by day-light in ſight of the entrance of Port Jackſon; and in the evening of the 9th, we entered between the heads of the harbour, and worked up to Sydney Cove, where we anchored before dark, after an abſence of 219 days, 51 of which we lay in Table-Bay, Cape of Good Hope: ſo that, although during this voyage we had fairly gone round the world, we had only been 168 days in deſcribing that circle; and, by taking a mean of the higheſt and loweſt latitudes we ſailed in, we ſhall find our track nearly in latitude 45° ſouth. We found in the cove the Supply armed tender.

Our paſſage, ſince we came round Van Diemen's Land, had been attended with much bad weather, very violent ſqualls, and a thick haze; particularly with the wind from the eaſtward: I had before obſerved, that in the winter-time, upon this coaſt, we were ſubject to much bad weather; and this paſſage convinced me of the neceſſity, when ſhips are intended to be ſent to this ſettlement, that the ſeaſon ſhould be conſidered and attended to. During the ſummer months we were ſometimes ſubject to thunder, lightning, and ſtrong ſqualls; but in general the weather is fine. If in the faireſt weather you obſerve it to lighten in the lee part of the horizon, you ſhould prepare for a ſquall from that quarter, which is in general pretty ſevere.

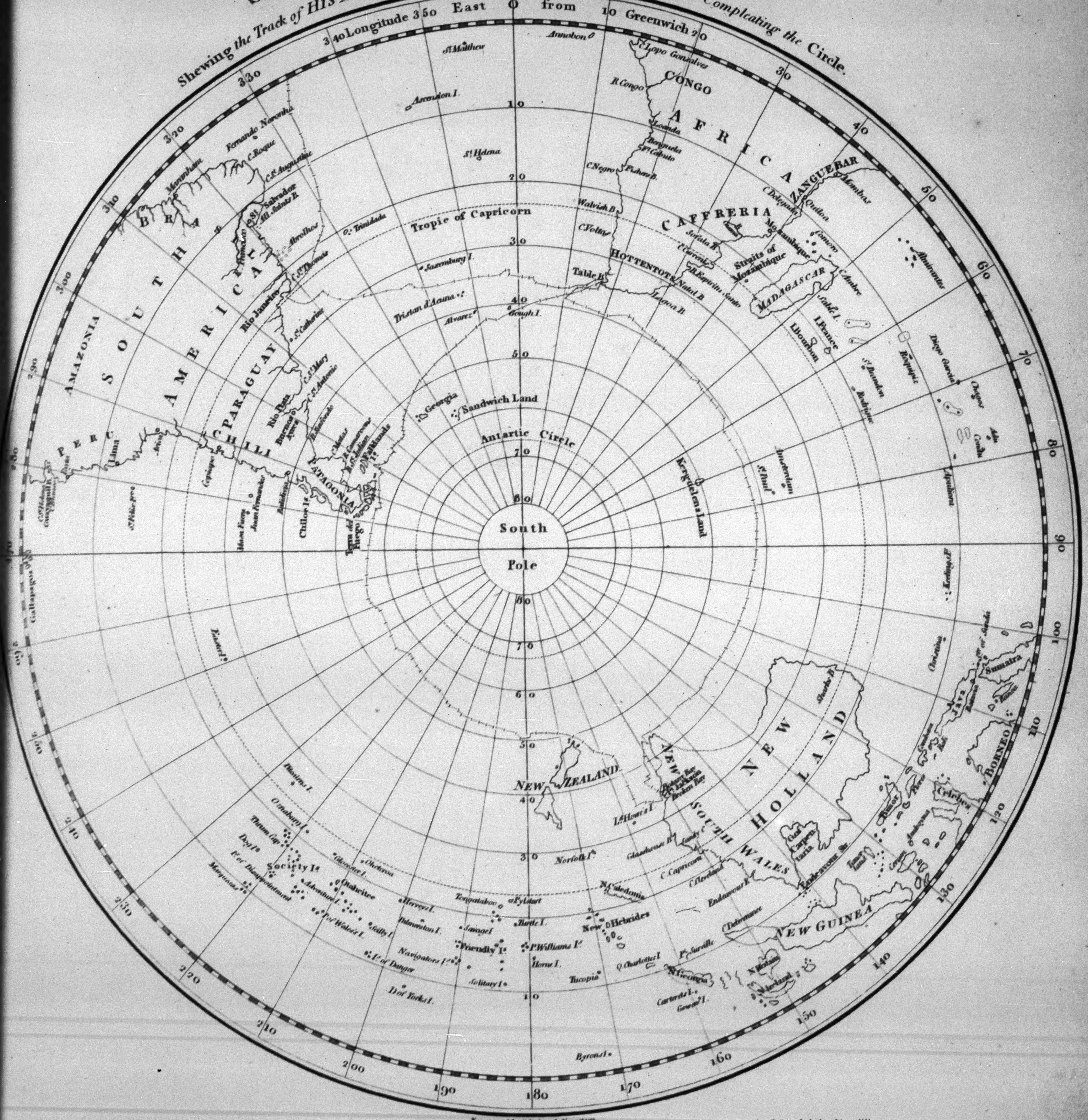
In paſſing (at a diſtance from the coaſt) between the iſlands of Schooten and Furneaux, and Point Hicks; the former being the northermoſt of Captain Furneaux's obſervations here, and the latter the ſouthermoſt part, which Captain Cook ſaw when he ſailed along the coaſt, there has been no land ſeen, and from our having felt an eaſterly ſet of current, when the wind was from that quarter (north-weſt) we

CHAP. V. 1789. we had an uncommon large ſea, there is reaſon thence to believe, that there is in that ſpace either a very deep gulf, or a ſtraight, which may ſeparate Van Diemen's Land from New Holland: there have *no* diſcoveries been made on the weſtern ſide of this land in the parallel I allude to, between 39° 00′ and 42° 00′ ſouth, the land there having never been ſeen.

A TABLE

SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE

Shewing the Track of HIS MAJESTIES Ship SIRIUS, from the EQUATOR to the Compleating the Circle.


340 Longitude 350 East 0 from 10 Greenwich 20
South Pole
Antartic Circle
Tropic of Capricorn
SOUTH AMERICA
BRASIL
AMAZONIA
PERU
CHILI
PARAGUAY
PATAGONIA
Terra del Fuego
Rio Janeiro
Rio Plata
Falkland Is.
Georgia
Sandwich Land
AFRICA
CONGO
CAFFRERIA
HOTTENTOTS
ZANGUEBAR
MADAGASCAR
Streights of Mozambique
Table B.
St. Helena
Ascension I.
Annobon
St. Matthew
Trinidada
Tristan d'Acuna
Gough I.
Kerguelens Land
Amsterdam
St. Paul
NEW HOLLAND
NEW SOUTH WALES
NEW ZEALAND
NEW GUINEA
New Hebrides
N. Caledonia
Norfolk I.
Ld. Howe's I.
Friendly I.
Society I.
Otaheitee
Sumatra
Java
Borneo
Celebes
Timor
Easter I.
Byrons I.

Published Sep. 20th 1792

Engraved by B. Baker Islington.

by J. Stockdale Piccadilly

A TABLE of the WINDS and WEATHER, &c. &c. on a Paſſage from the Cape of Good Hope to Port Jackſon, in His Majeſty's Ship SIRIUS. 1789.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1789.	South. °	′	Eaſt.	′			Day.		
Feb. 21	33	58	16	38	S. W. S. S. E. South.	67	28	0	Moderate and fair.
22	34	12	14	48	South. S. S. W. S. W. by S.	68	29	2	Freſh breezes and fair.
23	35	06	14	15	S. S. W. S. S. E.	67½	30	2	Freſh gales and cloudy.
24	36	20	12	57	S. S. E.	66½	1	2	P. M. freſh gales and cloudy. A. M. moderate.
25	36	56	13	00	S. S. E. South. S. W.	66½	2	1	P. M. Moderate and fair. A. M. light airs and cloudy.
26	37	06	14	25	S. S. W. Variable.	64	3	1	Moderate and cloudy. A. M. freſh gales and ſqually.
27	37	48	13	36	South. S. by E.	63	4	1	P. M. freſh gales and ſqually. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
28	38	33	13	03	S. S. E. S. S. W.	63	5	1	Moderate and cloudy, a large ſwell from S. W.
March 1	38	57	14	18	S. by W. S. S. W. S. W.	64	6	1	P. M. Moderate and cloudy. A. M. light airs.
2	38	34	15	49	S. S. W. to S. S. E.	66½	7	1	Moderate breezes and thick hazy weather.
3	39	06	15	55	S. E. E. S. E.	67	8	2	Freſh breezes and cloudy.
4	40	25	17	38	E. N. E. N. E. W. N. W.	70	9	1	Moderate and fair.
5	40	09	20	19	W. N. W. N. W. S. S. W.	69	10	1	P. M. freſh gales and fair. A. M. ditto with rain.
6	Account. 39	11	21	30	S. by E. S. S. E.	62	11	1	Strong gales, ſqually, and thick.
7	40	25	21	48	S. S. E. South.	59	12	2	Freſh gales and ſqually, with rain.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c.
1789.	South.		East.				Day.		
March	°	′	°	′		°			
8	40	33	22	41	S. S. E. S. E. E. S. E.	63	13	2	P. M. fresh gales and cloudy. A. M. ditto with rain.
9	41	53	22	12	S. E.	61	14	1	Fresh gales and hazy.
10	41	53	23	40	S. E. S. S. W. S. W. W. S. W.	59½	15	3	Fresh gales and cloudy, with ſmall rain.
11	41	40	26	30	W. S. W. W. N. W. S. W.	60	16	2	Fresh breezes and fair.
12	41	50	28	08	S. S. W. N. N. E.	61	17	2	Moderate and fair.
13	42	37	31	43	N. E. by N.	61	18	2	Fresh breezes and clear.
14	43	33	35	40	N. E.	61	19	2	Fresh gales and cloudy.
15	43	48	39	12	N. E. by N. N. N. W.	56	20	2	P. M. fresh gales and hazy, with frequent ſqualls. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
16	Account. 43	38	42	04	N. W. by N. N. E. by N. W. N. W.	54	21	2	Fresh gales and ſqually, with rain.
17	43	21	45	46	W. N. W. Weſt.	49½	22	2	P. M. moderate breezes with rain. A. M. fresh gales and heavy ſqualls, with rain.
18	43	06	49	31	W. N. W. North. N. N. E.	55	23	2	Fresh gales and clear.
19	Account. 42	56	52	58	North N. W.	57	24	3	Fresh gales and hazy, with rain.
20	42	54	54	44	N. N. W. W. N. W. Weſt.	54	25	3	P. M. Light breezes and thick. A. M. moderate and clear.
21	43	04	58	45	N. E. by N. North.	65½	26	2	Moderate and thick hazy weather, with rain.
22	Account. 43	07	62	18	North. N. N. E. N. N. W.	65½	27	3	P. M. fresh gales and hazy. A. M. heavy ſqualls. At noon ſtrong gales, with heavy ſqualls and rain.
23	43	07	66	29	North. W. N. W. N. N. W.	61	28	3	P. M. ſtrong gales with heavy ſqualls. A. M. moderate.
24	42	52	70	06	N. W. W. S. W.	56	29	3	Strong gales and cloudy, with frequent ſqualls.
25	42	44	73	29	Weſt. N. W.	59	30	3	Fresh gales and cloudy.
26	42	35	77	43	N. N. W.	62	1	4	P. M. fresh gales and cloudy. A. M. ſqually.
27	42	41	80	31	N. N. W. W. N. W. N. W.	59	2	4	P. M. fresh gales and ſqually, with rain. A. M. moderate and clear.

March 28.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c
1789. March	South.		East.				Day		
	°	'	°	'		°			
28	42	48	84	18	W. N. W. S. W.	55½	3	4	P. M. freſh gales and hazy, with ſmall rain. A. M. freſh breezes and cloudy.
29	42	47	86	58	W. S. W. N. W.	57	4	6	Freſh breezes and clear.
30	42	57	90	26	N. W.	57½	5	6	Moderate and fair.
31	43	11	94	34	N. W.	57	6	6	Freſh gales and hazy.
April									
1	43	21	97	55	N. W. to S. W.	53	7	6	Ditto.
2	Account. 43	27	99	17	S. S. W. S. W. N. E.	54	8	6	P. M. Light breezes and cloudy. A. M. Freſh gales, thick and hazy.
3	2 Altitud. 44	14	102	53	N. E. North. N. N. W.	59	9	6	Freſh gales and ſqually.
4	Account. 44	23	106	32	North.	58	10	6	Freſh gales and hazy, with rain.
5	44	17	109	32	North. N. N. W.	56	11	5	Freſh gales and hazy, with ſqualls and rain.
6	43	40	113	24	N. N. W. N. W.	54	12	5	Freſh gales and cloudy.
7	43	40	116	14	Weſt. N. N. W.	57	13	5	Moderate and hazy.
8	43	48	119	05	North. N. N. E.	56	14	5	Moderate and fair.
9	43	53	122	15	N. N. E. North.	58	15	5	Ditto.
10	44	17	224	46	N. E.	56½	16	5	Moderate and cloudy.
11	44	41	126	47	N. E. N. N. E.	58	17	5	Freſh gales, thick and ſqually.
12	Account. 45	00	129	10	N. N. E.	59	18	5	Freſh gales, thick and hazy.
13	44	56	132	43	N. N. E. North. N. W.	58	19	5	P. M. Freſh gales and ſqually. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
14	2 Altitud. 44	52	134	07	N. W. Variable.	58½	20	5	Moderate and foggy.
15	Account. 44	45	135	05	S. W.	58	21	5	P. M. Calm, with a thick fog. A. M. light airs and hazy.
16	44	42	137	31	N. N. E. North. N. by W.	59	22	4	P. M. ditto. A. M. Freſh breezes and cloudy.
17	44	42	140	02	N. W. S. W. S. S. E.	58	23	5	P. M. freſh breezes and foggy. A. M. hazy.
18	44	17	141	42	S. by E. South. N. N. E.	58	24	5	Light airs, inclinable to calm.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Moon's Age.	Sick on board	Weather, &c. &c.
1789. April	South.		Eaſt.				Day		
	°	′	°	′		°			
19	2 Altitud. 44	29	145	01	N. N. W. W. N. W.	57	25	5	Freſh breezes and cloudy. Middle, ſtrong gales, with heavy ſqualls.
20	Account. 44	16	146	32	S. S. W. S. S. E. South.	52	26	5	Firſt part, ſtrong gales and ſqually. Middle and latter, heavy gales and ſqualls of rain, with a heavy ſea.
21	Account. 44	00	147	26	South.	54	27	6	P. M. heavy gales, thick and hazy, with ſtrong ſqualls and rain. A. M. violent ſqualls, a very heavy ſea.
22	Account. 43	17	148	31	S. S. E. S. by E. S. S. E.	57	28	6	P. M. ſtrong gales and hazy, with heavy ſqualls. A. M. ſomething more moderate.
23	Obſerva. 42	37	149	47	S. S. E. S. E. N. N. E.	61	29	8	P. M. light breezes and cloudy. A. M. freſh gales, with heavy ſqualls.
24	2 Altitud. 42	18	150	16	Eaſt. S. E. E. S. E.	64	1	8	Freſh gales and ſqually, with rain.
25	Obſerva. 41	33	150	40	E. S. E. S. S. E. Eaſt.	62	2	8	P. M. Freſh gales and cloudy. A. M. light variable airs.
26	41	09	150	57	Variable.	62	3	8	Light airs and variable.
27	41	50	152	18	N. by E. N. E. N. N. E.	61	4	8	P. M. light airs and clear. A. M. light airs, with lightning, thunder, and rain.
28	2 Altitud. 40	54	153	53	S. S. W. Weſt. N. W.	61	5	10	P. M. light airs, with rain. A. M. freſh gales, thick, and ſqually.
29	2 Altitud. 39	57	155	14	Weſt. W. by N. N. W.	61	6	10	Freſh gales and ſqually, with ſhowers of rain.
30	Obſerva. 38	37	155	45	W. S. W. N. W.	62½	7	10	P. M. freſh gales and ſqually. A. M. moderate and clear.
May 1	38	24	155	06	North. N. N. W. S. W.	62	8	10	P. M. freſh breezes and cloudy. A. M. hard ſqualls, with lightning and heavy rain.
2	37	24	155	40	S. W. by W. Variable.	62	9	14	Freſh breezes and cloudy. Latter ſqually, with rain.
3	37	05	155	49	N. W. Variable.	64	10	8	Moderate and cloudy.
4	35	39	154	43	E. N. E. Eaſt.	64	11	10	P. M. light airs. Middle freſh breezes and cloudy. A. M. ditto.
5	33	46	152	14	E. S. E. S. E.	64	12	11	Freſh gales and cloudy, with ſome ſqualls.
6	33	30	151	18	S. S. E. South. S. E.	66	13	12	Freſh gales and ſqually.
7	33	24	152	16	S. by E. South. S. S. E.	65	14	12	P. M. freſh gales and ſqually. A. M. more moderate.
8	At noon, Entrance of Port Jackſon W. by S. 3 or 4 leagues.——Light airs and fair.								
9	Worked in, and anchored in Port Jackſon harbour.——Freſh gales and ſqually.								

An ACCOUNT of Obſervations for finding the Variation of the Compaſs, made on board His Majeſty's Ship SIRIUS, between the Cape of Good Hope and Port Jackſon, New South Wales, 1789.

Latitude in South.	Longitude in Eaſt.	Variation by		Latitude in South.	Longitude in Eaſt.	Variation by	
		Azimuth.	Amplitude			Azimuth.	Amplitude
° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′	° ′
36 22	12 39	21 04W.		42 47	87 02	23 00W.	23 20W.
39 17	15 55	24 00	23 03W	44 18	108 48	20 00	
40 35	21 38		26 10	43 40	113 22	17 20	16 30
41 53	24 10	28 10		40 41	116 12	16 20	
41 43	26 47	28 40	28 00	43 46	117 45	15 34	15 34
41 46	27 14	28 37	28 00	43 49	119 02	14 03	
41 57	28 43	29 00		44 40	125 51	10 40	
42 47	32 29	29 10	29 57	44 45	126 39	9 58	
43 46	39 50	30 40		44 50	132 28	4 00	
43 10	47 52		32 00	44 46	133 34	3 30	
42 55	52 52	32 20		44 43	137 00	2 10	
42 56	54 10		32 24	41 28	150 10	8 30 E.	
43 00	57 19	31 28		41 06	150 49	9 08	9 10 E.
42 50	85 00	23 00		33 24	152 16	10 40	11 05

CHAPTER VI.

The ſmall-pox makes its appearance among the natives.—Its fatal effects.—A criminal court held.—Six marines tried and convicted.—Governor Phillip viſits Broken-bay.—Explores its various inlets.—Returns to Port Jackſon. Broken-bay ſurveyed.—Botany-bay ſurveyed.—Two natives brought to the ſettlement, and kindly treated.—One of them makes his eſcape.

CHAP. VI. 1789.

AS ſoon as the ſhip was ſecured, I went on ſhore to wait on the governor, whom I found in good health; he was ſitting by the fire, drinking tea with a few friends; among whom I obſerved a native man of this country, who was decently cloathed, and ſeemed to be as much at his eaſe at the tea-table as any perſon there; he managed his cup and ſaucer as well, as though he had been long accuſtomed to ſuch entertainment. This man was taken from his friends, by force, by Lieutenant Ball, of the Supply, and Lieutenant George Johnſton, of the marines, who were ſent down the harbour with two boats for that purpoſe; the governor having found that no encouragement he could give the natives, would diſpoſe them to viſit the ſettlement of their own accord: this method he had therefore determined upon, to get one man into his poſſeſſion, who, by kind treatment, might hereafter be the means of diſpoſing his countrymen to place more confidence in us. This man, whoſe name was *Ara-ba-noo*, was taken, as I have already ſaid, by force, and in the following manner. After having been a ſhort time in converſation with ſome of the gentlemen, one of the ſeamen, who had been previouſly directed, threw a rope round his neck, and dragged him in a moment down to the boat; his cries brought a number of his friends into the ſkirts of the wood, from whence they threw many lances, but without effect. The terror this poor wretch ſuffered, can better be conceived than expreſſed; he believed he was to be immediately murdered; but, upon the officers coming into the boat, they removed the rope from his neck to his leg, and treated him with ſo much kindneſs, that he became a little more chearful. He was for ſome time after his arrival at the governor's houſe, ornamented with an iron ſhackle about his leg, to prevent his being able to effect his eſcape with eaſe; this he was taught to conſider as *bang-ally*, which is the name given in their language to every decoration; and he might well believe it a compliment paid to him, becauſe it was no uncommon thing for him to ſee ſeveral (of the moſt worthleſs of the convicts, who had merited puniſhment) every day ſhackled like him; the cauſe of which he could not of courſe underſtand. However, he was very ſoon reconciled to his ſituation, by the very kind treatment he received from every perſon about him, and the iron growing uneaſy, it was taken off, and he was allowed to go where he pleaſed. He very ſoon learnt the names of the different gentlemen who took notice of him, and when I was made acquainted with him, he learnt mine, which he never forgot, but expreſſed great deſire to come on board my *nowee*; which is their expreſſion for a boat or other veſſel upon the water. The day after I came in, the governor and his family did me the honour to dine on board, when I was alſo favoured with the company of *Ara-ba-noo*, whom I found to be a very good natured talkative fellow; he was about thirty years of age, and tolerably well looked. I expreſſed, when at the governor's, much ſurprize, at not having ſeen a ſingle native on the ſhore, or a canoe as we came up in the ſhip; the reaſon of which I could not comprehend, until I was informed that the ſmall-pox had made its appearance, a few months ago, amongſt theſe unfortunate creatures, and that it was truly ſhocking to go round the coves of this harbour, which were formerly ſo much frequented by the natives; where, in the caves of the rocks, which uſed to ſhelter whole families in bad weather, were now to be ſeen men, women, and children, lying dead. As we had never yet ſeen any of theſe people who have been in the ſmalleſt degree marked with the ſmall-pox, we had reaſon to ſuppoſe they have never before now been affected by it, and conſequently are ſtrangers to any method of treating it: and, if we conſider the various attitudes, which the different dead bodies have been found in, we may eaſily believe, that when any of them are taken ill, and the malady aſſumes the appearance of the ſmall-pox, (having already experienced its fatality to whole families,) they are immediately deſerted by their friends, and left to periſh, in their helpleſs ſituation, for want of ſuſtenance. Some have been found ſitting on their haunches, with their heads reclined between their knees; others were leaning againſt a rock, with their head reſting upon it: I have ſeen myſelf, a woman ſitting on the ground, with her knees drawn up to her ſhoulders, and her face reſting on the ſand between her feet. Two children, a boy of ſix or ſeven years of age, and a girl about ten, were lately picked up, labouring under the ſame diſeaſe; two old men, whom we had reaſon to believe were the fathers of the two children, were picked up at the ſame time, and brought to the hoſpital, and much care taken of them: the two men lived but a few days, but the children both recovered, and ſeemed well ſatisfied with their *very comfortable ſituation*. Through the means of theſe children, if they ſhould retain their native language, a more intimate and friendly intercourſe with the people of this country may in time be brought about.

Five or ſix days after my arrival, poor Ara-ba-noo was ſeized with the ſmall-pox, and although every poſſible means for his recovery were uſed, he lived only till the criſis of the diſeaſe. Every perſon in the ſettlement was much concerned for the loſs of this man.

I was exceedingly concerned on hearing of the death of Captain Shea, of the marines, which happened while we were abſent; his diſorder was a general decay, which I think muſt have taken place very ſuddenly, for he was apparently ſtrong and healthy when the Sirius ſailed from Port Jackſon.

Several people had been loſt in the woods during our abſence, and had either been killed by the natives, or periſhed there. Another melancholy piece of information which we received on our arrival, was, that ſix marines had been tried by a criminal court, and found guilty of robbing the public ſtores: they were ſentenced to death, and executed accordingly. It appeared upon the trial of theſe infatuated men, that they had carried on this iniquitous, (and I may add from our ſituation) dangerous practice to the ſettlement at large, for ſeveral months; and all originally occaſioned by ſome unfortunate connections they had made with women convicts. The ſettlement had been, during our abſence, remarkably healthy.

Before the Sirius ſailed from Port Jackſon, the governor had determined to ſend a detachment of the marines, with a conſiderable number of convicts, for the purpoſe of clearing as much as might be neceſſary, and preparing a tract of land at the head of this harbour, (which place I have already mentioned) in order to ſow corn. When we returned from our voyage, I went up to ſee what progreſs was made

CHAP. VI. 1789.

at this farm, which had been named Roſe Hill: it certainly very much exceeded my expectations; the quantity of ground prepared for receiving grain at the proper time, was conſiderable; a number of huts were built, the gardens were in tolerable appearance, and there was altogether every proſpect, in due time, of a very extenſive farm; and we knew that if there were people enough to labour, it might be carried at leaſt twenty miles to the weſtward, and every foot of the ground apparently as good as that on which they were now at work; but we found here, that although the land was tolerable, there would be great, and I think an inſurmountable difficulty, in attempting an extenſive farm, chiefly for want of water. At Roſe Hill, there is in dry ſeaſons but very little water, and that by no means good; but farther back to the weſtward, you can but now and then meet with as much as will quench the thirſt of a traveller: you may walk many miles, particularly in hot dry ſummer weather, without meeting with as much as you may want for drinking; this ſcarcity, though I do not pretend to any knowledge in farming, I cannot help thinking, were water wanted only for the uſe of a family, a vaſt difficulty, and an inconvenience not to be got the better of, unleſs it were poſſible to get water by ſinking wells at every half mile diſtance. There have been ſeveral attempts made by the gentlemen here, who had little farms in the neighbourhood of Sydney Cove, to raiſe grain of different kinds, for the purpoſe of feeding a few pigs, goats, or poultry; but although their endeavours ſeemed for a time to promiſe an ample reward, for the corn ſhot up very quickly, yet it no ſooner formed into ear, than the rats (with which, as well as other vermin, this country is over-run) deſtroyed the whole of their proſpects: the Indian corn, which was remarkably promiſing, was deſtroyed in a night; but I am ſorry to ſay, that ſuch of the corn as had eſcaped the vermin, notwithſtanding its very promiſing appearance in the beginning, turned out the moſt miſerable empty ſtraws I ever beheld; the greateſt part was mere ſtraw of about two or two feet and an half high, and the whole produce of a patch of an acre, when cut down, could be carried in one hand.

Having, ſince our arrival, examined the error of the time-keeper, we found it amount to 5′ 20″, or 1° 20′ of longitude weſterly, which made the error, in ſailing the whole circle, only 00° 11′ of longitude eaſterly; and as I had kept Brockbank's watch going the whole time, I examined its error alſo: I have already mentioned that it was, upon our arrival in Table-Bay, 3° 01′ eaſtward; but upon our return to this place, it was correct to the fraction of a ſecond; ſo that whatever its errors might have been during the voyage, it had none upon our arrival. I did not keep the account of longitude by it, but every day, when the ſun could be ſeen, I determined our place by the time-keeper; in doing which, I generally compared my own watch with it, both before and after the altitudes were taken, and carried it upon deck, the time-piece being fixed in the cabin.

June 6.

On the 6th of June, I was engaged in a party, with the governor, on a viſit to Broken-Bay, in order to examine ſome part of that harbour which had not been (for want of time and opportunity) noticed in his laſt viſit to that place; two boats were diſpatched under the care of Mr. Keltie, maſter of the Sirius, with proviſions, &c. And the party, which conſiſted of the governor, Captain Collins (the judge-advocate), Captain Johnſton, of the marines, Mr. White, principal ſurgeon of the ſettlement, Mr. Worgan, Mr. Fowell, and myſelf, from the Sirius, and two men, all armed with muſquets, &c. We landed on the north part of Port Jackſon, and proceeded along the ſea coaſt to the northward;

CHAP. VI. 1789.

in the courſe of our march, we had many long ſandy beaches to croſs, which was a very fatiguing part of the journey: when we aſcended the hills, we had frequently thick woods to paſs through, but as we often fell in with paths, which the natives in travelling along the coaſt had trod very well down, theſe paths rendered our march, not only on account of pointing to us the moſt eaſy and acceſſible parts of the hills and woods, but, in point of direction, the ſhorteſt which could be found, if we had even been better acquainted with this tract. We left Port Jackſon at ſix o'clock in the morning, juſt as the day was dawning, and arrived at the ſouth branch of Broken-Bay at three in the afternoon, after a pretty warm and fatiguing journey, loaded as we were with proviſions for ſeveral days, water, and ammunition: when we arrived at the water-ſide, we found our boats, which had left Port Jackſon at midnight, were ſafely arrived. As it was now too late in the day, and we were all too much fatigued to attempt any part of the main buſineſs upon which we came here, we pitched our tents, and hauled the Seine for fiſh, and being ſucceſsful, we ſat down to regale ourſelves on freſh fiſh and ſalt beef, and reſted the remainder of the day. In the courſe of the little excurſions of our boats' crews this afternoon, a native woman was diſcovered, concealing herſelf from our ſight in the long graſs, which was at this time very wet, and I ſhould have thought very uncomfortable to a poor naked creature. She had, before the arrival of our boats at this beach, been, with ſome of her friends, employed in fiſhing for their daily food, but were upon their approach alarmed, and they had all made their eſcape, except this miſerable girl, who had juſt recovered from the ſmall-pox, and was very weak, and unable, from a ſwelling in one of her knees, to get off to any diſtance: ſhe therefore crept off, and concealed herſelf in the beſt manner ſhe could among the graſs, not twenty yards from the ſpot on which we had placed our tents.

She was diſcovered by ſome perſon who having fired at and ſhot a hawk from a tree right over her, terrified her ſo much that ſhe cried out and diſcovered herſelf. Information was immediately brought to the governor, and we all went to ſee this unhappy girl, whom we found, as I have already obſerved, juſt recovered from the ſmall-pox, and lame: ſhe appeared to be about 17 or 18 years of age, and had covered her debilitated and naked body with the wet graſs, having no other means of hiding herſelf; ſhe was very much frightened on our approaching her, and ſhed many tears, with piteous lamentations: we underſtood none of her expreſſions, but felt much concern at the diſtreſs ſhe ſeemed to ſuffer; we endeavoured all in our power to make her eaſy, and with the aſſiſtance of a few expreſſions which had been collected from poor Ara-ba-noo while he was alive, we ſoothed her diſtreſs a little, and the ſailors were immediately ordered to bring up ſome fire, which we placed before her: we pulled ſome graſs, dried it by the fire, and ſpread round her to keep her warm; then we ſhot ſome birds, ſuch as hawks, crows, and gulls, ſkinned them, and laid them on the fire to broil, together with ſome fiſh, which ſhe eat; we then gave her water, of which ſhe ſeemed to be much in want, for when the word *Baa-do* was mentioned, which was their expreſſion for water, ſhe put her tongue out to ſhew how very dry her mouth was; and indeed from its appearance and colour, ſhe had a conſiderable degree of fever on her. Before we retired to reſt for the night, we ſaw her again, and got ſome fire-wood laid within her reach, with which ſhe might, in the courſe of the night, recruit her fire; we alſo cut a large quantity of graſs, dried it, covered her well, and left her to her repoſe, which, from her ſituation, I conjecture was not very comfortable or refreſhing. Next morning we viſited her again; ſhe had now got pretty much the better of her fears, and frequently called to her friends, who had left her, and

CHAP. VI. 1789.

who, we knew, could be at no great diſtance from her; ſhe repeated their names in a very loud and ſhrill voice, and with much apparent anxiety and concern for the little notice they took of her intreaties to return: for we imagined, in all ſhe ſaid when calling on them, ſhe was informing them, that the ſtrangers were not enemies, but friends; however, all her endeavours to bring them back were ineffectual, while we remained with her; but we were no ſooner gone from the beach, than we ſaw ſome of them come out of the wood; and as there were two canoes on the ſhore belonging to this party, they launched one into the water, and went away.

We employed this day in going up the ſouth branch which the governor named Pitt Water, and ſo much of the day was ſpent in examining it, that when we returned down near the place where we had paſſed the laſt night, it was thought too late to proceed farther; we therefore encamped on the ſame ſpot. Our tents were no ſooner up, than we went to viſit our young female friend, whom we found in a little bark hut upon the beach; this hut was the place in which ſhe and her friends were enjoying themſelves, when the arrival of our boat alarmed them. She was not alone, as before, but had with her a female child, about two years old, and as fine a little infant of that age as I ever ſaw; but upon our approach (the night being cold and rainy, and the child terrified exceedingly) ſhe was lying with her elbows and knees on the ground, covering the child from our ſight with her body, or probably ſheltering it from the weather, but I rather think on account of its fears: on our ſpeaking to her, ſhe raiſed herſelf up, and ſat on the ground with her knees up to her chin, and her heels under her, and was at that moment, I think, the moſt miſerable ſpectacle in the human ſhape I ever beheld*: the little infant could not be prevailed on to look up; it lay with its face upon the ground, and one hand covering its eyes. We ſupplied her, as before, with birds, fiſh, and fuel, and pulled a quantity of graſs to make her a comfortable bed, and covered her little miſerable hut ſo as to keep out the weather: ſhe was now ſo reconciled to our frequent viſits, ſeeing we had nothing in view but her comfort in them, that when ſhe wanted *baa-do*, or *ma-gra*, which ſignifies fiſh, ſhe would aſk for them, and when ſhe did, it was always ſupplied her: in the morning we viſited her again; the child had now got ſo much the better of its fears, that it would allow us to take hold of its hand; I perceived, that young as it was, it had loſt the two firſt joints of its little finger, of the left-hand, the reaſon or meaning of which we had not yet been able to learn.

---

* See the Vignette in the Title Page.

We gave her all the fiſh we had remaining, and having put a quantity of fire-wood and water within her reach, we took our leave. We embarked in the boats, and ſailed acroſs the bay to the north branch, which has a very ſhoally and narrow entrance. We proceeded but a ſmall diſtance up, before we landed on the weſt ſhore and refreſhed ourſelves; after which we rowed round the firſt opening on the eaſt ſide; this we followed up until we came to its head. It is very ſhallow and narrow, and ended in a large baſon, full of ſhoals, and ſurrounded with mangroves; it extended near four miles to the north and eaſtward; when we returned from this branch, we pitched our tents on the weſt ſhore for the night, and early the next morning we proceeded to the northward: in this route we fell in with many ſhoals of conſiderable extent; and after rowing about ſix or ſeven miles up, we arrived at the head of it, which divides into two large bays, in one of which I obſerved the latitude to be 33° 26′ 30″ ſouth. We returned from hence to a point near the entrance of this north harbour, where we encamped and ſpent

the

CHAP. VI. 1789. the night; in this harbour we did not ſee more than twenty natives, ſome few of whom came and converſed with us. Acroſs the mouth of this north harbour there is a bar or ſpit of ſand, which extends from the ſandy beach, or weſt point of the entrance, almoſt over to the eaſtern ſhore, and on which, from the wind having been from the ſouthward the preceding night, the ſea broke prodigiouſly from ſide to ſide, ſo that near low water it was impoſſible for the boats to get out; we were on that account obliged to remain there until it was more than two-thirds flood, when, in the deepeſt part of the channel, where the ſea did not break, we puſhed out, and pulled over for the ſouth-weſt arm, or harbour, up which we went; but as part of this branch had not been looked into laſt winter, we entered an arm on the north ſide of it, and proceeded up about a mile and a half to an iſland we had viſited the laſt winter. Here we encamped for the night, and hauled the ſeine with great ſucceſs; and from the vaſt quantity of excellent mullet and other fiſh caught here, it got the name of Mullet Iſland. Next morning we rowed into a branch, which the boats had been in the laſt time we were here, but had not thoroughly examined; we proceeded to the top, and found it very ſhoally, extending to the northward about four miles, and navigable only for boats, having but four, five, and ſix feet water in it. After having ſatisfied ourſelves as to the extent of this arm, we returned to Mullet Iſland, where we caught fiſh and dined: in the afternoon, the governor and myſelf went in one of the boats, leaving the reſt of the party with the tents on Mullet Iſland; we entered another branch which had alſo been ſeen laſt winter, but was not examined; we rowed up this about ſeven or eight miles, until it became ſo very narrow and ſhoally, having ſcarcely water enough to float the boat, or room to uſe the oars, that we thought it was not worth proſecuting any farther diſcovery at the riſk of grounding the boat, and being left during the night; we therefore returned to Mullet Iſland, and ſpent another night upon it. This branch is all ſhoal water, only five and ſix feet.

CHAP. VI.

1789.

The next morning we ſtruck our tents and proceeded, in the boats, to examine a point of high land, which, from our ſituation in the boat the day before, had the appearance of an iſland; of this we were determined to be ſatisfied, and we found it to be an iſland as we had conjectured. In examining this, we were led into a branch which had not before been diſcovered: we proceeded up this for a conſiderable diſtance, found good depth of water, and every other appearance of its being the opening of an extenſive river: we continued to row up in it the whole of this day, and in the evening we went on ſhore, on the moſt commodious ſpot we could find, which was a low marſhy point. Here we raiſed our tents, and ſpent the night: at day-light in the morning it was ſo foggy, that we were obliged to defer our departure from this ſituation until ten o'clock, when the influence of the ſun diſpelled the miſt, and we continued our courſe upwards, ſtill finding good depth of water and ſtrong tides; both which we conſidered as indications of a conſiderable river. The whole of this day was employed in exploring and making what progreſs we could; the ebb tides we obſerved thus far up were conſiderably ſtronger than the floods, and the water had very little the taſte of ſea water; indeed, it ſcarcely could be called brackiſh. We continued going up until the evening, when it was found impoſſible, at this time, to make any farther diſcovery; our proviſions being nearly expended: we filled our water-caſks, where we gave up the purſuit, and there, although the tide was high, the water was perfectly freſh. The general depth of this river was from three to ſeven fathoms, and its breadth was from 100 to 300 fathoms. There are ſome ſhoals, but they generally extend from low mangrove or marſhy points. Its general direction, as far

CHAP. VI. 1789.

far as we were up, is to the north-weſt. We were, when fartheſt up, about twenty miles from the entrance of the ſouth-weſt arm of Broken-Bay. The banks of the river, on the loweſt part, had many mangrove trees along it; higher up, reeds grew along its margin, and behind theſe reedy banks were immenſe perpendicular hills of barren, rocky lands, with trees growing from between the rocky cliffs; the depth of the river, when we were higheſt up, was ſix and ſeven fathoms. We were ſo anxious to proſecute this diſcovery, that we did not think of returning until it was near dark; and in our preſent ſituation, there was not a ſpot on which we could erect a tent, ſo very ſteep were the ſhores, except where they were marſhy. We puſhed down as faſt as poſſible, in order to find a landing-place, before it ſhould be very late; and ſoon after dark, we put a-ſhore on a parcel of rocks, which was, indeed, the only ſpot near on which we could find room for our tents, and here we paſſed the night. The morning of the next day was again ſoggy, until the ſun had ſufficient power to diſperſe it; we then returned down the river, and as the wind was fair, and blew freſh, we ſailed down, and in the afternoon arrived in the ſouth branch, or Pitt-Water, fixed our tents for the evening, and caught ſome fiſh, in order to ſpin out our proviſions. Our female friend had left this place.

The governor was now determined to return as faſt as poſſible to Port Jackſon, and, after reſting a few days, to proſecute this uſeful diſcovery to its ſource. We ſtruck the tents at night, and embarked them in the boats; for, as the wind was northerly, it was intended they ſhould ſail at midnight; a wigwam was made to ſhelter us during the night, and a large fire before it, by which we lay till day-light. The boats having ſailed in the night, we ſet off at dawn of day in the morning by land; we found an eaſier path than that by which we came, and arrived at the north cove of Port Jackſon by two in the afternoon, where the boats were already arrived. In our journey we fell in with ſeveral dead bodies, who had probably fallen by the ſmall-pox, but they were mere ſkeletons, ſo that it was impoſſible to ſay of what diſeaſe they died.

Boats were upon our arrival immediately ordered to be prepared, and proviſions got ready for another excurſion, the ſame party being engaged to go again, and, if poſſible, trace this river to its ſource. As far up as we advanced, I made an eye ſketch of it.

June 28. On Sunday the 28th of June, the boats being ready, proviſions embarked, and the wind fair for another viſit to Broken-Bay, they ſailed before day-light on Monday morning; the party engaged to go by land were put on ſhore at the north part of the harbour at ſix o'clock; the ſame gentlemen who were on the former expedition were on this alſo, and an addition of five marines; on the whole, our numbers amounted to about forty, including thoſe in the boats: we were all well armed, and capable of making a powerful reſiſtance, in caſe, as we advanced up the river, we ſhould find the interior parts of the country well inhabited, and the people hoſtile.

Having, on our laſt expedition, found a good track to travel by, we were ſoon in the neighbourhood of the ſouth branch of Broken-Bay, at which place one boat had been ordered to meet us, in order to ſave us by much the worſt part of the journey. We arrived at the head of Pitt-Water before eleven o'clock, but no boat appeared, which obliged us to walk round all the bays, woods, and ſwamps, between the head and entrance of this branch; by which, when we joined the boats, we were

1789. exceedingly fatigued; the weather being rather warm, and each perſon having his knapſack and arms to carry, this laſt part of our journey increaſed the diſtance from twelve or fourteen miles to about twenty-five; in the courſe of which we had very high and ſteep hills to climb, and many deep ſwamps to wade through: by the time we joined the boats the day was too far advanced to think of proceeding any farther, we therefore pitched the tents, and occupied the ſpot which we had formerly done when here.

June 30. On Tueſday the 30th, we embarked in the boats at day-break, intending to reach as high up this day as poſſible; we paſſed Mullet Iſland, and proceeded into the river, and before night, we had advanced as far up as a point on which we had reſted a night the laſt time we were here, and which was within three or four miles of the place, where we left off the purſuit: here we ſlept for the night, and at day-light on July 1. the 1ſt of July we embarked, and after advancing a very little way beyond our fartheſt diſcovery, the river divided into two branches, one leading to the north-weſt, the other to the ſouthward; we took that which led to the north-weſt, and continued all day rowing up this arm, which was in general ſhoal water, from four to ten and twelve feet, and its breadth from about 20 to 40 fathoms; the banks of this branch were in general immenſe perpendicular mountains of barren rock; in ſome places the mountains did not reach the margin of the river, but fell back a little way from it, and were joined by low marſhy points, covered with reeds or ruſhes, which extended from the foot of the mountains to the edge of the river. At five in the evening, we put on ſhore, and raiſed our tents at the foot of one of the mountains, where we found 2d. a tolerable dry ſpot for that purpoſe; and in the morning of the 2d, we proceeded higher up, but this morning's progreſs was a good deal retarded by many large trees having fallen from the banks, and which reached almoſt acroſs the river; for here it was ſo narrow, that it hardly deſerved that name: by ten o'clock we were ſo far up, that we had not room for the oars, nor indeed water to float the boats: we therefore found it neceſſary to return, and before noon we put on ſhore, where I took the meridian altitude of the ſun, which gave our latitude 33° 21′ ſouth, and we judged, by the eſtimated diſtances marked in my ſketch, that we were about thirty-four miles above Mullet Iſland. At the place where we paſſed the laſt night we were examining the ground round us, as was cuſtomary wherever we placed our tents for the night; and about half a mile diſtant, ſome of the gentlemen found a ſmall hut; they ſaw a perſon whom they took for a native woman, and who, upon our approach, fled with great precipitation into the woods. They went to examine the hut, and found two ſmall helpleſs children in it; the poor little creatures were terribly frightened, but upon their being kindly treated, they ſeemed to recover a little from their fear. They appeared to be in great diſtreſs, apparently for want of food; they had a little fire by them, and in it was found a few wild yams, about the ſize of a walnut: upon a ſuppoſition that the parents of theſe children would ſoon return, after our leaving the place, a hatchet and ſome other trifles were left in the hut. Next morning, while the people were employed in ſtriking the tents, ſome of the gentlemen again viſited the hut which they now found unoccupied; the whole family were gone, and the hatchet, &c. were left lying by it. It is really wonderful, that theſe people ſhould ſet ſo little value upon ſuch an uſeful article as an axe certainly muſt be to them; this indifference I have frequently ſeen in thoſe who have been ſhewn the uſe of it, and even when its ſuperiority over their ſtone hatchets has been pointed out by a compariſon. It is not eaſily to be accounted for. We had now a ſtrong ebb tide, and we rowed

late,

CHAP. VI.

1789.

July 3.

late, in order, if poſſible, to get out of this branch before we ſtopt for the night. About ſix o'clock in the evening we entered the ſouthern branch, and very ſoon after encamped for the night. The next morning (Friday 3d) we proceeded up this arm for about ſeven or eight miles, where it again divided into two branches; thus far we found the depth from three to nine fathoms, and the breadth of the river from 100 to 150 fathoms; we took the branch which led to the northward, (the other went to the ſouthward) but we had not advanced more than a quarter of a mile before we found the water very ſhoally; however, as it might lead to a good country, the governor determined to go as high as the boats could find water; we went through various windings, and met with many difficulties from the ſhoallyneſs of the water: notwithſtanding which, we made ſhift to get about 13 miles up; the depth was from four to twelve feet, and the breadth from 20 to 50 fathoms; the banks of this branch were the ſame as the laſt, high, ſteep, and rocky mountains, with many trees growing down their ſides, from between the rocks, where no one would believe there could be any ſoil to nouriſh them. Both this and the laſt branch we examined, probably extend many miles farther than we with our boats could trace them, but they did not appear, where we left off the examination of them, to be navigable for any veſſel but the canoes of the natives, which do not draw more than two or three inches water. We ſaw ſeveral natives in theſe branches, but they fled into the woods on our approach: the wretched condition of the miſerable natives who have taken up their reſidence, for a time, ſo far back from the ſea coaſt, where no fiſh are to be had, is far beyond my deſcription; they, no doubt, have methods of ſnaring or killing the different kinds of animals which are to be found here, otherwiſe I think it impoſſible they could exiſt at any diſtance from the ſea: for the land, as far as we yet know, affords very little

1789. ſuſtenance for the human race. Having advanced as far as poſſible with the boats, we returned, and having rowed two or three miles down to a point where there was tolerable landing, we put a-ſhore, and pitched the tents for the night. July 4. In the morning of the 4th, while the tents were putting into the boats, I meaſured the height of the oppoſite ſhore, which I found to be 250 feet perpendicular above the level of the river, which was here 30 fathoms wide: at ſeven o'clock we embarked, and rowed down until we came to the entrance of the ſecond ſouthern branch, where we found good depth of water, in ſix and ſeven fathoms. This, from its depth, encouraged us to hope that it might extend a great diſtance to the weſtward: we went up this branch about 13 or 14 miles before we put on ſhore for the night: in this diſtance, the general depth of water was from two to ſeven fathoms, and the breadth of the river from 70 to 140 fathoms; but the country ſtill wore a very unpromiſing aſpect, being either high rocky ſhores, or low marſhy points. After having reſted for the night, we were again under way at daylight, and this day advanced about fourteen miles againſt the tide. 5th. In the woods we frequently ſaw fires, and ſometimes heard the natives; in the afternoon we ſaw a conſiderable number of people in the wood, with many fires in different places; we called to them in their own manner, by frequently repeating the word *Co-wee*, which ſignifies, come here; at laſt, two men came to the water-ſide with much apparent familiarity and confidence: I thought, from this circumſtance, that they had certainly ſeen us before, either at Botany-Bay, Port Jackſon, or Broken-Bay; they received a hatchet, and a wild duck, which had been juſt before ſhot from the boat; and in return, they threw us a ſmall coil of line, made of the hair of ſome animal, and alſo offered a ſpear, which was refuſed. The only argument againſt their having ſeen us before is, that they were the firſt we had met with who appeared deſirous of making a return for any preſent they received.

Here the banks of the river are low and covered with what we call the pine-trees of this country; which indeed have received that name merely from the leaf, which is a good deal like the pine, but the wood is very different. The natives here, appear to live chiefly on the roots which they dig from the ground; for theſe low banks appear to have been ploughed up, as if a vaſt herd of ſwine had been living on them. We put on ſhore, and examined the places which had been dug, and found the wild yam in conſiderable quantities, but in general very ſmall, not larger than a walnut; they appear to be in the greateſt plenty on the banks of the river; a little way back they are ſcarce. We frequently, in ſome of the reaches which we paſſed through this day, ſaw very near us the hills, which we ſuppoſe as ſeen from Port Jackſon, and called by the governor the Blue Mountains.

At five in the evening, we put aſhore at the foot of a hill, where we paſſed the night; and at day-light in the morning of the 5th, we embarked, and continued our way up the river; in which we ſtill found good depth of water, from two to five fathoms, and 60 or 70 fathoms wide. As we advanced, we found the river to contract very faſt in its breadth, and the channel became ſhoaler; from theſe circumſtances, we had reaſon to believe that we were not far from its ſource: the ebb tides were pretty ſtrong, but the floods were only perceptible by the ſwelling of the water. In the evening we arrived at the foot of a high mountain, which was ſpread over with lofty trees, without any underwood; and ſaw a pleaſant looking country, covered with graſs, and without that mixture of rocky patches in every acre or two, as is common in many other places: we aſcended ſome diſtance, and erected our tents for the night. The river here is not more than twenty fathoms wide. In the night, when every thing was ſtill, we heard diſtinctly the roaring of what we judged to be a fall of water; and imagined from this circumſtance, that we ſhould not be able to advance much farther. In the morning, we walked to the top of the hill, and found we were not more than five or ſix miles from a long range of mountains, between which, and that where we ſtood, there is a deep valley, or low country, through which, probably, a branch of this river may run. This range of mountains we ſuppoſed to be thoſe which are ſeen from Port Jackſon, and called the Blue Mountains: they limit the ſight to the weſt-north-weſt. In that range of high land there is a remarkable gully, or chaſm, which is ſeen diſtinctly at a diſtance, and from which we appeared to be diſtant about five miles. The hills on each ſide of this gap were named by Governor Phillip; on one ſide the Carmarthen, on the other, the Lanſdown hills; and that on which we ſtood was called Richmond-hill. In the morning of the 6th, we examined the river, which, as I have before obſerved, was narrow and ſhoally; its bed was compoſed of looſe round ſtones and ſand: it was now low water, and not a ſufficient depth to float the boats: we therefore delayed any farther attempt to get up until it ſhould be near high water; and, in the mean time, determined to take a view of the country round this hill; which, had it been clear of trees, would from its commmanding height, have given a moſt extenſive proſpect to the eaſtward, northward, and ſouthward; but the range of hills before-mentioned were ſtill higher, and of courſe limited our view to the weſtward. While the other gentlemen of the party were along with the governor, examining the country, I employed myſelf in taking the meridian altitude of the ſun, by which I found the higheſt part of the hill to be in latitude 33° 37′ ſouth. The gentlemen ſpoke highly in favour of the country as far as they walked; it was perfectly clear of any kind of under-wood; the trees upon it were all very tall, and ſtood very wide apart; the ſoil was alſo examined, and found very good: a ſmall patch was dug up, and a few potatoes, Indian-corn, melon, and other ſeeds ſown. This was a common practice, when a piece of ground, favourable from its ſoil, and being in an unfrequented ſituation, was found, to ſow a few ſeeds of different kinds: ſome of the little gardens, which had been planted in this manner, and left to nature, have been ſince viſited and found thriving, others have miſcarried. After making theſe obſervations, the tide being made, we put off in the boats, and endeavoured to get higher up, but were frequently aground: by the time we had reached half a mile higher than the foot of Richmond-hill, we met the ſtream ſetting down ſo ſtrong, that it was with much difficulty we could get the boats ſo high. We here found the river to divide into two narrow branches, from one of which the ſtream came down with conſiderable velocity, and with a fall over a range of ſtones which ſeemed to lye acroſs its entrance: this was the fall which we had heard the night before from our ſituation on the ſide of Richmond-hill. We found too little water for the boats which we had with us to advance any farther, and the ſtream was very ſtrong, although weak to what it may reaſonably be conjectured to be after heavy rains; for here we had evident marks of the vaſt torrents which muſt pour down from the mountains, after heavy rains. The low grounds, at ſuch times, are entirely covered, and the trees with which they are overgrown, are laid down (with their tops pointing down the river,) as much as I ever ſaw a field of corn after a ſtorm; and where any of theſe trees have been ſtrong enough to reſiſt in *any degree* the ſtrength of the torrent, (for they are all leſs or more bent downwards) we ſaw in the clifts of the branches of ſuch trees, vaſt quantities of large logs which had been hurried down by the force of the waters, and lodged from thirty to forty feet above the common level of the river; and at that height there were great quantities of graſs, 1789. reeds, and ſuch other weeds as are waſhed from the banks of the river, hanging to the branches. The firſt notice we took of theſe ſigns of an extraordinary ſwelling of the water, was twelve or fourteen miles lower down, and where the river is not ſo confined in its breadth: there we meaſured the ſame ſigns of ſuch torrents twenty-eight feet above the ſurface of the water: the common riſe and fall of the tide did not appear to be more than ſix feet. On the banks here alſo we found yams and other roots, and had evident marks of the natives frequenting theſe parts in ſearch of them for food. They have no doubt ſome method of preparing theſe roots, before they can eat them; for we found one kind which ſome of the company had ſeen the natives dig up; and with which being pleaſed, as it had much the appearance of horſe-radiſh, and had a ſweetiſh taſte, and having ſwallowed a ſmall quantity, it occaſioned violent ſpaſms, cramps in the bowels, and ſickneſs at the ſtomach: it might probably be the caſada root. We found here many traps, for catching animals, in which we obſerved the feathers of many birds, particularly the quail. We now gave up the hope of tracing this river higher up with our boats; and, as in caſe of heavy rains ſetting in, which might be expected at this ſeaſon of the year, there would be conſiderable danger, while confined in this narrow part of the river, we puſhed down and encamped the night of the 6th, about ſeven miles below Richmond-hill. In the July 6th, morning early, we ſet off on our return, and encamped on the 7th at 7th, night, about twenty-ſix miles down: at ſeven in the morning of the 8th, we embarked again, and by four in the evening had reached a 8th, point about forty-three miles down, where we pitched our tents for the

CHAP. VI.

1789. night, which was very foggy. In our way down, we ſtopped, and meaſured the perpendicular height of a hill on the north ſide of the river, (or more properly one of the banks of the river; for it is a long range of level land, and nearly perpendicular from the water; the oppoſite ſhore is low and marſhy;) which I found to be 399 feet: the

July 9. river was here 120 fathoms wide. On the 9th in the morning, we proceeded to examine ſome of the inferior branches; their general direction was to the ſouthward, and the longeſt was not more than five or ſix miles in length, and was navigable for ſuch boats as ours; the general depth was three and four fathoms for about four miles up, and then ſhoal water; the others were inconſiderable. In one of theſe branches we paſſed the night of the 9th, and ſaw a few natives, who came off to us in their boats with much chearfulneſs and good humour; I thought I had ſeen them before: they received a few preſents, among which was a looking-glaſs, which we took much trouble to ſhew them the uſe of: they were ſome time before they obſerved their own figure in the glaſs, but when they did, they turned it up and looked behind it; then pointed to the water, ſignifying that they could ſee their figure reflected as well from that. Having now examined every thing which was thought worth our attention, we made the beſt of our way to Mullet-iſland,

10th, where we landed on the 10th in the evening, and caught ſome fiſh.

11th, This night, and all the next day, (11th,) it blew a gale of wind from the ſouthward, ſo that we were obliged to paſs a ſecond night here.

12th, In the morning of the 12th, it was more moderate, although very ſqually and unſettled; we ſtruck our tents and ſailed for Pitt-water, where about noon we encamped upon a point pretty high up: in our way, we put aſhore to fill ſome freſh water, and in a cave near the ſtream we found a native woman, who appeared to have been dead ſome time, for her ſkin was as hard as a piece of leather; it was impoſſible to know whether ſhe had died of the ſmall-pox or not. In the morning of the 13th, as we intended to land well up this branch, in order to avoid the moſt difficult and tireſome part of the road to Port Jackſon. We embarked, after we had breakfaſted, and rowed up about a couple of miles, when the party for walking went on ſhore, each with his arms, and knapſack, containing two days proviſions; we were about half an hour in getting through the wood, which led us to the ſea-coaſt, where we fell into our old and well known path, and by four o'clock in the afternoon arrived at the north part of Port Jackſon; but we might as well have been fifty leagues off, for here we could have no communication either with the Sirius or the ſettlement, and no boat had been ordered to meet us. We went immediately to work and made a large fire, by which we lay all night, which happened to be very cold. The next day we croſſed the hills, and came to the mouth of the north-weſt harbour, but could not find the means of croſſing it; muſkets had been frequently fired during the night, in hopes that ſome boat might have been down the harbour fiſhing, and heard them. We found this morning a canoe upon the beach, with which we had no doubt of getting two men acroſs the water, who could in a ſhort time walk over to the cove where the Sirius lay; but this proſpect was diſappointed by the firſt man who entered the canoe having overſet her, and ſhe immediately ſunk, and he was obliged to ſwim aſhore: after this we went to work and made a catamaran, of the lighteſt wood we could find, but when finiſhed and launched, it would not, although pretty large, bear the weight of one man. It was now propoſed to walk round the head of the north-weſt harbour, which would have been a good long journey for at leaſt two days, and our proviſions were nearly expended; to this propoſal I was under the neceſſity of objecting, for want of ſhoes, the laſt march having tore all but the ſoals from my feet, and they were tied

1789.
July 13.

on

CHAP. VI.

1789.

on with ſpun-yarn; I therefore declined the propoſed walk, and determined to go back to Broken-bay and rejoin the boats; which I had no doubt of being able to effect in the courſe of that day, and with far more eaſe than I could, without ſhoes, climb ſuch rocky mountains, and thick woods, as lay in the way round the head of the north-weſt harbour. But as it was likely I might fall in with ſome parties of the natives in the way, I wiſhed to have a companion: Captain Collins preferred accompanying me in the intended walk, and we were juſt upon the point of ſetting out, when two of the people who were with us propoſed ſwimming over the water, and to croſs through the wood to the Sirius; the diſtance they had to ſwim was not more than two cables length, or four hundred yards; they immediately ſtripped, and each having had a dram, they tied up in a handkerchief a ſhirt, trowſers, and a pair of ſhoes each, which was reſted upon their ſhoulders: thus equipped, they took the water, and in ſeven minutes landed on the oppoſite ſhore; but one being ſeized with the cramp, was obliged to diſengage himſelf from his bundle, which was of courſe loſt: they ſet off through the woods, and in a ſhort time got on board the ſhip, the one with his ſhirt and trowſers, the other perfectly naked. Upon their information, a boat was ſent down, and took us on board, after a pretty fatiguing journey. I cannot help here remarking how providential it was, that we did not all agree to walk round the north-weſt harbour. At eight in the morning we heard the report of a great gun, which led me to ſuſpect that ſome perſon belonging to the Sirius was miſſing, and had probably been loſt in the woods; we frequently fired muſkets that morning, and ſometimes imagined we heard a muſket at a conſiderable diſtance in the woods; in conſequence of this ſuſpicion, we frequently fired ſeveral together, and as often heard the report of that which we believed was meant to anſwer us; in ſhort, by means of theſe repeated

vollies,

1789.

vollies, we drew nearer to that which anſwered us, and by hallooing all together, found we had got within hearing of the perſon who had anſwered our firing; for, after calling out, we liſtened attentively, and heard a very faint voice in anſwer; in that direction we walked, and at laſt, by frequent calling, and anſwering, we found the perſon out, who proved to be Peter White, ſail-maker of the Sirius; who had been four days loſt, and when he ſet out from the ſhip had not more than four ounces of biſcuit with him, one ounce of which he had ſtill left; he was very faint, and appeared to us to be ſtupid and almoſt exhauſted, for he ſtaggered like a man drunk; we took him with us, and by giving him ſuch proviſions as we had, in ſmall proportions, he was in a few hours a good deal recovered; but I think if he had not been found as he was, in twenty-four hours more he would not have been able to make any farther effort to ſave himſelf, and muſt have periſhed where he lay down. It is remarkable, that the flint of his gun being worn to a ſtump, he could not get fire out of it the whole of the day before, when trying to ſhoot ſome birds for his ſubſiſtence, until night came on, when it was neceſſary for him to have a fire to ſleep by; he then tried it again with very little hope of ſucceeding, but contrary to his expectations he got a fire and ſat by it the whole night; the next morning it failed him repeatedly, until he had occaſion to anſwer our muſquets, when it ſtruck fire every time he wiſhed to anſwer us, otherwiſe, in all probability, we ſhould not have found him. This is exactly his own account.

August.

In the end of Auguſt, the governor having expreſſed a wiſh to have a ſurvey made of Broken-Bay and Botany-Bay, I offered to perform that ſervice. The Sirius had ſome time ago been removed from Sydney Cove, to a cove on the north ſide of the harbour, much more convenient

CHAP. VI. 1789.

venient for giving her thoſe repairs of which ſhe now ſtood ſo much in need. The carpenter and his crew, who had been employed on ſhore upon the buſineſs of the ſettlement, ever ſince our return from the laſt voyage, were now ordered on board, to attend the repairs of the ſhip; a temporary wharf was built by the ſhip's company, and a piece of ground levelled to receive the proviſions and ſtores: every perſon was now employed in lightening the ſhip, and in cutting down timber for the repairs wanted. A ſurvey upon the defects of the ſhip was ordered by Captain Phillip, and ſhe was reported to be very weak in her upper works; ſeveral bolts were decayed under her wales, which occaſioned her making much water at ſea; and that it was abſolutely neceſſary to examine as many of the butt bolts as poſſible: it was alſo thought neceſſary to fix ſeven pair of top riders on each ſide, to ſtrengthen her upper works; various other defects were given in. While the ſhip's company were employed in lightening the ſhip, and the carpenters were cutting down timber for riders and plank, I determined, before any thing material in the repairs was ſet about, to go round and make a ſurvey of Broken-Bay: in this excurſion I was accompanied by ſeveral gentlemen of the ſettlement; the boats were diſpatched round, under the care of Lieutenant Bradley, by whom, and Lieutenant Ball, of the Supply, I was aſſiſted in this work: the party went by land, but as I wiſhed alſo to make a ſketch of the coaſt between the two harbours, we determined to be two days on the journey, and to lye all night in the woods. After taking a ſketch of the coaſt, we arrived at Pitt-Water, and joined the boats in the afternoon of the ſecond day. We viſited all thoſe parts, which are navigable for ſhipping, and having before very particularly ſounded and examined all the branches here, the buſineſs was finiſhed in little more than a fortnight. Mr. Bradley returned with the boats, and we walked along ſhore to Port Jackſon.

The entrance of Broken-Bay lies in latitude 33° 34′ ſouth, and longitude 151° 27′ eaſt; the bay is large and clear; the diſtance from north to ſouth head, is two miles, and the depth is eight, ten, and twelve fathoms; but as you run up the bay it ſhoals to ſix, ſeven, and five fathoms. Juſt within the north head of the bay is the entrance of the northern branch, which, from the ſhoalneſs of the water, is only navigable for boats, or ſmall veſſels; the channel going in is very narrow, occaſioned by a long ſpit of ſand, which extends from a low ſandy point on the weſt ſide of the entrance, and on which, when the wind is from the eaſtward, the ſea breaks very high. A little within the ſouth head of the bay is the entrance of the Southern Branch or Pitt-Water; this is a good harbour, though the entrance is rendered rather narrow by a ſhoal bank, which extends from the eaſtern point full two-thirds acroſs; keep the weſt ſhore on board, which is pretty bold, and is a high, ſteep, rocky point, and ſteer right up the branch; three fathoms is the moſt you will have at low water, and that depth is only in the narrows, which are of very ſhort extent, for as you run up, you very ſoon deepen to four, five, ſix, and eight fathoms; to the ſhoal which narrows the entrance, it is very gradual ſoundings. When you are above the ſecond point on the weſt ſhore, you have good depth of water and good room; you may run up in mid-channel without fear; both ſhores are pretty bold to, except off the points, from ſome of which it is ſhoal a ſmall diſtance: in this branch there are ſeveral coves, in which a ſhip might lighten and careen; there is alſo freſh water in various parts of this harbour, with wood in abundance, and fiſh may be caught in all the ſandy bays. The entrance of this branch is divided from the ſouth-weſt arm by ſeveral rocky points; the land over them high and ſteep; between which are ſome ſmall ſandy bays; and right off the mouth of this arm is a very high rocky iſland, of but ſmall extent;

CHAP. VI. 1789.

its eaſtern end is very high and perpendicular; this iſland is a good mark, for any part of the bay may be known, with certainty, by the ſituation of it, which the chart will point out. If a ſtranger were coming in here for ſhelter in a gale of wind, I would recommend his puſhing up the ſouth-weſt arm, and ſteering in for the iſland, which is now called Mount Elliot, from its ſimilarity to the north end of Gibraltar Rock: you may paſs on either ſide, but the ſouth ſide is faireſt for going up the ſouth-weſt arm; keep mid-channel between the iſland and ſouth ſhore: this ſhore is ſo bold that you may run within two cables length of it. In your way up you will perceive a branch on the north ſide, which runs up north-weſt; when thus high, you are above a bank or middle ground, on which the leaſt water is 16 feet; you may, by keeping near the ſhore, paſs on either ſide of this ſhoal, which has gradual ſoundings to it; the ſouth ſide has moſt room and deepeſt water; the north ſide has five fathoms: when above this, you may keep in the middle, if you wiſh to go higher, and the leaſt water will be five or ſix fathoms for ſeveral miles higher: from this ſouth-weſt arm ſeveral branches extend, moſt of which have good depth of water, but the chart will be the beſt guide. If you wiſh to enter the north-weſt branch, enter it by keeping the larboard ſhore on board, and for ſome diſtance up, as from the ſtarboard ſhore a ſhoal extends one-third of the diſtance over.

After having reſted a few days, I determined not to loſe any time, but go immediately and make a ſurvey of Botany-Bay, while the weather was cool and pleaſant. Towards the end of September, two boats with proviſions, tents, &c. were got ready, and diſpatched round, under the care of Mr. Keltie, the maſter of the Sirius, by whom, and Mr. Blackburn, the maſter of the Supply, I was aſſiſted in my work at Botany-

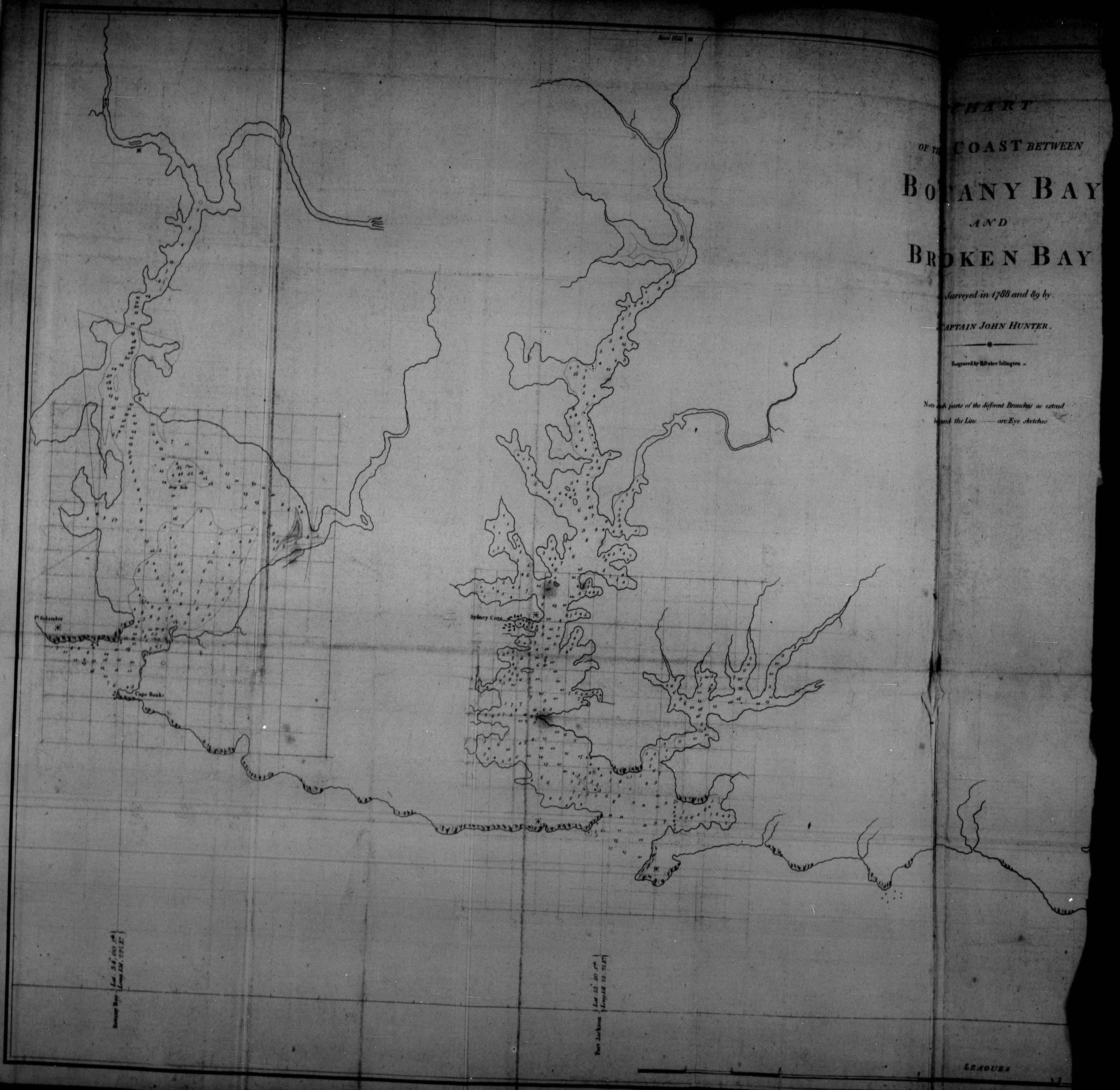
CHART OF THE COAST BETWEEN BOTANY BAY AND BROKEN BAY

Surveyed in 1788 and 89 by

CAPTAIN JOHN HUNTER.

Engraved by B. Baker Islington.

Note such parts of the different Branches as extend beyond the Line ——— are Eye sketches


Rose Hill
Sydney Cove
Pt Solander
Cape Banks
Botany Bay
Lat 34.00 S
Long 151.22 E
Port Jackson
Lat 33.50 S
Long 151.25 E
LEAGUES

London Published 20 September, 179[illegible] by J. [illegible] Piccadilly.

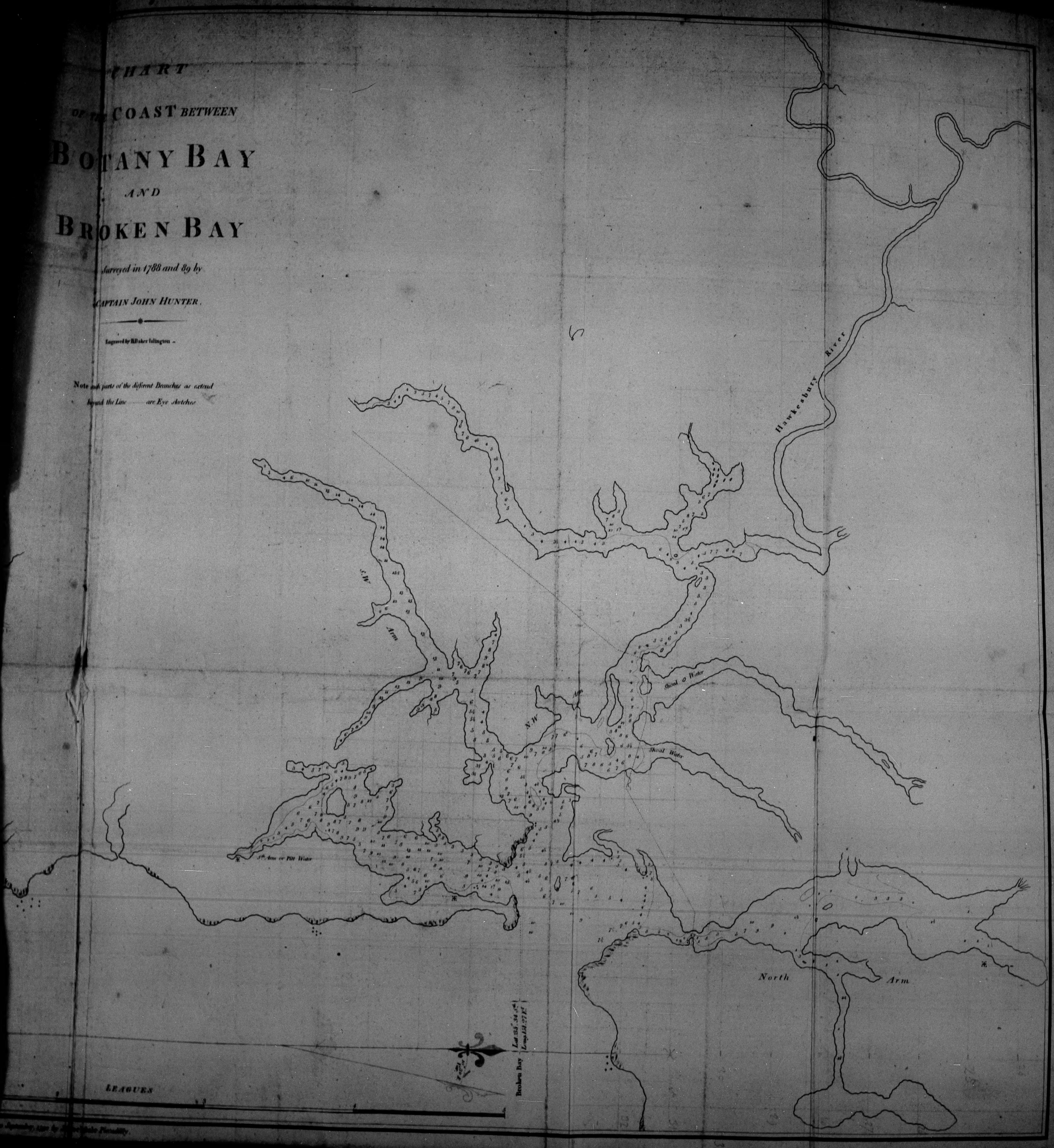


CHART OF THE COAST BETWEEN BOTANY BAY AND BROKEN BAY

Surveyed in 1788 and 89 by

CAPTAIN JOHN HUNTER.

Engraved by B.Baker Islington –

Note such parts of the different Branches as extend beyond the Line .... are Eye sketches

Hawkesbury River
S.W. Arm
N.W. Arm
Shoal Water
Shoal Water
S.th Arm or Pitt Water
North Arm
Broken Bay
Lat. 33. 34. S.
Long. 151. 27 E.
LEAGUES

[illegible] September [illegible] by [illegible] Piccadilly.

Botany-Bay. A few gentlemen of the ſettlement having ſignified a wiſh to accompany me, the party reſolved to walk over and meet the boats there; this route being now well known, and the path well trodden, it was not an unpleaſant walk. We joined the boats about noon, and found our tents pitched. The ſame afternoon we began our operations, and in about ten days had finiſhed the ſurvey of the bay. The anchorage in this bay, as I have before obſerved, is extenſive, and the paſſage into it eaſy; there is a cluſter of rocks, which lie ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, about two cables length from a little bare iſland on the north ſhore, on which the ſea frequently breaks very high; but if you keep Cape Banks open, you will avoid them; both ſhores are bold to, till you come thus high. A little above Point Southerland (ſouth ſhore) is another patch of rocks, which, to avoid in turning, keep the land below this point open. Although the anchorage here is extenſive, yet by looking at the chart, it will appear a ſmall ſpot for ſo very large a piece of water: from both the north and ſouth ſides, and from the bottom of the bay, the flats run off a great diſtance, from four to fifteen feet water. I did formerly believe, that there was an eaſy channel over the flats into the weſt river, but on this examination I think it rather difficult, if practicable at all, as the ſoundings are very irregular. This river in ſome parts has good depth, and that near and within its entrance; but higher up it is all ſhoal water, and full of knowls of ſand; in ſhort, it is only to be navigated by boats: it has two branches, in which there are ſeveral coves, or bays, containing ſhoal water. After having gone to the head of this river, and returned to the bay again, we then entered a ſmall river which empties itſelf in the north-weſt part of the bay; this river, as far as I went up, which was about five miles, is all ſhoal water (it has ſince been examined to the head by Lieutenant Bradley): in ſhort, theſe rivers were *with me* no object at

this

1789. this time to throw away time upon; I therefore made no other ſurvey than an eye ſketch; every reach is laid down true with reſpect to direction; the ſoundings are the depth at or near low water; and the diſtance is eſtimated by ſhort portions at a time, that they might be the more correct. It will eaſily be perceived, by looking at the draft of this bay, that it is not poſſible to lie land locked with a ſhip in any part of it; you will always be expoſed to the large ſea which tumbles in here with an eaſterly wind. The edge of the flatts (in three fathoms) is determined by many interſections, ſo that its extent is pretty nearly aſcertained.

In the end of October it was judged neceſſary to ſhorten the allowance of proviſions one-third; for although we might expect ſtore-ſhips from England by the end of January, 1790, yet as there did not remain above five months proviſions in the ſettlement, the governor thought it neceſſary to iſſue an order for two-thirds allowance to commence the November 1. 1ſt of November.

Having finiſhed the placing of the top riders in the Sirius by the end of October, we took our proviſions and ſtores on board; and on the 7th. 7th of November, we moved the ſhip from Careening Cove over to Sydney Cove. A few days before that time, John Mara, the gunner's mate, had been miſſing, and was ſuppoſed to have been loſt in the woods; parties were ſent out in ſearch of him: the third day after he diſappeared, I was going up the harbour in a boat early in the morning, and ſome diſtance up, I thought I heard the voice of a man upon the north ſhore; we lay upon the oars a conſiderable time, and liſtened attentively; we again heard the voice, and rowed immediately towards that part of the ſhore from whence the voice came, and there we found the perſon miſſing: he was ſitting upon a rock, was exceedingly faint, and ſcarcely able to get into the boat; having had nothing to eat during his abſence but an herb which the people uſe by way of tea, and which is ſo palatable they can drink it without ſugar; it has exactly the taſte of liquoriſh root. I interrogated him with reſpect to the manner of his loſing himſelf; he ſaid, "That having been ſent on ſhore in the "evening to fill a few water-caſks, which were landed at a run of "water near the ſhip, and that having juſt before he was ſent on ſhore "taken a copious drink of grog, he felt himſelf, ſoon after he landed, "a good deal diſpoſed to ſleep; that the weather being warm, and the "evening well advanced, he laid down upon the hill, ſome diſtance "from the run of water, and fell faſt aſleep upon the graſs; that he "did not wake until it was late, and the night being dark, and he a "little confuſed when he awoke, he went farther into the wood in"ſtead of coming out of it, and by that means loſt himſelf entirely." He alſo ſaid, "That when I took him up, he was ſo exhauſted that he "ſhould not have been able to walk much longer, and that he had "only reached the water-ſide the night before." He had no arms of any kind; it was therefore fortunate that he did not fall in with any of the natives, as we have much reaſon to believe that they are diſpoſed to take the advantage of thoſe they meet without fire-arms.

The night before we left Careening Cove, Mr. Francis Hill, one of the maſter's mates, had deſired permiſſion to go over to Sydney Cove, and to return early the next morning; he went over, and was the next morning early put acroſs to the neareſt part of the north ſhore, intending to walk round to the ſhip, a route which had been often taken by many of our gentlemen, and was not more than an hour and a half's walk, but in this ſhort diſtance Mr. Hill loſt himſelf. The next day,

parties

CHAP. VI. 1789. parties were ſent out different ways, and boats were ſent both up and down the harbour in ſearch of him; a gun for their and his direction was fired from the ſhip every two hours, and this continued for two days. The third day, many additional parties were ſent, to the number of nine or ten; in ſhort, every piece of ground where it was thought poſſible he might have paſſed, was traverſed over and over by the different parties, but without effect; we had, therefore, much reaſon to believe that he fell in with a party of the natives, who probably murdered him, for he had no arms of any kind with him. That this opinion of a diſpoſition in the natives to take advantage of a ſingle perſon, particularly when unarmed, is not ill founded, we have had many inſtances to prove; one of which in this place may ſuffice, as it had happened very recently, and near to the place where Mr. Hill was loſt. A man belonging to the Sirius, who had generally been employed in ſhooting for the officers, was, a few days previous to the ſuppoſed death of Mr. Hill, in the woods looking for game, and had been ſeen by a party of the natives from the ſkirts of a wood; they had not been obſerved by him, and taking the advantage of that, threw a large ſtone at him, which very narrowly miſſed his head, at which it was very well aimed; had it hit him, it would have knocked him down and deprived him of his ſenſes, which opportunity they would no doubt have availed themſelves of to diſpatch him; but as they did not ſucceed in their attempt, they ſtood their ground, and he fired a charge of ſmall ſhot at them, which I ſuppoſe they felt no inconvenience from, as they laughed at him, and advanced with their lances; he was pretty quick in loading his gun again, into which he put a heavy charge of buck ſhot, and as they appeared to him to be determined on miſchief, he reſolved, for his own ſafety, to be before-hand with them; he took very good aim, and fired right amongſt them; two of them fell, and the reſt, with great precipitation, made off, but he believed they carried their wounded (probably dead) friends with them; he ſtood where he was and loaded his gun, then came towards the ſhip without ſeeing any more of them. They are exceedingly terrified by fire-arms.

There was one circumſtance which diſpoſed me to believe that Mr. Hill had been murdered by the people of the country, which was, that one of the boats which went down the harbour to look for him put a-ſhore in one of the coves in the north part of it; the young gentleman who had charge of this duty went up the beach, with five of the boat's crew, while two remained to take care of the boat; they had only been landed a few minutes, and were near the ſkirt of the wood, when two ſpears were launched from a riſing ground, one of which ſtruck the hat of one of the ſeamen; and as no fire-arms had appeared, the natives ſhewed themſelves, to the number of between twenty and thirty; the midſhipman and the ſailors returned to the boat, and brought up a muſquet loaded with ball, which the natives obſerving, all diſappeared, except two, and the ball was fired at them; whether with or without effect we knew not, but they alſo diſappeared immediately. Theſe hoſtile appearances, I think, may have been the effect of their ſucceſs, in having lately murdered ſome of our people; for as we have had ſeveral ſuch accidents here, we have had an opportunity of remarking, that they have generally ſhewn immediately after them, a more than ordinary degree of hoſtility.

The want of one of the people of this country, who, from a habit of living amongſt us, might have been the means of preventing much of this hoſtile diſpoſition in them towards us, was much to be lamented. If poor Ara-ba-noo had lived, he would have acquired enough of our language

CHAP. VI. 1789. language to have underſtood whatever we wiſhed him to communicate to his countrymen; he could have made them perfectly underſtand, that we wiſhed to live with them on the moſt friendly footing, and that we wiſhed to promote, as much as might be in our power, their comfort and happineſs.

The two children mentioned formerly, and who were very happy amongſt us, were yet too young to be of uſe in reconciling the natives to us; they now underſtood almoſt every thing we ſaid, and could make themſelves very well underſtood; but the governor was deſirous of having a man or two in our poſſeſſion, to whom we might teach enough of our language without the danger of loſing any part of their own, to render them uſeful to their countrymen; it had therefore for ſome time paſt been in agitation to endeavour, by force, to ſecure one or two.

Nov. 25. For that purpoſe, on the 25th of November, Lieutenant Bradley, with ſome other officers, and a party of men, were ſent down the harbour in an armed boat: they went to the north part of the harbour, where, upon one of the ſandy beaches, they obſerved two native men walking; they immediately formed a ſcheme to entice them to a converſation; for that purpoſe, a few large fiſh were held up, and they were called to, which had the deſired effect; the men with much confidence came forward unarmed, and with much chearfulneſs received the fiſh, and held a converſation with thoſe who preſented them. At this time there were about five of our people upon the beach, and the boat lying afloat, with her ſtern cloſe to the ſhore, and the ſailors lying on their oars: Mr. Bradley, who was in the ſtern of the boat, ſeeing the opportunity good, gave the ſignal for ſecuring them; in a moment their heels were knocked up, and they were tumbled into the boat, followed by thoſe who ſecured them, and the boat pulled immediately off. They called out to their friends the moment they were taken hold of, but though a conſiderable number appeared in the ſkirt of the wood, on ſeeing arms in the hands of thoſe in the boat, who ſtood up ready to fire, they did not venture an attack. The men were laſhed to the thwarts of the boat, on their firſt being taken into her, but after having got to ſuch a diſtance from the ſhore, as to prevent the poſſibility of an eſcape, their hands were looſed, and they were ſecured by only one leg; but until they were thus far liberated, their terror was conſiderable. On their being landed at Sydney-Cove, they were immediately taken up to the governor's houſe, where they were very kindly treated; but to prevent any attempt to eſcape being at all probable, they had each an iron-ſhackle put on one of their legs, to which a piece of rope was ſpliced, and a man was ordered for each, who was to be anſwerable for their ſecurity; wherever they went thoſe keepers accompanied them, holding one end of the rope. When theſe two ſtrangers landed in Sydney-Cove, many people, prompted by curioſity, went to ſee them; among that number were the boy and girl, natives, whoſe names, I think, when ſpeaking of them, I have never yet mentioned; the girl was called *A-ba-roo*, and the boy *Nan-bar-ry*, or *Bal-der-ry*: the moment they ſaw the men, they with raptures of joy called them both by their names; the children were alſo known to them, and it was not improbable but that their very comfortable appearance, after having lived ſo long amongſt us, might, in ſome degree, calm that perturbation of mind, which we would naturally believe might attend them in ſuch a ſtate of captivity; for it ſhould be recollected, that not one of thoſe natives whom we have had amongſt us, had ever returned to inform their friends, what kind of treatment they had met with from us; it

CHAP. VI. 1789. was therefore not to be wondered at, if they ſuppoſed that ſuch as fell into our hands were put to death. The two old men who were picked up when very ill with the ſmall-pox, at the time *A-ba-roo* and *Nan-bar-ry* were found, (and whom we believed to be the fathers of the children) died very ſoon. Poor *Ara-ba-noo*, who was at liberty to go where he pleaſed ſome time before he died, was ſo well reconciled to us, that he never ſhewed the ſmalleſt inclination to go from us; he unfortunately did not ſurvive the ſmall-pox, and the girl and boy were now ſo accuſtomed to our manner of living, that it was not at all probable they would reliſh that of their own country. We ſoon diſcovered, upon the arrival of theſe two ſtrangers, whom the children called by name, that one was a chief, or diſtinguiſhed perſon, among thoſe of the tribe of *Ca-di-gal*; his name was *Co-al-by*; he was a man of about 35 years of age; the other was about 25 years old, and was called by ſeveral different names, ſuch as *Ba-na-lang*, *Vogle-troo-ye*, or *Vo-la-ra-very*; the firſt we thought his proper name, the others we underſtood from himſelf were names by which ſome of his particular connections were diſtinguiſhed, and which he had, upon their death, taken up: this man was a very good looking young fellow, of a pleaſant lively diſpoſition. The preſence of *Co-al-by* ſeemed to be a check upon the chearful temper of *Ba-na-lang*, which inclined us to think that he paid a kind of deference to him; he was always very ſilent in his company. Seventeen days after theſe people were taken, they appeared ſo well ſatisfied, that their keepers began to be leſs apprehenſive of their attempting to make their eſcape, which they did not fail to notice, and had no doubt laid a plan to avail themſelves of, for they were very far from being deſtitute of obſervation and cunning. One evening, when it was pretty dark, their keepers were ſitting within the door of their houſe, eating their ſupper; *Ba-na-lang* was within alſo, and employed in the

1789.

the ſame manner; *Co-al-by* was at the door, ſitting juſt on the outſide, and had with him ſomething for his ſupper, which he pretended to be employed about, the end of his rope was in the hand of his keeper; while they in the inſide were thus amuſed, *Co-al-by* drew the ſplice of his rope from the ſhackle, and in a moment was over the paling of the yard, and out of ſight; an immediate ſearch was made for him, but without effect, we ſaw him no more: however we heard afterwards that he joined his friends again, and will no doubt be careful how he confides hereafter in us: his friends would certainly be ſomething ſurprized to ſee him ſo well cloathed, for he carried off his whole wardrobe. I ſuppoſe it would coſt him ſome trouble to get the ſhackle from his leg, which was riveted on. The other man was much more chearful after *Co-al-by*'s abſence, which confirmed our conjecture, and the children's account, that he was a man more diſtinguiſhed in his tribe than *Ba-na-lang*.

January, 1790.

In the month of January, 1790, in every company, the converſation turned upon the long expected arrivals from England, which we had been for ſome paſt in daily expectation of, with a ſupply of proviſions; our ſtore here was now in a very exhauſted ſtate, much more ſo than we ever expected it would have been: for it was the general opinion, that I ſhould the laſt year, on my arrival at the Cape of Good Hope, have there met with ſtore-ſhips bound to this country, as it was always underſtood that the ſettlement would never have been reduced lower than one year's proviſions in ſtore.

We landed in this country with two years proviſions, at leaſt with what was ſuppoſed, when we ſailed from England, would be the caſe; that time was now elapſed, yet we had not been viſited by any ſhips

1790.

from Europe, and we ſtill had remaining proviſions, at half allowance, to laſt until June. We all looked forward with hope for arrivals with a relief; and that every aſſiſtance neceſſary for ſtrangers might be at hand, I offered, with a few men from the Sirius, to go down to the ſouth head of the harbour, there to build a lookout-houſe, and erect a flag-ſtaff upon the height, which might be ſeen from the ſea; and which might alſo communicate information of ſhips in the offing to the governor at Sydney-cove. The governor approved my propoſals. I went down with ſix men, and was accompanied by Mr. White and Mr. Worgan, the ſurgeons of the ſettlement and Sirius. We erected a flag-ſtaff, and lived in a tent for ten days, in which time we compleated a tolerably good houſe. At the end of ten days, I was relieved by Mr. Bradley with a freſh party.

CHAPTER VII.

The Sirius and Supply ſail for Norfolk Iſland.—Land the marines and convicts.—Wreck of the Sirius.—Some proviſions ſaved.—Martial Law eſtabliſhed.—Ratio of proviſions ſettled.—Vaſt numbers of birds caught.—In diſtreſs for proviſions.—Receive a ſupply from Port Jackſon.—Officers and crew of the Sirius leave Norfolk Iſland, and arrive at Port Jackſon.—Norfolk Iſland deſcribed.—Its ſituation and extent.—Soil.—Climate, &c.—Table of Winds, &c.

CHAP. VII.

1790. February.

IN February, we began to look a little ſerious on our diſappointment of arrivals: we had not now more than proviſions till June, at the allowance I have already mentioned. The governor now ſaw a neceſſity for dividing the ſettlement, and ſignified his intention that ſuch diviſion ſhould take place ſoon, by ſending a certain number of marines and convicts, under the command of Major Roſs, the lieutenant-governor, to Norfolk Iſland; at which place he underſtood there were many reſources, which Port Jackſon, or the country round it, did not afford; and the gardens and cultivated lands here alſo would then be more enjoyed by the remaining numbers: accordingly an arrangement took place, and on the 26th of February, I received an order to prepare the Sirius for ſea, and to embark the lieutenant-governor, with one company of marines, and the officers, baggage, and alſo 186 convicts; in all, 221 perſons; with ſuch a proportion of the remaining proviſions and other

February 26.

ſtores, as the ſettlement at that time could furniſh; and I was directed to land them upon Norfolk Iſland: Lieutenant Ball, commander of his Majeſty's armed tender Supply, was ordered under my command, and he alſo embarked a company of marines, and twenty convicts.

March 6. We ſailed from Port Jackſon on the 6th of March, and the wind being from the weſtward, we made Lord Howe's Iſland on the 9th, at four in the afternoon, bearing eaſt-north-eaſt, diſtant about 16 or 18 leagues. The ſouth end of this iſland is two very high mountains, nearly perpendicular from the ſea; thoſe hills are the only land you ſee until you come within ſix or ſeven leagues, when the lower land begins to appear, extending from the foot of the mountains, northward: it was calm moſt of the night, with now and then a light air, with which, and an eaſterly ſet of current, which is generally found here, we were enabled to get in with the land by noon of the 10th. I made the

9th,

10th,

Latitude of the ſouthermoſt hill (Mount Gower) - -	31° 35′ S.
Longitude, by time-keeper, -	159° 10′ 30″ E. of Greenwich.
Longitude, by diſtance of the ☉ and ☽, taken at 10, A. M.	159° 08′ 00″ E.

There is a very remarkable rock, which lies about 12 or 14 miles to the ſouthward of the iſland, and which is named Ball's-pyramid, and has much the appearance of a church ſteeple at a diſtance; but as you come near, it is exceedingly high and perpendicular: we paſſed in the evening between the iſland and the pyramid, and had 26 fathoms within two miles of Mount Gower, over a rocky bottom. This iſland I judge to be about three miles and a half long, north-north-weſt and ſouth-ſouth-eaſt; it is very narrow acroſs. There is anchorage on both ſides of it, but the bottom is foul. On the weſt ſide there is a bay, off which lies a reef parallel to the ſhore, with good ſwatches, or paſſages through for boats; this reef breaks off the ſea from the ſhore, which is a fine ſandy beach, ſo that there is no difficulty in landing. I have obſerved before, that turtle are ſometimes caught here, and that there are many birds upon the iſland.

March 13. On the 13th, at two o'clock in the morning, we made Norfolk Iſland, which I did not expect we ſhould have done quite ſo ſoon, but the eaſterly current, which is commonly found here, had been ſtrong: we brought to till day-light, and then, as the wind was freſh from the ſouth-weſt, I well knew there could be no landing in Sydney-bay, where the ſettlement is fixed, on account of the high ſurf, which ſoutherly winds occaſion, I therefore bore away, and ran round to the north-eaſt ſide of the iſland into a bay called Caſcade-bay; where, after a few days of moderate weather, and an off-ſhore wind, it is poſſible to land; but that only on one ſpot, which is a rock that projects ſome diſtance into the ſea, and has deep water to it: on that rock I landed, on the afternoon of the 13th, all the marines, and a conſiderable number of the convicts, but being ſet to the eaſtward in the night, I did not land the remainder until the 15th, when they were alſo put on ſhore on the ſame place: theſe people were no ſooner on ſhore than the wind ſhifted to the eaſtward, and the weather became hazy and blew ſtrong, ſo that I had no proſpect of being able to land any part of the proviſions. We had put on ſhore from the Sirius and Supply 270 people, and had no opportunity of ſending any ſtores with them, as we were now driven out of ſight of the iſland. I knew the exhauſted ſtate of the ſtores there; I was alſo acquainted with the many difficulties which Lieutenant Ball, commander of the Supply, had met with in the different voyages 15th.

March 19.

he had made from Port Jackſon to this iſland, with proviſions; and the length of time he had, in ſome of theſe voyages, been obliged to cruize, before he could have any acceſs to the ſhore; ſo continually does the ſurf break all round it: theſe conſiderations gave me much anxiety and uneaſineſs. On the 19th, a ſlant wind from the ſouth-eaſt brought me again in with the iſland: the Supply had the preceding night parted company, but as they were better acquainted here than we were, I judged they had ſtood for the land in the night before I did. As we ſtood in, finding we could fetch the windward part of the iſland, I ſteered in for Sydney-bay; and as we drew near, I obſerved the Supply lying to in the bay, and the ſignal upon the ſhore was flying, that long-boats, or any other boats might land, without any danger from the ſurf. Anxious to avail myſelf of this favourable ſignal, I ſteered in as far as I judged ſafe, and brought to with the ſhip's head off ſhore, in the ſouth-eaſt or windward part of the bay, hoiſted out the boats, loaded them with proviſions, and ſent them in; but obſerving that the ſhip ſettled faſt to leeward, we made ſail, and immediately hauled on board the fore and main tacks, the Supply had alſo made ſail, and was to leeward of the Sirius. There is a reef of ſunken rocks, which lies off the weſt point of the bay, and which (as the wind freſhened and the ſea roſe) broke a conſiderable way out; the Supply having drawn a-head, could not weather this reef: on this ſhe tacked; and, as we drew near, I plainly perceived that we ſettled ſo faſt to leeward that we ſhould not be able to weather it: ſo, after ſtanding as near as was ſafe, we put the ſhip in ſtays; ſhe came up almoſt head to wind, but the wind juſt at that critical moment baffled her, and ſhe fell off again: nothing could now be done, but to wear her round in as little room as poſſible, which was done, and the wind hauled upon the other tack, with every ſail ſet as before; but, ſtill perceiving that the ſhip ſettled into the bay, and

CHAP. VII.

1790.

that ſhe ſhoaled the water, ſome hands were placed by one of the bower anchors, in five fathoms water; the helm was again put down, and ſhe had now ſome additional after-ſail, which I had no doubt would enſure her coming about; ſhe came up almoſt head to wind, and there hung ſome time; but by her ſails being all a-back, had freſh ſtern way: the anchor was therefore cut away, and all the haulyards, ſheets, and tacks let go, but before the cable could be brought to check her, ſhe ſtruck upon a reef of coral rocks which lies parallel to the ſhore, and in a few ſtrokes was bulged; when the carpenter reported to me, that the water flowed faſt into the hold; I ordered the maſts to be cut away, which was immediately done. There was ſome chance, when the ſhip was lightened of this weight, that by the ſurges of the ſea, which were very heavy, ſhe might be thrown ſo far in up the reef, as to afford ſome proſpect of ſaving the lives of thoſe on board, if ſhe ſhould prove ſtrong enough to bear the ſhocks ſhe received from every ſea. It was now about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, and after the maſts were gone, all hands were employed in getting out of the hold ſuch proviſions as could be come at, and ſecuring them upon the gun-deck, that they might be at hand in caſe any opportunity offered of floating them on ſhore. In the evening the wind freſhened ſtill more, and the ſurf was conſiderably increaſed; in conſequence of which, it was ſtrongly recommended by the gentlemen on ſhore, who knew the place much better than we could, that every perſon ſhould quit the ſhip: for this purpoſe the end of a ſmall rope was floated through the ſurf, and over the reef, to the ſhore, by an empty caſk; and by that rope a ſeven inch hawſer was hauled on ſhore, with a wooden heart upon it for a traveller, and the end was made faſt to a tree: by this traveller I correſponded with thoſe on ſhore, and received their opinions. To the traveller three or four ſailors at a time were made faſt, and were hauled by the people on ſhore

through

1790.

through the ſurf, and over a ragged reef to the land; another part this evening, and the remainder the next day. The whole crew were intended to have been landed that night, but when it became dark the hauling rope of the traveller got often foul of the rocks, which might have occaſioned the drowning of thoſe who were at ſuch a time on the traveller: for the long ſcope of hawſer (nearly the length of two hawſers) by the weight of three or four people, was more than two-thirds of the way in the ſurf, and the men on it under water. The ſecond day after the landing of the crew, the weather being more moderate, and the ſurf leſs dangerous, a few of the ſeamen, who could depend, in caſe of accident, upon their good ſwimming, were got on board by the hawſer, and the utmoſt exertion uſed to get ſome part of the proviſions ſent on ſhore; but it was the fifth day before any could be landed. We were now upon this little iſland 506 ſouls, upon half allowance of proviſions; and that could, with our preſent numbers, laſt but a very ſhort time; as the ſupply intended for the iſland was yet on board the Sirius; and conſequently its ſafety very uncertain. Providence was kind to us. We had for ſeveral days the weather fine, and the ſurf uncommonly ſmooth, for this place: for although there was a continual ſurf breaking upon the ſhip, and all the way between her and the ſhore, yet it was conſidered here as uncommonly ſmooth: each of thoſe fine days we got on ſhore from twenty to thirty caſks of proviſions, with various other articles of both public and private property; ſuch articles as would ſwim were entruſted to the chance of being thrown on ſhore by the ſurf: all that I or any other officer ſaved, was found waſhing upon the beach; but as the ſhore was lined with the marines, to prevent the convicts from committing depredations, it was much, but not wholly prevented. Every thing which came on ſhore was placed under the care of centinels, until claimed by the proprietor, before certain officers. But that ſucceſs which attended thoſe things that were committed to the ſea, proved at laſt a misfortune; for it occaſioned their truſting every thing promiſcuouſly of private property to the ſurf; by which many valuable articles of mine and ſome of the officers were loſt, being too heavy to float, a circumſtance that thoſe who threw them overboard had not conſidered. The proviſions being the firſt object, nothing beſides was allowed to be ſent by the traveller; and notwithſtanding it was all dragged through the ſea, the damaged part was but trifling. Some caſks were waſhed out of the ſlings, daſhed to pieces upon the rocks, and of courſe loſt; but, taking the whole together, we ſaved more proviſions than we could have reaſonably expected.

By the time we had landed the principal part of the proviſions, the weather began to be rather unfavourable to our wiſhes and endeavours; the wind ſet in from the ſouthward, the ſea roſe and occaſioned a very high ſurf, which rendered it unſafe for any perſon to remain on board; the ſmall bower cable, which had hitherto kept the ſhip's head to the ſea, being cut by the rocks, and the ſhip being conſiderably lightened by what had been taken out of her, ſhe was lifted ſo high by every ſea, as to occaſion her ſtriking very heavily; and by thoſe repeated ſhocks ſhe was thrown for a ſhort time broad-ſide to the ſea: had ſhe kept in that poſition, ſhe would ſoon have gone to pieces; but from her being very light forward, the iron ballaſt having dropt out of her bottom, ſhe was lifted fairly round, and was thrown more than her own length nearer to the ſhore, and was, by this change in her poſition, almoſt out of the reach of the break of the ſea; that is, the ſurf, which before generally broke upon her, now broke outſide, and its force was conſiderably ſpent, before it reached her; ſo that when the weather was moderate and the ſurf low, we got with more eaſe on board, and could remain there with leſs danger.

CHAP. VII.

1790.

danger. One of the bow ports was enlarged for the purpoſe of getting caſks and other parcels out; the hauſer and traveller were alſo fitted and hove taught from the bow, and various ſtores were ſent on ſhore with more eaſe and certainty than before; but the knees of the beams, being many of them broke, and the ends of the beams being diſlodged from the clamps, the orlop deck blown up, and the lower deck beams looſe, and many of them broken, it was dangerous to attempt going into the hold; for by every ſtroke of the ſea, the decks were all in motion: however, every thing that could be got at by the ſailors on board was ſent on ſhore.

A few days after the unfortunate loſs of the Sirius, the ſhip's company being all on ſhore, with very little proviſions on the iſland for ſo great a number of people, and the ſupply from the wreck being yet in a very precarious ſituation, the lieutenant-governor aſſembled all the officers in the ſettlement together; and in order that the deſcription of people now among us in ſo conſiderable a number, (I mean the convicts, who I believe to have been ſome of the worſt characters ever ſent from Great-Britain) ſhould fear the commiſſion of any crime here, more than they had ever done under the laws hitherto eſtabliſhed in this ſettlement, it was unanimouſly judged neceſſary for the general ſafety and good of the whole, that martial law be now eſtabliſhed in this iſland until ſuch time as we might be relieved from the diſtreſſing proſpect that was now before us, by a ſupply of proviſions, or until the governor in chief of his Majeſty's territory in this part of the world might think fit, either to approve or diſapprove of it. The neceſſity of ſuch a meaſure in the ſituation we were now reduced to, I apprehend, will be apparent to every conſiderate perſon. By the proclamation of the law martial, which was generally conſented to, not by an oath, as I believe is commonly the caſe, where it is found neceſſary: but, the ſervice we had to perform not admitting of the delay that ſuch ceremony would have occaſioned, the general approbation was taken by every individual paſſing under the king's colours, which were diſplayed for that purpoſe; *that ceremony* every perſon was previouſly informed would be conſidered as an aſſent, and which was done with a degree of ſolemnity, and at the ſame time an apparent chearfulneſs through the whole.

By this proclamation of the law martial, much miſchief I am of opinion was prevented: hitherto, every convict, or any other perſon on this iſland, who had committed any crime which merited a trial by the criminal court, were to be ſent the firſt opportunity to Port Jackſon, with all the neceſſary evidence, and there to be tried. This, in our ſituation, would have been attended with innumerable inconveniences and many bad conſequences, which, as I have already ſaid, I confidently believe were prevented by this proclamation; which may be ſaid to have been held out in terrorem only: for, during the whole time of its exiſtence, we had but once occaſion to put it in force; the fear of an immediate trial, and, if found guilty, immediate execution, kept every body tolerably honeſt and attentive to the neceſſary duties, which it became the whole of us now to look forward to.

March 24. As the Supply tender ſailed from this iſland on the 24th of March, which was the fifth day after the loſs of the Sirius, and we had not at that time been able to get any part of the proviſions from the wreck; ſhe could not carry to the governor any certain account, whether we ſhould or ſhould not be able to get any thing on ſhore, to help out the very ſcanty proportion of proviſions which now remained in the ſtore;

we

CHAP. VII. 1790. we therefore entertained a glimmering of hope that ſhe might, in the courſe of five or ſix weeks, return to us with the very comfortable news of arrivals from England. However, after the expiration of that time, during which we looked anxiouſly to the ſea, our ſituation began to wear a very alarming aſpect. We now had no doubt, but that in conſequence of a diſappointment in the expected arrivals, the governor had found it neceſſary to diſpatch Lieutenant Ball to ſome European ſettlement, and that he could not relieve us with proviſions from Port Jackſon. May 14. In conſequence of this deplorable ſituation, on the 14th of May, the officers compoſing the council met the lieutenant-governor agreeable to appointment, and publiſhed the following orders:—" At a " meeting of the governor and council held to conſider of the very ex" hauſted ſtate of the proviſions in this ſettlement, and to conſult upon " what means are moſt proper to be purſued, in order to preſerve life " until ſuch time as we may be relieved by ſome arrivals from England, " of which we have been ſo long in expectation, but probably diſap" pointed by ſome unfortunate accident having happened to the ſhips " intended for this country. The ſtate of the proviſions having been " laid before the council, and the alarming ſituation of the ſettlement " having been taken into the moſt ſerious conſideration, the following " ratio of proviſions was unanimouſly reſolved and ordered to take place " on Saturday the 15th inſtant, viz. 15th.

" Flour—three pounds per week, for every grown perſon.

" Beef—one pound and an half per ditto; or, in lieu of the beef, " 17 ounces of pork.

" Rice—one pound per ditto.

" Children above twelve months old, half the above ratio. Children

" under

1790.

" under twelve months old, one pound and an half of flour and a " pound of rice per week. In future, all crimes which may by any " three members of the council be conſidered as not of a capital nature, " will be puniſhed at their diſcretion, by a farther reduction of the pre- " ſent allowance of proviſions."

May 15.

Every day, and during every breeze from the weſtward, we now looked out upon the ſea; but on this unfrequented ocean we could expect nothing to appear but what might be intended for us. Day after day we talked to each other reſpecting our ſituation, as no other ſubject ſeemed to occupy the mind of any one among us. We were here ſituated upon an iſland of only five miles long, and three in breadth, three hundred leagues from the neareſt part of the Coaſt of New South Wales, deprived of every hope of finding any relief by a change of ſituation, and we had the additional mortification of anticipating, in a ſhort time, a farther reduction of our allowance of proviſions. At this particular ſeaſon we had one advantage, which, when that leaves us, will reduce us to very great diſtreſs; I think, then, that many of the convicts (who are indolent to aſtoniſhment, and who can, and frequently do, eat at one meal what they are allowed for a week) muſt, when the reſource I am going to mention fails, periſh for want, or ſuffer death for the depredations they are ſo much inclined, even in times of plenty, to commit upon others.

In the month of April we found that Mount Pitt, which is the higheſt ground on the iſland, was, during the night, crowded with birds. This hill is as full of holes as any rabbit warren; in theſe holes at this ſeaſon theſe birds burrow and make their neſts, and as they are an aquatic bird, they are, during the day-time, frequently at ſea in

ſearch

1790. May.

ſearch of ſood; as ſoon as it is dark, they hover in vaſt flocks over the ground where their neſts are. Our people, (I mean ſeamen, marines, and convicts) who are ſent out in parties to provide birds for the general benefit, arrive upon the ground ſoon after duſk, where they light ſmall fires, which attract the attention of the birds, and they drop down out of the air as faſt as the people can take them up and kill them: when they are upon the ground, the length of their wings prevents their being able to riſe, and until they can aſcend an eminence, they are unable to recover the uſe of their wings; for this purpoſe, nature has provided them with a ſtrong, ſharp, and hooked bill, and in their heel a ſharp ſpur, with the aſſiſtance of which, and the ſtrength of their bill, they have been ſeen to climb the ſtalk of a tree ſufficiently high to throw themſelves upon the wing. This bird, when deprived of its feathers, is about the ſize of a pigeon, but when cloathed, is conſiderably larger, for their feathers are exceedingly thick; they are webb-footed, and of a ruſty black colour; they make their holes upon the hills for breeding their young in; they lay but one egg, and that is full as large as a duck's egg. They were, at the end of May, as plentiful as if none had been caught, although for two months before there had not been leſs taken than from two to three thouſand birds every night; moſt of the females taken in May were with egg, which really fills the whole cavity of the body, and is ſo heavy that I think it muſt fatigue the bird much in flying. This *bird of Providence*, which I may with great propriety call it, appeared to me to reſemble that ſea bird in England, called the puffin: they had a ſtrong fiſhy taſte, but our keen appetites reliſhed them very well; the eggs were excellent *.

---

* For a further deſcription, and an engraving of this bird, ſee the Norfolk-Iſland Petrel, in Phillip's Voyage, 4to Edition.

We

1790.
May.

We were highly indebted to Providence for this vaſt reſource; but as theſe ſingular advantages could only be for a ſeaſon, we reflected, with pain, that they muſt have an end, and that in all probability this would be the caſe before we got a relief. Fiſh was generally mentioned by Governor Phillip, when ſpeaking of this iſland, as an inexhauſtible reſource; he alſo mentioned the vaſt quantity of birds (tropic birds and gannets) which were to be caught here upon the two ſmall iſlands (Mount Pitt was not then known to be the reſource we have found it). If the governor had ever been here himſelf, or ſpent a winter upon Norfolk Iſland, as I have done, he certainly would not have laid any ſtreſs upon reſources ſo very precarious as we had found them; and conſequently not to be depended upon as a certain advantage. I have ſeen the weather ſo ſtormy, and the ſurf ſo high for near a month together, that a boat could not be launched more than twice during that period, and then only for a few hours; and even when they had got out, they would ſometimes bring in a hundred fiſh of from two to four pounds weight, and at other times only five or ſix fiſh: ſo that this ſupply was very uncertain and very trifling, when it was conſidered that we were above 500 people.

The procurement of the birds upon the ſmall iſlands was attended with the ſame diſadvantages, by the difficulty of landing, from the conſtant ſurf.

In the end of May the wreck of the ſhip ſtill held together, but the beams and knees were all either broken or looſe; ſhe was ſo much out of the reach of the ſurf when it was very heavy, that it broke with conſiderable leſs force upon her than formerly. Every time that the weather would admit, a few ſailors were ſent on board to ſave whatever articles could be got at, and to ſend them on ſhore.

CHAP. VII.

1790. June 4.

Our diſtreſs did not occaſion us to forget that the 4th of June was the birth-day of our much beloved ſovereign. On the morning of this day the colours were diſplayed, and at noon three vollies of muſquetry were fired by the marines; as an acknowledgment that we were Britons, who, however diſtant and diſtreſſed, revered our king, and loved our country.

July 6.

The ſeamen, having but little to do on the wreck, were now employed in clearing ground for a garden, that they might have a few vegetables to lengthen out their pittance of proviſions. About the middle of this month I ſent ſome ſailors on board to ſee if any alteration had taken place in the wreck, that might render it poſſible to get at the beſt bower and ſheet cables, or any caſk from the hold; but it was found impracticable, from the orlop and lower decks lying down on the contents of the hold. On the 6th of July, a convict man who had been out in ſearch of birds, reported, that he had been robbed of his ſhirt by three other convicts, who, being too lazy to work, had left the buſineſs they had been employed at, and had taken ſhelter in the woods: and as it became neceſſary to check an evil of ſo dangerous a nature as early as poſſible, leſt from any inattention to it many of the very worthleſs characters, which were now upon the iſland, might be encouraged to aſſemble in conſiderable numbers, to the very great annoyance of the more induſtrious part of the ſettlement, the lieutenant-governor directed two ſmall parties of marines, and expreſſed a wiſh that I would alſo order two parties of the ſeamen, who might probably be leſs ſuſpected of any deſign, to apprehend them. Each man ſent upon this duty was provided with a ſhip's piſtol, and a few charges of powder and ball: in the evening of the ſame day on which the parties went out, the culprits were brought in, pinioned by two of the ſeamen who had been ſent after them. A few days after, a court-martial was aſſembled

1790.

ſor the trial of the above convicts, and they were ſentenced to receive 300 laſhes each.

The Sirius's men were now wholly employed, when the weather would admit, in fiſhing for the ſettlers; and when the ſurf was too high, in making fiſhing-lines and hooks. A party of marines, and all the convicts, were employed in clearing ground for corn and potatoes. On the 24th of July, there being at that time no more than ten or twelve days ſalt proviſions left, at the ſhort allowance before-mentioned, and as birds, though growing ſcarce, were yet ſtill to be had, it was judged neceſſary by the lieutenant-governor and council to ſtop the ſalt proviſions entirely during the time which birds were to be caught; ſo that the ratio now was three pounds of flour, and one pint of rice per week, or in lieu of the flour, the ſame quantity of Indian corn meal, or wheat ground, with the huſks and bran in the meal. July 24.

The people in general were now reduced ſo low in bodily ſtrength for want of a ſufficiency of food, that much work could not be expected; however, it was abſolutely neceſſary that ſomething ſhould be done to get ſeed into the ground. A conſiderable portion of the cleared land was planted with potatoes, as the firſt thing from which we could expect any relief.

On the 4th of Auguſt, one of the ſeamen who had been walking towards the ſouth-eaſt part of the iſland, caſting his eyes towards the ſea, *ſaw a ſail*; without waiting a moment to examine her particularly, he ran back with as much ſpeed as poſſible, calling out as he ran, A ſhip! a ſhip! This news was all over the ſettlement in a few minutes, and men, women, and children were haſtening in different directions August 4.

to

CHAP. VII. 1790.

to welcome the expected relief. I took a ſpy glaſs in my hand, and went to the place from whence the ſhip had been ſeen, and there, to my very great happineſs, I obſerved a ſhip with an Engliſh enſign flying, not more than ſix or ſeven miles off ſhore; the wind at this time blowing ſtrong from ſouth-weſt, it was not poſſible for her to appear off Sydney-Bay, ſhe therefore wore, and ſeemed to intend going under the lee of the iſland, in order to land a boat there. Captain Johnſtone, of the marines, and myſelf, agreed to walk acroſs the iſland and receive them. We ſet off, and when we arrived at the ſea-ſide, it is impoſſible for me to deſcribe our feelings, when we obſerved the ſhip before the wind, and making ſail from the iſland. We did all we could to ſhew ourſelves, but they did not think proper to ſpeak to us. The effect this diſappointment had upon every individual on the iſland will be eaſier to conceive than to expreſs by words. Every one agreed in opinion, that it would have been much better if no ſhip had been ſeen. There ſurely was an appearance of a great want of the common feelings of humanity in the commander of this ſhip: for although we afterwards knew that he had no relief for us, he had it in his power to have given us ſome comfort, ſome hope of relief being at no great diſtance; that would, in a conſiderable degree, have relieved the anxiety of mind under which we had laboured for five months paſt, and he would not have loſt two hours in doing it.

As Captain Johnſtone and I were on our way home, lamenting our diſappointment, it ſtruck me that this ſhip muſt be from Port Jackſon, and that the commander was bound to China; had nothing on board for the iſland, and therefore did not chooſe to loſe any time; but if this conjecture ſhould be juſt, he muſt have known from our friends what the probable ſtate of this iſland was, and therefore might readily

1790.

ſuppoſe that five minutes converſation would have been a vaſt relief to our anxiety. After having determined to believe that he was from Port Jackſon, and that we ſhould ſoon have ſomething from thence, we kept a very good look-out, and, to our great happineſs, on the 7th, a ſhip was diſcovered in the offing, and towards the evening, another appeared in ſight; the ſurf being low, a boat was ſent immediately off to go on board the neareſt: they proved to be the Juſtinian and the Surprize, from Port Jackſon, with proviſions for the relief of this iſland, and with an addition to the number of convicts, of about 200. The maſters informed us, that five ſhips had arrived in New South Wales with 980 convicts, and proviſions for the ſettlement, and that they had been arrived about two months; a delay of great length, when it is conſidered that our ſituation, when the governor laſt heard from us, was rather an alarming one: nothing had then been ſaved out of the wreck of the Sirius, ſo that there was no certainty that we had been able to exiſt. Such were the reflections which I made during a moment of anxiety, and which, in a period of quiet, I do not wiſh to repeat. August 7.

We received information, by theſe ſhips, of the unfortunate accident which befel his Majeſty's ſhip Guardian, in her paſſage to this country, with proviſions and ſtores; and alſo that the Gorgon was fitting, to bring farther ſupplies, with another lieutenant-governor, who commanded a corps that had been raiſed for this particular ſervice, the marines being ordered for England.

The Juſtinian and Surprize, by the good fortune of an uncommon time of fine weather, were cleared in little more than three weeks, and proceeded upon their voyage to China on the 30th. If theſe ſhips had been here two months before they did arrive, the weather was ſuch 30th,

that

CHAP. VII. 1790. that they could not have been cleared two days before the time that they were. We were now looking eagerly for the arrival of the Gorgon, which ſhip, the governor informed me by letter, was to take the Sirius's crew and marines off this ſpot, which has coſt me ſo much diſtreſs.

As ſoon as the above ſhips arrived, and we had communication with them; for their ſafety, as well as for the more expeditiouſly landing the proviſions, I ſent Lieutenant Bradley on board the one, he being now perfectly acquainted with the ſet of the tides, their uncertainty, and all the other dangers around the iſland; I alſo ſent Mr. Donovan, a midſhipman, on board the other, he having been near two years upon duty on this iſland, and was well acquainted with the above particulars: this aſſiſtance enabled them at all proper times to make more free with the ſhore. Mr. Keltie, the maſter of the Sirius, and Mr. Brooks, the boatſwain, attended with me the whole day at the landing-place; the boats employed on this buſineſs were manned by the Sirius's crew; ſo that every poſſible attention to prevent danger or accident was uſed: August 17. but, notwithſtanding which, on the 17th of Auguſt, in what was conſidered as good landing, one of the boats, in coming into the paſſage, was overtaken by a ſucceſſion of heavy ſurfs, which threw her on one of the reefs, where ſhe parted in leſs than two minutes, and ſeven people were drowned. I was with ſeveral other officers within twenty yards of them, and with at leaſt thirty people beſide, and could render them very little aſſiſtance. Of the perſons who were drowned, there were two of the boat's crew, who belonged to the Sirius; three women convicts, who were coming from the ſhip in this boat, a child, and one convict man, who went off with many others to try to ſave the women. There were two women brought on ſhore, by the exertions of the people on the reef, who were, when landed, apparently dead, but recovered by the ſurgeons; one was mother of the child which was loſt; one convict man, who was exerting himſelf to ſave others, was himſelf brought on ſhore apparently drowned, but was alſo brought to again. The people who were loſt, were carried out by the outſet from the ſhore, which at a certain time of tide is ſo ſtrong that a boat can ſcarcely pull a-head againſt it, even when calm. This ſerves to convince me of the unfounded illiberality of an obſervation which I have ſeen in a certain publication, lately come out from England, wherein it is mentioned, when ſpeaking of this iſland, that there was a boat's crew drowned at a certain time, but that it was occaſioned by the imprudence of the midſhipman, who did not attend to the orders which were given him: yet certain it is every officer here, at this time, was fully ſatisfied it had not been in his power to obey, owing to the out-ſet above-mentioned: and therefore it is equally certain, the reflection upon that gentleman's conduct was highly unjuſt. If there had been any act of imprudence committed at that time, it was not by the midſhipman, whoſe duty it was to obey orders, but by ſending in that narrow and intricate paſſage, one boat to meet another, where they muſt be in each other's way, and ſubject, by that means, (if a ſurf ſhould riſe at the moment) to very great danger. I found it neceſſary, in unloading the ſhips which arrived at this time, (in conſequence of ſeeing the boats going out and meeting thoſe coming in conſiderably endangered by the entangling their oars, ſo narrow is the paſſage in its moſt dangerous part,) to give orders that no boat ſhould put off from the ſhore, when a loaded boat was near in, nor indeed until ſuch loaded boat was ſafely landed.

The arrival of ſupplies for our relief at this very critical juncture, was truly comfortable, and a ſtrong inſtance of the kindneſs of Divine Providence to us: for our great and indeed only reſource began to fail us

1790. very faſt,—the Mount Pitt birds, on which it may juſtly be ſaid we had for a very conſiderable time principally lived, were now very ſcarce; many people who went out to catch them, were frequently, after remaining a whole night on the ground, where they were, during the plentiful ſeaſon, ſo very numerous, contented to bring in ſix or eight birds, and were ſometimes unable to find one. The fiſh alſo failed us entirely; for the ſhips, during the time they were cruizing about the iſland and landing the proviſions, did not catch one fiſh: it will therefore appear, that had not theſe ſupplies arrived ſo timefully, or had they been detained ſix weeks longer, through any accident, or other cauſe, what a deplorable ſituation we ſhould have been reduced to: thank God, ſuch conſequences as muſt have attended it, were prevented by this providential relief, and the dejected gloom, and pale ſickly look, which was to be ſeen in every countenance, now gave way to a chearful and happy appearance of ſatisfaction.

January, 1791. In the month of January, 1791, finding it impoſſible to get any of the remaining ſtores out, which were under the lower and orlop decks of the wreck, I determined to attempt getting the guns out, which, until then, I did not incline to try; the gun deck being in ſo infirm a ſtate, I was ſuſpicious, that by moving the guns, which had hitherto (being houſed) hung chiefly by the bolts in the ſide, it might cauſe the deck to fall in, as the beams, from the opening of the ſhip's ſides, did but barely keep hold of the clamp, the bolts of the knees being all broken: had this deck fallen in upon the others, it would have prevented every endeavour to ſave ſuch ſtores as were under it, and which, from time to time, by the alterations which every heavy ſurf made on the wreck, we were ſometimes enabled to get at: however, after every thing, which there was any poſſibility of getting at, was ſaved, we began with the guns, and in a few days got every gun and carriage on ſhore, by means of a traveller upon a nine inch hawſer; there were only of our ordnance two carronades loſt, which were carried away by the fall of the maſts.

We had juſt compleated this buſineſs of the guns, when a ſail was diſcovered in the offing, which we all believed to be the Gorgon, that we had ſo long expected; but upon her nearer approach, we diſcovered it to be the Supply armed tender. She had been, upon her return from Norfolk Iſland with the account of our misfortune, immediately diſpatched to Batavia; where Lieutenant Ball was directed to endeavour to hire a veſſel, and to load her with ſuch articles of proviſions as he could procure, for the relief of the ſettlement: this ſervice Mr. Ball ſucceeded in; having procured a Dutch ſnow, of about 300 tons, and put on board ſuch proviſions as he could procure; conſiſting of beef, pork, flour, rice, and various hoſpital ſtores. The ſeaſon, at Batavia, while the Supply was there, was very ſickly; he loſt many of his men by fevers, and among the number was Mr. Newton Fowell, the ſecond lieutenant of the Sirius, who had been put on board to aſſiſt in bringing the veſſel, which might be hired, to Port Jackſon. I was exceedingly concerned for the loſs of this young gentleman, who was a good, well diſpoſed, and promiſing young man. Mr. Roſs, the gunner of the Sirius, who had been left at Port Jackſon on duty, when ſhe ſailed for Norfolk Iſland, died alſo at Batavia: he had been put on board the Supply, in order to be landed at Norfolk Iſland, if ſhe ſhould be able to reach that place in her way to Batavia. After the return of the Supply to Port Jackſon, ſhe was found to require ſome repairs, which having been compleated, ſhe was ordered upon the ſervice wherein we now found her, viz. bringing a few ſtores for Norfolk Iſland,

CHAP. VII.

1791. with orders to embark the remaining officers and crew of the Sirius, and to return with them to Port Jackſon. This information I received with joy, as our ſituation was now become exceedingly irkſome: we had been upon this ſmall iſland eleven months, and during great part of that time, through various cauſes, had been oppreſſed by feelings more diſtreſſing than I can find words to expreſs. On the 11th of February, I embarked, with the officers and ſhip's company, on board the Supply, having taken my leave of a place which had coſt me ſo much diſtreſs and vexation. We had fine weather during our paſſage to Port Jackſon, where we arrived on the 27th, and were kindly and hoſpitably received by all our friends there. I now underſtood from the governor, that he had entered into a contract with the maſter of the Dutch ſnow, for carrying the officers and ſhip's company of the Sirius to England; a piece of information which I did not by any means feel a pleaſure in hearing: for, anxious as I was to reach England as ſoon as poſſible, I ſhould with much patience rather have waited the arrival of an Engliſh ſhip, than to have embarked under the direction, or at the diſpoſal, of a foreigner: however, preparations were then making for ſending us off as faſt as poſſible.

February 11.

27th.

As I have ſpent ſo much time upon an iſland, which has of late been much ſpoken of, and of which many flattering accounts ſeem to have been given, it will be expected that I ſhould ſay ſomething concerning it.

NORFOLK ISLAND.

Mount Pitt, or the higheſt land, lies in {
Latitude 29° 02′ ſouth.
Longitude 168° 05′ eaſt of the meridian of Greenwich.

Ships, on making Norfolk Iſland *, may ſtand boldly in, there not being any thing farther out than half a mile from the ſhore to take them up. If the wind is weſt to ſouth or ſouth-eaſt, there is generally too much ſurf in Sydney-Bay for boats to land, which circumſtance is ſignified from the ſhore by not hoiſting any flag at the lower flag-ſtaff; in which caſe you will generally find good landing in Caſcade-Bay, where I think there would not be any difficulty in landing proviſions from a ſhip. If ſhe ſhould put in here, ſhe might always be getting her cargo out either there or at Sydney-Bay, as the winds that prevent landing in Caſcade-Bay generally make ſmooth water in Sydney-Bay. People may at times be landed in Ball-Bay, Duncombe-Bay, and Anſon's-Bay, but neither ſtores nor proviſions can be landed, on account of the perpendicular hills that ſurround them. The ground of the north ſide of the iſland is clearer of rocks than in Sydney-Bay.

Great attention ſhould be paid to the tides, and on the ſouth ſide of the iſland particularly; with ſoutherly and ſouth-eaſt winds I have known the tide ſhift ſix points, at different times, in the ſpace of half an hour; and if you cannot lie up ſouth-ſouth-weſt, ſtanding off upon the larboard tack, the ebb tide will heave you in upon the ſhore. There is a mud bank to the north-eaſt by north of Nepean's iſland, where a ſhip might ſafely anchor in weſterly winds, and prevent being driven off Norfolk Iſland.

---

* The remarks and directions for Norfolk Iſland and Sydney-Bay were made by Captain Bradley.

CHAP. VII.

SYDNEY BAY*,

1791.

Lies in latitude 29° 05′ ſouth; longitude 168° 02′ eaſt; and variation 11° 00′ eaſt. The tide flows full, and changes at three quarters paſt ſeven, and riſes from five to ſeven feet: the flood runs to the ſouth-weſt by ſouth; and the ebb to the north-eaſt by north.

In general the tides are equal each way, the ebbs and the flows regular along the ſhore ſix each tide: the eaſtern tide is ſtronger than the weſtern tide; ſometimes the eaſtern tide runs ſeveral hours beyond its uſual courſe, and ſometimes the weſtern tide thus irregularly, which irregularities, although they ſeldom happen, make it neceſſary to bring to, and try the tide before you come within the outer part of the Nepean Iſland; and be aware of an indraught, which ſometimes ſets into the bight on the weſt ſide of the bay, on both tides, while you are baffled by the ſouth-eaſt and ſoutherly winds, as you come in with Sydney-Bay. All within Nepean Iſland is foul ground, and very irregular ſoundings, and no ſafe paſſage between it and Point Hunter; but if a ſhip ſhould be preſſed by neceſſity, I would recommend keeping within half a cable's length of Nepean Iſland, after having paſſed the bed of rocks to the weſtward of the little bay.

Norfolk Iſland lies north-weſt by north and ſouth-eaſt by ſouth, and is in this direction about five miles long, and nearly three in breadth; it is very thickly covered with wood, of which there are ſix or ſeven different kinds, and ſome I believe might be applied to naval purpoſes. The Pines, which has been particularly ſpoken of by Captain Cook, and by others, who have lately viſited this iſland, is the moſt conſpicuous of any tree here; they grow to a prodigious ſize, and are proportionably tall, being from 150 to 200 feet, and in circumference from 12 to 14 feet, ſome to 28 and 30 feet. Theſe trees, from their immenſe height, have a very noble appearance, being in general very ſtraight, and free from branches, to 40, ſometimes 60 feet, above the ground; they have been by ſome thought fit for maſts, for ſhips of any ſize; in length and diameter they certainly are, but with reſpect to quality they are, in my opinion, wholly unfit; even admitting them to be ſound, which, from experience, I know is ſeldom the caſe. I employed the carpenters of the Sirius, while here, to cut down a few ſticks, which it was intended ſhould be ſent home by the firſt opportunity, in order for trial in his Majeſty's dock-yards, to ſee if they were, as had been ſaid, fit for his Majeſty's navy, or not. In providing a top-maſt and a top-ſail-yard for a ſeventy-four gun ſhip, a thirty-two, a twenty, or a ſloop, and one rough ſpar, in all ſeven ſticks, 34 trees were cut down, 27 of which were found defective. When theſe trees were falling, it was obſerved that moſt of them diſcharged a conſiderable quantity of clear water, which continued to flow at every freſh cut of the axe; there is no turpentine in theſe trees but what circulates between the bark and body of the tree, and which is ſoluble in water. It is a very ſhort grained and ſpongy kind of timber, and I think fit only for houſe-building, for which we know it to be very uſeful. When freſh cut down, five out of ſix will ſink in water, the wood is ſo exceedingly heavy: and, if we ſuppoſe for a moment, that great part of the pine timber were fit for naval purpoſes, the great difficulty, and indeed I may ſay impoſſibility, of getting it from the interior parts of the iſland to the ſea, would render it of little value, if deſigned for maſts; but if for plank, it could be cut up where fallen.

---

* For Sydney-Bay, Norfolk Iſland, upon a large ſcale, ſee Phillip's Voyage.

CHAP. VII. 1791.

Thoſe which grow on the ſouth-eaſt point of the iſland, where the land is low, are thoſe which have hitherto been made uſe of. Norfolk Iſland, if correctly laid down in a plan, with all the hills and vallies repreſented accurately, would very much reſemble the waves of the ſea in a gale of wind; for it is compoſed wholly of long, narrow, and very ſteep ridges of hills, with deep gullies, which are as narrow at the bottom as the hills are on the top, ſo that there is ſcarcely any level country upon it; but as viewed from the ſea, it appears quite level, the different ridges being nearly the ſame in height.

Arthur's Vale, which is near the ſettlement, and the firſt place which was cleared for cultivation, is a pretty ſpot of level ground, and the moſt extenſive flat yet cleared; it contains eleven acres. This very great unevenneſs of the ground occaſions much labour in cultivation, and renders it wholly impoſſible to uſe the plough, even if the ground were ſufficiently cleared, and there were cattle to work; every labour of that kind muſt be done by hand. There was, when I left the iſland, in February, 1791, ſomething more than 100 acres cleared for the public, excluſive of private gardens, but all the roots of the trees were left in the ground, which would no doubt occupy a fifth part of it, for many of them were very large. The ſoil over the whole of this iſland is generally allowed to be remarkably fine, and it is very deep; indeed, the luxuriance with which almoſt every thing grows ſufficiently indicates a very rich ſoil: it ſeems to be compoſed principally of a deep, fat clay, and decayed vegetable matter; in ſhort, without pretending to natural knowledge, that unhappily I do not poſſeſs, I ſhall only obſerve, that a more luxuriant ſoil I never met with in any part of the world.

The flax plant mentioned by Captain Cook grows chiefly on the ſea coaſt, or on points which project into the ſea; but as theſe points ſeem to have the ſame kind of ſoil as the other parts of the iſland, there can be no doubt of its ſucceeding in the interior parts, if planted there. In the very ſanguine opinions which we find have been given of this iſland, ſince we arrived in this ſouthern part of the world, it appears that the ſize of it has been wholly overlooked, otherwiſe I think ſuch expectations and opinions of its value, as appears to have been entertained, could not have taken place. I only judge of ſuch expectations by the number of people which Governor Phillip has thought proper to ſend there: opinions have been given, that it will maintain 2000 inhabitants; if it were all cleared and cultivated, it would no doubt furniſh many of the neceſſaries of life for ſuch a number; but in its preſent ſtate, I ſhould think a fourth part of that number too many, and, in my humble opinion, they ſhould be ſuch as have forfeited every hope of ſeeing their native country again; ſuch a deſcription of people would find it their particular intereſt to be induſtrious, as their exiſtence might depend upon it. The crops here are very ſubject to blights from the ſea winds, and there are immenſe numbers of the grub worm and caterpillars: there is alſo a fly of a very deſtructive nature to the gardens and corn; but when ſuch vermin do not appear until the crops have arrived at a certain age, and have gained their ſtrength, their effects are not ſo very ruinous; there is no certain period at which they appear; probably when a large extent of ground is cleared theſe vermin may not be ſo frequent. Indian corn grows here with great advantage, producing from forty to fifty buſhels an acre, planted with about a peck. This little iſland is extraordinary well watered; there are ſeveral fine ſtreams which ſeem to flow from the body of Mount Pitt, and empty themſelves on both ſides of the iſland into the ſea. On the north ſide, in Caſcade-Bay, there are two pretty falls from ſteep cliffs into the ſea; there are two ſtreams upon this iſland, which I have often noticed even in very dry weather, and thought them capable of turning a mill.

With reſpect to landing upon the ſhore, as it is frequently attended with great difficulty and danger, ſtores ſhould never be ſent here but in the ſummer time, when there is much fine weather and eaſy landing; but when the landing is impracticable in Sydney-Bay, it is poſſible to get light ſtores a-ſhore in Caſcade-Bay, which will then be ſmooth, if it do not blow hard; when it does, the whole iſland is inacceſſible, for it is not of ſufficient extent to prevent the ſea, occaſioned by bad weather, from affecting every part of the ſhore.

TABLE, diſtinguiſhing thoſe Days on which Landing was good, and thoſe of High Surf, when there could be no landing, at the annexed Landing Places, in *Norfolk-Iſland*, between the 19th of *March*, 1790, and the 12th of *Feb.* 1791. By CAPTAIN BRADLEY.

March, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
		His Majeſty's Ship SIRIUS wrecked, on a Reef, in SYDNEY-BAY, NORFOLK-ISLAND, March 19, 1790.	
19		S. E.	Freſh gale
	20	South.	Ditto
	21	South.	Ditto
	22	S. W.	Ditto
	23	W.N.W.	Ditto
24		S. W.	Squally
	25	South.	Moderate
	26	S. E.	Ditto
	27	S. E.	Ditto
	28	N. E.	Ditto
	29	S. S. E.	Freſh gale
30		N. E.	Ditto
31		N. E.	Strong gale

April, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
	1	N. E.	Strong gales
2		N. E.	Ditto
3		N. W.	Moderate
4		S. W.	Ditto
5		⊕	Light airs
6		South.	Moderate
7		E. N. E.	Ditto
	8	Eaſt.	Squally
	9	E. S. E.	Ditto
10		Eaſt.	Ditto
11		Eaſt.	Strong gales
12		N. E.	Moderate
13		N. E.	Ditto
	14	N. E.	Light breeze
15		E. N. E.	Moderate
	16	S. E.	Freſh gale
	17	S. E.	Ditto
	18	S. E.	Ditto
19		E. S. E.	Ditto
20		E. S. E.	Moderate
21		Eaſt.	Ditto
22		Variable	Light airs
	23	S. E.	Freſh gale
	24	E. S. E.	Ditto
	25	S. E.	Squally
	26	Eaſt.	Ditto
	27	E. S. E.	Strong gale
	28	E. S. E.	Ditto
	29	E. S. E.	Ditto
	30	Eaſt.	Ditto

May, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
	1	E. N. E.	Freſh gale
	2	N. E.	Moderate
3		South.	Ditto
4		S. S. W.	Ditto
	5	South.	Freſh gale
	6	S. S. E.	Ditto
7		Variable	Light breeze
8		Variable	Ditto
9		S. S. W.	Ditto
10		S. S. W.	Moderate
11		S. S. E.	Ditto
12		⊕	Ditto
13		N. W.	Ditto
14		Weſt.	Freſh gale
15		W. S. W.	Squally
16		W. N. W.	Moderate
17		South.	Ditto
	18	S. W.	Freſh gale
19		S. S. W.	Ditto
20		S. S. W.	Ditto
21		Weſt.	Strong gale
22		Weſt.	Moderate
23		W. S. W.	Ditto
	24	W. S. W.	Hard gale
	25	S. S. W.	Ditto
	26	S. S. W.	Freſh gale
	27	S. S. E.	Ditto
	28	E. S. E.	Moderate
29		E. S. E.	Freſh gale
30		Eaſt.	Moderate
31		E. N. E.	Ditto

June, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
1		N. E.	Freſh gale
2		North.	Ditto
3		N. W.	Ditto
	4	S. W.	Strong gale
	5	S. W.	Ditto
	6	S. W.	Ditto
	7	Variable	Moderate
	8	N. E.	Freſh gale
	9	N. E.	Hard gale
	10	Variable	Freſh gale
	11	W. S. W.	Ditto
	12	S. W.	Ditto
13		S. W.	Moderate
14		S. W.	Light airs
15		South.	Hard gale
	16	S. S. W.	Strong gale
	17	S. E.	Ditto
	18	S. E.	Freſh gale
	19	South.	Ditto
	20	S. S. E.	Ditto
	21	S. S. E.	Moderate
	22	North.	Freſh gale
23		N. W.	Strong gale
	24	S. W.	Ditto
	25	South.	Ditto
	26	South.	Ditto
27		South.	Moderate
	28	E. N. E.	Ditto
29		N. E.	Ditto
30		N. E.	Ditto

July, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
1		N. E.	Strong gale
2		North.	Ditto
3		N. W.	Moderate
	4	S. S. W.	Strong gale
	5	S. S. W.	Hard gale
	6	S. W.	Ditto
	7	South.	Freſh gale
8		S. W.	Moderate
	9	N. W.	Squally
	10	S. W.	Strong gale
	11	Weſt.	Hard gale
	12	S. W.	Strong gale
	13	S. S. W.	Ditto
	14	S. W.	Ditto
	15	S. W.	Moderate
	16	S. W.	Ditto
17		S. W.	Ditto
18		N. W.	Light breeze
19		Weſt.	Strong gale
20		Variable	Moderate
21		S. W.	Strong gale
	22	S. W.	Ditto
	23	S. W.	Hard gale
	24	W. S. W.	Strong gale
	25	S. S. E.	Ditto
26		S. S. E.	Moderate
	27	N. E.	Light breeze
28		N. N. E.	Moderate
	29	N. W.	Strong gale
	30	Weſt.	Hard gale
	31	W. S. W.	Ditto

August, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
	1	S. W.	Strong gales
	2	S. W.	Ditto
	3	S. W.	Ditto
	4	S. W.	Ditto
	5	S. W.	Ditto
	6	S. W.	Hard gales
	7	N. W.	Freſh gale
8		N. W.	Moderate
	9	Weſt.	Strong gale
	10	S. S. W.	Ditto
11		South.	Moderate
12		S. E.	Ditto
13		Eaſt.	Squally
14		N. E.	Strong gale
	15	S. W.	Squally
16		Weſt.	Moderate
17		Weſt.	Squally
	18	S. W.	Moderate
	19	S. S. W.	Ditto
	20	S. S. E.	Squally
	21	S. S. E.	Moderate
22		Variable	Light airs.
23		S. E.	Moderate
24		Eaſt.	Ditto
25		E. N. E.	Ditto
26		N. E.	Ditto
27		North.	Ditto
28		N. W.	Freſh gale
29		Weſt.	Ditto
30		W. S. W.	Squally
	31	S. W.	Strong gale

September, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
	1	S. W.	Strong gale
	2	S. W.	Ditto
	3	S. W.	Moderate
	4	S. S. W.	Freſh gale
	5	S. S. E.	Moderate
	6	N. E.	Ditto
7		E. S. E.	Ditto
8		E. N. E.	Ditto
9		N. E.	Squally
10		Eaſt.	Moderate
11		E. S. E.	Ditto
12		S. S. E.	Ditto
	13	S. S. E.	Ditto
	14	Variable	Ditto
15		N. E.	Ditto
16		North.	Light airs
17		N. W.	Squally
	18	S. W.	Strong gale
	19	S. S. W.	Ditto
20		South.	Moderate
21		South.	Ditto
	22	S. E.	Ditto
	23	N. E.	Ditto
24		N. E.	Ditto
25		N. N. E.	Strong gale
	26	N. N. W.	Freſh gale
27		N. W.	Ditto
28		N. W.	Ditto
29		N. W.	Strong gale
	30	S. W.	Ditto

October, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
	1	Eaſt.	Moderate
2		N. W.	Squally
	3	S. W.	Moderate
	4	South.	Ditto
	5	S. E.	Ditto
	6	N. E.	Ditto
7		N. N. W.	Strong gale
	8	S. W.	Ditto
	9	S. W.	Freſh gale
10		W. N. W.	Squally
11		S. W.	Light airs
	12	S. W.	Freſh gale
	13	N. W.	Moderate
14		N. W.	Ditto
15		S. W.	Strong gale
16		South.	Freſh gale
17		North.	Moderate
18		North.	Ditto
19		N. N. W.	Ditto
	20	N. W.	Freſh gale
	21	S. W.	Ditto
	22	S. W.	Squally
	23	S. W.	Ditto
	24	S. W.	Moderate
25		Variable	Ditto
26		E. N. E.	Freſh gale
27		E. S. E.	Ditto
28		Eaſt.	Moderate
29		N. E.	Freſh gale
30		N. E.	Ditto
31		N. E.	Moderate

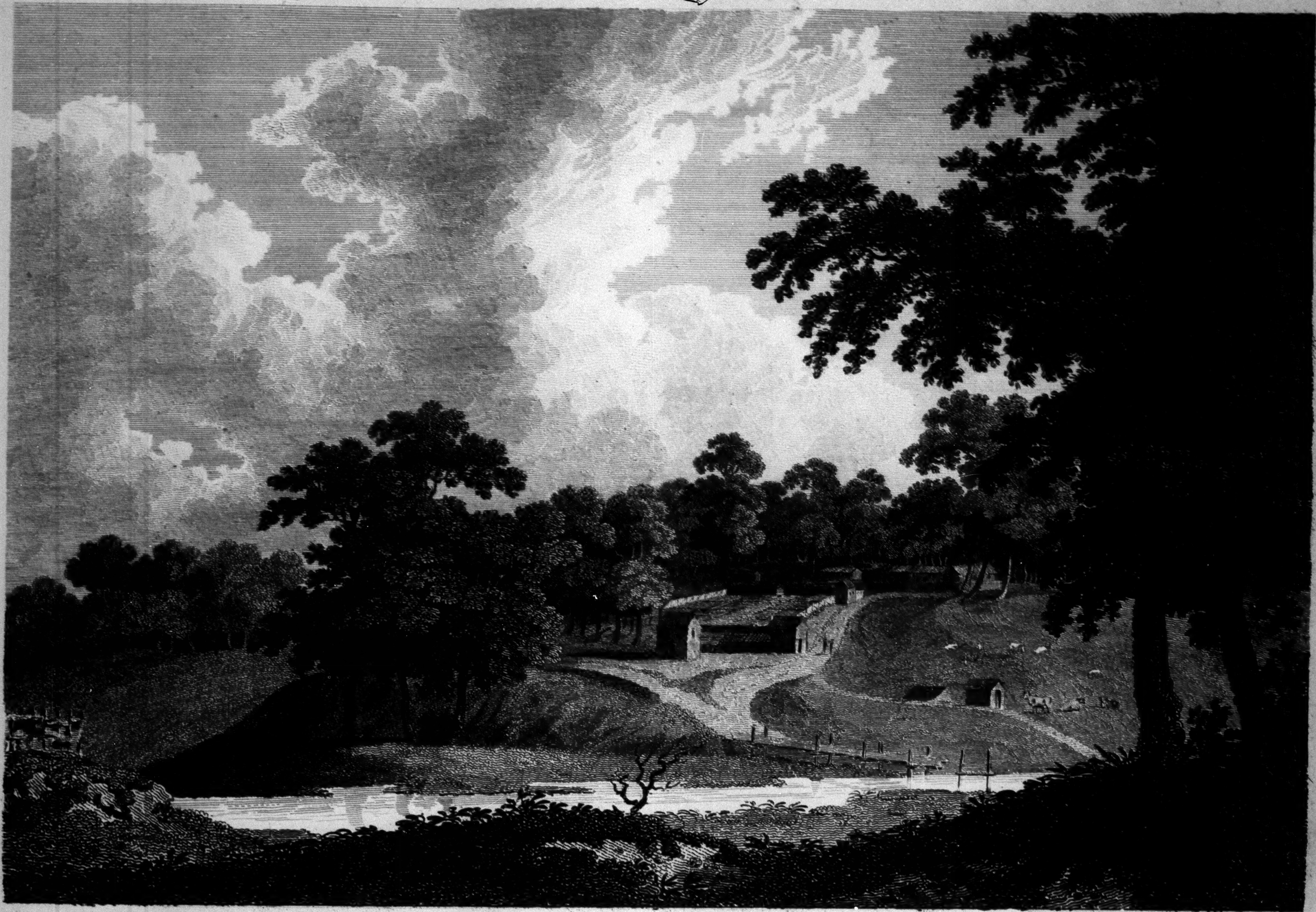
November, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
1		N. E.	Strong gale
	2	Eaſt.	Freſh gale
3		S. E.	Moderate
	4	S. E.	Ditto
5		S. E.	Ditto
6		Variable	Ditto
7		N. W.	Freſh gale
8		N. W.	Ditto
9		N. W.	Strong gale
10		S. W.	Ditto
	11	S. E.	Ditto
	12	S. E.	Ditto
	13	S. W.	Ditto
	14	South.	Ditto
	15	South.	Moderate
	16	South.	Ditto
	17	S. E.	Ditto
	18	S. E.	Ditto
19		S. E.	Ditto
20		E. S. E.	Ditto
21		E. N. E.	Ditto
22		Variable	Light airs
23		N. E.	Moderate
24		E. N. E.	Ditto
25		E. N. E.	Ditto
26		N. N. E.	Ditto
27		N. W.	Light breeze
28		S. W.	Moderate
29		S. W.	Freſh gale
	30	South.	Ditto

December, 1790.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
1		South.	Freſh gale
	2	S. W.	Moderate
	3	S. W.	Light airs
	4	Variable	Ditto
5		Variable	Ditto
6		North.	Freſh gale
7		E. N. E.	Ditto
8		E. N. E.	Ditto
9		E. N. E.	Ditto
10		E. N. E.	Ditto
11		E. N. E.	Ditto
12		Eaſt.	Ditto
13		N. E.	Ditto
14		N. W.	Moderate
15		N. W.	Ditto
16		N. W.	Ditto
	17	S. W.	Freſh gale
	18	S. S. W.	Ditto
	19	S. W.	Ditto
	20	S. E.	Moderate
21		Variable	Light airs
22		Variable	Ditto
23		Variable	Ditto
24		Weſt.	Freſh gale
25		W. S. W.	Ditto
	26	S. W.	Moderate
	27	W. S. W.	Freſh gale
28		South.	Moderate
29		S. E.	Ditto
30		E. S. E.	Freſh gale
31		E. S. E.	Moderate

January, 1791.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
1		E. S. E	Moderate
2		Eaſt.	Light airs
3		Variable	Ditto
4		N. E.	Ditto
5		N. E.	Freſh gale
6		N. F.	Ditto
	7	E. N. E.	Ditto
	8	Eaſt.	Strong gale
	9	E. N. E.	Moderate
10		Variable	Light airs
	11	S. E.	Moderate
	12	S. E.	Ditto
	13	S. W.	Ditto
	14	Variable	Light airs
	15	Weſt.	Freſh gale
	16	Weſt.	Ditto
	17	S. S. W.	Ditto
	18	Eaſt.	Moderate
19		Variable	Ditto
20		Eaſt.	Freſh gale
21		Eaſt.	Moderate
22		Eaſt.	Ditto
23		Eaſt.	Ditto
24		E. N. E.	Ditto
25		Variable	Light airs
26		Variable	Ditto
27		E. S. E.	Moderate
28		Variable	Light airs
	29	W. S. W.	Freſh gale
	30	S. W.	Ditto
	31	S. E.	Moderate

February, 1791.			
Landing.	Surf.	Winds, &c.	
	1	E. S. E.	Moderate
2		Eaſt.	Ditto
3		Eaſt.	Ditto
4		N. E.	Ditto
5		Variable	Ditto
	6	S. E.	Light breeze
7		E. S. E.	Moderate
8		Eaſt.	Ditto
9		Eaſt.	Light airs
10		Variable	Ditto
11		Variable	Ditto
12		Eaſt.	Ditto

DAYS,
Total, } 178 Landing,
} 153 Surf.



Drawn by E. Dayes from a Sketch by J. Hunter

VIEW AT ROSE HILL.

Publiſhed Oct 1. 1792 by I. Stockdale Piccadilly

CHAPTER VIII.

Great improvement of the country at Roſe Hill.—Viciſſitude of the climate. Norfolk Iſland remarkably healthy.—A native runs away from the ſettlement.—Frequent viſits from the natives.—Governor Phillip wounded by the natives with a ſpear.—Natives again viſit the ſettlement.—Entertain the governor, &c. with a dance.—Decorate themſelves for that purpoſe. Method of dancing deſcribed.—Muſic and ſinging.

AFTER my arrival at Port Jackſon I went to Roſe Hill, where great improvements were carrying on; a conſiderable town was laid out, many good buildings were erected, and roads were cut, with about two hundred and thirteen acres of land cleared for corn, and eighty acres for buildings and gardens; that is, the trees were cut down, but the roots remained in the ground, which would certainly leſſen the quantity of cleared ground; this ground being grubbed up and laid open, gave me an opportunity of examining what the ſoil conſiſted of, and although I do not pretend to any knowledge in farming, yet I thought it required no very great judgment to perceive and determine this favourite ſpot (which, to do it juſtice, is certainly better than any upon or near this harbour) to be a poor, ſandy, ſteril, ſoil; the ſurface is covered a few inches deep with a ſoil which ſeems to be produced from decayed vegetation, rotten leaves, burnt and withered graſs; and under that is a mere bed of ſand. Roſe Hill is certainly a pretty ſituation, CHAP. VIII. 1791.

but

CHAP. VIII.

1791.

but the country will require much manure, much dreſſing, and good farmers to manage it, before good crops can be expected from it; the beſt they have ever had, I have been informed, has amounted only to ſix or ſeven to one, and this laſt ſeaſon has been little more than two to one, but that may in ſome meaſure be accounted for by there being a great ſcarcity of rain.

If it be the determination of government to perſevere in eſtabliſhing a ſettlement in this country, upon an extenſive plan, the nation muſt be contented to ſubmit to a very heavy expence. It muſt be ſtocked with cattle, were it only for the manure, for without manure this country is too poor ever to yield tolerable crops; and if it ſhould be reſolved upon to ſtock it with cattle, it will be found highly neceſſary to employ a conſiderable number of people in the care of them, to prevent their being frequently attacked by the natives, whom we know are frequently driven to very great diſtreſs for food.

The country about Roſe Hill, which I have formerly mentioned as requiring not much labour in clearing, from its being covered only with lofty, open woods, without any underwood, and which I then obſerved ran to the weſtward about twenty miles, has ſince been travelled over by ſeveral gentlemen, who admit that that kind of country does extend near the diſtance above-mentioned to the weſtward, but in a north and ſouth direction, it does not extend more than three or four miles, when you come again into barren, rocky land, wholly unfit for cultivation; in ſhort, as I have walked over a good deal of ground ſince I have been here, and have frequently travelled from Botany-Bay to Broken-Bay along the ſea coaſt, I can with much truth declare, that I have never met with a piece of ground any where ſufficient for a ſmall farm, which has not been ſo rocky as to be unfit for cultivation; the beſt of it appears to be a poor, miſerable, ſandy ſoil; and what muſt ſubject thoſe who live on it to much inconvenience is, the very great ſcarcity of water. Upon my arrival here from Norfolk Iſland, all the ſtreams from which we were formerly ſupplied, except a ſmall drain at the head of Sydney-Cove, were entirely dried up, ſo great had been the drought; a circumſtance, which from the very intenſe heat of the ſummer, I think it probable we ſhall be very frequently ſubject to. This frequent reduction of the ſtreams of freſh water diſpoſes me to think, that they originate from ſwamps and large collections of rain water, more than from ſprings.

When the ſudden viciſſitudes of heat and cold are conſidered, we might be too apt to pronounce this country very unhealthy; but near four years experience has convinced us that it is not the caſe: it is no uncommon thing at Roſe Hill, and frequently at Sydney, for the thermometer to be in the morning at 56° or 60°; and by two hours, afternoon, at 100°, ſometimes 112°; and after ſun-ſet, down to 60° again; this is, with the thermometer expoſed to the air, in a ſhade, and not within the houſe. When I went laſt to Roſe Hill, I left Sydney at five o'clock in the morning, and rowed up the harbour, a great coat was then comfortable; at noon I walked over the cleared ground, the thermometer was then more than 100°.

Norfolk Iſland is alſo ſubject to ſuch ſudden changes, but is alſo remarkably healthy. I do not think I can give a ſtronger proof of the ſalubrity of the climate, than by obſerving, that I never ſaw the conſtitutions either of the human race or any other animal, more prolific in any part of the world; two children at a birth is no uncommon thing, and elderly women, who have believed themſelves long paſt the period of child-bearing, have repeatedly had as fine healthy ſtrong children as ever were ſeen. And there has but one old woman, who was ſickly before ſhe came to the country, and one infant, died of a natural diſeaſe on the iſland, ſince it has been ſettled.

I have ſome time ago mentioned the name of Ba-na-lang, a native man, who had been taken in the lower part of the harbour, with another of the name of Co-al-by, who ſoon after made his eſcape. Ba-na-lang had been kept in his ſhackle, and treated with ſo much kindneſs, that it was now ſuppoſed he might be truſted with his liberty, without any fear of his leaving us; he was therefore, in the month of April, 1790, which was ſoon after we left Port Jackſon for Norfolk Iſland, ſet at liberty, and did not appear at all diſpoſed to leave the governor's houſe, or abſent himſelf from his new acquired friends; this appearance of ſatisfaction he feigned with ſucceſs for ſeveral days, for no perſon ſeemed to ſuſpect him; he at laſt, however, took French leave; having, after dark, one evening, ſtripped himſelf of his very decent cloathing, left them behind, and walked off. Both he and Co-al-by were frequently ſeen by our fiſhing-boats, and were ſo familiar as to converſe with the people, who often invited them to come up to Sydney (the name by which the ſettlement is called) but this invitation they were not much diſpoſed to accept, until the governor in perſon ſhould invite them, and give them his promiſe that they ſhould not be detained; the governor did invite them, and promiſed to give them many things, of which they were very much in want. It was ſcarcely to be expected that theſe people, who had been deprived of their liberty in ſo treacherous a manner, and had been ſo long detained from their families and connections, ſhould have had confidence enough to truſt their liberty again in our hands;

however, as the governor and every other perſon in the ſettlement had ever been kind to them, they were inclined to depend on the governor's promiſe, and did come to Sydney; were kindly received, went from houſe to houſe, and ſaw all their old acquaintances; they received many little preſents, and returned to their friends when they thought proper. This confidential viſit from two men, who appeared to have ſome influence among their countrymen, ſoon brought about a more general intercourſe, and the next viſit from thoſe men brought the ſame favour from their wives and families, whoſe example was followed by many others; ſo that every gentleman's houſe was now become a reſting or ſleeping place for ſome of them every night; whenever they were preſſed for hunger, they had immediate recourſe to our quarters, where they generally got their bellies filled. They were now become exceedingly fond of bread, which when we came here firſt, they could not bear to put into their mouths; and if ever they did, it was out of civility to thoſe who offered it; but now the little children had all learnt the words, *hungry*, *bread*; and would, to ſhew that they were hungry, draw in their belly, ſo as to make it appear quite empty. Co-al-by's wife had a young female child in her arms, about three or four months old; this little creature had a ligature round the little finger of the right hand, in order to ſeparate the two lower joints, which in the courſe of three weeks or a month it effected: I ſaw it juſt as the finger was about dropping off, but as it hung by a bit of ſkin, they begged Mr. White, the ſurgeon, to take it off, which he did, with a pair of ſciſſars, and which the child did not ſeem to feel. This taking off the finger of the right hand appeared to be a miſtake in the mother, who frequently pointed that it ſhould have been the left hand.

CHAP. VIII.

1791.

A ſhort time previous to this friendly and general viſiting from the natives, the governor, as I have already obſerved, in order to diſpoſe them the more to confide in us, went down the harbour himſelf, to ſee and converſe with our old friends Ba-na-lang and Co-al-by, and to invite them to come to his houſe, where they ſhould get whatever they might be in want of; and be permitted to return when they pleaſed. The governor having received information that theſe two men with ſeveral other natives were in Collins's-Cove, went thither, accompanied by ſeveral other gentlemen, and they were all unarmed; this unfortunate want of neceſſary caution had very near proved fatal to the governor; the particulars of this accident were related to me by an officer who was of the party, and were, as near as I can recollect, as follows:

On Thurſday the 7th of September, the governor, with a few other gentlemen, went down to the look-out, in order to fix on a ſpot for erecting a column, or pyramid, as a mark, by which ſtrangers might, at ſea, the better know the harbour; and were returning, when they were met by a boat which had been landing a party of gentlemen, who intended walking along the coaſt to Broken-bay: by the cockſwain of this boat, the governor was informed, that Mr. White, who was one of the above party, had ſeen Co-al-by and Ba-na-lang, and had a long converſation with them; that theſe men enquired for every body they knew, and particularly for the governor; that they had ſent his excellency a piece of whale, which had been thrown on ſhore, and which they had been regaling themſelves upon; that Ba-na-lang would go up to Sydney, if the governor would come for him. In conſequence of this information, the governor returned to the look-out, and got together every thing that he could find, which he thought would be acceptable to his old friends: he alſo took with him four muſkets, and went immediately to Collins's-Cove, where thoſe people had been ſeen. In their way they examined the muſkets, and found that only two of the four would ſtrike fire, and theſe they loaded: when they reached the place, they obſerved a number of the natives ſitting round a fire which was near the place where the dead whale lay; the governor ſtood up in the boat, and aſked in their language where Ba-na-lang was; Ba-na-lang anſwered, I am here; the governor then ſaid, I am the governor your father; (a name he wiſhed the governor to be known by when he lived with him.) The governor, after deſiring Captain Collins and Mr. Waterhouſe to remain in the boat, and to have the muſkets ready, landed, and walked up the beach with his arms extended, to ſhew that he was unarmed, and that they might not be alarmed: they did not ſeem inclined to meet him; however he followed them into the wood, and one of them frequently called out governor and father; in conſequence of this, and having ſhook hands in a friendly manner, the governor returned to the boat, and deſired one of the men to bring up ſome wine, beef, and bread, and a jacket or two, which had been brought on purpoſe, and went back with thoſe articles to them: on his holding up a bottle, one of them called out wine, and repeated ſeveral Engliſh words; two of the natives came forward and received the things, and one drank a little wine; they had likewiſe received from the governor a few knives. In a ſhort time, the governor came to the boat again, and mentioned all that had happened; obſerving at the ſame time, that Ba-na-lang and Co-al-by were not among the number: he aſked Captain Collins to walk up with him, and deſired Mr. Waterhouſe to ſtay by the boat. When they went up, Mr. Waterhouſe frequently heard one of the natives call to Ba-na-lang, and informed him of what obſervations he made upon thoſe who remained in the boat, the people being employed in keeping her afloat, upon her oars. Shortly after,

CHAP. VIII.
1791.

one

CHAP. VIII. 1791.

one of the men came down from the governor, and informed Mr. Waterhouſe, that both Ba-na-lang and Co-al-by were there, and that the former had frequently aſked for Mr. Waterhouſe, and the governor deſired he would come up, which he did. On his arrival, he obſerved a conſiderable number of the natives on each ſide, and eight or ten in front, all armed with their ſpears, except two, with whom the governor and Captain Collins were in converſation: Mr. Waterhouſe went up, but did not know Ba-na-lang, until he was pointed out to him; he then ſhook hands with him and Co-al-by. Ba-na-lang had at this time two jackets on, which he had received from the governor and Captain Collins; Co-al-by had alſo a jacket given him; after Ba-na-lang had been aſked ſeveral queſtions, he took Mr. Waterhouſe round the neck and kiſſed him; theſe queſtions were relative to various circumſtances which happened while he lived with the governor, all of which he ſeemed to recollect very well: Co-al-by ſhook hands again with Mr. Waterhouſe, and begged him to put on the jacket which had been given, and which he held in his hand, not knowing how to put it on himſelf, which Mr. Waterhouſe did for him. Ba-na-lang, on the governor's firſt meeting him, had a remarkable fine ſpear, which the governor aſked him for, but he either could not or would not underſtand him, but laid it down on the ground: during all this time, there was the greateſt appearance of harmony and friendſhip. However, the natives ſeemed cloſing round the party, which being obſerved, the governor propoſed going down to the boat, for they had by this time nearly formed a creſcent, and had the governor's party in the centre: there were now nineteen armed men near, and a conſiderable number in the wood out of ſight. The governor now told Ba-na-lang that he would return in two days, and bring him the cloaths he uſed to wear when in his houſe, and would alſo bring him a couple of hatchets for himſelf and Co-al-by; with which pro-

CHAP. VIII. 1791.

miſe they ſeemed well pleaſed, and often repeated that it might not be forgot. Juſt as the governor and his party were going, Ba-na-lang pointed out and named ſeveral of the natives who were ſtrangers, one of whom the governor went up to and offered to ſhake his hands, at which the man ſeemed much terrified, and immediately ſeized the ſpear, which Ba-na-lang had laid on the ground, fixed it on the throwing-ſtick, and diſcharged it with aſtoniſhing violence: he with all his aſſociates made off with the utmoſt precipitation. The ſpear entered the governor's right ſhoulder, juſt above the collar-bone, and came out about three inches lower down, behind the ſhoulder-blade. Mr. Waterhouſe, who was cloſe by the governor at the time, ſuppoſed that it muſt be mortal, for the ſpear appeared to him to be much lower down than it really was, and ſuppoſed, from the number of armed men, that it would be impoſſible for any of the party to eſcape to the boat. He turned round immediately to return to the boat, as he perceived Captain Collins to go that way, calling to the boat's crew to bring up the muſkets; the governor alſo attempted to run towards the boat, holding up the ſpear with both hands, to keep it off the ground, but owing to its great length, the end frequently took the ground and ſtopped him (it was about twelve feet long). Governor Phillip, in this ſituation, deſired Mr. Waterhouſe to endeavour, if poſſible, to take the ſpear out, which he immediately attempted, but obſerving it to be barbed, and the barb quite through, he ſaw it would be impoſſible to draw it out; he therefore endeavoured to break it, but could not: while he was making this attempt, another ſpear was thrown out of the wood, and took off the ſkin between Mr. Waterhouſe's fore-finger and thumb, which alarmed him a good deal, and he thinks added power to his exertions, for the next attempt, he broke it off. By this time, the ſpears flew pretty thick, one of which he obſerved to fall at Captain Collins's feet, while he was calling to the boat's crew: the governor attempted to pull a piſtol out of his pocket, but the ſpears flew ſo thick, that it was unſafe to ſtop: however he got it out and fired it, upon a ſuppoſition, that their knowing he had ſome fire-arms would deter them from any further hoſtility. The whole party got down to the boat without any further accident, and in two hours they arrived at the government-houſe, when the ſurgeons were ſent for: Mr. Balmain, who was the firſt that arrived, after examining the wound, made every body happy, by aſſuring them he did not apprehend any fatal conſequences from it; he extracted the point of the ſpear, and dreſſed the wound, and in ſix weeks the governor was perfectly recovered.

Immediately on the arrival of the governor at Sydney, it was judged neceſſary to ſend an armed party of marines towards Broken-bay, to eſcort the gentlemen who had walked that way back again; leſt the ſame hoſtile diſpoſition in the natives, ſhould incline them to make an attack on them on their return.

Before I left Port Jackſon, the natives were become very familiar and intimate with every perſon in the ſettlement; many of them now took up their reſt every night in ſome of the gentlemen's houſes; their very unprovoked attack on the governor and his party being paſſed over and almoſt forgot. We have frequently obſerved, ſince this familiar intercourſe took place, that they often had a dance amongſt themſelves at night, on the lower part of Sydney-cove, where a ſmall houſe had been built by the governor's order, for their accommodation. It had been ſignified to ſome of the principal amongſt them, that we ſhould be glad to have an opportunity of ſeeing them dance, which they readily agreed to, and the following night was appointed, when the governor and a conſiderable number attended; every one being provided with arms of ſome kind: a caution which, notwithſtanding friendly appearances, was generally allowed to be neceſſary; for experience had convinced us that theſe people have a good deal of treachery in their diſpoſition. Preparatory to this exhibition, much attention was paid to the decorating themſelves; they were all Adams and Eves, without even a fig-leaf, but without their dignity. The young women were employed with all their art in painting the young men, who were chiefly ornamented with ſtreaks of white, done with pipe-clay, and in different forms, according to the taſte of the man himſelf, or to that of the lady who adorned him: no fop preparing for an aſſembly was ever more deſirous of making his perſon irreſiſtibly beautiful. This paint, ſo much in uſe among them, could not be applied without a little moiſture, and the lady, in drawing thoſe marks on the face, which were ſo eſſential a part of the decoration, I obſerved frequently to ſpit in the face of her friend, whom ſhe was employed in adorning, in order to make the white clay mark the ſtronger. When they were all prepared, we walked down to the place appointed, after dark, for they prefer taking their amuſement by fire-light; we found ſeveral fires lighted, and a conſiderable number of people aſſembled. We walked round to ſee that there were no armed lurkers among the buſhes.

The dancers being ready, we were placed in a ſemicircle, by Ba-na-lang, and Co-al-by, who ſeemed to have the chief authority and direction. The dance was begun by a few young boys, and was encreaſed by men and women, chiefly by the former, until their number amounted from twenty to twenty-ſix. Their dance was truly wild and ſavage, yet, in many parts, there appeared order and regularity: one man would frequently ſingle himſelf out from the dance, and running round the whole

CHAP. VIII. 1791.

of the performers, ſing out in a loud voice, uſing ſome expreſſions in one particular tone of voice which we could not underſtand: he would then join the dance, in which it was obſerved that certain parties alternately led forward to the front, and there exhibited with their utmoſt ſkill and agility, all the various motions which, with them, ſeemed to conſtitute the principal beauties of dancing: one of the moſt ſtriking was, that of placing their feet very wide apart, and by an extraordinary exertion of the muſcles of the thighs and legs, moving the knees in a trembling and very ſurprizing manner, ſuch as none of us could imitate; which ſeemed to ſhew that it required much practice to arrive at any degree of perfection in this ſingular motion. There appeared a good deal of variety in their different dances; in one of which they paired themſelves, and frequently danced back to back; they then changed ſuddenly and faced each other: ſometimes all the performers ſat down on the ground with their feet under them, and at a particular word, or order, they all raiſed themſelves up: this motion they performed without any aſſiſtance from the hands; now they ran back in direct rows, then advanced in the ſame order; again they would form a circle, with ſome diſtinguiſhed perſon in the center, and ſometimes the whole of the performers would appear with a green bough in their hands, which they held up in a conſpicuous manner. In all the different figures which they performed, I obſerved that they generally finiſhed by certain numbers of their principal dancers advancing to the front, and going through that favourite part of the dance, the quivering motion of the knees; whenever this was done, the whole company faced to the front and went through the ſame motions; but it was noticed that ſome were more frequently in the front than others, and thoſe, I concluded, were ſuch as had great confidence in their own ſkill in the execution of this very difficult part of the performance, and no doubt were vain enough to outſhine in their ability the reſt of the company. On the whole, this exhibition was well worth ſeeing; and this was the firſt opportunity that had offered for us to ſee any thing of the kind, ſince we had been in the country. Their muſic conſiſted of two ſticks of very hard wood, one of which the muſician held upon his breaſt, in the manner of a violin, and ſtruck it with the other, in good and regular time; the performer, who was a ſtout ſtrong voiced man, ſung the whole time, and frequently applied thoſe graces in muſic, the piano and forte; he was aſſiſted by ſeveral young boys and girls, who ſat at his feet, and by their manner of croſſing the thighs, made a hollow between them and their belly, upon which they beat time with the flat of their hand, ſo as to make a kind of ſound which will be better underſtood from the manner of its being produced, than from any verbal deſcription: theſe children alſo ſung with the chief muſical performer, who ſtood up the whole time, and ſeemed to me to have the moſt laborious part of the performance. They very frequently, at the concluſion of the dance, would apply to us for our opinions, or rather for marks of our approbation of their performance; which we never failed to give by often repeating the word *boojery*, which ſignifies good; or *boojery caribberie*, a good dance. Theſe ſigns of pleaſure in us ſeemed to give them great ſatisfaction, and generally produced more than ordinary exertions from the whole company of performers in the next dance.

CHAPTER IX.

Captain Hunter leaves Port Jackſon in the Waakſamheyd tranſport.—In danger amongſt ſome iſlands.—Iſle of Pines deſcribed.—Stewart's iſlands diſcovered.—Fall in with Bradley's ſhoals.—Diſcover a cluſter of iſlands.—Name them Lord Howe's Groupe.—The natives deſcribed.—Attempt to find anchorage on the coaſt of New-Britain.—Are diſappointed.—Anchor at the Duke of York's iſland.—Attempt to procure water.—Are attacked by the natives.—A few ſhots fired.—The natives diſperſed.—A reconciliation effected.—Natives deſcribed.—Weapons.—Ornaments, &c.—Produce and ſoil.—Leave the Duke of York's iſland.—Natives from the Admiralty iſlands viſit the ſhip.—Their canoes deſcribed.—Phillip's iſlands diſcovered.—Anchor at Hummock iſland.—Refreſhments procured.—Viſited by the Raja.—A quarrel enſues.—Several of the natives killed.—Articles of barter in requeſt.—Canoes deſcribed.—Leave Hummock iſland.—Anchor at Batavia.—Tables of latitude and longitude, &c.

CHAP. IX.

1791. March 27.

ON the 27th of March, 1791, every thing being embarked, we left Sydney-cove, in the Waakſamheyd tranſport, and ſailed down the harbour; when we were accompanied by the governor, and moſt of the civil and military officers in the ſettlement. When we paſſed the lower point of the Cove, all the marines and the New South Wales corps, who were off duty, came down and cheered our people, by way of taking leave, and wiſhing us a good paſſage: never, upon any ſervice, did there a better, a better, or a more friendly, underſtanding ſubſiſt between different corps, than had ever been the caſe between the ſeamen and ſoldiers employed upon this. When we came near the lower part of the harbour, our friends took leave, and ſoon after the wind ſetting in from the ſea, we were obliged to anchor until the next morning, when a land wind carried us clear out. The maſter of the ſhip had orders from Governor Phillip to call at Norfolk Iſland, in order to take on board the diſpatches of Lieutenant-Governor Roſs; but this order was meant only in caſe it could be done without any material loſs of time. We were in all, on board that little veſſel, one hundred and twenty-three ſouls, victualled for ſixteen weeks. We had a very long voyage before us. It was my wiſh, if poſſible, to avoid touching at Batavia, in order to prevent ſickneſs among our people, in the very crouded ſtate they were in, which, at the ſeaſon we ſhould probably be there, was much to be dreaded. I had expreſſed a deſire to paſs through amongſt the Molucca Iſlands, and endeavour to call at Timor, for the purpoſe of watering, and getting ſuch other articles as could be had there; as by the time we could arrive among thoſe iſlands, the eaſterly wind would be ſet in ſtrong; and from thence, to have proceeded as far as I could with the proviſions I had, either to the Mauritius, or the Cape of Good Hope: we therefore could not afford to loſe much time in an attempt to call at Norfolk Iſland; three weeks, however, we perſevered in endeavouring to reach it, and had arrived within twenty-five leagues of it, when the wind ſet in ſtrong from the eaſtward. I now called the officers and the maſter of the ſhip together, to conſider of our ſituation, with reſpect to water and proviſions. We had been fitted out in a very haſty and careleſs manner, with water-caſks built from old worm-eaten ſtaves, which had been laying expoſed to the ſun for more than a year; ſo that by the time we had arrived within the above diſtance of the iſland, we had

CHAP. IX. 1791. had loſt by leakage full three weeks water, and had every reaſon to fear the loſs of much more from the ſame cauſe: it was not therefore time, with a heavy ſailing veſſel, to attempt beating to windward, in order to reach a place, which we knew we could not gain without a change of wind; and the very great difficulty and uncertainty of getting a ſupply of water there, determined every one's opinion in favour of bearing away to the northward: much time had already been loſt in making the attempt, we therefore ſteered to the northward, intending to paſs between the New Hebrides and Nova Caledonia; but in this intention we were diſappointed. April 23. Upon making the Iſle of Pines, (on the 23d of April,) which lies off the ſouth end of New Caledonia, (the iſland bore when we made it north,) the wind blew ſo ſtrong from the northward of eaſt, that we could not weather and paſs to the eaſtward of it. We had not Cook's Second Voyage on board, ſo that we had no account of this land, and as I had always underſtood that the Iſle of Pines was a ſmall inconſiderable ſpot, with many tall pine-trees upon it, we all concluded, that, what afterwards proved really the iſland was the land which Captain Cook had called the Prince of Wales's Foreland, and is the ſouth-weſt part of New Caledonia. We had moreover farther reaſon to believe this to be the caſe, from the circumſtance, that from this land to the ſouth-eaſt there lay a low iſland on which grew high pine-trees; from which circumſtance, we conſidered it to be the Iſle of Pines; and being unable, as I have already obſerved, to weather it, we bore away, intending to run along the weſtern coaſt of New Caledonia: this miſtake had nearly proved of fatal conſequences to us, for after we had coaſted along for a few leagues, and had been employed in taking angles for aſcertaining the ſhape of the coaſt, as we ſailed along it, land was diſcovered a-head; upon which the courſe was altered: ſoon afterwards, more land was ſeen ſtill a-head, and as we hauled up to avoid it, more

land,

land and broken keys or low iſlands were diſcovered a-head, and as far to windward as the eye could reach; we conſequently hauled our wind, and ſtood towards it, in order to diſcover our ſituation with more certainty: we ſoon found that we had ſailed into a very deep bay, formed between the Iſle of Pines to the eaſtward, and a moſt dangerous reef on the weſt, which extended from the high land or ſouth-weſt point of New Caledonia, not leſs than ten or eleven leagues, and was nearly that diſtance in a ſouth-weſt direction from the high part of the Iſle of Pines: in this ſituation there was no alternative; for we muſt either beat to windward to go round the reef, find a channel through it, or go on ſhore: the firſt, therefore, we determined to attempt, ſo we made all the ſail the ſhip could bear, and ſtood towards the reef, and it being then evening we wiſhed to aſcertain our exact ſituation before dark. We found the reef compoſed of a number of low iſlands or keys, and many rocks above the water, and of conſiderable breadth; in ſhort, there was not the ſmalleſt hope of paſſing through it, the ſea broke very high on every part of it, which we could reach with the eye from the maſt-head. As ſoon as it was dark, and we thought ourſelves near enough to it, we tacked, and kept every perſon upon deck during the night. We had, during the time we were running to leeward and making obſervations on the coaſt, paſſed by a number of low iſlands, covered with trees or ſhrubs, and had obſerved they were all ſurrounded with a reef, which the ſea broke upon, and among theſe little iſlands were many reefs, which appeared only by the breaking of the ſea: we were then thoroughly ſenſible of our miſtake, and that the land which we had taken from its extent to be a part of New Caledonia, was the Iſle of Pines; and that the height which we had ſteered down for, and thought to be a part of the coaſt which Captain Cook had not ſeen, was what he called the Prince of Wales's Foreland, and was the fartheſt land

1791. he had ſeen to the weſtward. We kept working to windward all night; between that extenſive reef to the weſtward, and thoſe ſmall keys and reefs which lay between us and the land, and of which I have ſince obſerved, Captain Cook, in his ſketch, takes no notice; the outer reef he marks, but leaves a large open ſpace between it and the land, which deſcribes the reef to be a round cluſter of rocks above and under water: he probably had not an opportunity of obſerving this dangerous place ſo near to the land as we had: there may be a channel to the leeward between the inner end of this reef and the ſhore, but it had very little the appearance of it; as we ſaw many low ſhrubby iſlands between us and the ſhore, to which they were probably connected by a reef under water, which, at the diſtance we were from it, could not be aſcertained. At

April 24. day-light in the morning of the 24th, we obſerved with no ſmall degree of pleaſure, that we had gained ground to windward; but this we knew was not owing to any weatherly qualities in the ſhip, but to the wind having varied ſeveral points during the night, and of which we had availed ourſelves: by noon we were ſo far to windward as to perceive the utmoſt extent of the reef to the ſouthward under our lee, and we had a proſpect of weathering it; we, of courſe, carried a preſs of ſail, and did weather it about two or three miles: when a-breaſt of it, the higheſt part of the Iſle of Pines was juſt to be ſeen above the horizon, which was very clear, and it bore by compaſs north-eaſt by north, diſtant ten or eleven leagues; having paſſed without the reef, at noon we obſerved our latitude to be 23° 7′ ſouth, ſo that the ſouth extremity of this dangerous reef lies in latitude 23° 00′ ſouth nearly: as ſoon as we were fairly clear of this ſituation, we bore away to the weſtward.

The Iſle of Pines, ſo far from being an inconſiderable ſpot, as I had believed, is not leſs than 14 or 15 miles over in a ſouth-eaſt and north-weſt direction; it is high and remarkable in the middle, being quite a pointed hill, ſloping towards the extremities, which are very low; the low land had many tall pine-trees upon it; theſe trees, in length, ſeemed exceedingly to ſurpaſs thoſe of Norfolk Iſland, but their branches did not appear to extend ſo far from the body of the tree.

We continued to ſteer to the north-weſtward without ſeeing any thing, and when we had reached the latitude of 19° 00′ ſouth, which is ſuppoſed to be as far to the northward as any part of New Caledonia extends, we hauled to the north-eaſt, ſo as to paſs between Queen Charlotte's Iſlands and that large track of land which had been ſeen by Monſieurs Bougainville and Surville formerly, and lately by Lieutenant Shortland, in the Alexander Tranſport, and more recently ſtill by Lieutenant Ball, in his Majeſty's armed tender Supply. The part ſeen by Lieutenant Ball is, I believe, more to the ſouthward, than that ſeen by the French, and is no doubt the ſame as that ſeen by Lieutenant Shortland; but the one ſailed along the eaſt, the other along the weſt ſide of it. It is highly probable that there is a continuation of the ſame track, and it is farther probable, by the breaks which have been obſerved in it, that it is a chain of iſlands extending in a ſouth-eaſt and north-weſt direction, and very nearly connected with the coaſt of New Guinea. On the 5th of May we were near as far to the northward as the ſouthermoſt part of this land, but did not ſee it, being by our longitude in 163° 33′ eaſt, which is more than a degree to the eaſtward of the ſouth part ſeen by the Supply; the weather was now dark and gloomy, with heavy rain at times, and light, variable winds. Queen Charlotte's Iſlands certainly lie farther to the eaſtward than has generally been ſuppoſed, otherwiſe we muſt have made them, for we croſſed their latitude in 163° 30′ eaſt longitude, which is nearly what the weſt end of May 5.

Egmont

CHAP. IX.

Egmont Iſland is ſaid to lie in. On the 8th of May we had a number of very good obſervations of the ſun and moon's diſtance, by which our longitude was at noon 163° 32′ eaſt, and the latitude at the ſame time 9° 33′ ſouth. On the 10th, in the morning, we ſaw land bearing weſt-north-weſt, diſtant about ſeven leagues; we bore down to make it plain, and it proved to be a cluſter of ſmall iſlands, five in number; they were well covered with trees, amongſt which we thought we obſerved the cocoa-nut. Theſe iſlands, when we firſt diſcovered them, appeared as only one, which induced me to think it might be Carteret's Iſland; and had it not been that by going nearer we diſcovered that there were five of them, and that they did not at all anſwer the deſcription of that given by Captain Carteret, I ſhould have concluded that it was ſo, although the longitude of his iſland muſt have been very erroneous, had it been the caſe. Their latitude is 8° 26′ ſouth, which is nearly the latitude of Carteret's; and their longitude, deduced from the preceding day's obſervations, is 163° 18′ eaſt. We ſteered from them directly to the northward, in order to ſee if we could diſcover Gower's Iſland, which Captain Carteret ſays lies about ten or eleven leagues to the northward of Carteret's; but as we ſaw nothing, I concluded they had never been ſeen before; I therefore called them Stewart's Iſlands, as a mark of my reſpect for the honourable Keith Stewart.

1791. May 8. 10th.

The two largeſt of the iſlands juſt mentioned I judged to be about three miles in length; whether they were inhabited or not we could not diſcover: we paſſed to windward of them, and not being ſituated conveniently for making diſcoveries, or exploring unknown lands, we made the beſt of our way to the northward: juſt after we left theſe iſlands, we paſſed through a very ſtrong ripling of a tide or current, and ſaw the

1791. May 12. the trunks of ſeveral large trees in the water. On the 12th, at nine o'clock in the morning, the man at the maſt-head diſcovered breakers on the ſtarboard bow, and not more than ſix miles diſtant; ſoon after, breakers were ſeen on the ſtarboard quarter, and on the beam, extending in the direction of eaſt-ſouth-eaſt and weſt-north-weſt five leagues diſtant: at eleven, breakers were ſeen on the larboard beam, in different patches about two miles long, and lying parallel to thoſe on the ſtarboard ſide; on this we brought to, and ſounded with 130 fathoms of line, but had no ground. This had the appearance of a dangerous cluſter of ſhoals, for being ſituated in a climate where it ſeldom blows ſo ſtrong as to raiſe a large ſea, a ſhip might in the night, without a very good look-out, be in very great danger before they could be perceived: they appeared to be ſand ſhoals, and very little below the ſurface; the paſſage we ſailed through is in latitude 6° 52′ ſouth, and longitude 161° 06′ eaſt: theſe patches ſhould not be croſſed in the night: I called them Bradley's Shoals. The variation was here 8° 01′ eaſt.

14th. On the 14th, at day-light in the morning, we ſaw land, and at ſunriſe we obſerved this land to be a number of iſlands; ſome were of conſiderable extent, and many of a ſmaller ſize. Thirty-two were diſtinctly counted from the maſt-head, bearing from north-weſt half north to north-eaſt half eaſt; many of them were conſiderably diſtant, ſo far as to make it probable that we did not ſee the whole of this extenſive groupe. At ten o'clock we perceived ſix or ſeven canoes coming off, with large triangular ſails; a little after noon, one of them, with nine men in it, came up with us, although we did not ſhorten ſail: we could not perſuade them to come along-ſide, or touch the ſhip, but we threw a few beads and nails, and other trifles, into their boat, with which they appeared much pleaſed; and in return, they threw ſome pieces of

CHAP. IX.

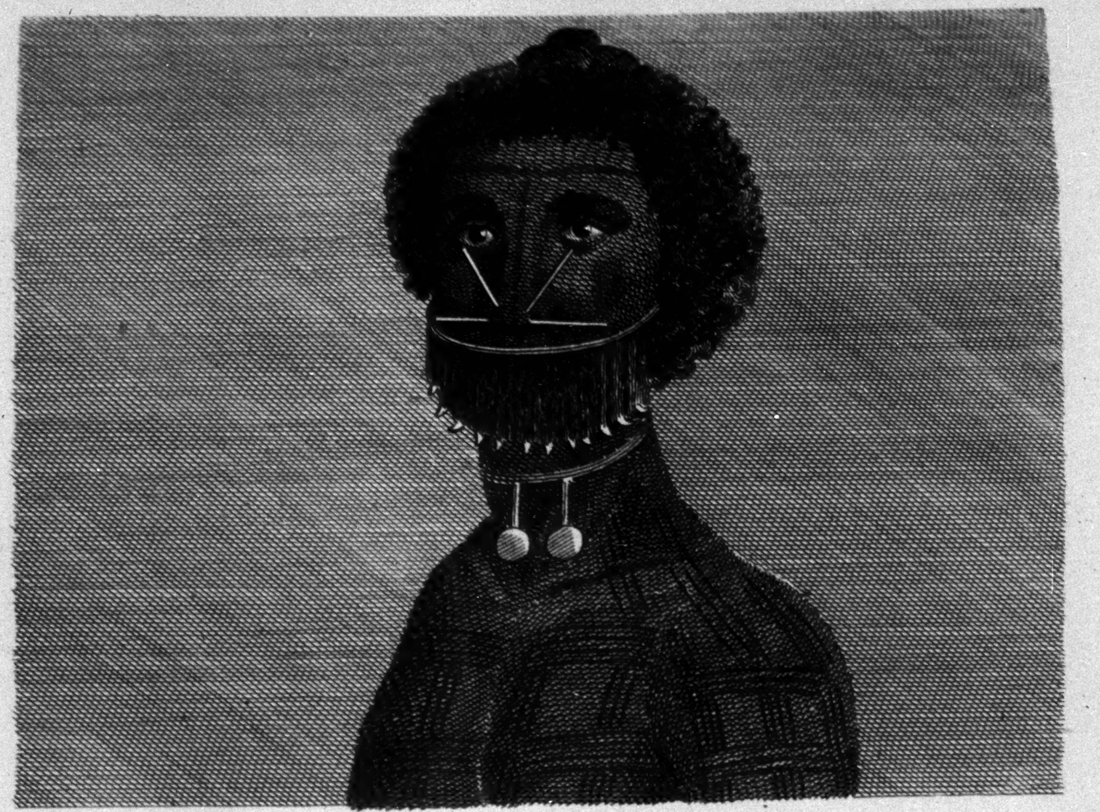
1791.

cocoa-nut on board; at one o'clock a freſh breeze ſprung up, and they left us. The men in this boat were a ſtout, clean, well made people, of a dark copper colour; their hair was tied in a knot on the back of their head, and they ſeemed to have ſome method of taking off their beards; for they appeared to us as if clean ſhaved, but they had an ornament, conſiſting of a number of fringes, like an artificial beard, which was faſtened on between the noſe and mouth, and cloſe under the noſe; to that beard hung a row of teeth, which gave them the appearance of having a mouth lower than their natural one; they had holes run through the ſides of the noſe into the paſſage, into which, as well as through the ſeptum, were thruſt pieces of reed or bone; their arms and thighs were marked in the manner deſcribed by Captain Cook, of ſome of the natives of the iſlands he viſited in theſe ſeas, called tatowing; and ſome were painted with red and white ſtreaks; they wore a wrapper round their middle. Their canoe was about 40 feet long; it was badly made, and had an out-rigger. The iſlands appeared very thickly covered with wood, among which the cocoa-nut was very diſtinguiſhable; I think it highly probable that there may be good anchorage amongſt them, but my ſituation would not admit of my examining into that matter. They lie in an eaſt and weſt direction along that ſide on which we ſailed (ſouth ſide), and their latitude on that ſide is 5° 30′ ſouth, the longitude from 159° 14′ eaſt to 159° 37′ eaſt *. On the 18th, at eight o'clock in the morning, we ſaw three ſmall iſlands bearing weſt-north-weſt, and very high land bearing ſouth-weſt: at eleven o'clock two more iſlands were in ſight from the maſt-head, and two ſmaller ones, which appeared no larger than rocks: at noon five iſlands and two rocks were to be ſeen; they ſeemed all to be connected by a reef which

---

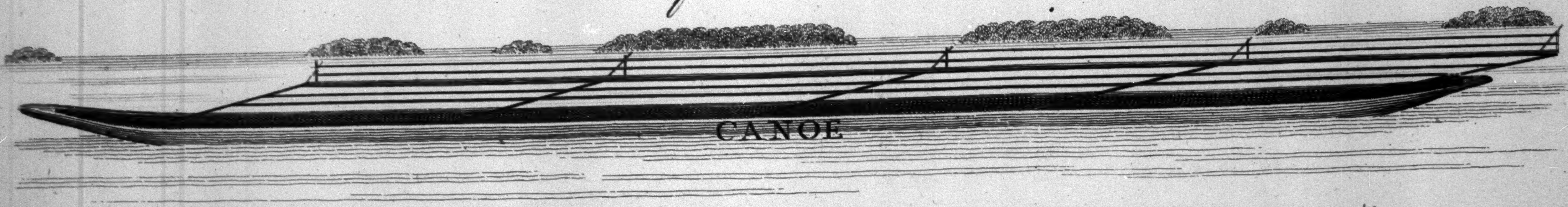
* Theſe iſlands I called Lord Howe's Groupe.

on

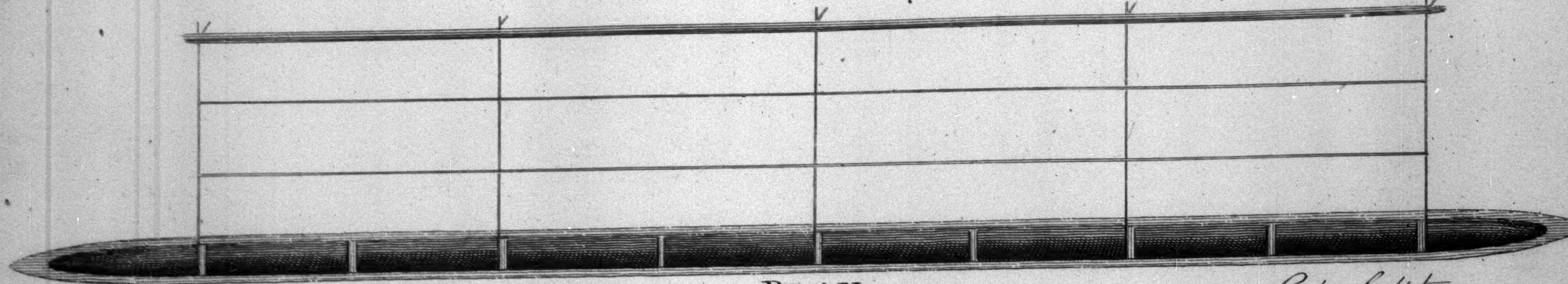


J. Cook sculp.

Man of Lord Howe's Group



CANOE



PLAN

J. Hunter del.t

Cooke sculpt.

Publish'd Sep.r 1-1792 by I. Stockdale Piccadilly

on the weſt ſide extended ſome diſtance from them; great part of a ſand bank within the reef appeared dry, and ſome natives were ſeen upon it; two canoes, with triangular ſails, endeavoured to reach the ſhip, but it blew very freſh, and we could not afford to loſe time. Theſe I took to be a part of Captain Carteret's nine iſlands; they ſeemed to lie in the direction of ſouth-eaſt and north-weſt. We ſailed round the ſouth end, from which, to the weſtward, a reef extends about two miles. The ſouthermoſt iſland lies in the latitude of 4° 53′ ſouth, and longitude 155° 20′ eaſt; the ſouth-weſternmoſt iſland is in 4° 50′ ſouth, and longitude 155° 13′ eaſt. The land ſeen in the ſouth-weſt was exceedingly high, and bore at noon ſouth-ſouth-weſt half weſt: at ſun-ſet, the extremes of the high land bore from ſouth by eaſt to weſt-ſouth-weſt, and ſeemed to terminate to the northward in a low woody point; about the middle part of this high land there is a conſiderable breach or opening, which had much the appearance of a ſtreight or paſſage through; and as I judge this is the land, along the weſt ſide of which Lieutenant Shortland, in the Alexander tranſport, ſailed, until he found an opening through which he paſſed to the eaſtward, I think it highly probable that this may be the ſtreight; particularly as he ſays, "That "ſoon after he was clear, and ſtretching to the north-eaſt, he fell in "with four iſlands, which he took to be part of Carteret's nine "iſlands *." This opening was interſected from two ſtations, and the run of the ſhip, and was found to lie in the latitude of 5° 25′ ſouth, and longitude 154° 30′ eaſt. Whether theſe iſlands, which I have laſt mentioned are Captain Carteret's nine iſlands, or thoſe Lieutenant Shortland ſaw, I will not be very poſitive; he ſays, they extended north-

---

* See Shortland's Journal and Charts in Phillip's Voyage, fourth Edition; and "Diſ-"coveries of the French," by M. Fleurieu, late miniſter of the French Navy: a very ingenious and able work on the diſcoveries of the French and Spaniards in the South Seas.

1791. weſt by weſt and ſouth-eaſt by eaſt; the direction is nearly the ſame, and the diſtance in that direction is fifteen leagues, and their number nine. We did not ſee much more than half that diſtance, in which ſeven only were to be ſeen. Our latitude, conſidering that he paſſed round the north end, and we the ſouth, will agree very well; and with reſpect to longitude, his was determined by the reckoning of the ſhip, mine by lunar obſervations, and the difference is only about a degree. May 19. At day-light in the morning of the 19th, we ſaw Sir Charles Hardy's Iſland, bearing north 2° 00′ weſt, five leagues diſtant; and Winchelſea, (or Lord Anſon's Iſland, as marked in Captain Carteret's chart) ſouth 48° 00′ eaſt; this laſt was certainly the point which terminated the high land before-mentioned, for we had kept it in ſight ſince the evening before, and were a-breaſt of it at two in the morning, and were not more than fourteen or fifteen miles from it. Its latitude will be 5° 08′ ſouth, and the longitude 154° 31′ eaſt. Sir Charles Hardy's Iſland is low, level, and covered with wood; its latitude is 4° 41′ ſouth, and the longitude 154° 20′ eaſt. At noon on the 19th, we ſaw high land bearing from weſt to weſt-north-weſt. It was very cloudy over it, ſo that we could not ſee its extent to the northward; it was diſtant eight or nine leagues: the weſt point of it was, no doubt, Cape Saint George, 20th. New Ireland. At ſix in the afternoon of the 20th, Cape Saint George bore north 80° 00′ weſt, five leagues diſtant. We had light winds during the night, and in the morning, the land was ſo covered with clouds that we could not diſcover the extremity or point of the Cape; we ſteered to the north-north-weſt, having found, from the general bearings of the land, that we had been ſet to the ſouthward during the night: at noon it was clearer, and the Cape bore north 14° 00′ eaſt ten or eleven miles diſtant. We had very light and baffling airs during the 21ſt. night of the 21ſt, which made me apprehenſive, from what Captain

1791.

Carteret has ſaid of ſtrong weſterly currents here, that as we had now opened St. George's Channel, we might be ſet paſt both Gower and Carteret's harbours, before we could get as much wind as would command the ſhip; for ſhe was as dull and heavy ſailing a veſſel as I ever was embarked in, and in my opinion was wholly unfit for the ſervice ſhe was now employed in. When any other veſſel would be going three knots with a light wind, we could ſcarcely give her ſteerage-way. In the evening, finding, as I apprehended, the ſhip ſetting faſt to the weſtward, we hauled up to the eaſtward, in order to keep as near the Cape as poſſible, until day-light. That night alſo we had little wind, and that was variable; we kept her head as much as poſſible to the eaſtward, and at eight in the morning the Cape bore north 16° 00′ eaſt, diſtant eleven or twelve miles; which was much farther off than I wiſhed; at the ſame time, a projecting point on the coaſt of New-Britain bore weſt north-weſt: we were becalmed moſt of this day, and were ſtill ſetting to the weſtward. In the afternoon of the 22d, a very light breeze ſprung up from the eaſtward, with which we endeavoured to get within Wallis's iſland; we ſounded frequently, but had no ground with 130 fathoms of line: this ſituation was truly diſtreſſing, for although we had every thing ſet, we could not force the ſhip more than a knot and a half through the water, and had the mortification to ſee that we were driving to the weſtward: about two o'clock the breeze freſhened up a little, and although we were within three miles of anchorage in Gower's harbour, we ſaw plainly we could not fetch it; however I had hope, as Carteret's harbour is laid down in the chart four leagues to leeward of it, that we might with eaſe get in there; we had a boat in ſhore at this time ſounding, and it was the general opinion, that unleſs we bore away ſoon, we ſhould not run the diſtance before dark, we therefore made the ſignal for the boat, and bore away.

May 22.

The northermoſt point in ſight from the ſhip was, according to the ſketch made in the Swallow, Point Carteret; we conſidered the north-weſt entrance as near to that point, but intended of courſe to avail ourſelves of being to windward to go in at the ſouthermoſt paſſage. The diſtance, as I have already mentioned, being marked four leagues from Wallis's Iſland to Carteret harbour, unfortunately deceived us; and Cocoa-nut iſland being low, when compared with the high land under which it lies, appeared like a low point projecting from it: we were paſt the ſouth entrance of this harbour, before we thought ourſelves within ſix miles of it, and had now a ſtrong ſouth-eaſt wind, which two hours ſooner, would have enabled us to have got into Engliſh Cove, in Gower harbour: the diſtance from harbour to harbour did not appear to me to be more than two leagues, if ſo much. It was our misfortune, that the diſtances marked in the ſketch juſt mentioned, did not agree with our judgment of them; and there is another error which I muſt take the liberty to correct, and which alſo tended to deceive us; Point Carteret, in the Swallow's ſketch, is the extremity of the land weſtward, which can be ſeen from a ſhip off Gower harbour, and the land from that point inclines immediately to the northward; but there is a point which lies north-weſt from Point Carteret, not leſs than four miles, and from that point the land trends to the northward: this point comes ſuddenly down from very high land to a round bluff point, which is ſteep to, and Point Carteret is low and woody. We diſcovered our miſtake when it was too late to recover it in ſuch a veſſel.

We ran along the ſhore cloſe in, and endeavoured to find anchorage; we had alſo a boat a-head for the ſame purpoſe, but although we went ſometimes within a cable's length of the ſhore, we could not find bottom. Our ſituation now became ſerious, for our water was become ſhort, and we had yet a long voyage before us; it was now abſolutely neceſſary to look for ſome ſupply of that article, and as we were only victualled for ſixteen weeks when we left Port Jackſon, and had already been eight at ſea, we could not on that account loſe much time, leſt we ſhould meet with calms as we came near the Line. Full allowance of water, in ſo ſultry a climate, and ſo crowded a ſhip, was a matter which I was exceedingly anxious about, for without a ſufficiency of that article, ſickneſs amongſt the people was much to be dreaded. Before we went any farther to the northward, I was determined to try the coaſt of New-Britain; we therefore ſtood over for that land, intending, if poſſible, to find an anchoring place. On the morning of the 22d, we came within three or four leagues of the ſhore; it then fell calm, and the boat was ſent in ſhore with Mr. Keltie, the maſter of the Sirius, who had directions to make a certain ſignal if he found anchorage: in the afternoon, a light breeze ſprung up, which enabled us to ſtand in and meet the boat. Mr. Keltie reported, that the part of the coaſt which he had been in with, was ſtreight, and had no appearance of any ſort of bay, or the ſmalleſt probability of anchorage; that he had frequently tried to get bottom within three cables length of the ſhore, but without ſucceſs. On this coaſt we found a regular tide, its general direction was ſouth-eaſt and north-weſt. The hills mentioned by Captain Carteret, on the coaſt of New-Britain, by the name of the Mother and Daughters, are very remarkable; a little way within the ſouth-eaſtermoſt Daughter, there is a ſmall flat-top'd hill, or volcano, which all the time we were within ſight of it, emitted vaſt columns of black ſmoke. On this coaſt there appeared many extenſive ſpots of cleared, and apparently cultivated land. The next ſtep that was to be purſued, was to examine the Duke of York's Iſland, and on the night of the 22d, we ran off the eaſt point of it, with a light air from the weſtward, and brought to till day-light;

1791.

May 22.

1791.

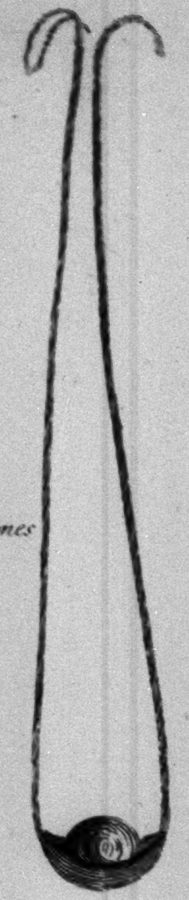
having been near enough to the ſouth-eaſt part of the iſland the whole of the preceding day, to diſcover that there was little proſpect of anchorage on that ſide. In the night we heard breakers at no great diſtance from us; this we found at day-light was a ſpit, which runs a ſmall diſtance off the eaſt point of the iſland. May 23. On the 23d in the morning, we had very little wind, and the boat was ſent in ſhore to ſound; the ſhip was at this time about a mile and a half off. Many canoes came off, with every appearance of friendly diſpoſition; we gave them a few trifles, and they ſeemed to inſiſt on making a return for every thing they received; cocoa-nuts, yams, and bananas, were held out on the point of a long ſpear, or pole, for they ſeemed afraid to touch the ſhip; the boat which was ſounding endeavoured to make them underſtand that we wanted water, and ſhewed a ſmall keg, intimating by ſigns that they wanted it filled; the people in one of the canoes went to the boat, received the keg, went immediately on ſhore, filled it, and brought it back to the boat: the officer then gave them another ſmall keg, which he meant as a preſent, but it was immediately ſent on ſhore by another canoe: in the mean time a breeze ſprung up, the boat ſteered along ſhore and the ſhip followed: the people who had taken the laſt keg, after having filled it, followed our boat with the utmoſt ſpeed, came up with her and delivered it; this I thought a ſtriking proof of the honeſty of theſe people, and it will particularly appear ſo, when it is conſidered, that the keg was hooped with iron.

As we ran round the weſtern ſide of the iſland, we obſerved a ſmall bay or cove, into which the boat went, followed by many canoes, and an immenſe multitude of people on the ſhore. We ſhortened ſail to give the boat time to examine it; ſhe very ſoon returned, and Mr. Keltie informed us that there was anchorage in the bay; we immediately made ſail into it, and at noon of the 23d, anchored in twenty-one fathoms ſoft ground, with ſome looſe patches of coral; here we were within a cable and a half of the beach. In the afternoon, we ſent the boats armed to look for freſh water; a vaſt multitude of the natives were by this time aſſembled on the ſhore, and the bay was filled with canoes; in conſequence of which we got the ſhip's guns loaded and ready; (ſhe mounted ſix three-pounders) but although they were exceedingly clamorous, they were ſtill apparently well diſpoſed; they ſhewed the officer in the boat how to find water by digging holes in the ſandy beach, in the manner frequently practiſed in the Weſt-Indies; we followed their advice, and ſunk a caſk in the ſand; the water flowed into it, but was too much mixed with the ſea water to be uſed. Some of the natives, however, afterwards pointed out another place, from which the freſh water iſſued in a conſiderable ſtream, out of chaſms in the rocky face of a high bank: this diſcovery ſet our people upon farther ſearches, and they found ſeveral ſuch diſcharges from the ſide of the bank, enough to anſwer our purpoſe, if the natives remained quiet and friendly.

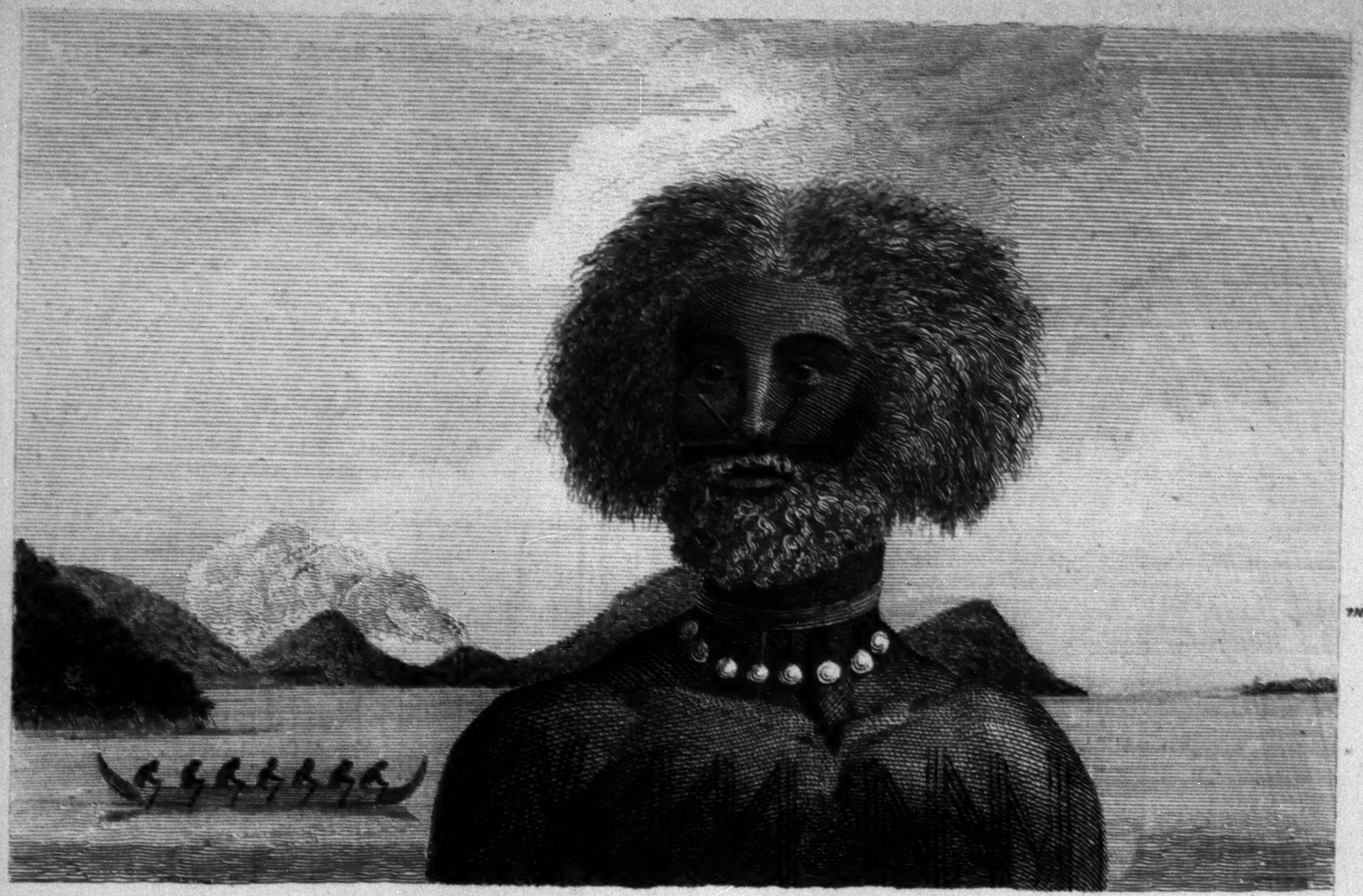
This buſineſs I was particularly deſirous we might be able to effect, without being under the neceſſity of convincing them of our ſuperiority in arms. The firſt day was ſpent in endeavouring to ſhew them, that we were deſirous of a friendly intercourſe with them, and that we wanted nothing but water, which they could well ſpare: however, on diſcovering that water was to be had, we were of courſe determined to have as much as might be neceſſary for our purpoſe, and by ſuch means as might be found neceſſary and effectual. This firſt night there was a very ſtrict look-out kept, as well by the natives as by us; they had a regular watch-word, which they ſung out in a very pleaſing and muſical

manner,

CHAP. IX. 1791. manner, and it was anſwered by thoſe on the next poſt, and ſo all round the ſkirt of the wood. The next morning we loaded one boat with empty caſks, and had the other armed, to lie off the ſhore and cover the people employed filling water; the ſhip's guns were loaded with round and grape ſhot, and were within leſs than two cables length of the watering-place; twelve men, with ſmall arms, attended on ſhore with the waterers. The watering buſineſs was now begun, and might have ſatisfied the natives what our buſineſs was there; however, their numbers increaſed to ſuch a degree, all armed, and they were ſo very troubleſome, that very little work could be done in the watering. An old man, who was powdered all over with a white powder, and who ſeemed to poſſeſs great authority and influence amongſt his countrymen, diſpoſed them to be more and more troubleſome; preſents were offered him, but he rejected every thing with a very ſurly and determined air; in ſhort, he ſeemed reſolved that we ſhould not fill water, or remain upon their territory; he carried every appearance of an intention to diſpute the point by force; every means were uſed to pleaſe this old fellow, but without effect; at laſt ſome ſtones were thrown from a ſling, but this was not done until the principal part of the natives had retired to ſome diſtance from the place where our people were employed; the men who were armed for the protection of the waterers, ſtood the whole time with their arms ready to fire at a moment's notice, and the natives, ignorant of what the muſquets were, had certainly taken them for clubs. Some of the ſtones, which they threw, came with the force of a ſhot from a gun among the ſailors. The conſequence of this unmerited attack was, that the officer was obliged to fire, the covering boat fired, and a few ſhot were fired from the ſhip: at this time, there were thirty or forty canoes about the ſhip, full of people; their terror and conſternation at the noiſe, and probably the effect of the guns, was ſuch, that many leaped from their boats overboard, and ſwam under water as far as they were able; ſuch guns as were fired from the ſide on which the canoes were, were pointed well over them, being more intended to intimidate than deſtroy. This firing occaſioned a general diſperſion of the natives, and the filling of water was carried on with eaſe and expedition; we received on board that afternoon about ſeven tons. The next morning, before the boats went on ſhore, we fired a few grape ſhot into the woods, and the boats landed without ſeeing any of the natives; at the ſame time we warped the ſhip within a cable's length of the watering-place, and ſecured her head and ſtern for covering the party on ſhore; the covering boat was directed to fire whenever any of the natives were ſeen in the woods over the watering party, which, in the courſe of the day, they had frequent occaſion to do; many canoes came into the bay this day, but kept at an awful diſtance, holding up green boughs as a ſignal of peace and amity; to ſome we made ſigns to go away; to others, who ventured a little nearer, we ſhewed ſigns of friendſhip, and made them perfectly underſtand, that our firing was occaſioned by their ſlinging of ſtones among our people, who were watering: after theſe hoſtilities, our watering went on without the ſmalleſt interruption, except that the covering boat had occaſion ſometimes to fire a few muſquets into the woods over the watering place. In four days we compleated our water, and on the laſt evening, as the ſailors were coming from the ſhore, a number of the natives from the woods right above the watering place, came down to the beach with green boughs in their hands, bringing with them cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, &c. accompanied by a ſong of friendſhip: they ſeemed earneſtly to wiſh for a reconciliation, and took every means in their power to teſtify their concern for what had happened; a boat was ſent on ſhore to meet them, with a green branch in the bow, and the boat's crew were deſired to ſpread open their arms when they came near the breach, to ſhew they were well diſpoſed to peace. When the boat landed, the natives retired back a little, but not out of ſight; having piled up upon the beach their peace-offering, which conſiſted of yams, cocoa-nuts, plantains, bananas, ſugar-cane, and ſome other articles: on the top of this pile was laid a ſmall living male and female dog, with their mouths and feet tied: (they appeared to be of the ſmall terrier kind) in the middle of the heap was ſtuck in the ſand, a young tree of the palm kind, upon a branch of which were hung a number of braded lines, like what is called by ſeamen, *ſennit*, and much of the ſame colour, being made of the bark of a particular tree: what this could mean we were wholly at a loſs to comprehend, unleſs, as the head of this young tree was deſignedly bent down by the lines above-mentioned, it was meant as a token of ſubmiſſion; be that as it might, they received the boat's crew, &c. with every demonſtration of a true concern for what had happened; and I fear and believe they had much cauſe to be ſorry, for I think ſome muſt have loſt their lives by the grape ſhot from the ſhip. It is much to be regretted, that after having ſeen us employed in getting what we wanted, in doing which every perſon was completely employed, and not the moſt diſtant appearance of inſult, or any ſort of provocation had been offered them, they could not have deſiſted from hoſtility until ſome kind of offence had been offered, a circumſtance which, during the whole time, was moſt particularly guarded againſt in thoſe employed on ſhore: but from an ignorance of the effect of our arms, and from their very ſuperior numbers, they were inclined to be inſolent and troubleſome; our ſailors on ſhore were ſo very few, when compared with their numbers, that it became abſolutely neceſſary to reſent the firſt unprovoked offence which they gave, and thereby to convince them, before it might be too late, that although their numbers far exceeded

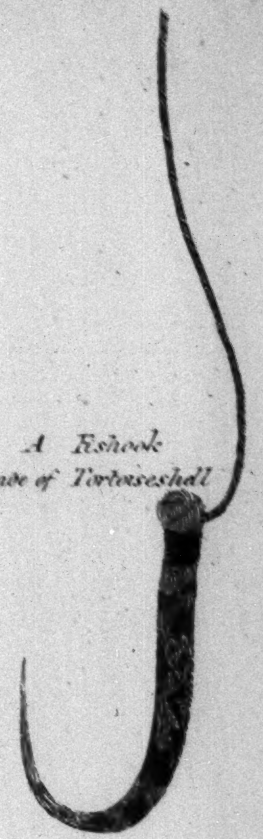


A Sling
for throwing Stones

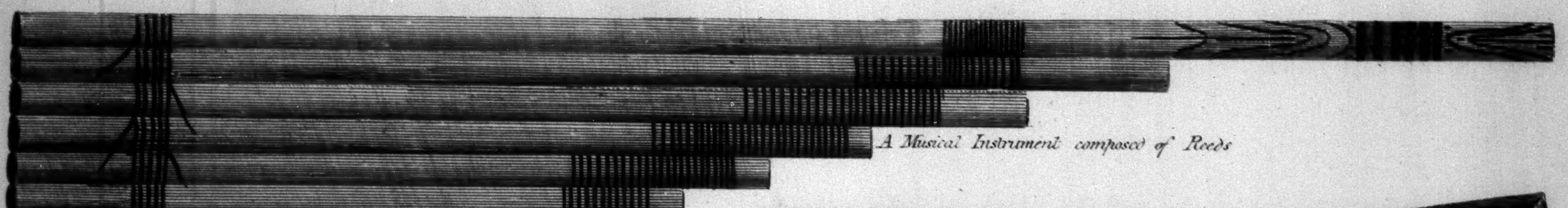


J. Hunter del.

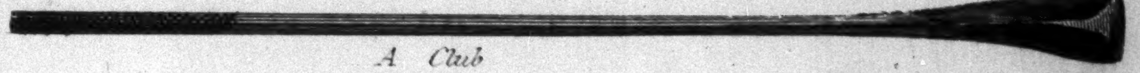
A Man of the Duke of York's Island.



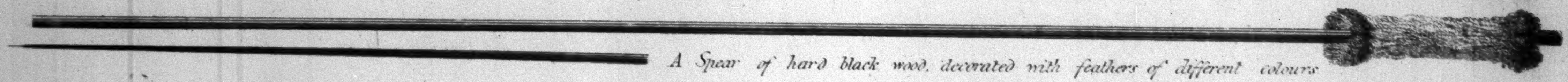
A Fishook
made of Tortoiseshell



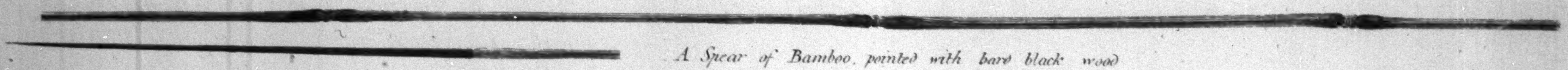
A Musical Instrument composed of Reeds



A Club



A Spear of hard black wood, decorated with feathers of different colours



A Spear of Bamboo, pointed with bare black wood

Publish'd Sept. 10. 1792 by John Stockdale, Piccadilly

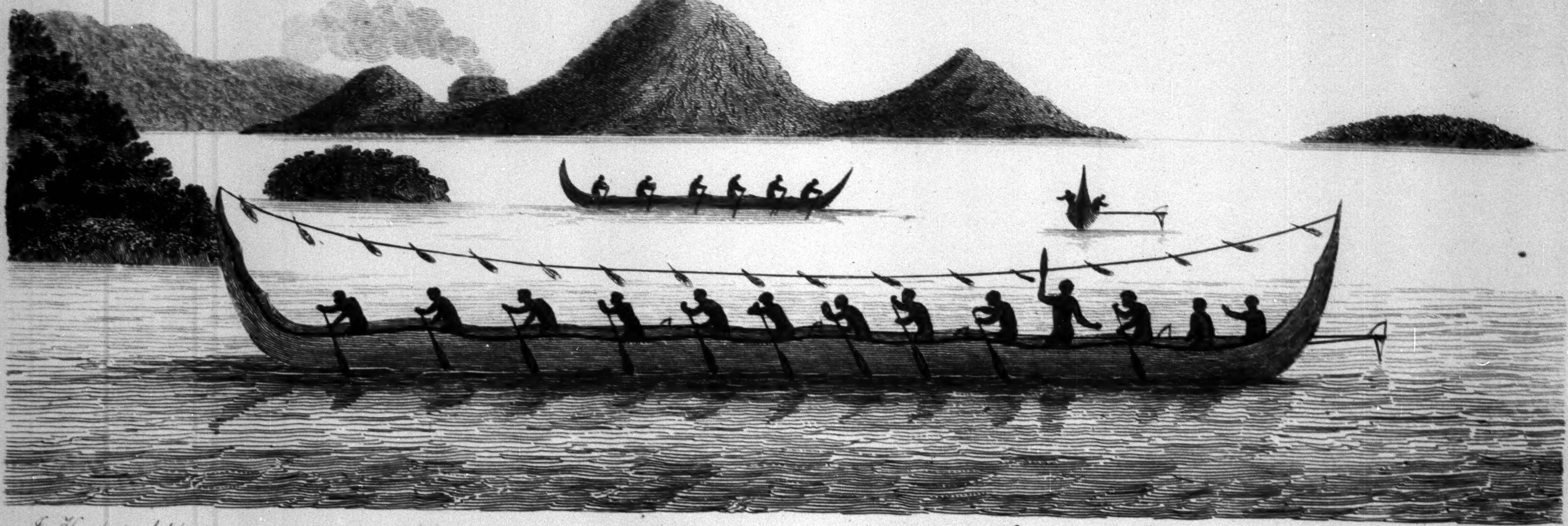
CHAP. IX.
1791.

ceeded ours, their real force was very inferior. After peace had been re-eſtabliſhed on ſhore, the conk ſhell was ſounded, which is the ſignal whereby they aſſemble conſiderable numbers; and in a very ſhort time, they appeared coming from all parts of the wood round the bay, and were met by thoſe who had been the means of bringing about a reconciliation, with a ſong of friendſhip, in which the whole joined, and which was really harmonious and very pleaſing: the canoes crowded the bay from different parts of the iſland, and were as familiar as ever, except that they would not now venture on board, which many had done before this quarrel: every boat brought a green bough, that was conſpicuouſly held up; they alſo brought many things to barter, and were pleaſed with ſuch trifles as we had to give them in return. They are, I believe, the only people in thoſe ſeas, who do not ſet a value upon iron work, in preference to any other thing; beads or looking-glaſſes they were not much pleaſed with, but rags of white linen, ſtrips of ſcarlet cloth, or any thing of gay colours, they were very anxious to have: nails they would not accept at all.

The natives of the Duke of York's Iſland are a ſtout, robuſt, well made people, of a light copper colour; I ſaw none who could be called black; they go entirely naked; the hair is woolly, but it is ſo managed by ſome ſort of greaſe or ointment, and a white or red powder with which they dreſs it, that it hangs on ſome like ſo many candle wicks, or rather like the thrums of a new mop reverſed, or turned upſide down; they are generally as fully powdered as a beau dreſſed for an aſſembly; ſome have their hair of a yellow, ſun burnt colour, others quite red, as if powdered wholly with the true marechall; none are ſeen with the hair of its natural colour. This yellow or red appearance, I believe, may be occaſioned by this univerſal method of powder-ing, for the powder ſeems to be made from burnt ſhells, or coral, and is really a kind of lime; they generally carry a ſmall goard or box filled with it about them, and when they are hoſtilely diſpoſed, they frequently take a quantity of this powder into the hollow of the hand, from which, with a ſtrong blaſt from the mouth, they blew it before them; and at a ſmall diſtance it has exactly the appearance of firing gunpowder, and no doubt is meant as a token of defiance. This practice is certainly uſed by the people of New Guinea, for Captain Cook takes notice of it when his boat landed on that coaſt near Cape Walſh, and ſays, that he ſuppoſes thoſe people have ſome method of producing fire in that ſudden manner. He alſo obſerves, that they had a bamboo or hollow cane from which fire and ſmoke was obſerved to iſſue; but I am diſpoſed to think, that the conjecture of having ſeen fire could only have been occaſioned by the appearance of ſmoke, which we naturally ſuppoſe to have proceeded from fire, for it is probable that fire and ſmoke being projected ſuddenly from any confined engine, would occaſion ſome degree of exploſion, although it is alſo probable that the gentlemen in the Endeavour's boat might not have been near enough to have heard it: however, after all, there is much reaſon to believe, that what Captain Cook ſaw upon that coaſt was the very practice uſed here, where we ſaw it in a much nearer interview, as ſome of our people had it blown in their eyes. Their chief, upon hoſtile occaſions, powdered his body all over, ſo that it was no difficult matter to diſcover him; they alſo upon ſuch occaſions painted their faces red; ſome had marks upon their arms and ſhoulders, occaſioned by ſcarifying thoſe parts in long ſtripes, and letting the ſore riſe above the ſurface of the ſkin; they frequently wore a bone or reed thruſt through the ſeptum of the noſe, and, like the natives of Lord Howe's Groupe, had alſo holes cut through the wings of the noſe, into which were fixed ſhort pieces of hollow reed, as ladies wear wires to keep the ears open when newly bored; into theſe hollows or rings they occaſionally ſtuck long pieces of reed, which are no doubt conſidered by them as ornamental. The men in general were well looking people, but ſuch of their women as I ſaw were very ordinary. The weapons uſed by the people of this iſland were lances of different kinds, ſome were made of a kind of ebony, or hard wood, about ten feet long, frequently ornamented with feathers of different colours at the upper end; others were made of bamboo, pointed with hard wood; the lance is thrown by hand, but they had not the uſe of the throwing ſtick, like the natives of New South Wales: they alſo, in their quarrels, uſed the ſling for throwing ſtones, which appears to be made of ſome tough dried leaf, ſeveral times doubled; the ſtrings were manufactured from ſome ſoft, ſilky, and fibrous plant; they throw a round hard pebble, of which they generally carried a ſmall nett full about them; the ſtones were about the ſize of a ſmall fowl's egg, and flew with much force, and great exactneſs from the ſling: they had alſo a long unhandy kind of club. They uſed, in fiſhing, a fiſhing ſpear, ſmall ſeine netts, and hooks and lines; their hooks were of tortoiſe-ſhell, from which circumſtance there can be no doubt but they have either turtle in their neighbourhood, or the tortoiſe upon the iſland. They had a kind of muſical inſtrument, with which they ſometimes, in their canoes alongſide, endeavoured to amuſe us; it was compoſed of a number of hollow reeds of different lengths, faſtened together, but they did not ſeem to be very expert in proportioning their lengths, or tuning them to harmony: ſound, not concord, ſeemed to be all they expected from it; they blew into the mouth of the different reeds by drawing the inſtrument acroſs their lips, and in that manner they produced ſounds: their vocal muſic was far more harmonious, although there was not much variety in it. Thoſe who were conſidered as people of diſtinction were always to be found in a better ſort of boat than common; and I obſerved, that when any canoe came near the ſhip with people of diſtinction on board, the higher ranks were always to be known by a man ſitting in the middle of the boat, who held a wooden inſtrument in his hand, reſembling in ſhape a common paddle, but handſomely carved and painted, with its handle finiſhed ſomething like the hilt of a ſword.

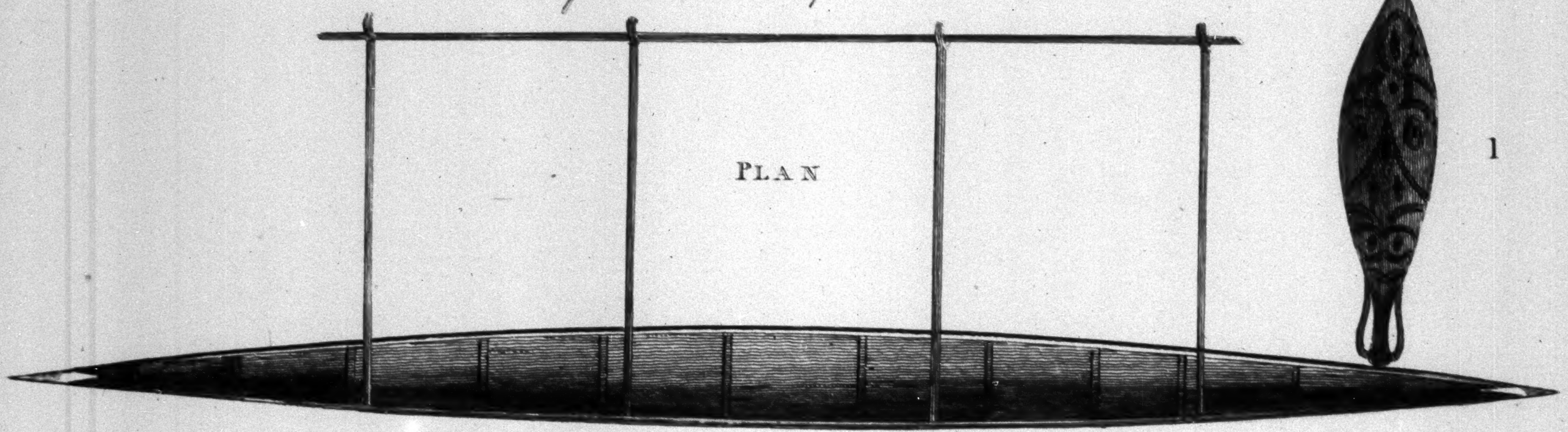
When thoſe people were diſpoſed to be kind and friendly, they frequently ſung out in one particular tone, in which, if there were five hundred together, the niceſt ear could not diſcover one to differ in the tone or particular note; and immediately after they all mimicked the barking of a dog: this was meant by them as a *certain proof* of their friendly diſpoſition. Before we had cauſe to quarrel with them many came on board and were ſhaved, an operation with which they were much pleaſed.

This iſland, by its appearance from the ſea, I judged to be about ten miles long, in a ſouth-ſouth-weſt and north-north-eaſt direction; it is not high, nor can it be called low land, but appears, when near it, of moderate height and flat: it is well covered with wood, and along the ſea ſhore were to be ſeen many huts of the natives, which were ſmall and neatly made; they were chiefly built of bamboo, and generally ſituated under the ſhade of a grove of cocoa-nut trees, with a fence or railing before them, within which the ground was well cleared and trodden, which gave their little habitations a very neat and cleanly appearance: I examined whilſt we lay there ſeveral neat and well fenced incloſures, in which were the plantain, banana, yam, ſugar cane, and ſeveral other articles, which they ſeem to take ſome pains to cultivate.



J. Hunter delt

Canoe of the Duke of Yorks Island



1

1. An Instrument carried in a boat to denote that there is some person of distinction on board her

Publish'd Sepr. 10. 1792 by John Stockdale, Piccadilly.

In ſhort, from what we could diſcover in the little time we remained there, I may venture to pronounce the iſland a perfect garden, as far as it can with propriety be called ſo in the hands of a people, who, no doubt, truſt chiefly to nature, and who are ignorant of the means of aſſiſting her, in the improvement of thoſe advantages, which ſhe has ſo bountifully beſtowed upon them.

Although our time here was ſo ſhort, we had an opportunity of knowing that this iſland produced cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, bananas, ſugar-cane, beetle-nut, mangos, bread-fruit, and guavas. There are alſo dogs, hogs, and the common fowls, and ſome ſpices, (the nutmeg I ſaw). Moſt of the natives chew the beetle, and with it uſed the chenam and a leaf, as practiſed in the Eaſt-Indies; by which the mouth appeared very red, and their teeth, after a time, became black.

Their canoes were neatly made, and of various ſizes, with an out-rigger to balance them. I ſent the carpenter of the Sirius on ſhore, to examine the different kinds of timber; he reported to me, that he found one tree which was hard, and had ſomething like the appearance of ebony, but was not quite ſo black; all the others he tried were ſoft and ſpongy, like the palm or cabbage tree.

The ſoil I think for richneſs beyond any I ever ſaw; it exceeded Norfolk Iſland in that reſpect: I had a man with me who had been upon that iſland from its firſt ſettlement, and who had cleared and cultivated land there; he aſſured me that this was ſuperior to any he had ever opened at that iſland.

On

CHAP. IX.

1791. May 27.

On the 27th in the morning, we prepared for ſailing; before we got under way, two Engliſh pointers, male and female, which had been given to the maſter of the ſhip at Port Jackſon, were ſent on ſhore, and given to a party of the natives, who ſeemed highly delighted with them; a cock and hen were alſo given to them. At ten o'clock we ſailed out of the bay. This bay was named Port Hunter; its latitude is 4° 7′ 30″ ſouth, and longitude 152° 42′ eaſt; although it is not large, it is convenient and ſafe at this ſeaſon; it lies on the north-weſt part of the iſland, and you may anchor in any part of it, from twenty-five to fifteen fathoms, but the ſhoal-water has the worſt ground: in twenty fathoms it is ſoft, with looſe patches of coral; the watering place is on the eaſt ſide, but as the tide flows up to the place from whence the freſh water iſſues, it is beſt to fill from half ebb to half flood. The water is ſo exceedingly ſoft, that there were ſome amongſt us who were ſo prejudiced againſt it that they believed it brackiſh; a quality I own which I never could diſcover in it; I was therefore of opinion that this prejudice could only have proceeded from knowing that the ſalt water was ſo very near it at high water time; ſuch opinions were not however confirmed from experience, as we never felt any inconvenience from it. The tide here ſeemed to riſe five or ſix feet, but the exact period of high water was not noticed, we had ſo much buſineſs to do.

We ſteered north-weſt by weſt, and weſt-north-weſt, and at eight o'clock in the morning, ſaw Sandwich Iſland, bearing north-weſt; at noon, our latitude was 3° 13′ ſouth, and longitude 150° 42′ eaſt; the ſouth-weſt point of Sandwich Iſland bearing north 45° weſt, diſtant from the neareſt ſhore ſix leagues. The latitude of the ſouth-weſt point will be 2° 58′ ſouth, and its longitude 150° 27′ eaſt. This iſland is of moderate height, and well covered with wood; we paſſed on the ſouth ſide; its general direction is about eaſt-north-eaſt and weſt-ſouth-weſt, and in that direction is about ſeven leagues in length: it appeared to be of conſiderable breadth at its eaſtern end, and narrow towards its weſtern, where it terminates in a narrow point, off which lies a ſmall woody iſland, with a narrow paſſage between that and the main iſland, to which it appears connected by a reef. On the north ſide of Sandwich Iſland, we obſerved the remarkable peaked hill mentioned by Captain Carteret, and alſo the correſponding one on the coaſt of New Ireland. As ſoon as we were paſſed Sandwich Iſland, we obſerved that the weſtern current, which we had hitherto experienced in this ſtrait, now took a turn more northerly, having opened the ſtrait, or paſſage between New Ireland and New Hanover, which laſt land we ſaw before night. We ſteered during the night weſt by north by compaſs, intending to paſs at a convenient diſtance from the Portland Iſlands, but at day-light we were obliged to haul up weſt by ſouth, having been more to the northward than we expected: we paſſed them at four miles diſtance; they are nine in number, are low and covered with wood; the center of them is in latitude 2° 38′ ſouth, and longitude 149° 08′ eaſt. During the night of the 30th, we had heavy dull weather, with light and variable winds, and the appearance of the wind threatened much rain, which, however, fell only in light ſhowers. At ſeven the next morning, we ſaw an iſland bearing north-weſt by weſt, and at eight, ſaw more land from the maſt-head, bearing weſt; thoſe we ſuppoſed to be part of the Admiralty Iſlands: the wind was now at ſouth-weſt, and we could not weather the ſouthermoſt, on which we bore away and paſſed between them. The ſmaller, which we left to leeward, was a pretty looking ſpot, of moderate height, its latitude was 2° 19′ ſouth, and longitude 147° 52′ eaſt. As we had ſeen much land, and in different directions, before dark, we determined to bring to for the night; it then fell calm, ſo that we had May 30.

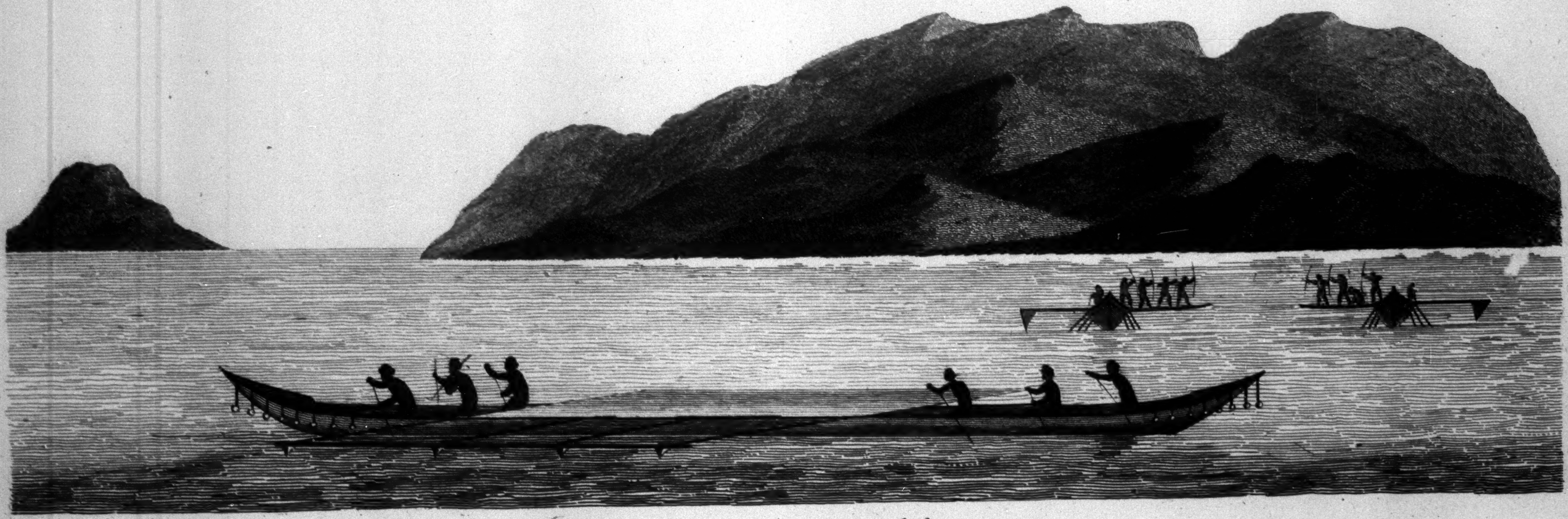
by

CHAP. IX.

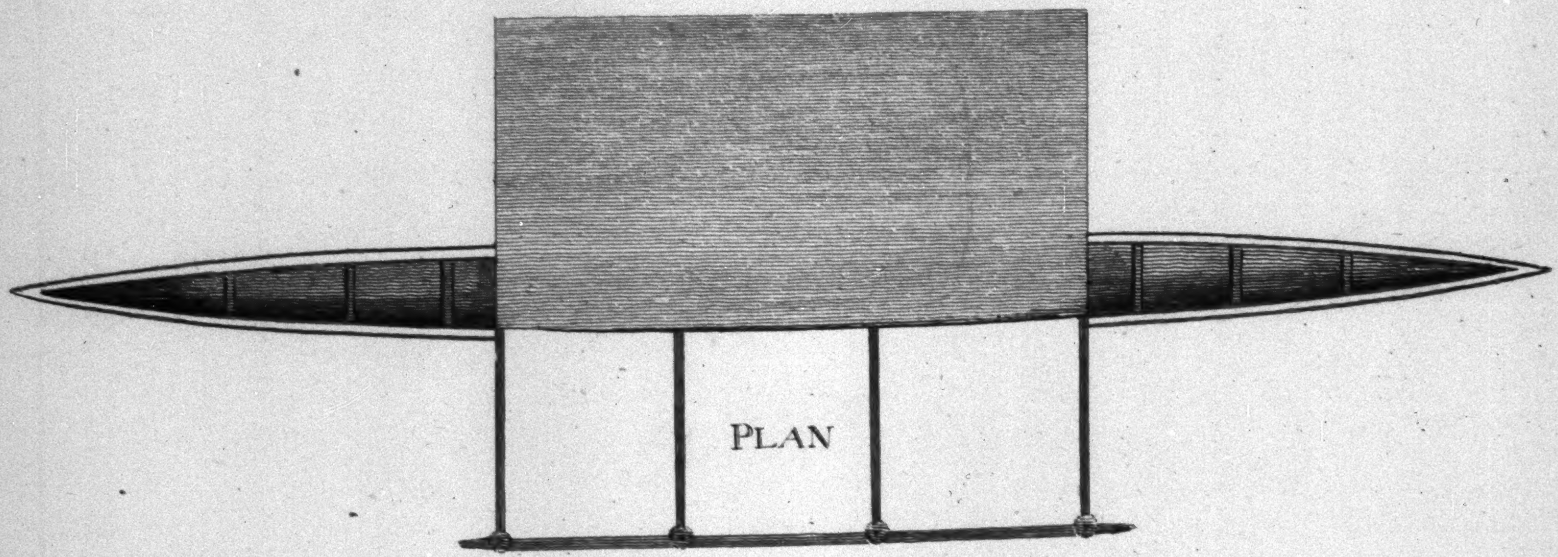
1791.

May 31.

by the morning only drifted a little with a current to the north-weſt. At day-light of the 31ſt, we ſaw much land to the northward and weſtward. Five large canoes came off from the neareſt iſland, in each of which were eleven men; ſix paddled, and five ſtood up in the center of the boat, who appeared to be of the better ſort, being painted and ornamented, and ſeemed as if intended for war; but when they came near, they ſhewed no hoſtile appearance: we invited them by ſigns to come on board, but they would not venture near the ſhip; they held up various articles, which they ſeemed deſirous of exchanging; ſuch as lines, ſhells, ornaments of different kinds, and bundles of darts or arrows: they were a ſtout well-looking people, rather darker than the natives of the Duke of York's Iſland; their hair appeared woolly, and and was knotted or tied upon the top of their head; they wore a wrapper round their waiſt. One of them made various motions for ſhaving, by holding up ſomething in his hand, with which he frequently ſcraped his cheek and chin; this led me to conjecture, that ſome European ſhip had been lately amongſt them, and I thought it not improbable, that it might have been Monſ. de la Perouſe, in his way to the northward from Botany-Bay. Their canoes appeared from forty to fifty feet long, were neatly made, and turned a little up at the extremities; there was a ſtage which lay acroſs the midſhips of the boat, and projected out ſome diſtance on one ſide; it was bent upwards a little at the outer end, to prevent its dipping in the water, by the motion of the boat; this ſtage ſeemed intended for the warriors to uſe their weapons upon: on the oppoſite ſide, was fitted in a different manner, an out-rigger to balance the boat; three of the rowers ſat before and three abaſt the ſtage, ſo that thoſe intended for battle were not at all incommoded by them. A heavy black ſquall coming on at this time, they all puſhed for the land, otherwiſe I believe we might have prevailed on them to come alongſide.



Canoe of the Admiralty Island



J. Hunter, del.^{t}

Published Sep.^{r} 1.st 1792, by Jn.^{o} Stockdale, Piccadilly.

The north-weſt end of this iſland is in latitude 2° 21′ ſouth; longitude 147° 28′ eaſt; and the ſouthermoſt point in ſight was in latitude 2° 28′ ſouth, and longitude 147° 33′ eaſt. A freſh breeze now ſprung up, and we wiſhed if poſſible to clear the iſlands before night: all ſail was made, and as we ran paſt this large iſland, we raiſed many others; in ſhort, land was ſeen in every direction; four iſlands were ſeen from the maſt-head, bearing eaſt-north-eaſt, and two low level iſlands a-head, between which there appeared an open paſſage; we ſteered for it, and at noon paſſed through it: its latitude is 2° 10′ ſouth; longitude 147° 26′ eaſt. At four in the afternoon, the weſtern extremity of a very long iſland bore weſt half ſouth, and we ſteered weſt-north-weſt, determined to run no farther during the night than we could ſee before dark. The night was very dark, with heavy rain, and a very light air of wind; at day-light the extremity of a very large iſland, bore from ſouth-eaſt to ſouth-weſt by ſouth; at noon the latitude obſerved was 1° 44′ ſouth, and the extremes of this iſland, as far as the eye could reach, bore from ſouth 23° 00′ eaſt, to ſouth 50° 00′ weſt, diſtant from the neareſt ſhore five leagues. This iſland is ſo very extenſive, that I believe it to be the largeſt of the Admiralty Iſlands: I do not think that we ſaw its weſtern extremity, for as far as we could diſcern from aloft, trees were to be ſeen juſt above the horizon: the weſtermoſt point ſeen from the ſhip was in latitude 1° 59′ ſouth, and the longitude of it was 146° 30′ eaſt.

This groupe of iſlands is very extenſive, as well in a north and ſouth direction as eaſt and weſt. Having now got to the weſtward of the Admiralty Iſlands, I conſidered myſelf clear of St. George's Channel; and I agree perfectly with Captain Carteret, in thinking it a very ſafe, and (to ſhips bound northward, which want water,) a very convenient navigation; his chart was of much uſe to us in coming through, al-

though, had time permitted, conſiderable additions, and ſome improvements,
might have been made to it. On the 3d of June, we ſaw land,
1791. about two points before the ſtarboard beam; this proved to be two
June 3. iſlands: at eight o'clock the next morning, we ſaw another iſland,
bearing ſouth 42° 00′ weſt; and by interſections taken by the ſhip's run,
this laſt iſland was ten leagues diſtant; it was high land: at noon we
determined that iſland in the ſouth-weſt to be in latitude 1° 36′ ſouth;
longitude 145° 35′ eaſt; and thoſe to the northward, I judged to be in
latitude 0° 55′ ſouth; longitude 146° 09′ eaſt. I think it probable that
theſe iſlands may have been ſeen before, as in a general chart of theſe
ſeas which I have ſeen, there are three iſlands laid down nearly in this
ſituation. From thoſe iſlands we ſteered to the north-weſt and weſt-north-weſt,
with light and variable winds, and ſometimes ſqually and very
unſettled weather, with a diſagreeable head-ſea, againſt which we made
8th, very ſlow progreſs. On the 8th, at noon, by a conſiderable number of
very good lunar diſtances, our longitude was found to be 144° 13′ eaſt,
which agreed ſo very near with our account carried on from the laſt obſervations,
that I think the longitude of the different lands, as marked in this
Journal, will not be found very erroneous. In this part of our paſſage, we
ſaw many very large trees floating about the ſea. We now found the ſhip
had ſet fourteen or fifteen miles a day to the northward more than the
log gave; and in the parallel of 4° 00′ north, or nearly, we found, that
for the ſpace of eight days, from the 19th, we had been ſet to the eaſtward
at the rate of thirty-nine miles in the twenty-four hours; and there
was much reaſon to fear, that from the next obſervations for the longitude
which we might have, we ſhould have the mortification to find,
28th. that this eaſterly current continued; for at that time, (the 28th of June,)
the wind ſeemed to be ſet in from weſt-north-weſt to weſt-ſouth-weſt.
30th, On the 30th died William Phillips, ſeaman.

CHAP. IX.

1791. July 11.

13th,

On the 5th of July, by obſervations of the ſun and moon, we were in longitude 140° 32′ eaſt, which was 10° 10′ eaſtward of our account, and the wind continued fixed from the weſtward. On the 11th of July, neceſſity obliged us to reduce the allowance of water; the whole allowance now to each man for all purpoſes, cooking, drinking, &c. was two purſer's quarts for twenty-four hours, and the weather was exceedingly ſultry, which made it the more diſtreſſing. On the 13th, I found it neceſſary, from the very unfavourable proſpect before us, to call together my own officers, and the maſter of the ſhip, and to conſult upon the moſt eligible plan to be purſued, for enabling us to reach ſome port or ſettlement, where it might be poſſible to obtain ſome ſupply of proviſions and water, ſufficient for the relief of one hundred and twenty-one men, the number now on board this ſmall veſſel. The general opinion was, that it would be highly imprudent in the preſent reduced ſtate of our proviſions and water, to perſevere any longer in an attempt to reach the ſtrait of Macaſſar, in the face of freſh weſterly winds and a ſtrong eaſterly current; particularly, in a veſſel ſo very ill conſtructed for working to windward; and what rendered it ſtill more neceſſary to give up ſuch an attempt in our ſituation was, that the maſter of the ſhip, (who had been a number of years in the Dutch ſervice among the Molucca Iſlands) aſſured me, in the preſence of ſome of the officers, that he did not know of any one place in our route, ſhort of Batavia, where any ſupply for our numbers could be had. The quantity of proviſions now on board, at half allowance, was a ſupply for about ten weeks, and the water at about two purſer's quarts a man per day, was a ſupply for the ſame time, provided we had no leakage. We were now driven by currents, notwithſtanding our utmoſt endeavours to get to the weſtward, eleven degrees of longitude, or 220 leagues farther to the eaſtward than the account by the ſhip's run; and that

CHAP. IX. had happened within the laſt month, and between the latitudes 3° 00′ north, and 6° 30′ north.

1791. July 13. On the 13th of July we bore away to the northward, it being determined either to attempt the ſtrait through which the Acapulco ſhips paſs to the port of Manilla, or to go round the north end of Luconia, and endeavour to fetch Macao, in China, though we were a little doubtful about fetching the latter in ſo leewardly a veſſel. It appeared from the winds that we then had, that the ſouth-weſt monſoon at times blows very ſtrong through the opening between the iſlands of Mindanao and Celebes, and reaches a conſiderable way to the eaſtward; I can with certainty ſay as far as 142° 00′ eaſt longitude.

14th, On the 14th in the morning, we ſaw land bearing north; this we found to be two iſlands joined together, or nearly ſo, by a long ſandy ſpit, above water, which reached for about two-thirds of the diſtance from the eaſtermoſt or largeſt iſland, to the weſtmoſt, which is ſmall. All round the largeſt is a ſand-bank above water, which extends from the foot of the higher land about half a mile into the ſea, and may have ſhoal water from it. We ſaw on the beach a few natives running along ſhore, as the ſhip ſailed paſt. Theſe iſlands are dangerous to people in the night, on account of the ſandy ſpits which project from them; they were covered with ſhrubs, and had but few tall trees on them, and the land is but low: the latitude of the large or eaſtmoſt iſland, is 8° 06′ north, and longitude 140° 03′ eaſt. I did at firſt ſuppoſe them to have been part of the New Carolines, but they ſeem to lie quite alone, and are about five miles aſunder. I called them Phillip Iſlands, after Arthur Phillip, the governor of New South Wales.

On

1791.
July 17.

On the 17th of July in the morning, we ſaw land from the maſt-head, bearing weſt by ſouth nine or ten leagues diſtant; at noon we could ſee it from the deck, and it appeared to be three iſlands; at four in the afternoon, they bore ſouth by weſt three-quarters weſt, and were by interſections taken from the ſhip, diſtant eight leagues. A conſiderable number of fiſh being at that time round the ſhip, the people, in looking over the ſide at them, diſcovered rocks under the bottom; we immediately ſounded, and had fifteen fathoms: the rocks appeared very large, with patches of white ſand between them; in twenty minutes, the water appeared to deepen, and we had no ground with forty fathoms of line. This ridge of rocks appeared to be about half a mile in breadth, and was ſeen from the maſt-head to ſtretch to the ſouthward towards the iſlands, and conſiderably to the northward of the ſhip; although it be of great extent in a north-north-eaſt and ſouth-ſouth-weſt direction, yet I do not think there is any very ſhoal water upon it, for we ſaw no break, ſurf, or rippling, which would indicate ſhoal water; and there was a ſufficient ſwell of the ſea to have occaſioned ſome appearance where any ſhip would have ſtruck the ground. Theſe iſlands lie in the latitude of 9° 33′ north; longitude 137° 30′ eaſt, and are probably a part of the New Carolines; at leaſt, from the ſituation of thoſe iſlands in the charts, they anſwer to the place of ſome of them; but as the New Carolines are marked as very numerous, and very contiguous to one another, I did expect to have ſeen many more; there were of theſe, three only; the largeſt was very high, but not extenſive. From the time of our making theſe iſlands until the 23d, when we were in latitude 11° 56′ north; longitude 132° 20′ eaſt, we had light and variable winds, but chiefly from the eaſtward; in the above latitude and longitude it inclined to the northward, and from that to the weſtward, and became very ſqually and unſettled weather, with very heavy rains at times: during

theſe

1791.

theſe heavy ſhowers, which were in our ſituation very comfortable, whether in the day or night, every one was employed in ſpreading his blanket or rug, for the purpoſe of ſaving as much water as he could for his own uſe; for, as we had no means of providing a quantity for the general good, every one did the beſt he could for himſelf. The ſun being almoſt vertical, and the weather exceedingly ſultry, the ſcarcity of water was very much felt. It continued this ſqually and unſettled weather until the 30th, during ſome part of which time it blew ſo ſtrong as to bring the ſhip under her reefed courſes: after the 30th, the wind ſhifted to weſt and weſt by ſouth, with which we ſtood to the ſouthward; for with this wind we could not now fetch the Baſhee Iſlands, and upon the ſouthern tack we could not reach in with any part of the coaſt of the Philipine Iſlands; it was therefore, in our ſituation, judged beſt to keep as near in with the parallel of Cape Eſpiritu Sancto as poſſible, that being the neareſt land, which with a hope of a ſhort ſpurt of wind from the eaſtward, or a ſlant either from the northward or ſouthward, would ſerve to carry us in with the coaſt: we were then in latitude 13° 25′ north; longitude 128° 37′ eaſt; Cape Eſpiritu Sancto bearing ſouth 75° 00′ weſt, 58 leagues diſtant. It was very clear to me, from the winds we had experienced ſince we came to the northward of the Line, that at this time of the year, and generally during the height of the ſouth-weſt monſoon, in the China ſeas, theſe winds do ſometimes extend far to the eaſtward of the Philipine Iſlands, and frequently blow in very heavy gales. The eaſterly winds, which we had after croſſing the Line, had been conſtantly ſo very light, that the run for the twenty-four hours, ſeldom exceeded from twenty to fifty miles.

July 30.

The wind now became very variable, but chiefly from the ſouth-weſt quarter. On the 2d of Auguſt, it ſhifted to weſt-north-weſt, and we ſtood

Auguſt 2.

August 4.

ſtood to the ſouth-weſt. On the 4th, we made the land, bearing weſt-ſouth-weſt twelve leagues; the next morning, it bore from weſt-ſouth-weſt to weſt, and at noon we ſaw it from ſouth-weſt to weſt half ſouth; this proved to be the north end of the iſland of St. John, and is in latitude 9° 30′ north; longitude 126° 32′ eaſt. From the 31ſt of July to this time, we had been ſet to the ſouthward one hundred miles. The wind being again ſet in at ſouth-weſt, we could only now ſtand to the ſouthward, and avail ourſelves of the ſtrong ſoutherly current which we every day experienced ſo much aſſiſtance from, and which we had ſome reaſon to hope would lead us to the ſouthward of Mindanao: if this current ſhould fail us, we could not expect to get to the ſouthward, but muſt then have ſteered along the coaſt to the northward, as far as Cape Eſpiritu Sancto, and enter the Strait of Manilla, where probably we might have found ſome ſettlement, ſhort of that port, capable of aſſiſting us with ſuch relief as might have enabled us to proceed on our voyage. On the 6th, we ſaw the coaſt of Mindanao from ſouth to north-weſt by weſt; it is very high land in the interior parts of the country, but moderately ſo on the ſea-coaſt, which makes it rather difficult to judge of your diſtance from it. The current to the ſouthward ſtill continued from thirty to fifty miles in twenty-four hours.

August 8.

On the 8th, in ſtanding to the ſouthward, we ſaw an iſland bearing ſouth five or ſix leagues; this, from its ſituation, muſt have been the iſland of Palmas; it ſeemed to lie eaſt by ſouth, ſixteen or ſeventeen leagues diſtant from the ſouth-eaſt point of Mindanao; it is a high round hummock at the north-eaſt end, and runs out in a low point to the ſouth-weſt, on which are a number of round lumps or hillocks, that at five leagues diſtance appear like rocks juſt above water. Its latitude is 5° 33′ north, and its longitude is 127° 00′ eaſt. Being now to the

1791. August 9.

ſouthward of Cape Auguſtine, which we never ſaw diſtinctly, we carried all the ſail poſſible to get to the weſtward. On the 9th in the afternoon, the ſouth-eaſt point of Mindanao bore north 20° 00′ weſt, five or ſix leagues diſtant. At day-light the next morning, the coaſt of Mindanao bore from weſt by north to north by eaſt, and a high iſland weſt by ſouth, off ſhore five leagues: at noon, the ſouth point of Mindanao bore north 76° 00′ weſt: we intended to have paſſed to the ſouthward of this iſland, but the wind inclining from that direction, we could not weather it, we therefore bore away, intending to paſs between it and Mindanao. We now obſerved that what we had taken for one iſland, was three diſtinct iſlands; the weſtmoſt is very high, and is that which Captain Carteret ſaw from his anchorage on the ſouth coaſt of Mindanao, and called Hummock Iſland; it appeared to be ſix miles long from north to ſouth; the next, to the eaſtward of it, is about the ſame length, moderately high and level, and the eaſtmoſt of the three, is a little round ſpot, covered with ſmall trees or ſhrubs; from the eaſt ſide of this ſmall iſland there is a reef ſtretches to the eaſtward a conſiderable diſtance, and on which the ſea generally breaks: the other iſlands appear to be quite encircled by a reef, at the diſtance of a cable and a half from the ſhore. We paſſed between the ſmall iſland and the next, having previouſly ſent a boat to try the channel; we found it a clear ſafe paſſage, of one mile and a half wide; we kept about one-third of the diſtance from the largeſt iſland, and had from ten to twenty-five fathoms: in the ſhoaleſt water the ground was hard, but in ſixteen and eighteen fathoms it was ſoft: here the tide or current ſet ſtrong through to the weſtward; I rather think it a regular tide, for we did not drift at the ſame rate all day. We continued to work between the ſouth point of Mindanao and theſe iſlands, during the remainder of the day; in the afternoon, a boat was ſeen coming off from the high iſland, with

1791.

with twelve perſons on board, and a white flag flying; we ſtood towards them, and anſwered their ſignal with a white flag at the enſign ſtaff; they came within a little diſtance of the ſhip, and aſked a variety of queſtions, whether we came from *Ternate*, (a ſmall iſland among the Moluccas, on which the Dutch have a factory) and if we were going to Batavia; to which they were anſwered in the affirmative; the converſation was carried on in the Malay language, of which the maſter of the ſhip had ſome knowledge, and as he had for a part of his crew twelve or fourteen Javaneſe, who all ſpoke that language, and who alſo ſpoke Dutch, we could be at no loſs to be underſtood, or to underſtand thoſe with whom we converſed. Dutch colours were hoiſted to confirm the anſwer given: from this boat we learnt, that they were upon intimate and friendly terms with the Dutch, and that we might have as much water, wood, and various articles of refreſhment as we wanted. They deſired to have a note from the maſter of the ſhip to the Raja, by whom theſe iſlands were governed, which was given them, with ſuch information as might be neceſſary.

A larger boat armed came off alſo the ſame evening, but as it was dark they did not chooſe to come on board, but converſed with us at a diſtance. The next morning (the 11th) we ſtood in for Hummock Iſland, and ſent a boat in ſhore to ſearch for anchorage, which ſhe very ſoon made the ſignal for having found; and at noon we came to in twenty-two fathoms water, over a bottom of coarſe ſand and looſe coral, about one mile from the ſhore. A ſhort time before we got into anchorage, the ſame canoe which had ſpoken us the evening before, came off again with Dutch colours flying, and brought a note from the Raja to the maſter, written in the Malay characters, ſignifying, that we ſhould have what we wanted. August 11.

Kk In

1791.

In the afternoon we ſent a boat to look for water, which was found in great abundance under the high land near the north-eaſt point of the iſland; we went immediately to work to water the ſhip, and very ſoon had a number of canoes from the ſhore, on board, with a variety of refreſhments, which we were very much in want of; a briſk trade was carried on for poultry, goats, fruits of various kinds, honey, ſago, and tobacco; but what we wanted principally was rice, to iſſue to the ſailors at ſea, being now exceedingly ſhort of every ſpecies of victualling. Thoſe who were employed on ſhore were kindly treated by the natives, and every thing bore the moſt friendly and promiſing appearance. This day the Raja, according to previous information, which he had given, came on board in a large boat, and did us the honour of a viſit; this boat was covered with an awning of ſplit bamboo; he was attended by the perſon next in authority, and a conſiderable number of people, and was, on his arrival, ſaluted with five guns. Upon this occaſion, it was thought neceſſary to have a party of ten men armed, placed on the top of the round houſe abaſt, where they continued during the Raja's viſit. The Raja and his attendants were, on coming on board, led down to the cabin, and he had every mark of civility and attention ſhewn to him: on his taking leave, he was preſented by the maſter of the ſhip with a very handſome piece of ſilk, and on embarking in his boat, was ſaluted with a volley of muſquetry. While he remained on board much converſation paſſed between him and the maſter of the ſhip, but it being carried on in the Malay language, I could only collect, that the Raja was ſtrongly preſſed to aſſiſt us with a quantity of rice, or paddy, (which is the rice in huſk.) He ſhewed us, while in the cabin, that he was ſupported in his authority over theſe iſlands by the Dutch Eaſt-India Company, by producing his written appointment, which he had brought with him for that purpoſe: this writing I looked at, but being

1791.

in the Dutch language, I did not underſtand it, but obſerved, that it was ſubſcribed by a number of officers in the Company's ſervice; I alſo perceived it was ſubſcribed by a very reſpectable officer in the naval ſervice of the States, with whom I had the pleaſure of being a little acquainted, the laſt time I was at the Cape of Good Hope: ſo that the intereſt of the Dutch Company ſeemed to be well eſtabliſhed in theſe iſlands.

When the Raja left us, he promiſed to be on board the next day, and ſaid, he would bring with him the articles that we were in want of. All this time we were buſily employed in getting water on board, and refitting the rigging; intending, as ſoon as the water was completed, to employ one day in cutting wood.

Auguſt 14. The next day, (the 14th) in the afternoon, the Raja again came on board, but, to our very great diſappointment, inſtead of the expected ſupply, he produced four ſmall baſkets of ſago powder, and one bag of paddy, which would ſcarcely have maintained two men for a week; this return for the civilities he received the day before, was by no means a proper one, particularly as I was told he had been given to underſtand, that we were much in want of proviſions, and he had been greatly preſſed for a quantity of paddy, ſufficient to ſerve two hundred men, until we could reach Batavia, to which place he was told we were going; and he was alſo informed, that it ſhould be paid for in bar iron and other articles. Our demand was more than perhaps might have been neceſſary, but it was made large from an opinion that we might not get near the quantity applied for. We had reaſon to believe, that the iſland could well furniſh the ſupply we had aſked for, without any inconvenience to the inhabitants; for eight hundred weight had been purchaſed out of a common boat the day before, for a few pieces of bar

iron,

CHAP. IX. 1791.

iron, and the natives appeared to make more uſe of ſago and fruits than of paddy: the maſter of the ſhip ſhewed ſome diſpleaſure, and I own (if he had made our wants well underſtood the day before, which I had my doubts of) not without cauſe: he came to me at the gangway, and told me he intended to detain the Raja until he ſent ſome of his boats on ſhore for the paddy wanted: I adviſed him againſt any violent meaſures, leſt our wants had not been perfectly underſtood; and that I did not ſee, that it could, in our preſent ſituation, anſwer any good end: at this time we had a boat and ſeveral people on ſhore. I recommended to him to endeavour to make the Raja underſtand, that unleſs he ſent for the ſupply we had aſked, and he had promiſed, that he, as commander of the Company's ſhip, would repreſent his conduct to the governor and council at Batavia, who would certainly take notice of it; I thought a threat of that ſort might anſwer our purpoſe better than the means he propoſed: for we were in no reſpect prepared for a quarrel with thoſe people, the meaneſt of whom wore a creſs or dagger conſtantly by his ſide, and the decks were at that time almoſt full of them; many of our people were alſo upon deck, but wholly unarmed and off their guard.

The maſter of the ſhip returned, and entered again into converſation with the Raja, who was on the after part of the quarter deck, but what was ſaid I did not underſtand: however, I joined them, and again recommended prudence and moderation to the maſter of the ſhip, and deſired he would recollect, that we were not prepared for ſuch violent meaſures as he ſeemed inconſiderately diſpoſed to; that as there were a few ſtand of arms in the ſhip, and a few pairs of piſtols among the officers, they ſhould have been upon deck, and people ſtationed with ammunition for them; inſtead of which, we had not one armed man upon deck, nor a ſingle neceſſary for uſing the carriage guns; all which reſted with him, ſuch articles being in his care and cuſtody as maſter, for his owners: notwithſtanding this, the violence and perverſeneſs of his temper was ſuch as to diſpoſe him (probably becauſe he was adviſed againſt it) to create a diſagreement between thoſe people who were all armed, and our people who were defenceleſs. Some of theſe iſlanders paid much attention to the nature and extent of our force, and ſome of them ſhrewdly obſerved, that the great guns were very good at a diſtance, but of no uſe when boats got alongſide of the ſhip; if they had any fear of us, it proceeded from our numbers, which amounted now to one hundred and twenty, and when all upon deck in this ſmall veſſel, they appeared ſtill more numerous. During the converſation between the Raja and maſter of the ſhip, our people were employed in hoiſting the long boat in, at which the Raja ſeemed very much agitated, and at this very juncture, the maſter having ordered ſome cutlaſſes upon deck, of which he had but very few in the ſhip, they were imprudently laid down on the quarter deck, in the preſence of the Raja and his attendants; this conduct confirmed me in the opinion I already entertained, that he had made uſe of ſome threats which made ſuch preparation neceſſary: be that as it might, the Raja was alarmed for his liberty; his people took the alarm alſo, and called their companions from their boats, who boarded us with drawn daggers: an old man, about ſeventy years of age, who ſtood near the Raja and held him by the ſleeve, drew his dagger, and in great rage endeavoured to reach and ſtab the maſter of the ſhip, but was held back by the Raja; on this, the maſter ſnatched up a hanger to defend himſelf, and with great vehemence called out for ſmall arms. I was cloſe to him at the time, and however much I diſapproved of his general conduct, (which was certainly, in our unguarded ſituation, deſtitute of thought, common ſenſe, or diſcretion, and was the effect of one of the moſt perverſe and diabolical tempers I ever met with,) I judged it neceſſary to draw my ſword and defend him: he continued to call for ſmall arms with much agitation, which ſhould have been previouſly prepared. A number of my ſailors being on the fore part of the deck, trading with the natives, (a conſiderable number of whom were on board, but who all drew their creſſes upon the alarm given by their countrymen) armed themſelves with handſpikes, billets of wood, or whatever lay in their way, while the petty officers of the Sirius got up the ſmall arms, and kept up a ſmart fire on the natives, who were in a ſhort time driven overboard: ſome into their boats, and others were obliged to take to the water; the Raja, during the ſcuffle, tumbled himſelf from the gunwall into his boat, accompanied by his faithful attendants, who certainly did themſelves much honour by their attention to his ſafety. If I had been prepared with my loaded piſtols, as I was upon the Raja's firſt viſit, I ſhould certainly have ſhot the old man before-mentioned, although I am ſure, that upon a little ſerious reflection, and conſideration of the motives of his conduct, I ſhould have exceedingly regretted having done ſo: he certainly in ſome reſpect occaſioned the diſturbance, (although it originated with the maſter of the ſhip) but it was in conſequence of an indignity offered to the perſon of his ſovereign in his preſence: we ſhould, therefore, be diſpoſed more to commend than condemn his conduct; the inſult was too much for a loyal and affectionate ſubject to bear; he therefore preferred certain death in his defence, to that of living to ſee him ſo degraded.

As ſoon as the Raja and his people were in their boat, they cut the rope which held them, and pulled from the ſhip with the utmoſt precipitation; many were killed in their boats, which (now that this affair had arrived at ſuch length) became really neceſſary, to prevent their rallying and reboarding the ſhip; for after they got into their boats, many lances were thrown into the ſhip, which occaſioned the fire of muſquetry to be kept up ſomething longer than it would have been. I ſaw the Raja pulling at an oar himſelf, and did every thing in my power to prevent his being ſhot: for as every perſon knew him by his dreſs, it was probable he might be particularly marked; I fear much he was wounded, perhaps mortally, notwithſtanding my endeavours to ſave him, as he dropt his oar ſeveral times: during the ſhort time, which I had been in his company, I was much pleaſed with him; there was a certain graceful eaſe and affability in his manner, which was highly prepoſſeſſing, and a degree of dignity, which beſpoke him of ſuperior rank: he appeared to be about forty-three or four years of age. In this unlucky rencontre, we were ſo fortunate as not to have a man wounded, which was rather extraordinary, and I believe muſt have been owing to the panic occaſioned by ſo ſudden and unexpected an alarm.

Our boat returned from the ſhore juſt at the concluſion of this unlucky ſcuffle; which common prudence, or a diſpoſition to benefit by the advice that had been offered, might have prevented; for whatever may be the natural diſpoſition of the inhabitants of theſe iſlands, they had ſhewn nothing either unfriendly or ſuſpicious to us; at the ſame time, to place implicit confidence in the friendly diſpoſition of ſuch people, I think, would be highly imprudent. A ſhip calling here for water ſhould be ever on her guard, a precaution which was not in any one reſpect taken by the maſter of the ſhip, except upon my propoſing, on the Raja's firſt viſit, to have ten of my men placed with ſmall arms upon the top of the round houſe abaft, from which ſituation they could command the whole deck: this propoſal he agreed to, which was more than I expected; for it was no uncommon thing with him to reject any plan, however neceſſary, which his duty ſhould have ſuggeſted, without the aſſiſtance of other opinions.

Theſe obſervations I cannot help making; for they naturally ariſe from the diſtreſſing ſituation in which I found myſelf and officers who were placed under the direction of this moſt ignorant and diſagreeable man. If he had felt himſelf qualified to have navigated a ſhip in the ſeas we had to paſs through, his conduct would in all probability have been more unſufferable, if poſſible, than it was; but our aſſiſtance was abſolutely neceſſary, otherwiſe I believe his veſſel had never reached Batavia.

At eight o'clock in the evening we weighed from the road and put to ſea; one unfortunate Javaneſe ſeaman was by accident left on ſhore, but he ſpoke a language which moſt of theſe people underſtand. I therefore hope it might be the means of ſaving his life, but as their rage, when once rouſed, does not quickly ſubſide, I feared much for the ſafety of this innocent man: this unlucky affair prevented our being able to complete our water, or cut any wood; however, we had filled as much as would prevent our being diſtreſſed for ſome time, and the ſailors had received many refreſhments, of which they were much in need. Theſe iſlands, I have already mentioned, are three in number: Hummock Iſland, on which the Raja reſides, is exceedingly fertile, and ſeemed to produce moſt of the tropical fruit; we found here rice, ſugar cane (exceedingly fine and large), pine apple, mango, ſour oranges, limes, jack, plantain, cocoa-nut, ſago, ſweet potatoes, tobacco, Indian corn, and a ſmall kind of pea: dogs, goats, fowls (very fine), parrots, and many other more uſeful articles; but I judge that their principal article of trade with the Dutch is bees-wax, of which they appear to have a conſiderable quantity, and of courſe much honey.

The iſlands lie about five leagues ſouth, from the ſouthern point of Mindanao: the road where we anchored is on the north-eaſt ſide of Hummock Iſland, and is in latitude 5° 27′ north, longitude 125° 12′ eaſt: there appeared to be a paſſage between this iſland and the next to it, lying in a north and ſouth direction, but there is a long rocky ſpit, which runs from a low point on Hummock Iſland, and ſeems to throw the channel through upon the other ſhore: we had not an opportunity to examine it, but we found here a regular tide, which was high at full and change of the moon at ſeven o'clock, and roſe by the ſhore ſix or ſeven feet. There were ſeveral inlets or openings on the weſt ſhore of the other iſland, which may be probably convenient and well ſheltered coves.

The articles, which ſeemed of moſt value here in exchange for ſtock, were light cloathing of white or printed linens, or cottons, ſuch as looſe gowns or jackets, coloured handkerchiefs, claſp knives, razors, and bar iron; metal buttons had for ſome time a good run, which a ſtranger on board here would ſoon have perceived, as there was ſcarcely a coat or jacket to be ſeen upon deck with a button on it. The natives on theſe iſlands are the ſame ſort of people, and ſpeak the ſame language, as people on Mindanao; they have a great deal of the Malay both in appearance and diſpoſition; they are nearly the ſame ſize, make, and colour, and have many of their features; they wore in general jackets and trouſers, but the lower orders had ſeldom any thing but a wrapper round the waiſt; they commonly wore a handkerchief, or other piece of linen round the head, in the manner of a turban. In the ſaſh or wrapper, which all wear round the waiſt, they had their creſs or dagger ſtuck, the ſcabbard of which was a caſe of wood. Many of theſe natives were troubled with a diſeaſe much reſembling the leproſy; their ſkins were covered with a dry ſcurf, like the ſcales of a fiſh, which had a very diſagreeable appearance.

Their canoes were of various ſizes; the bottom is hollowed out of the trunk of a tree, and they were generally raiſed with an upper work of ſplit bamboo, which was ſet very cloſe and light; they had an outrigger on each ſide to balance them; they had alſo a larger boat on which they mounted three ſmall pieces of cannon, of braſs; theſe pieces, I was told, were of their own manufactory, which I could readily believe, as they were of a very different make to any I had ever ſeen; they were very long, and of narrow bore, and were mounted with a ſwivel, upon poſts, placed one at each end, and one in the center of the boat; they had a long wooden tail fixed to them, by which they turn about and point them. Theſe boats will contain and conceal a great number of men; they were commonly covered with an awning of ſplit bamboo, raiſed ſome diſtance above the gunwall, like the ridge of a houſe. Their maſt was compoſed of three bamboos, two of which ſtood as a pair of ſheers, and required no ſhrouds; the third ſtood forward, and anſwered the purpoſe of a ſtay; and upon this maſt they ſet a ſquare ſail. On Hummock Iſland, as well as the ſouth ſide of Mindanao, were many pleaſant looking ſpots, which appeared to be cultivated land.

When we left theſe iſlands, the wind being from the weſtward, we ſteered to the ſouthward. At ſeven o'clock in the morning, we ſaw a ſmall iſland, bearing ſouth-weſt; at ten, we ſaw two more, and by four in the afternoon of the 15th, there were ſeven iſlands in ſight, bearing from ſouth-weſt to weſt-north-weſt: at ſix o'clock we ſaw a large iſland a-head, with a number of ſmaller ones, and ſome ſingle rocks of conſiderable height above the water, lying off it: at noon, we were near enough to obſerve, that ſeveral of the rocks and ſmaller iſlands had reefs lying from them, on which the ſea broke. Here we found a ſtrong ſouth-weſt ſet of current; we ſounded, and had ſeventy-two fathoms, over a bottom of coarſe ſand and coral; one of the ſmall iſlands was diſtant little more than a mile. This iſland, which is very high land, is that laid down in the chart by the name of Poolo Sanguy: we obſerved the latitude of its north end to be 3° 44′ north, and its longitude 125° 11′ eaſt; there is a continued chain lying in a north and ſouth direction from the ſouth coaſt of Mindanao thus far to the ſouthward; and, by ſuch charts as I have ſeen, this chain ſeems to be continued from Poolo Sanguy quite over to the north-eaſt point of Celebes. Poolo Sanguy is a large tract of land. The wind now inclined from the ſouthward, otherwiſe we ſhould have ſtood on, with a view of reaching ſome of the Dutch ſettlements amongſt the Molucca Iſlands, in order to endeavour to procure ſome ſort of ſupply of proviſions, as we were now reduced very low; but with this ſoutherly wind we could only ſtand to the weſtward and puſh for the Strait of Macaſſar: the wind continued from the ſouthward and ſometimes from the ſouth-eaſt, but in very light airs. At daylight in the morning of the 25th, we made the iſland of Celebes, bearing from ſouth 11° 00′ eaſt, to ſouth 54° 00′ eaſt, diſtant eight or nine leagues: at noon on the 26th, the north-weſt point of Celebes bore ſouth-ſouth-eaſt about ten leagues. This part of the coaſt runs down in a low point into the ſea, and a little way back, riſes in a round hill or hummock, but conſiderably lower than the back land, which is very high; from this point the land ſeems to take its direction about ſouth-weſt by weſt. The latitude of the north-weſt point is 1° 22′ north, and the longitude, by lunar obſervations, 121° 00′ eaſt.

On the 27th at noon the land of Celebes was diſtant about eight or
nine leagues; between us and the ſouthermoſt land in ſight there was a
1791. ſmall iſland. Ever ſince we had made the coaſt of Celebes we had very
August 27. little wind, and that had generally been from ſouth-eaſt to ſouth-weſt; no
current was perceptible; the weather was exceedingly ſultry; the freſheſt
winds we had were from ſouth-weſt; on which account, we endeavoured
29th, to get over on the Borneo ſhore. At four in the morning of the 29th,
we had a very heavy ſquall from weſt-north-weſt, which obliged us to
30th, clew all up. On the 30th, at five in the morning, we ſaw the iſland
of Borneo, bearing weſt-north-weſt; this part of the coaſt is high land:
we ſaw, at the ſame time, from the maſt-head, a ſmall iſland, bearing
weſt-north-weſt; this I took to be one of the ſmall iſlands which are
laid down to the ſouthward of the Taba Iſlands, and near in upon the
coaſt: at eight in the evening, we tacked, and in the night, the wind
came from the land, but ſqually, with which we ſtood to the ſouthward.
This part of the coaſt of Borneo ſeems to be a projecting point, and is
31ſt, in the latitude of 1° 02′ north; longitude 119° 00′ eaſt. On the 31ſt,
at day-light, the land of Celebes bore eaſt by north half north; we had
September 1. a heavy ſquall of thunder, lightning, and rain. On the 1ſt of September,
about eight o'clock at night, when it was very dark, we ſuddenly diſcovered
ſomething on our weather quarter, which had much the appearance
of a large row-boat, and there being but a very light air
of wind, we prepared, with all poſſible ſilence, for the reception of a
pirate; but as it did not approach us as we expected, we ſuppoſed it to
have been a large tree adrift.

In croſſing from Celebes to Borneo and back, we paſſed nearly over the place where ſeven iſlands are laid down in the charts, about 00° 40′ to the northward of the line; but, as we ſaw nothing, I conclude, as

Captain

1791.

Captain Carteret did, "that they exiſt only upon paper;" or that they may have been ſome of thoſe iſlands which have been ſeen near the coaſt, and by an incorrect account of their ſituation, in point of longitude, have been placed here in mid-channel. In the morning, the Iſland of Celebes bore from eaſt half north to ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, and a ſmall iſland covered with wood bore ſouth-eaſt half eaſt, four or five miles diſtant. This iſland is in latitude 00° 03′ ſouth, longitude 119° 54′ eaſt; it lies off the opening of a large bay. On the 5th, we were in the latitude of 00° 50′ ſouth, and longitude 119° 06′ eaſt, and were about ſix or ſeven leagues from the coaſt of Celebes; here the land near the ſea is of a moderate height, but the back land is remarkably high. September 5.

7th. On the 7th, we ſaw two large proas, in the ſouth-weſt; we were ſtanding towards them, and as they were at ſome diſtance from each other, the one bore down and joined the other, and both ſtood for the land; we however judged it neceſſary to be prepared for them all the ſucceeding night: they might have been trading veſſels, but as they can conceal their numbers, and as we knew that theſe ſeas are infeſted with piratical veſſels of that deſcription, it was neceſſary for us to be on our guard.

At noon we were in latitude 1° 47′ ſouth; longitude 118° 50′ eaſt, and no part of the Celebes ſhore in ſight. I am convinced, from the many obſervations made for the longitude here, by myſelf, as well as by Lieutenants Bradley and Waterhouſe, that the weſt coaſt of Celebes is laid down in all the charts which I have ſeen, much farther to the weſtward than it ſhould be. On the 8th, in the evening, we were looking out for the Little Pater Noſters, being near the latitude of their north end, as determined by Captain Carteret; but although we ſtood 8th.

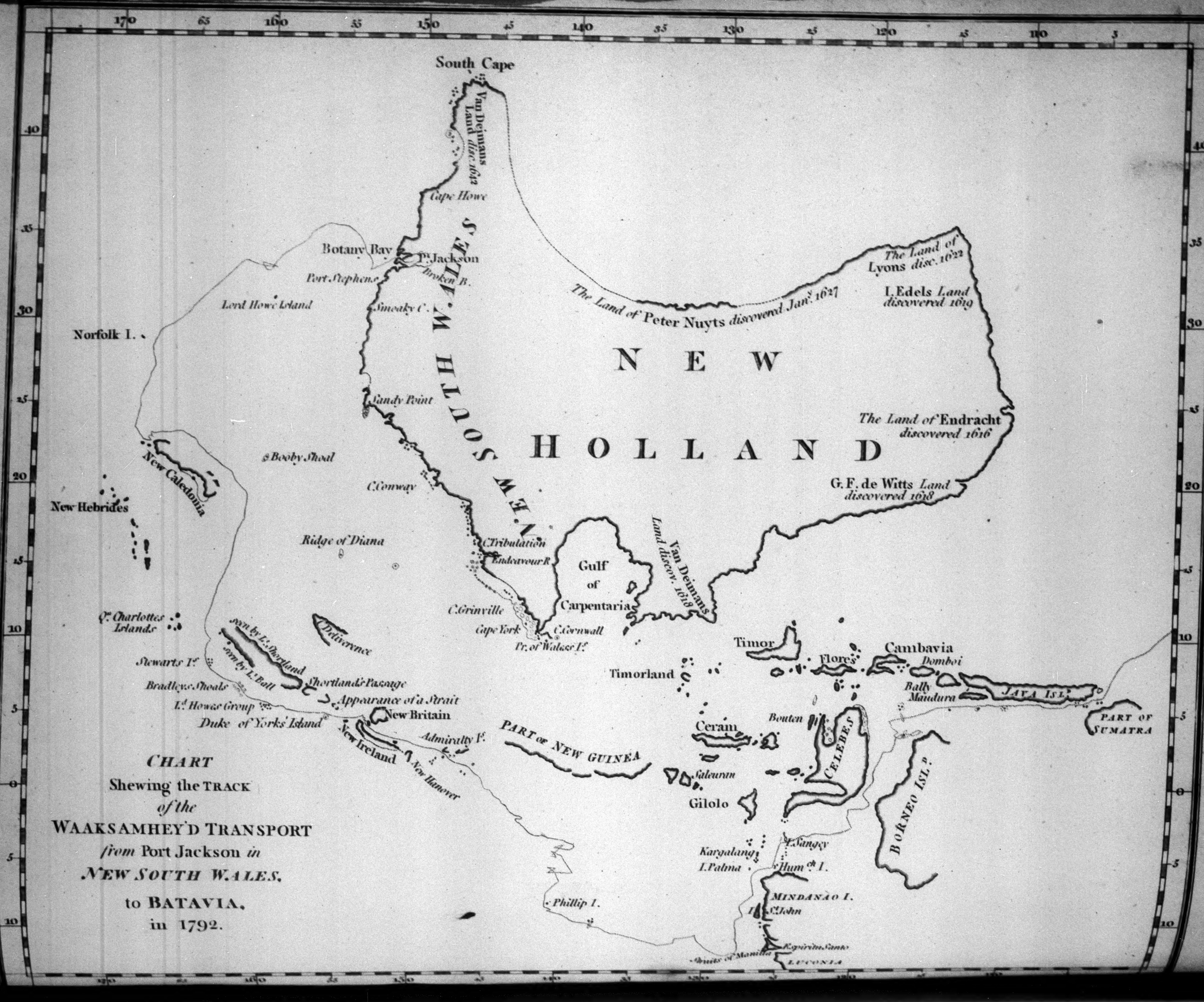
CHAP. IX.

1791. September 9. to the weſtward all night, we ſaw nothing of them; I therefore ſuppoſe they lay nearer the Celebes ſhore than we were at this time. On the 9th in the morning, obſerving the water much diſcoloured, we ſounded, and had thirty-five fathoms over a ſandy bottom; ſoon after, we ſaw, from the maſt-head, a ſmall ſandy iſland, bearing ſouth-weſt by weſt: at noon we were within five miles of it, and obſerved ſeveral ſhoals breaking to the northward and ſouthward of it, with ſome dry patches of ſand. Theſe ſhoals have been taken by ſome for the Little Pater-Noſters, but are called by the Dutch, the Triangles; they lie in latitude 2° 58′ ſouth; longitude 117° 53′ eaſt: they are ſo very low, that a ſhip in the night would be aſhore before they could be perceived; there are good ſoundings at ſome diſtance to the eaſtward of them.

The whole time we had been in this ſtrait, the wind had been variable from ſouth-ſouth-weſt to weſt-north-weſt; in the night it ſometimes inclined in very light airs from ſouth-ſouth-eaſt to ſouth. On 11th, the 11th, in the afternoon, as we were ſtanding to the weſtward, the water appeared ſuddenly of a very light colour, and on looking over the ſide, we perceived the ground under the ſhip: before we had time to heave a caſt of the lead, it appeared to be deeper, and we had ten and twelve fathoms; but I am inclined to think, from what I ſaw of the bottom, that there could not have been more than five or ſix: the bottom was white ſand, with ſome dark patches upon it. From the maſt-head, at the ſame time, was ſeen a dry ſand-bank, bearing north-north-eaſt ſix miles diſtant; a little way to the eaſtward of it, the water ſeemed to break. This ſhoal is very dangerous, and does not appear in any chart which I have ſeen: there is a ſhoal marked in the Dutch charts, nearly in the ſame parallel, but it is ſo very much miſplaced in its longitude, or diſtance from the land, that I cannot ſuppoſe it has been meant for the ſame ſhoal. The latitude of this ſhoal is 3° 37′ ſouth, and the longitude 117° 54′ eaſt; it extends from the two ſmall iſlands which are called the Brothers, and lie off the eaſt part of Borneo, eaſt half north, diſtant fifty-one miles: we made the Brothers at day-light in the morning, after paſſing this ſhoal, and at ten o'clock we paſſed within three miles of them, in from twenty-two to ſeventeen fathoms water, over a ſandy bottom. The latitude of the Brothers is 3° 41′ ſouth, and the longitude 117° 00′ eaſt. We ſtood on to the ſouth-weſt, after paſſing the Brothers, expecting that courſe would have carried us clear of every part of Borneo, but the ſouth part of Borneo, and the large iſland called Poolo La'oot, form a conſiderable bight; into this bight we found a ſtrong in-draught, by which, and the wind being light, we were drawn, and could not fetch round Borneo; we ſtood off and on there with light and baffling winds, and a ſhort chop of a ſea, and gained no ground: after paſſing two days and a night in this ſituation, we got a breeze, which enabled us to weather the Brothers again, and ſtand to the eaſtward, where we had more room. This ſituation gave me ſome uneaſy moments; for we dropt in ſo faſt upon the ſhore, that we found it neceſſary to prepare for anchoring; this would have occaſioned a loſs of time, which, from a variety of circumſtances, we could not afford: the anchorage off here is clear ſoft ground, and ſhoals regularly to the ſhore; we had twelve fathoms four miles off. This bight ought to be carefully avoided, for certainly during the prevalence of the eaſterly monſoon here, there is a very ſtrong ſet into it: it would be much better for ſhips bound to the weſtward to get as far to the ſouthward as the ſouth point of Borneo, before they ſtretched to the weſtward of the Brothers, unleſs they may have a freſh gale that they can depend on. The ſouthermoſt part of Borneo which we ſaw, lies in latitude 4° 00′ ſouth, and longitude 116° 35′ eaſt, but there is land to the ſouthward of that, which appeared to us like

CHAP. IX. 1791.

two iſlands, on the northermoſt of which are two remarkable round hills; whether theſe are really iſlands, or any part of Borneo, we could not aſcertain; but in all the charts the ſouth part of Borneo is laid down farther ſouth than that land which we at firſt ſuppoſed to be it, and agrees nearly with this which appeared to us like two iſlands, the ſouthermoſt of which is in latitude 4° 15′ ſouth, and longitude 115° 16′ eaſt. Having determined after we got out of this bight and to the eaſtward of the Brothers, to endeavour to get nearer the Celebes ſhore, and to work up on that ſide to the ſouthward of 4° 00′ ſouth latitude, before we ſhould attempt to croſs the meridian of the Brothers, we ſtood to the eaſtward, and had the wind in the fore part of the day from ſouth-ſouth-eaſt and ſouth-eaſt, and after ſun-ſet it inclined to the ſouth-weſt, but in very light airs; however, with theſe ſlants we got ſouthing; but if ever the ſouth-ſouth-eaſt breeze continued long enough to carry us in ſight of the ſouth eaſt part of Borneo, we were then ſure to be ſet to the northward: Sept. 15. this having been the caſe, on the 15th, it obliged us to ſtand to the eaſtward, although it were an unfavourable tack. At day-light in the morning, we tacked to the ſouthward, and again fell in with the dry ſand-bank already mentioned; we paſſed it at four miles diſtance, and had thirty-five fathoms water (to the eaſtward). The dry part of this ſand-bank is ſo very ſmall, that in bad weather the ſea muſt break entirely over it: there is regular ſoundings between it and the Brothers, from twenty-five to ſeventeen fathoms. Being now determined not to ſtand farther to the weſtward than we could by that means gain ſouthing, we, by the different 19th, changes of the wind, got, by the 19th, as far as 4° 42′ ſouth latitude: that morning, as we were ſteering to the weſtward, ground was diſcovered under the ſhip, which of courſe drew every body on deck; we had ten fathoms, over a rocky bottom, which we ſaw very diſtinctly. The latitude of this ridge is 4° 35′ ſouth, and longitude, obſerved that



South Cape
Van Deimans Land disc. 1642
Cape Howe
NEW SOUTH WALES
Botany Bay
Pt. Jackson
Broken B.
Port Stephens
Smoaky C.
Lord Howe Island
Norfolk I.
Sandy Point
Booby Shoal
C. Conway
New Caledonia
New Hebrides
Ridge of Diana
C. Tribulation
Endeavour R.
C. Grinville
Cape York
C. Cornwall
Pr. of Wales Is.
Gulf of Carpentaria
Van Deimans Land discov. 1618
NEW HOLLAND
The Land of Peter Nuyts discovered Jan. 1627
The Land of Lyons disc. 1622
I. Edels Land discovered 1619
The Land of Endracht discovered 1616
G. F. de Witts Land discovered 1618
Qn. Charlottes Islands
Deliverence
seen by Lt. Shortland
seen by Lt. Ball
Stewarts Is.
Bradleys Shoals
Ld. Howes Group
Duke of Yorks' Island
Shortland's Passage
Appearance of a Strait
New Britain
New Ireland
New Hanover
Admiralty Is.
PART OF NEW GUINEA
Phillip I.
Timor
Timorland
Flores
Cambavia
Domboi
Bally
Maudura
JAVA ISL.
PART OF SUMATRA
Ceram
Bouton
CELEBES
Saleuun
Gilolo
BORNEO ISL.
Kargalang
I. Palma
I. Sangey
Humch. I.
MINDANAO I.
I. St. John
Espiritu Santo
Straits of Manilla
LUCONIA
170
65
160
55
150
45
140
35
130
25
120
15
110
5
40
35
30
25
20
15
10
5
0
5
10

CHART
Shewing the TRACK
of the
WAAKSAMHEY'D TRANSPORT
from Port Jackson *in*
NEW SOUTH WALES,
to BATAVIA,
in 1792.

CHAP. IX. 1791. September.

morning is 117° 19′ eaſt: I judge that it muſt extend from ſome ſmall iſlands, which are laid down in moſt of the charts, and which we ſuppoſed lay at that time directly to the ſouthward of us, but we ſaw nothing of them.

From this reef we ſteered weſt-ſouth-weſt, and at ſix in the afternoon, we ſaw an iſland bearing weſt half ſouth; we hauled to the ſouthward
to weather it, and at day-light in the morning of the 20th, it bore 20.
north, diſtant ſeven leagues; its latitude is 4° 56′ ſouth, and the longitude obſerved that morning 115° 40′ eaſt; this we ſuppoſed to be Poolo Laut: we kept the lead going all night, and had from twenty to twenty-eight fathoms; the wind freſh from ſouth-eaſt by ſouth. We continued to ſteer weſt-ſouth-weſt, and, for about fourteen leagues, we
croſſed a flat of ſixteen fathoms. At midnight on the 21ſt, we ſaw an 21.
iſland bearing weſt-north-weſt three or four miles diſtant; this we ſuppoſed to be the iſland of Solombo; its latitude is 5° 42′ ſouth, and the longitude 114° 24′ eaſt. We continued to ſteer to the weſtward, and had from twenty-five to thirty-five fathoms until day-light in the morning
of the 23d, when we made the iſlands called Cariman Java; the 23.
middle or principal one is large, and of very conſiderable height; it is encompaſſed by many ſmaller ones, ſome of which are well covered with wood: the latitude of the ſouth ſide of theſe iſlands is 5° 21′ ſouth, and
the longitude 110° 33′ eaſt. On the morning of the 24th, we ſaw a 24.
number of water ſpouts and whirlwinds, ſome of which came ſo very near that we fired a few guns, in hopes that the concuſſion of the air would have diſperſed them; but our guns were too ſmall to give a ſufficient ſhock to the atmoſphere; however, a good breeze of wind ſprung up and carried us clear of them. We ſteered from Cariman Java, weſt,
and in the evening of the 25th, we made the ſmall iſlands called the 25.

1791. September. Boomkins, which lie about five leagues from the Coaſt of Java; we paſſed about three miles within them, and ſaw the ſhore of Java. During part of the night we ſteered weſt-north-weſt to avoid ſome ſunken rocks which are laid down to the weſtward. The ſouth ſide of the Boomkins lies in latitude 5° 56′ ſouth, and longitude 108° 21′ eaſt. In the morning, we ſaw Carawang Point on Java, bearing ſouth-ſouth-weſt ſix or ſeven miles; and at five in the afternoon of the 27th, we anchored in Batavia Road, after a paſſage from Port Jackſon of twenty-ſix weeks. 27.

A TABLE

A TABLE of the WINDS and WEATHER, &c. &c. on a Paſſage from Port Jackſon, New South Wales, to Batavia, in the WAAKSAMHEID Tranſport.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Sick on board	Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1791. March	South. °	′	Eaſt. °	′		°		Day	
29	33	13	153	11	S. S. E.	71½	2	26	Moderate and fair.
30	33	43	152	48	E. N. E. Variable.	72	3	27	Light airs and fair, inclinable to calm.
31	34	23	153	19	Variable.	71	3	28	Light airs and hazy, inclinable to calm.
April 1	35	09	153	30	E. N. E.	71	4	29	P. M. Cloudy with frequent ſqualls. A. M. fair.
2	35	16	153	50	N. E. to S. W.	70	4	30	P. M. Squally with thunder, lightning, and rain. A. M. heavy rain with much thunder and lightning.
3	35	37	154	30	W. N. W.	71½	4	1	P. M. a light breeze, dull, and cloudy. A. M. lightning with diſtant thunder and heavy ſhowers of rain.
4	35	44	155	40	North to N. W.	75	4	2	P. M. clear. Middle, ſqually with thunder and rain. A. M. hazy and ſqually.
5	35	23	156	30	N. W.	70	4	3	Moderate breezes, hazy, and cloudy.
6	34	42	157	20	S. E.	69½	4	4	Light airs and fair.
7	33	48	158	50	E. N. E.	70½	4	5	Light airs and cloudy.
8	32	54	159	36	E. N. E.	74	4	6	Light breezes and fair.
9	33	00	160	00	N. E.	72	4	7	P. M. freſh breezes and ſqually. A. M. moderate and clear.
10	33	27	160	15	N. N. E.	71	4	8	Light breezes and clear.
11	33	07	159	09	Variable.	71	4	9	Calm and clear.
12	33	19	159	50	N. N. E.	74	3	10	Light airs and fair.
13	33	35	161	10	N. N. E.	71	4	11	P. M. moderate and fair. A. M. ſqually, with ſhowers. Died Lieutenant George William Maxwell.
14	32	14	162	20	S. W.	70	5	12	Variable; ſometimes fair, ſometimes ſqually, with rain; wind moderate in general.
15	31	07	164	03	S. E.	69	4	13	P. M. ſqually, with rain. A. M. freſh gales and cloudy.
16	30	00	165	41	S. E.	68	4	14	P. M. freſh gales and cloudy. A. M. ſqually and light airs alternately.
17	29	26	166	47	S E.	68½	3	15	P. M. ſtrong ſqualls and light airs alternately. A. M. more moderate and ſettled.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Sick on board	Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1791.	South.		East.					Day	
April	°	′	°	′		°			
18	28	38	167	09	S. E.	71	5	16	Freſh breezes and cloudy. A. M. light ſhowers of rain.
19	27	24	167	05	E. N. E.	74	4	17	Moderate and fair.
20	26	02	167	31	Eaſt.	74	4	18	Freſh gales, with a croſs, confuſed ſea.
21	24	40	168	03	E. S. E.	74	3	19	P. M. freſh gales and cloudy. A. M. ſqually with rain, and very unſettled.
22	23	16	168	21	S. E.	72½	5	20	Moderate breezes and cloudy.
	Off the iſle of Pines								
23	22	45			E. S. E.	72	4	21	P. M. freſh gales and ſqually. A. M. freſh gales and fair. Eaſt point of the iſle of Pines, north 52° 00′ eaſt.
24	23	07	167	15	E. N. E.	72	3	22	P. M. freſh gales and fair. A. M. ditto, with ſqualls. At noon iſle of Pines, north 36° 00′ eaſt 12 leagues.
25	23	17	165	12	E. S. E.	73½	5	23	Moderate and fair.
26	22	40	164	09	Eaſt.	76	4	24	Light breezes and clear.
27	21	38	163	02	S. E.	72½	3	25	Moderate and clear.
28	20	40	162	00	S. E.	73	3	26	P. M. moderate and cloudy. A. M. freſh gales.
29	19	33	160	50	S. E.	78	2	27	Freſh gales and cloudy.
30	17	38	161	09	S. E.	76	2	28	P. M. freſh gales and cloudy. A. M. heavy ſqualls with ſmall rain.
May									
1	16	24	161	43	S. E.	78	2	29	Freſh gales with frequent heavy ſqualls.
2	14	42	162	22	S. E.	80	2	1	Strong gales with heavy ſqualls. Saw much drift wood.
3	13	17	163	02	E. S. E.	82	2	2	Freſh gales and cloudy.
4	11	43	163	30	E. S. E.	82	2	3	Squally and thick, with heavy rain.
5	11	04	163	33	E. S. E.	82	2	4	P. M. freſh gales and cloudy. Middle, calm. A. M. moderate and cloudy.
6	10	25	163	21	Variable.	84	2	5	Moderate breezes and fair.
7	10	02	163	01	North.	81	2	6	Squally and unſettled.
8	9	33	163	22	Variable.	83	2	7	P. M. inclinable to calm. A. M. light breezes and fair.
9	8	24	163	14	S. E.	83	2	8	Light breezes and clear. A. M. ſaw a group of ſmall iſlands, five in number.
10	7	46	162	44	E. S. E.	84	3	9	P. M. moderate breezes and clear. A. M. ſqually with lightning and rain. At noon, calm and ſultry.
11	7	18	161	55	S. E.	85	3	10	Light airs and cloudy.
12	6	48	161	00	Eaſt.	84	3	11	Moderate and fair. A. M. ſaw ſeveral large patches of breakers, between which we ſailed and had no ſoundings.
13	6	01	159	44	S. E.	85	2	12	P. M. moderate and clear. A. M. light winds.
14	5	30	158	51	E. S. E.	83	2	13	Light breezes and cloudy. A. M. ſaw a group of 32 iſlands, extending from N. W. ½ N. to N. E. ½ E. 3 leagues from neareſt.
15	5	23	158	02	E. N. E.	83	4	14	Moderate and cloudy.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in	Longitude in	Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Sick on board	Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1791. May	South. ° ′	Eaſt. ° ′		°		Day	
16	5 20	157 40	Variable.	84	4	15	Light airs and very ſultry.
17	5 15	156 21	Variable.	82	4	16	P. M. calm and cloudy with light ſhowers. A. M. freſh breezes and ſqually with rain.
18	4 55	155 07	E. N. E.	84	4	17	Freſh breezes and cloudy. Saw three ſmall iſlands, bearing W. N. W. and high land, bearing S. W.
19	4 54	153 28	S. E.	83	4	18	Moderate and cloudy. At noon, ſaw land bearing from W. to W. N. W. 9 or 10 leagues.
20	Cape St. George at noon, N. 14° 00′ E. 3 leagues.		Eaſt.	84	4	19	P. M. light breezes and cloudy. At ſix Cape Saint George, N. 80° 00′ W. 5 leagues. A. M. thunder and lightning.
21	Ditto S. 81° 00′ E. 4 leagues.		South.	85	3	20	Light airs and cloudy; ſtanding in for Gower's Harbour, but could not fetch it; ſtretched over to New-Britain.
22	4 30	152 54	S. S. E.	82½	4	21	Light airs and hazy. At noon, anchored in a ſmall bay, Duke of York's Iſland.
23			S. E.	84	4	22	Cloudy.
24	At anchor.		S. E.	85½	4	23	Clear. At anchor in Port Hunter
25	4° 07′ 30″	152 42	S. E.	84	4	24	Duke of York's Iſland. Cloudy.
26			S. E.	81½	2	25	Cloudy with rain.
27	4° 02′		S. E.	82	4	26	P. M. calm and hazy. A. M. moderate and cloudy; ſailed from Duke of York's Iſland.
28	3 13	150 42	S. E.	82	4	27	Freſh breezes and cloudy. At noon, S. W. point of Sandwich Iſland, N. 45° 00′ W. off ſhore 5 or 6 leagues.
29	2 41	148 53	South.	84	4	28	Moderate and cloudy. A. M. ſaw the Portland Iſlands bearing N. 49° E. 4 leagues.
30	2 29	148 13	Variable.	83	4	29	Little wind, dull, and hazy, with lightning, thunder, and rain. A. M. ſeveral of the Admiralty Iſlands in ſight.
31	2 10	147 27	S. W.	81	4	30	P. M. moderate and cloudy. Middle, lightning, thunder, and rain; many of the Admiralty Iſlands in ſight.
June 1	1 44	146 40	South.	83	3	1	P. M. light breezes and heavy rain; ſtill among the Admiralty Iſlands. A. M. moderate and fair.
2	1 26	146 20	S. W. by W.	84½	4	2	P. M. Freſh breezes and clear; the Great Admiralty Iſland S. E. ½ S. 9 leagues. A. M. calm.
3	1 08	145 50	S. W.	83	4	3	Light airs and hazy. A. M. ſaw 2 iſlands to the northward, and one to the S. W.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Sick on board	Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1791. June	South.		Eaſt.					Day	
	°	'	°	'		°			
4	00	32	145	20	S. E.	82½	3	4	P. M. light breezes and hazy. A. M. thunder and lightning, with ſome ſqualls and rain.
5	00	12	145	06	S. W.	83½	2	5	P. M. ſqually with rain. A. M. very light airs and cloudy.
6	00	02	144	27	N. W.	80	1	6	P. M. calm and cloudy. A. M. ſqually with rain.
	North.								
7	00	04	144	30	N. N. W.	84	1	7	Light airs and very variable.
8	00	33	144	20	S. E.	84	2	8	Light breezes and ſqually, with rain.
9	1	06	143	37	S. E.	85	3	9	Light breezes and clear.
10	1	43	143	09	Eaſt.	86½	4	10	Little wind and clear.
11	2	05	142	32	N. N. E.	87	4	11	Light winds and fair.
12	2	03	142	30	North.	86	2	12	Light airs and fair.
13	2	05	142	46	S. S. W.	85½	1	13	P. M. calm and fair. A. M. light breezes and cloudy.
14	2	27	142	33	Variable.	85	2	14	Light airs and clear.
15	3	05	141	50	Eaſt.	84	2	15	Light winds and fine.
16	3	23	140	36	Eaſt.	84	3	16	Moderate and fine. We meet almoſt every day with large trees a-drift.
17	3	33	139	44	S. E.	86	5	17	P. M. moderate and fair. A. M. light airs, inclinable to calm.
18	3	44	139	00	S. S. W.	83	4	18	P. M. ſqually with ſhowers of rain. A. M light airs and fair.
19	4	00	138	57	S. S. E.	84	4	19	Light breezes and cloudy.
20	4	13	139	20	South.	85	4	20	Little wind and fair.
21	4	09	139	30	E. S. E.	86	4	21	P. M. light airs and hazy. A. M. clear.
22	4	04	139	44	Eaſt.	85	3	22	Light airs and fair, with lightning to the ſouthward.
23	4	09	140	10	Calm.	87	4	23	Very light airs with frequent calms.
24	3	56	139	38	Variable.	84	4	24	Calm and light airs alternately.
25	4	16	140	20	Variable.	83½	4	25	Light winds, rain, and unſettled.
26	4	27	140	23	Variable.	84	3	26	Moderate and cloudy.
27	4	37	140	03	South.	82	3	27	P. M. moderate and cloudy with ſome light ſhowers. A. M. a heavy ſquall of wind and rain.
28	4	41	140	00	Variable.	82	3	28	Cloudy and unſettled. A. M. ſome ſqualls and rain.
29	4	27	140	16	Weſt.	84	3	29	Variable; ſometimes fair, ſometimes rainy.
30	4	46	139	46	W. S. W.	83	2	1	Light winds and cloudy. Died William Phillips, ſeaman.
July									
1	5	06	139	21	W. S. W.	83	2	2	Moderate breezes and cloudy, with frequent ſhowers.
2	5	44	139	08	Weſt.	82½	2	3	Moderate and cloudy, with heavy rain at times.
3	5	57	139	09	Weſt.	82	1	4	Cloudy, with frequent ſqualls and rain; lightning in the ſouth-eaſt.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Sick on board	Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1791.	North.		Eaſt.					Day	
July	°	′	°	′		°			
4	5	53	139	39	N.W.by W.	82	1	5	P. M. moderate with drizzling rain. A. M. clear and pleaſant.
5	5	43	140	32	S. E.	85	1	6	Light breezes, clear, and pleaſant.
6	5	40	140	18	S. E.	83	1	7	Moderate and fair.
7	5	33	140	06	Southerly.	85	1	8	Light breezes and fair.
8	5	37	140	09	Northerly.	84	2	9	Light airs and fair, with frequent calms.
9	5	27	140	44	W. by S.	83	1	10	P. M. calm and clear. A. M. heavy and frequent ſhowers of rain.
10	5	38	140	08	W. S. W.	82	1	11	Calm. A. M. hazy and unſettled, with rain.
11	6	09	140	12	Weſt.	81	2	12	P. M. moderate and fair. A. M. ſqually with much rain.
12	6	30	139	55	Variable.	81	1	13	P. M. light breezes and unſettled. A. M. cloudy with rain.
13	8	13	139	58	S. W.	81	1	14	P. M. moderate and cloudy, with rain. A. M. ſqually. Saw two iſlands to the northward.
14	8	34	140	20	W. by N.	84	1	15	Freſh breezes and fair.
15	8	45	140	35	N. N. E.	84½	1	16	Moderate and cloudy, with a few ſhowers.
16	9	12	139	30	N. E.	81½	1	17	P. M. ſqually with heavy rain. A. M. light breezes and hazy.
17	9	51	138	50	E, N. E.	84	1	18	P. M. moderate and hazy, with ſmall rain. A. M. ſaw three iſlands bearing W. S. W. 8 or 9 leagues.
18	10	26	137	17	N. E.	86	1	19	P. M. moderate and fair. A. M. light airs and fine.
19	10	47	136	41	N. N. E.	85	1	20	P. M. calm and cloudy. A. M. moderate breezes, clear, and pleaſant.
20	11	03	135	40	E. N. E.	83	1	21	Moderate and fair.
21	11	37	134	16	E. by N.	85	1	22	Moderate and fair. A. M. clear and pleaſant.
22	12	01	133	21	N. E.	87	1	23	Moderate and cloudy.
23	11	56	132	20	Variable.	86	1	24	Light variable winds and cloudy.
24	11	27	132	00	Weſt.	84	2	25	P. M. little wind and cloudy. A. M. ſqually and unſettled, with rain.
25	11	07	132	52	Weſt.	82	2	26	Freſh gales, with heavy ſqualls and rain.
26	10	39	130	47	W. N. W.	82	2	27	Freſh gales, with frequent ſqualls and rain; much thunder and lightning.
27	11	07	130	47	W. S. W.	84	2	28	Freſh gales and ſqually, with rain. A. M. dark and ſqually, with a large ſea.
28	11	49	130	25	S. W.	85	2	29	Strong gales and ſqually, with rain.
29	12	46	129	29	S. S. W.	85½	2	30	Freſh gales and hazy.
30	13	25	128	37	S. by W.	84½	4	1	P. M. freſh gales and ſqually. A. M. more moderate.
31	13	20	128	12	Variable.	84	3	4	Light winds and cloudy.
Aug.									
1	13	01	127	59	W. S. W.	80	5	3	P. M. moderate and clear. A. M. thunder, lightning, and very unſettled.
2	12	00	127	54	W. N. W.	82	3	4	Freſh gales and ſqually, with ſmall rain.
3	9	49	128	10	Weſt.	82	4	5	Freſh gales and cloudy, with ſome ſqualls

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Sick on board	Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1791. Aug.	North. °	′	East. °	′		°		Day.	
4	9	30	127	47	S. S. W.	83	4	6	Light breezes and unſettled. A. M. ſaw the land from W. to W. S. W. diſtant 10 leagues.
5	8	44	127	54	S. S. W.	83	4	7	Light breezes and cloudy.
6	7	38	126	53	Variable.	83	4	8	Light winds and cloudy.
7	6	21	127	17	S. W.	80	4	9	P. M. freſh breezes and hazy. A. M. ſqually and unſettled.
8	5	41	126	54	S. W.	82	4	10	Freſh breezes and cloudy.
9	5	27	126	18	S. S. W.	82	3	11	Moderate and hazy, rather unſettled.
10	5	26	125	51	Variable.	82	3	12	Light airs. Standing in for Hummock Iſland.
11	5	27	☽ r Obſ. 125	12	S. W. to N. W.	83	2	13	At noon, anchored in 22 fathoms.
12						83	2	14	At anchor at Hummock Iſland.
13						83	3	15	Freſh breezes and ſqually.
14	4	43	125	28	W. S. W.	83	3	16	Ditto.
15	3	52	125	18	Variable.	83	2	17	P. M. moderate breezes and cloudy. A. M. very light airs.
16	3	34	124	40	S. E. Variable.	83	3	18	Light and variable winds.
17	3	15	123	40	S. S. E.	84	3	19	Light breezes and clear.
18	3	11	123	20	S. E.	85	1	20	Light airs and fair.
19	3	05	123	12	Variable.	85½	1	21	Light variable airs and fair; very ſultry.
20	3	05	122	31	South.	86	2	22	Light airs and fair; very ſmooth water.
21	3	04	122	00	S. S. E.	85½	1	23	Light airs and cloudy.
22	3	00	121	05	S. E.	85	1	24	Light airs and clear.
23	2	50	120	26	S. S. E.	85½	1	25	Light airs, with lightning, to the weſtward.
24	2	27	120	32	W. S. W.	85½	1	26	Light airs with frequent calms.
25	1	53	120	46	Variable.	85	1	27	Freſh breezes and clear. N. W. point of Celebes, S. by E. 9 leagues.
26	1	49	120	40	S. W.		3	28	Freſh breezes and cloudy. N. W. point of Celebes, S. S. E. 10 leagues.
27	1	36	120	43	S. E.	87	3	29	Frequent calms and ſultry. N. W. point of Celebes, S. 52° E. 9 leagues.
28	1	21	120	20	Variable.	85½	3	30	Clear and ſultry, with very light airs at times.
29	1	22	119	44	S. S. W.	82	3	1	Freſh breezes and hazy; lightning in the N. W.
30	00	55	119	44	S. W.	81	4	2	P. M. moderate and cloudy. A. M. freſh breezes, thick, and hazy, with ſmall rain.
31	00	21	119	49	S. W.	83	4	3	Freſh breezes, thick, and hazy. A. M. a moderate breeze and hazy.
Sept. 1	00	07	119	53	S. S. W.	83	4	4	Moderate and cloudy.
2	00	00	119	49	S. W.	83½	4	5	P. M. moderate and cloudy. A. M. light airs and hazy.
	South.								
3	00	10	119	34	Variable.	84	4	6	Moderate and fair; lightning in the S. E.

Year, Month, and Day.	Latitude in		Longitude in		Winds.	Thermometer at Noon.	Sick on board	Moon's Age.	Weather, &c. &c.
1791. Sept.	South.		East.					Day.	
	°	′	°	′					
4	00	28	119	14	W. S. W.	84	4	7	P. M. light airs with lightning in the S. E. A. M. light airs and sultry.
5	00	50	119	06	N. W. West.	85	3	8	Light airs and clear, with frequent calms.
6	1	13	119	16	Variable.	84	3	9	Moderate and fair, but very sultry.
7	1	47	118	59	West to N. E.	85	3	10	Light airs, variable, and sultry.
8	2	19	118	42	S. by E.	84	3	11	P. M. moderate and clear. A. M. light airs and fair.
9	2	56	118	04	S. E. by S.	85	3	12	Light breezes and fair.
10	3	38	118	06	South. S. E. by S.	84	3	13	Moderate and cloudy.
11	3	46	117	04	S. E.	84	3	14	Moderate and cloudy. A. M. made the two small islands, called the Brothers, off S. E. point of Borneo.
12	3	51	116	57	S. S. E.	84	4	15	Moderate and fair. Off S. E. point of Borneo.
13	3	36	117	21	S. S. E.	82½	5	16	P. M. moderate and clear. A. M. light, variable airs and fine.
14	3	41	117	11	S. E.	82½	5	17	Light airs and calms alternately; fair.
15	3	42	117	07	S. S. E.	83	5	18	Light, variable airs and fair.
16	3	31	117	35	S. by E.	84	5	19	Moderate and clear.
17	3	47	117	52	South. S. E. by E.	84	5	20	Light breezes and clear.
18	4	03	117	39	S. E. Variable.	84½	5	21	Light winds and fair.
19	4	42	117	01	S. S. W. S. S. E.	83	5	22	Moderate breezes and fair.
20	5	28	115	29	S. E. by S.	83	5	23	Moderate and pleasant.
21	5	55	113	33	S. E.	81	5	24	Fair and pleasant, with light breezes.
22	6	20	112	06	E. S. E.	81	5	25	Fresh breezes and clear.
23	6	05	110	23	E. S. E.	82	4	26	Moderate and fair. The island of Careman Java bore at day-light W. by N. 4 or 5 leagues.
24	6	05	108	52	East.	83	4	27	P. M. moderate and clear. A. M. squally and unsettled; many large water spouts and whirlwinds over the ship.
25	5	50	107	39	N. E.	84	4	28	P. M. moderate and fair. A. M. cloudy with light winds.
26	5	54	107	12	Variable.	86	4	29	Moderate breezes and fair. A. M. light airs and sultry.
27							4		Anchored in the Road of Batavia.

CHAPTER X.

Captain Hunter waits on the Governor at Batavia.—Applies for a paſſage to England.—Purchaſes the Waakſamheyd for that purpoſe.—Leaves Batavia.—Paſſes the Keelings.—Arrives at the Cape of Good Hope.—Leaves that place, and anchors at Saint Helena.—Departs from Saint Helena.—Arrives at Portſmouth.—Tables for the variation of the compaſs.—Captain Hunter's letter to the Lords of the Admiralty.

CHAP. X. 1791. September.

THE maſter of the ſhip went immediately on ſhore, to inform his owner (the Shebander) of his arrival: that gentleman wrote me a note the ſame night, begging to ſee me the next morning as early as poſſible, that he might introduce me to the governor; he informed me at the ſame time, that it was quite unneceſſary to write to the governor upon any buſineſs I might have to ſettle with him, (which the maſter of the ſhip informed him I intended) as my buſineſs could be done with more eaſe in a perſonal interview. I landed the next morning, and went with the Shebander (who ſpoke Engliſh) to the governor, who lived about three miles out of town. I had previouſly told the Shebander, in writing, what my buſineſs was, which he thought neceſſary for enabling him the better to interpret between us. I informed the governor, that Governor Phillip had found it neceſſary, for the forwarding of his Majeſty's ſervice, to employ the veſſel in which I was embarked to convey to that port the officers and company of his Majeſty's loſt ſhip the Sirius, with a view, that after we had procured the neceſſary proviſion and refreſhments, we ſhould be permitted to proceed in the ſame veſſel to England: I therefore deſired permiſſion to have her refitted, and to proceed with all poſſible expedition. The governor, in anſwer to my requeſt, informed me, that he could not conſent to any veſſel belonging to the company being employed as a tranſport, and that it was contrary to the eſtabliſhed regulations of the company to permit that veſſel, as Dutch property, to proceed from thence to Europe. I deſired that he would take the trouble to conſider the nature of my application; and I begged he might underſtand, that I was not ſoliciting a favour to myſelf, as an individual, but that I was an officer in the king's ſervice, and that although I was not at that port in the command of one of his Majeſty's ſhips, that I nevertheleſs was in actual ſervice, and had at that time a ſhip's company, and their proper officers, under my command; that he would be pleaſed, therefore, to underſtand me correctly, that it was for his Majeſty's ſervice I was then making the application he had heard; and I hoped, and believed, that himſelf and the council would find no difficulty or inconvenience to the company's concerns, in deviating a little from their eſtabliſhed rules for the accommodation of his Britannick Majeſty's ſervice. To this he only replied, he could do nothing of himſelf, and that my application muſt be made to the council; to which, I informed him, I had no ſort of objection.

The Shebander, therefore, wrote an application from me in the Dutch language, founded on the letter which I had written to him on that ſubject; to which he added one paragraph that, he ſaid, would very much facilitate the buſineſs, and prevent delay; this was, after having deſired permiſſion to let the veſſel proceed to Europe, "That if it were "impoſſible, conſiſtent with the eſtabliſhed rules of the company, to

CHAP. X. 1791. October. "grant ſuch a requeſt, that they would be pleaſed to give permiſſion "for my purchaſing the veſſel, if I could ſettle the buſineſs with the "proprietor." I waited on the governor and council in perſon, and received my anſwer from the governor, which was, that the council had complied with my requeſt, and would permit me to purchaſe the veſſel; a buſineſs which the proprietor and I had previouſly ſettled. I cannot help noticing here, that this veſſel was ſometimes conſidered as belonging to the company, and at other times as the ſole property of a private individual; probably, thoſe gentlemen who hold conſiderable appointments under the company, and are at the ſame time employed in an extenſive commerce on their own account, may be authoriſed to uſe the name of the company, whenever it may be neceſſary to promote their own private intereſt. This gentleman, whoſe name was Engelhard, acted with much liberality in the equipment of his ſhip, although thoſe whom he employed on that buſineſs did not act with the ſame good intention: he was, upon every occaſion, civil and attentive.

A ſhort time before we arrived here, the town of Batavia had been very unhealthy, and was, though much better, ſtill ſickly. Our ſailors continued to enjoy good health until about a week before we were ready for ſea, when they fell down faſt with a fever which had raged much at Batavia: this fever was, however, in ſome of the ſeamen, brought on by a little intemperance. 19th. On the 19th of October died Daniel Buddle, ſeaman. 20th. On the 20th, we left the road and ſailed to the iſland of Onruſt, where we anchored and received ſome ſtores for the uſe of the ſhip. On the 22d and 26th. 22d, we ſailed from Onruſt, and the 26th cleared the ſtreight of Sunda: at this time Terence Burne, ſeaman, died, and we had twenty-two down with the Batavia fever; it was of the intermitting kind, and exceedingly obſtinate and difficult to remove; it reduced the patient to a very weakly ſtate in a very ſhort time, and occaſioned much ſickneſs at the ſtomach, and a loathing of every kind of food.

1791.

October 30. On the 30th, as we were ſteering ſouth-weſt, we kept a good look-out all night for the iſlands called Keelings, or Cocos Iſlands; being uncertain whether their ſituation was well aſcertained: at noon on the 31ſt, the latitude obſerved was 12° 10′ ſouth; this I ſuppoſed to be rather to the ſouthward of them, and altered the courſe to weſt-ſouth-weſt: at three in the afternoon, we diſcovered the iſlands under our lee, diſtant about four leagues: there are three of them well covered with wood, but they are very low and flat; there are ſeveral ſmaller ſpots like rocks above water; the larger iſlands have ſandy beaches, and in many places there were very high breakers: the latitude of the ſouth ſide is 12° 06′ ſouth; the longitude by account from Java Head, but afterwards confirmed by obſervations of ⊙ and ☽ is 98° 03′ eaſt. 31ſt.

Nov. 14. Dec. 11, 15. 17th. On the 14th of November, Robert Henderſon, ſeaman, died; and on the 11th of December died Edward Moore, ſeaman. On the 15th we made Cape Lagullus, and the 17th anchored in Table-Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope; but it blew ſo ſtrong from the ſouth-eaſt that we were not able to fetch the upper anchorage: it continued to blow from the ſame quarter for ſeveral days, and on the 20th, it blew ſo violent a gale, that the two bower anchors would not hold the ſhip: finding in the evening that the gale did not in the ſmalleſt degree abate, and that if I continued to truſt any longer to anchors, which it was plain were too light for the ſhip, we ſhould run a riſk of being drove upon the reef off Robbin's Iſland in the night, for every heavy guſt ſet the ſhip a-drift, we cut both the cables before dark, and had juſt day-light enough to run to ſea under the foreſail. When we got a few leagues to

ſea

1791. Dec. 22. ſea we found the weather quite moderate, and made ſail, with the hope of being able to recover the bay again. On the 22d, in the evening, we fetched cloſe round Green Point, and hoiſted the ſignal of diſtreſs, having but one ſmall anchor left: his Majeſty's ſhip Providence, the Aſſiſtant armed tender, and Pitt tranſport, being in the bay, repeated our ſignal with many guns, and ſent all their boats; ſeveral Engliſh whalers and ſome Americans alſo ſent their boats with anchors and hauſers, and we were very ſoon got into ſafety.

I was much obliged to Captain Bligh, as well as to the commanders of all the other ſhips for their exertions, without which we muſt again have been driven to ſea. The ſame night we received anchors and cables from the ſhore, and ſecured the ſhip. The anchors which we had left being far down the bay when we quitted them, were entirely loſt. 23d. On the 23d, the Providence and Aſſiſtant tenders left the bay, and on the 24th the Pitt tranſport ſailed for New South Wales.

As our ſick, from the very low ſtate they were in when we arrived, were likely to detain me longer here than it was my wiſh or intention to have ſtaid, I determined to avail myſelf of that time, and convert a ſpare top-maſt into a mizen-maſt; the ſhip being in certain ſituations, very unſafe for want of after-ſail; and the head of the main maſt being much crippled by the weight of the try-ſail, I ſet the carpenters immediately to work upon this job, which was ſoon completed; but on examining the head of the fore-maſt, I found it was alſo very defective, which determined me to reef both the top-maſts. 1792. January 13. On the 13th of January, 1792, having completed our proviſions for ſixteen weeks, I directed that ſuch of the men as were ſufficiently recovered to proceed upon the voyage, might be diſcharged from ſick quarters and ſent on board. On the 18th, with a breeze from ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, we ran down to Robbin's Iſland, where, it falling calm, we anchored. On the 19th, with a ſouth-weſt breeze, we ſtretched out to ſea. We left five men at ſick quarters who were too weakly to be taken on board. 1792. January 18. 19th.

On the 4th of February, at five in the afternoon, we ſaw the iſland of Saint Helena, and at noon we anchored off James's Valley in fourteen and a half fathoms, and moored ſhip: I ſent an officer on ſhore to wait on the governor, who wrote me a very polite note, expreſſing his concern for the misfortune I had met with, and offering every refreſhment the iſland could afford to my ſeamen. On the 5th, I landed, and was received by the governor under the uſual ſalute given to captains of his Majeſty's ſhips (eleven guns). On the 13th, we left the iſland, having received freſh beef for our ſhip's company during our ſtay there, and having completed our water. I ſhould very ill deſerve the civilities I received here, if I were not to take this opportunity of expreſſing my obligations to Lieutenant Colonel Brooke, the governor of this iſland, and to every individual of his family, for their great politeneſs and very friendly attention to myſelf and officers whilſt we remained at this iſland. February 4. 5th. 13th.

On the 22d of April we arrived at Portſmouth. April 22.

An

An ACCOUNT of Obſervations for finding the Variation of the Compaſs, made on board the WAAKSAMHEID Tranſport, on a Voyage from NEW SOUTH WALES to ENGLAND, by the Northern Route.

Latitude in South.		Longitude in Eaſt.		Variation by Azimuth.		Variation by Amplitude.	
°	′	°	′	°	′	°	′
33	07	159	09	9	28 E.	10	13 E.
22	55	167	15	11	30		
21	56	163	16	9	44		
10	52	163	30	9	15		
9	42	163	00	9	35		
7	26	162	09	8	10		
6	07	159	55	8	01		
5	34	158	58	8	10		
5	20	157	30			8	14
4	56	156	00			6	43
1	15	145	58	4	30		
00	12	145	04	4	24		
00	02	144	50			4	56
North.							
00	03	144	29	4	50		
00	25	144	00	4	42		
1	35	143	00	4	16		
1	46	143	02			4	12
2	01	142	38	3	20	3	30
2	54	141	56	2	29	2	24
3	10	141	20			2	37
2	18	140	45	2	22		
3	41	138	55			2	14
4	06	139	48			3	28
4	05	139	44			4	17
4	08	140	10			4	03
4	20	140	14			4	00
10	44	136	30	2	18		
10	59	135	56	1	50		
7	50	126	50			1	15
3	06	118	00			0	42
South.							
4	10	117	37			0	26 W.
6	06	108	36			2	59
20	03	81	20			3	50
20	50	78	07	4	06 W.		
21	26	75	54			7	35
22	49	70	30	10	00	8	30
23	30	68	55	10	11		
28	38	50	11	26	00	25	22 W.
34	36	34	30	28	06		
35	06	32	21	27	48	26	45
35	06	30	59			28	30
35	07	30	21			28	00
35	15	29	16			27	11
35	33	25	19			28	18
35	54	23	30			27	37
In Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope.						26	00
27	33	8	58			23	15
26	16	7	58	23	18 W.	22	26
25	23	7	16			22	00
22	44	6	09			21	01
21	36	4	18			19	30
20	26	3	02			19	05
		Weſt.					
17	14	1	20	16	43	16	23
16	34	2	26			16	30
16	12	4	05			15	12
In St. Helena Road.						15	30
15	18	5	51			15	00
13	49	8	04			13	00
7	51	15	01			12	54
6	06	17	01			11	40
4	19	18	55			11	15
North.							
1	10	23	01			10	35
1	52	23	12			10	06
4	14	24	16			10	15
5	07	25	08			10	00
5	35	26	39			8	43
12	38	32	53			7	15
14	25	36	50			6	13
15	07	37	21			6	30
15	48	37	31			6	24
24	32	44	58			7	17

The Lords of the Admiralty, from a zealous wiſh to promote the nautical intereſts of Great-Britain, were pleaſed to permit the publication of the following letter from Captain Hunter; which gives his opinion on the beſt courſe from New South Wales to Europe; and which cloſes the inſtructive communications of that able navigator.

To the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty:

My Lords,

AS the ſettlement, which is now eſtabliſhed on the coaſt of New South Wales, will no doubt occaſion a frequent intercourſe between the Mother Country and that part of the world, I conceive it to be a duty in thoſe, who, from their own experience and obſervation, may be qualified to give any information in their power, relative to the navigation to and from that diſtant country: it is with this hope, that I preſume to trouble your lordſhips with an opinion, which, I can with truth ſay, has been founded on my own experience and obſervation.

The paſſage from England to the Cape of Good Hope is already ſo well known that it would be ſuperfluous in me to make any obſervations upon it. From the Cape to our ſettlement at Port Jackſon, the navigation is now much better known, than it was when the firſt convoy to that country was left in my charge; it is a plain and eaſy track; any perſon who is acquainted with the common rules of navigation, and finding the variations of the compaſs, may, with the neceſſary look-out, run acroſs that extenſive ocean without danger: I have ſailed over it twice, and it has been croſſed by many other ſhips ſince. The advantage of being able to aſcertain the ſhip's place in longitude, by obſervations of the moon, will ever be ſatisfactory, but more particularly through ſo vaſt a tract of ſea, in which the error of the log may conſiderably accumulate, when ſhips arrive upon that coaſt where the land lies ſo nearly in a north and ſouth direction, there can be no difficulty in diſcovering what part of the coaſt they are upon, their latitude obſerved will always point that out, by applying to the general chart, given from the authority of that moſt correct and able navigator Captain Cook. When they arrive off Botany-Bay, Port Jackſon, or Broken-Bay, they will I hope receive ſome aſſiſtance into any of theſe harbours, from the ſurveys done by me, copies of which I delivered to the governor, as the different harbours were completed, in order that fair copies might, as early as he ſhould judge proper, be tranſmitted home: but that nothing in my power may be wanting to aſſiſt thoſe who may be ſtrangers on their arrival off that part of the coaſt, ſeparate copies of thoſe ports, with directions more full than were given with the firſt, will be delivered at your lordſhip's board, with this, and alſo a copy of the three harbours, on one ſheet, connected with the intermediate coaſt.

It is the return from that country immediately for Europe, by the ſafeſt, moſt certain, and expeditious route, that ſhould be the object of our particular attention. The paſſage from Van Diemen's Land weſtward, to the Cape of Good Hope, has never yet been attempted; we can therefore ſay but little upon it; ſome, however, are of opinion, that a paſſage may be made that way with as much eaſe and expedition as by any other route. I confeſs that I differ from theſe opinions: I admit that the paſſage may be made; but I think, whenever it is tried, that it will be found tedious, and fatiguing to the ſhip's company. The ſhip which purſues that route ſhould be ſtrong and well found, and her crew healthy and capable of bearing much blowing, and ſome cold weather. It is not from a ſingle voyage that we are to judge of the eligibility of this paſſage; it will happen in ſome ſeaſons that the wind may be more favourable for making that paſſage than in others; but it is on the general prevalence of weſterly winds here, and the heavy ſea which is conſtantly rolling from the weſtward, that I conceive this route may be tedious and fatiguing, and on which account I give the preference to the ſouthern route by Cape Horn. This paſſage has been frequently tried, and never yet failed of being ſafe and expeditious; the other never having yet been tried, leaves in my mind ſome doubt of its certainty and expedition, and a ſtrong ſuſpicion, that whenever it is, it may be found twice out of three times, attended with the difficulties I have hinted at; but if from repeated experience it ſhould be found to be as practicable, expeditious, and certain, as ſome imagine, it will no doubt be preferable to all the others, as being a ſhorter diſtance.

This paſſage will of courſe be attempted only in the Summer months: for admitting a ſhip to have gained ſo much to the weſtward, as to enable her to clear the weſt coaſt of New Holland, and to ſtretch to the northward, until ſhe falls into the ſouth-eaſt trade wind, ſhe will carry this trade in the Summer time probably quite home to the Cape; but in the Winter, north-weſt winds prevail in the neighbourhood of that coaſt, which would exceedingly retard her arrival there.

The paſſage ſouthward by Cape Horn, I have ſailed, and as a proof of the prevalence of weſterly winds in thoſe high latitudes, I made my voyage to the Cape of Good Hope, in ninety-one days, from Port Jackſon, although I was ſo unlucky as to be detained beating off Cape

Horn

Horn for ſeventeen days, with a north-eaſt wind; which I believe is not very common there. This is rather a long voyage to be performed in that time, and yet I think it will be done twice in three times in leſs, although a diſtance of about 3300 leagues.

The northern paſſage, which can only be attempted during the Winter ſeaſon, in the ſouthern hemiſphere, on account of the periodical trade winds in the Indian ſeas, and undertaken in ſuch time as to enſure their reaching Batavia, before the ſetting in of the weſterly winds there, which is generally in the middle or end of October. The dangers, currents, calms, and other delays to which we are liable in theſe little known ſeas, and of which we had much experience in the Waakſamheid tranſport, is the ſubject of the preceding narrative, which was written particularly for the information of your lordſhips, and principally with a view of ſhewing the very great uncertainty of an expeditious voyage to Europe by that paſſage. I ſailed from Port Jackſon in March, and I can take upon me, without, I hope, being ſuppoſed to have preſumed too much on my own judgment and experience to aſſert, that a ſhip leaving that port in the end of September, or beginning of October, taking her route by Cape Horn, would have reached England as ſoon as I have. The time I ſtopped at ſuch places as I was obliged to touch at, will appear in the narrative.

If ever government ſhould find it neceſſary to ſend ſhips to that country, which may be intended to return immediately from thence to England, I beg leave to ſuggeſt to your lordſhips, that the particular ſeaſons in the ſouthern hemiſphere ſhould be conſidered, in order to prevent thoſe delays in the return of the ſhips which muſt inevitably attend their ſailing at an unfavourable time.

If ſuch ſhips leave England in February, or earlier, if found more convenient, they ſhould refreſh at Rio de Janeiro in preference to the Cape of Good Hope; as by the time they could arrive at the Cape the north-weſt winds will be ſetting in there, which will oblige them to go into the Falſe bay; this will conſiderably encreaſe their expences, and probably occaſion ſome delay: ſail immediately from Rio Janeiro for the coaſt of New South Wales, where, if they are not uncommonly unfortunate, they will arrive early in September; this is giving them good time.

They will then have time to clear, ballaſt, and to refreſh their people for ſix weeks or two months, and return by Cape Horn; or, if the weſtern paſſage be found preferable, the ſeaſon will be equally favourable for it. If they ſhould take their route by Cape Horn, as they will no doubt require to refreſh ſomewhere in their voyage home, they may either ſtop at Santa Catherina or Rio Janeiro, on the Brazil coaſt, or go to the Cape; in this caſe I would recommend the Cape, as more convenient, in more reſpects than one. If they are ſickly, there they may get a ſupply of men, which it is well known they cannot at either of the other places; and in ſailing from the Cape homeward they will have the advantage of being to windward; however, if as late as April, they would probably prefer Brazil. If water only were wanted, that could be had at Falkland's Iſlands.

In taking the liberty to offer theſe hints, I mean only, that in order to prevent any loſs of time, upon ſuch a ſervice, the ſhips may be diſpatched from England in ſuch time as to inſure their having the Summer months to return either by Cape Horn, or the weſtern route, as may be directed.

The ſhips upon this ſervice will no doubt be under the inconvenience of coming upon the coaſt of New South Wales in ſome of the Winter months; we have ſome bad weather on that coaſt in the Winter, and ſome ſmart gales of wind; the eaſterly gales always bring thick or hazy weather: I would recommend the not making too free with the coaſt, until they be near the parallel of their port. In ſteering in for Port Jackſon, if they ſhould fall to leeward, either with a northerly or ſoutherly wind, they can avail themſelves of either Botany-Bay or Broken-Bay, Port Jackſon being the center harbour.

In the ſketches which will accompany the narrative of my laſt paſſage, I beg leave to inform your lordſhips, that the bearings and relative ſituations of the different lands which we fell in with were determined by interſections taken from the ſhip by Lieutenants William Bradley and Henry Waterhouſe, who paid particular and conſtant attention to thoſe very neceſſary obſervations; and that the ſituations of the lands in general were determined by obſervations for the longitude as well as latitude, which were made by myſelf and the above officers.

I have now only to requeſt that your lordſhips will do me the honour to believe, that in the liberty I have taken, I am prompted wholly by a ſenſe of duty, and that I am, with the utmoſt reſpect,

My Lords,

June, 1792. Your Lordſhip's moſt obedient

and devoted humble ſervant,

JOHN HUNTER.

LIEUTE-

LIEUTENANT *KING*'s JOURNAL.

THE public owe an obligation, and the publiſher a kindneſs, to Sir Joſeph Banks and Mr. Stephens, of the Admiralty, to whoſe charge Lieutenant King had committed his journal, for liberally allowing the free uſe of this intelligent manuſcript, in order to the publication of ſuch parts of it as might be ſupplementary in its notices to the foregoing narrative of Captain Hunter.

The journal of Lieutenant King, like the narrative of Captain Hunter, begins with the *plan* of a ſettlement on the coaſt of New South Wales, for the preſent baniſhment of convicts, in the hope of future benefit to the nation; and with the outfit of the ſhips which had been appointed for this uncommon expedition. Like Captain Hunter, under whom he ſailed in the Sirius, he conducts their little fleet from England to the Canaries; from theſe iſlands to the Brazils; from Rio de Janeiro to the Cape of Good Hope; recording ſuch profeſſional notices, and making ſuch uſeful remarks, as occurred on a voyage, which being now perfectly known, could afford in the recital little diverſity, and could furniſh in the publication neither information nor amuſement. Of the Sirius, which was never more to return to *the Thames*, he tells the following anecdote: " She was built in *the river* " for an eaſt country ſhip; and in loading her, ſhe took fire and was " burnt down to her wales. The government wanting a roomy veſſel " to carry ſtores abroad, in 1781, purchaſed her bottom, which was " rebuilt with ſuch ſtuff as, during the war, could be found. She " went two voyages as the Berwick ſtore-ſhip; and without any re- " pairs ſhe was reported, when the preſent expedition was thought of,

“ as fit for the voyage to New Holland, when ſhe was named *The Sirius.*” Experience, however, evinced, that ſhe was altogether adequate to the ſervice for which ſhe was deſtined; and carried her crew ſafe through one of the moſt tremendous gales, on a lee ſhore, that the oldeſt ſeaman remembered.

Lieutenant King deſcribes the Cape of Good Hope, of which ſo many accounts have been given. Here was it determined, that with Governor Phillip and other officers, he was to change his ſhip from the Sirius to the Supply, an armed tender of one hundred and ſeventy tons: but this meaſure was not executed till the fleet had ſailed 352 miles from the Cape of Good Hope, when they yet had 5582 miles of an ocean to traverſe, before they could expect to ſee the ſouth cape of New Holland, the object of their hopes. Soon after they had parted from their aſſociates in the voyage, they were alarmed in the night with the cry of *rocks under the lee bow:* but having put the helm a-lee, they ſoon perceived, that the Supply had paſſed over two enormous whales, which gave her a ſhock that was felt by all. Without any other accident, though they had heavy gales and a boiſterous ſea, they anchored at Botany-Bay on the 19th of January, 1788, after a voyage of thirty-ſeven weeks and a day, ſince their departure from England. On the fifth day after their arrival, two ſtrange ſhips were ſeen ſtanding into the bay, which proved to be the La Bouſſole and L'Aſtrolabe under the command of Monſieur De la Peyrouſe, and which have been long wiſhfully looked for by all the good and wiſe of Europe.

CHAPTER XI.

Lieutenant King viſits Monſieur De la Peyrouſe at Botany-Bay.— Polit reception there.—An account of his adventures.—Lieutenant King returns to Port Jackſon.—Sent by Governor Phillip to form a ſettlement on Norfolk Iſland.—Leaves Port Jackſon.—An iſland diſcovered. —Arrival at Norfolk Iſland.—Difficulty in finding a landing-place.— Lands the convicts, proviſions, and ſtores.—Ground cleared, and tents fixed. —A ſtore-houſe erected.—Vegetables, and various ſorts of grain ſown.— Diſtreſſed by rats.—General orders for the regulation of the ſettlement.

CHAP. XI. 1788. February 1.

ON the 1ſt of February, at day-light in the morning, Lieutenant Dawes, of the marines, and myſelf, left Sydney Cove in a cutter, in order to proceed to Botany-Bay, and viſit Monſieur De la Peyrouſe, on the part of Governor Phillip, and to offer him any aſſiſtance he might ſtand in need of. We ſoon got down to the harbour's mouth, and finding a light breeze from the ſouthward, we were obliged to row all the way: we arrived on board the Bouſſole at ten o'clock in the morning, and were received with the greateſt attention and politeneſs by Monſieur Peyrouſe, and the few officers he had. After delivering my meſſage to him, he returned his thanks to Governor Phillip, and made us ſimilar offers to thoſe he had received, adding at the ſame time, that he ſhould be in France within the ſpace of fifteen months, and as he had ſtores, &c. ſufficient to ſerve him for three years, he ſhould be happy to ſend Governor Phillip any thing that he might want. Monſieur Peyrouſe informed me, that a number of the convicts had been to him, and wanted to enter on board his ſhips, but that he had diſmiſſed them with threats, and had given them a day's proviſions to carry them back to the ſettlement.

CHAP. XI. 1788. February.

The wind coming on to blow freſh from the northward, I accepted Monſieur Peyrouſe's invitation to paſs the day with him, and to return to Port Jackſon the next morning.

In the courſe of our converſation, I learned that he had touched at, and been off, the following places, viz. Madeira, Teneriffe, and Santa Catherina: he had run down the coaſts of Chili and California, on the laſt of which he had loſt boats, officers, and men, by the ſurf. He had been at Kamſchatka, where he replaced the wooden inſcription that had been erected to the memory of Captain Clerke, (which was nearly defaced) with a copper one: for this attention I thanked him. From Kamſchatka, he went to Macao; from thence to the Phillippines, the Sandwich Iſlands, Iſles des Navigateurs, Friendly Iſlands, and Norfolk Iſland, from whence he came to Botany-Bay. At the Iſland Macuna, (one of the Iſles des Navigateurs) in latitude 14° 19′ ſouth, longitude 173° 00′ 20″ eaſt of Paris, he had been ſo very unfortunate as to loſe Monſieur De Langle, captain of the L'Aſtrolabe, together with eight officers, four ſailors, and one boy; all of whom were killed by the natives, beſides a number who were wounded. This melancholy affair happened in the following manner: The two ſhips had been at the iſland juſt mentioned ſome days, and were on very good terms with the natives, who had furniſhed them with every article of ſtock in the greateſt profuſion, for barter: Monſieur De la Peyrouſe, however, had found it very neceſſary to be on his guard againſt a treacherous diſpoſition which he diſcovered in them. When every thing was ready for their departure, and the ſhips were under weigh, De Langle requeſted M. Peyrouſe to permit him to get another turn of water; this M. Peyrouſe conſented to, but with as much reluctance as De Langle ſeemed ſolicitous to obtain his requeſt: as the long-boats were not hoiſted in, they were ſent on this ſervice, with two other boats to attend them, under

1788. February.

the direction of the unfortunate De Langle. At this time the ſhips were lying to, and a ſtrong current ſet them round a point out of ſight of the place where the boats were to land. When the boats landed, the men were, as uſual, ſurrounded by the inhabitants, who did not immediately diſcover any hoſtile intention: unfortunately, the ſailors in the long-boats had ſuffered them to take the ground, and whilſt they were endeavouring to get them afloat again, the natives were very troubleſome, and preſſed cloſe in upon the ſailors; on this, De Langle ordered the men in the rowing-boats to be ready to fire on the natives, but not to do it until he ordered them. Some altercation happening at this juncture, in conſequence of their preſſing ſo cloſe upon the French, probably occaſioned a blow with a club from one of the natives, which was inſtantly taken as a ſignal by the reſt, and the maſſacre began. The natives were armed with ſhort heavy clubs, by which means they rendered the fire-arms uſeleſs. Orders were given to fire the ſwivels, &c. in the rowing boats, but it was too late, although the natives fled the moment they were fired, dragging the dead bodies after them. It was ſuppoſed that thirty of the natives were killed in this unfortunate affray. Thoſe belonging to the ſhips, who eſcaped the maſſacre, ſwam to the rowing boats, and were carried on board the ſhips: many of them had received violent contuſions on the head, as all the blows were aimed at that part. De la Peyrouſe thought proper to quit the iſland immediately, after endeavouring to regain his long-boats, which he found the natives had deſtroyed: he deſcribes the inhabitants of theſe iſlands as a very ſtrong and handſome race of men; ſcarcely one was to be ſeen amongſt them leſs than ſix feet high, and well proportioned; the women are delicately beautiful; their canoes, houſes, &c. are well conſtructed, and they are much more advanced in internal policy and order than any of the iſlands in the Pacific Ocean. Theſe iſlands are ſurrounded by a coral reef, but boats may land with great ſafety.

CHAP. XI.

1788. February.

After dinner I attended M. Peyrouſe and his officers on ſhore, where I found him quite eſtabliſhed; he had thrown round his tents a ſtockade, which was guarded by two ſmall guns, and in which they were ſetting up two long boats, which he had in frame. After theſe boats were built, it was the intention of M. Peyrouſe to go round New Ireland, and through the Moluccas, and to paſs to the Iſland of France, by the ſtreights of Sunda. An obſervatory tent was alſo fixed on ſhore, in which were an aſtronomical clock, a quadrant, and other inſtruments under the care of Monſieur D'Agelet, Aſtronomer, and a member of the Academy of Sciences at Paris: he, as well as Monſieur De la Peyrouſe, informed me, that at every place they had touched at, and been near, they had found all the nautical and aſtronomical remarks of Captain Cook to be very exact and true; and he concluded with ſaying, "Enfin Monſieur Cook a tant fait, qu'il ne m'a rien laiſsè a faire, que "d'admirer ſes œuvres."

In the evening I returned on board the Bouſſole, and was ſhewn all
the drawings they had made during their voyage; and at five o'clock the
2. next morning I ſet out on my return to Port Jackſon, but did not arrive
on board the Sirius before ſeven in the evening, having been obliged to
row all the way againſt the wind and a great ſwell.

4. On the 4th, I went by land to Botany-Bay, accompanied by Lieutenant
Ball, and ſome other officers: we found the country between that place
and Port Jackſon to conſiſt chiefly of deep bays and ſand hills, inter-
ſperſed with a vaſt number of rocks: we did not return until the even-
5. ing of the 5th.

1788. February.

About this time two criminal courts were aſſembled in order to try offenders, and as the proceedings in theſe caſes are, in a great meaſure, new, a ſhort account of them may not be unacceptable.

The judge-advocate iſſues his precept for the three ſenior naval officers and three military officers to aſſemble at the time appointed, dreſſed in their uniforms and their ſide-arms: when they are met, the judge-advocate adminiſters an oath to the members, ſimilar to that which is uſed at military courts-martial; afterwards, one of the members adminiſters the ſame oath to the judge-advocate, who preſides at the court, and the reſt take their ſeats according to their rank. The priſoner is then aſked, whether he is guilty or not, and, as the general anſwer is, "not guilty," the accuſations againſt him are read, and witneſſes are examined on oath to ſupport or prove the charge; after which the priſoner enters on his defence, and brings evidence to prove his innocence: the court is then cleared, and the members conſider what ſentence to pronounce; if it be death, five out of the ſeven muſt concur in opinion. The governor can reſpite a criminal condemned to die, and the legiſlature has fully empowered him to execute the ſentence of the law, or to temper it with mercy. Actions for debt, for a certain amount, are cognizable by this court, as are all other actions at common law, where they are decided according to the law of England, as nearly as the ſituation will allow.

6. On the 6th, Governor Phillip ſignified his intention of ſending me to Norfolk-Iſland, with a few people, and ſtock to ſettle it, and lieutenant Ball was ordered to receive on board the Supply the ſtores and proviſions neceſſary for that purpoſe: this buſineſs engaged the whole of my attention until the 15th, when, having received my commiſſion and inſtructions from the governor, (and taken the oaths of fidelity and allegiance,

CHAP. XI. 1788. February. allegiance, &c. &c. and the cuſtomary oath as a juſtice of the peace for Norfolk-Iſland;) by which I was appointed ſuperintendent and commandant of Norfolk-Iſland, I embarked the following perſons, who were appointed to go along with me, viz. Mr. James Cunningham, maſter's mate of the Sirius; Mr. Thomas Jameſon, ſurgeon's firſt mate of the Sirius; Mr. John Altree, aſſiſtant to the ſurgeon; Roger Morly, weaver; William Weſtbrook, and —— Sawyer, ſeamen; Charles Heritage, and John Batchelor, marines; with nine male and ſix female convicts; in all, twenty-three perſons.

15. We ſailed from Sydney-Cove at ſeven o'clock in the morning, with a fine breeze at weſt-ſouth-weſt, and at eight, we got out of the harbour, when we found it blew very freſh, and as we got off the land it came on to blow a perfect hurricane, with a moſt tremendous ſea running, which often broke into the veſſel: the gale kept up with great violence, as did the ſea during the whole day, and I often thought the veſſel in a critical ſituation.

16. At two o'clock in the morning, the wind veered round to ſouth-by-
weſt, and moderated, but a heavy ſea was ſtill running. At noon, the
latitude was 32° 22′ ſouth, 154° 11′ eaſt longitude. In the evening, a
flying-fiſh flew on board, which is rather an extraordinary event in this
18. latitude. At day-break in the morning of the 18th, land was diſcovered
bearing eaſt-ſouth-eaſt; and, from its appearance, we judged it to be
two ſmall rocks or iſlands, not more than ſix leagues diſtant. At the
time we firſt ſaw the land, we were ſtanding to the northward, with
the wind at eaſt-ſouth-eaſt: at eight in the morning, we tacked towards
the land, but the wind being light during the whole day, our progreſs
19. was very ſlow. Early the next morning, having neared the land conſiderably, we perceived a pointed rock right a-head, at ſome diſtance
from

from the iſland; on which, we hove to, and ſoundings were tried for with 120 fathoms of line, but we got no bottom. At day-light we made ſail, and perceived that the two iſlands or hills we had ſeen the day before, were two very high rocky mountains, on the ſouth ſide of an iſland, extending from north 37° eaſt, to north 55° eaſt. This ſide of the iſland formed a deep bay, in which there appeared to be good ſhelter from the north-eaſt. At noon, we had a very good meridian altitude, by which the latitude was 31° 40′ ſouth, and the center of the iſland bore north 40° weſt, diſtant about ſix miles; conſequently, its latitude is 31° 35′ ſouth, and the longitude 159° eaſt of Greenwich. The form of the iſland is a creſcent, and it is very ſmall in proportion to the two ſtupendous rocky mountains which riſe at its ſouthern extremity. One of the rocks riſes perpendicularly from the ſea, and has the appearance of a regular pyramid, when ſeen from the weſtward: we ſailed from it in a direct courſe 22 leagues, and could then ſee it very plainly. Lieutenant Ball, who was certainly the diſcoverer of this iſland, has named its points and rocks, as they are marked in the chart *. At noon on the 20th, we loſt ſight of Ball's pyramid in the haze, after having run 22 leagues from it in the direction of eaſt by ſouth: I think, in clear weather, it may be ſeen at the diſtance of thirty leagues. We had light winds and pleaſant weather until the 24th, when we had very ſtrong gales from eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, with a high croſs ſea. Early in the morning of the 28th, the wind veered to ſouth-weſt, and, imagining ourſelves to be about fifteen leagues to the weſtward of Norfolk-Iſland, we hove to at ſeven in the evening. The next morning, at day-light, we made ſail, ſteering eaſt: we had great numbers of birds round us, and the clouds hanging very thick to the eaſtward, indicated our being near the land; but it was not till eleven o'clock in the forenoon that we

1788. February.

20.

24.

28.

29.

---

* For this Chart, and a View of Ball's Pyramid, with a full Deſcription, ſee Phillip's Voyage, 4to. Edition.

made-

1788. made the largeſt of the two ſmall iſlands which lie off the ſouth-weſt end of Norfolk-Iſland, bearing eaſt 16° north, five leagues diſtant. At noon, the body of Norfolk-Iſland bore north 61° eaſt, diſtant ſeven or eight leagues. At four in the afternoon, we rounded the northern point of the iſland, which I named Point Howe, in honour of the firſt lord of the admiralty, at the time we left England: we ſoon after hove to, off a caſcade, which is ſituated near the middle of the north ſide of the iſland: the boat was hoiſted out, and lieutenant Ball and myſelf went to examine if it were poſſible to land on a ſtony beach, which is ſituated a little to the eaſtward of the caſcade; but we found ſo great a ſurf rolling on the ſhore, that the loſs of the boat, and perhaps of the ſailors lives, would have been the conſequence of our attempting to land; ſo that at ſun-ſet we returned on board, and the boat was hoiſted in. March 1. Early the next morning, lieutenant Ball and myſelf went in a boat to examine whether we could find a landing-place from the ſouthermoſt, or Point Roſs, to the north-weſt, or Point Howe, which was (the wind being then weſt-north-weſt,) the lee ſide of the iſland. From the caſcade to a ſmall bay, which lies on the north-eaſt ſide of the iſland, we found the ſhore lined with ſteep inacceſſible cliffs, againſt which the ſea broke with great violence, and rendered the boat's approach impracticable. The ſmall bay, which I named Ball-bay, (after lieutenant Henry Lidgbird Ball) lies in a weſt-north-weſt, and eaſt-ſouth-eaſt direction, and is about four cables length deep, and two cables length wide: the bottom of the bay is a ſtony beach, on which the ſurf broke with too much force to riſque the boat; though at times, the ſurf probably may be leſs. From this bay, we rowed round the ſouth-eaſt point, and opened the two iſlands, the largeſt of which, I named Phillip-Iſle, after Governor Phillip; and the ſmalleſt, Nepean-Iſle, after Evan Nepean. The point of Norfolk-Iſland, oppoſite Nepean-Iſle, I called Point Hunter, after captain John Hunter, of his

1788. March.

Majeſty's ſhip the Sirius. Between Point Hunter and Point Roſs, there is a large, though not a deep, bay, with ſeveral fine ſandy beaches; but without the beaches, there runs a reef parallel with the ſhore, which ſeemed to prevent any landing on it; and, as we were opening the weather ſide of the iſland, and a great ſwell running, which prevented us from pulling the boat a-head, we returned along ſhore, and endeavoured to land on a ſtony beach to the weſtward of the caſcade, but could not: we then rowed to the north-eaſt point of the iſland, off which lies a cluſter of high rocks; I called them Cook's rocks, in memory of the late Captain James Cook, who diſcovered this iſland, and landed near theſe rocks in 1774: but we found landing impoſſible, on account of the ſurf, which broke every where, though this may not be the caſe in fine weather. In the evening we returned on board, without being able to ſet our feet on ſhore.

2. During the night, we had light winds from the ſouth-weſt; and a current, or tide, had ſet us a conſiderable diſtance to the north-eaſt of the iſland; which, at eight o'clock the next morning, bore ſouth-eaſt, eight miles diſtant: from this time, until three in the afternoon, we were employed in working up under the north-eaſt point of the iſland, where we anchored in nineteen fathoms, diſtant from the neareſt ſhore one mile. A boat was hoiſted out, and after two attempts, I landed with Lieutenant Ball, on the ſide of a large rock, which lies cloſe to the ſhore, at the weſt end of a ſmall ſtony beach: it muſt have been on this rock that Captain Cook landed, as there is no other place at this ſide of the iſland, where it is poſſible to attempt a landing at any time, and that is only practicable here, from half ebb to half flood, in very fine weather, and the wind off the iſland. As it was near the evening when we landed, we very ſoon returned on board again, with a

CHAP. XI. 1788. March. quantity of ſorrel that we had gathered. We found this a very improper place to land either people or ſtores, it being impracticable to get them further than the beach, and there was no freſh water near it.

3. At day-light in the morning of the 3d, I left the Supply, and went in her boat along with Mr. Cunningham, to examine the ſouth-weſt ſide of the iſland, which we rowed round, until we opened Phillip and Nepean Iſles off the ſouth point; but it blew too hard, and there was too great a ſea running for us to pull the boat any farther, ſo that at two in the afternoon we returned on board. There is only one place on this ſide of the iſland, where landing is at all practicable, and that is in a ſmall bay juſt within the weſt point: the bottom of it is a fine ſandy beach, but the ſurf broke on it with ſuch violence, as to put landing out of the queſtion.

4. As it blew very freſh all night, I landed the next morning abreaſt of the Supply, with the midſhipman and ſurgeon: we walked acroſs the iſland to the bay which I had ſeen the day before. After aſcending a very ſteep hill, we got to the top of the iſland, which we found to be a plain, but every foot of ground was covered with trees, or the large roots of trees which roſe above the ſurface of the earth; theſe were not the only impediments to our march, as it was impoſſible for us to walk four yards, without encountering an almoſt impenetrable net-work, compoſed of a large kind of ſupple-jack, or vine; which was ſo very ſtrong, as to ſuppreſs the growth of ſeveral trees, by bending them in every direction; and they ſo completely ſtopped our progreſs, that we were obliged to cut our way through them. No graſs, or herb of any kind, grew between the roots of theſe trees, although the ſoil every where was extremely rich and good; but this may be attributed to the total

1788. March.

total excluſion of the ſun, and the want of air, which doubtleſs prevent this ſort of vegetation. The pines, which are numerous, are of an incredible growth: one of them, which had been blown down, or had fallen by age, meaſured 140 feet in length, and ſeveral which were meaſured ſtanding, were 30 feet in circumference: they grow quite ſtraight, and have no branches for near 80 feet from the ground.

We found it impracticable to get into Anſon's bay, although we ſaw down into it; but the hill over it was a perpendicular cliff, with a large kind of iris growing on the ſides of it, which was a providential circumſtance, for, in our endeavour to get into the bay, we were all in the greateſt danger of falling down the cliff; indeed, if the iris had not been ſufficiently ſtrong to have ſupported our weight, we muſt have fallen down a depth of 90 feet. We were too much pleaſed with, and thankful for our eſcape, to attempt a ſecond trial, as the whole of this ſide of the iſland had the ſame ſteep appearance. In our return, we frequently heard a very diſtinct cry of "yaho," which ſeemed as if it was uttered by an animal or bird.

During this excurſion, we did not ſee a leaf of flax, or any herb whatever; the ground, although a rich and deep ſoil, being quite bare, which is rather extraordinary, as Captain Cook ſays that the flax plant is rather more luxuriant here than at New Zealand. We ſaw pigeons, parrots, parroquets, doves, and a variety of other birds, in great numbers, and ſo very tame, that they might be knocked down with a ſtick. Large pieces of pumice ſtone were ſeen in every part; probably a crater, or the remains of one, may be found at, or near a mountain, which riſes to a conſiderable height in the middle of the iſland, and which I called Mount Pitt, in honour of the chancellor of the exchequer.

CHAP. XI.

1788. March.

As the ſandy bay, on the ſouth-weſt ſide of the iſland, had not been examined to my ſatisfaction, Lieutenant Ball propoſed going round in the brig, and endeavour to land, which there was a great probability of effecting, as the wind was then at eaſt-north-eaſt: accordingly, at day-light
5. in the morning of the 5th, we weighed, and ran round to the bay, which I had named Anſon-bay, after the parliamentary repreſentative for Litchfield. We found the ſurf too violent to land there, and I now began to think it would be impoſſible to land on the iſland; as I had nearly made a circuit of it, and had not found a place where I could attempt landing. There yet remained one place unexamined, which was the ſouth ſide of the iſland, in a bay, that appeared to be entirely lined with a reef, on which the ſurf broke with great violence. The wind being at eaſt-north-eaſt, we worked up for the bay, and at noon, the maſter was ſent to examine if there were any opening through the reef; on his return he informed us, that landing in the bay was very ſafe and practicable, as the reef terminated about two-thirds of the bay over, and round the point of this reef, landing was eaſy and ſafe. On hearing this report, Lieutenant Ball and myſelf went to examine the place, and found it exactly to anſwer the maſter's deſcription. The ſhore, cloſe to the beach, was covered with a long kind of iris, within which was an impenetrable foreſt: the ſoil was good. Here I reſolved to fix, and was pleaſed at having found a place where I could make a commencement. I had no doubt but water would be procured, and that at no great diſtance from the ſpot; but as it was very late in the evening, I returned on board the Supply, and ſhe was ſoon after brought to an anchor in 20 fathoms, over a ſandy bottom.

6. At day-light on the 6th, I left the Supply with two boats, having in them all the perſons belonging to the ſettlement, together with the tents, a part of the proviſions, and ſome of the moſt uſeful tools; all

which

CHAP. XI.

1788. March.

which we landed, and began clearing a ſmall piece of ground to erect the tents on: the colours were hoiſted, and before ſun-ſet, every perſon and article belonging to the ſettlement were on ſhore, and the tents pitched. Before the colours were hauled down, I aſſembled my ſmall colony under them, (Lieutenant Ball and ſome of his officers being preſent,) and drank the healths of his Majeſty, the Queen, the Prince of Wales, and ſucceſs to the ſettlement; and, as we had no other way of teſtifying our loyalty, we gave three cheers on the occaſion. The wind blew very hard the whole of the 7th, and the ſurf ran ſo high that no 7. boat could land: the Supply ſtill remained at anchor in the road. This day I began to clear a piece of ground for ſowing ſome ſeeds; the ſpot, which I fixed on for that purpoſe, is on the eaſt ſide of an hill which has a tolerable eaſy aſcent, and the ſoil is rich and deep. Soon after landing, we found a very fine rivulet of water, which ran cloſe at the back of the ground where the ſettlement was made. I took the firſt opportunity of examining the iſland around me, and found it almoſt impenetrable from the ſize of the trees, and the entangled ſtate of their roots, which were in general two feet above the ground, and ran along it to a conſiderable diſtance. On the ſpaces of ground unoccupied by theſe roots, there grew a kind of ſupple-jack, which in general was as thick as a man's leg; theſe ſupple-jacks ran up the trees, and as they grew in every direction, they formed an impenetrable kind of net-work; bending ſome trees to the ground, and then taking root again, they twined round other trees in the ſame manner, until the whole became an impervious foreſt. As I had only twelve men, (one of whom was ſeventy-two years old, and another a boy of fifteen,) excluſive of the mate and ſurgeon, my progreſs for ſome time muſt of courſe be very ſlow. On the 8th we had 8. ſtrong gales of wind and cloudy weather: at nine in the morning, we hoiſted the colours in a weſt, as a ſignal that the Supply's boat might land;

CHAP. XI. 1788. March. land; and at eleven, we received the laſt of our baggage, proviſions, and ſtores, and hauled the boat up. In the afternoon, Lieutenant Ball came on ſhore to aſk if I had any farther occaſion for the Supply, and, as I had not any, he took leave and returned on board; and in the afternoon ſailed for Port Jackſon. I ſent by him a journal of my proceedings to Governor Phillip.

9. The 9th, being Sunday, every perſon in the ſettlement aſſembled in my tent, where I performed divine ſervice; after which my commiſſion from the Governor, to whom we were ſubordinate, was read, appointing me ſuperintendant and commandant of this iſland: I then aſſured every perſon, that my intention was to forward the King's ſervice to the utmoſt of my power; and (addreſſing myſelf to the convicts) I endeavoured to convince them, that thoſe who were idle or diſhoneſt ſhould not eſcape that puniſhment, which is due to uſeleſs and deſtructive members of ſociety: I alſo informed them what ration of proviſions would be allowed daily, and I held out every encouragement for them to behave with propriety and induſtry.

In the afternoon I ſaw ſome turtle lying on a ſandy beach at the eaſt end of the bay; two of which we turned and brought to the tents for general uſe; they were iſſued out in lieu of ſalt proviſions. Finding we had turtle on the iſland, I gave ſtrict orders that no perſon whatever ſhould go near the beach where they were ſeen, in order to prevent them from being frightened, which might occaſion the loſs of this valuable reſource: the two turtle we had caught weighed two hundred weight each. From this time until the 15th, every perſon was em- 15.
ployed in clearing away, and turning up the garden ground, which, when finiſhed, was encloſed by a hedge, and ſown with a ſmall quantity

1788. March.

of all the different kinds of ſeeds I was furniſhed with. The ſize of the encloſure was eighty-ſeven feet ſquare: the ſoil very rich and deep. This afternoon I turned three more turtles, which were brought to the ſettlement. We generally ſaw three lying on the beach at low water, in clear weather, but when cloudy, they never land; this, together with there being no appearance of any pits where they lay their eggs, leads me to ſuppoſe that they do not breed on any part of the iſland; eſpecially as this is the only place where there is a poſſibility for them to make their pits.

16. The 16th, being Sunday, I performed divine ſervice. Two convicts, whom I had given leave the preceding day to take an excurſion into the interior part of the iſland, returned this day at noon quite naked: they had ſeveral cuts in different parts of their bodies, ſome of which were deep, occaſioned by the entangled ſtate of the woods, and the ſharpneſs of the briars: they had not been an hour from the ſettlement before they loſt ſight of the ſun from the thickneſs of the woods; this cauſed them to wander about till eleven o'clock, when they heard the noiſe of our church bell, which was a man beating on the head of an empty caſk, and preſently afterwards they returned to the ſettlement.

As my own ſituation, and that of every other perſon was very uncomfortable, owing to the tents being cloſe to the ſea ſhore, on which a heavy ſurf continually beats: I ſet the people to work on the 17th, 17. to clear a piece of ground to the right of the garden, and a little above it; here I intended to move the tents, or to build houſes; and having two ſawyers and a carpenter, I ſet them to work in digging a ſawpit, in order to ſaw pine for building a ſtore-houſe for the proviſions and ſtores,

they

CHAP. XI. 1788. March. they at preſent being lodged in my tent, which was made of the Sirius's ſprit-ſail.

The ſurgeon, in walking about the iſland, found out the flax-plant, which proved to be what we had hitherto called the iris: not having any deſcription of this plant, I had no idea of its being what Captain Cook calls the flax-plant of New Zealand; the cliffs and ſhore near the ſettlement were covered with it; its root is bulbous, and eight leaves iſſue from it, which are, in general, five or ſix feet in length, and about four inches broad, cloſe to the root: the plant bears a great reſemblance to the iris, except that the leaves are much thicker and larger; the flaxy part is the fibres, which extend the whole length of the leaf; towards the root they are very thick and ſtrong, and diminiſh in ſize as they approach the end of the leaf. This plant, in its green ſtate, is of a ſurpriſing ſtrength: from the quantity of dead leaves about the root, I imagine it is an annual, and that the root ſends forth freſh leaves.

The method of preparing the New Zealand flax not being deſcribed by Captain Cook, I cauſed three bundles of ours to be put in the rivulet to ſoak, intending to try it after the European method of dreſſing flax. 18. The ſawpit being finiſhed on the 18th, a ſmall pine was cut down near it, which meaſured 115 feet in length, and two feet ſix inches diameter at the baſe: a twelve foot length was got on the pit, and the ſawyers began ſawing it into framings and ſcantlings for the ſtore-houſe. By 19. the 19th, the greateſt part of the ſeeds we had procured at the Cape of Good Hope, and ſown in the garden, were out of the ground, and ſeemed likely to do well; but ſcarcely any of the Engliſh ſeeds grew, April. 1. they, in general, being ſpoiled. From this time till the 1ſt of April, two men were employed in ſawing up wood for the ſtore houſe; one man was building it, ſix were clearing away the ground, and the women burnt up the ſmall boughs.

1788. April. 2. The ſtore-houſe was finiſhed on the 2d: its dimenſions were twelve feet ſquare, and nine feet high. All the proviſions and ſtores were immediately brought from my tent and depoſited in the ſtore-houſe. During the laſt three days the wind blew very ſtrong from the ſouth-weſt, which blighted every plant that was come up and doing very well; I had alſo the mortification to find that the rats were very numerous; they deſtroyed ſome Indian corn which was three inches out of the ground.

As there was every reaſon to ſuppoſe that the ſouth-weſt winds would be frequent during the winter, I began to clear the ground on the north-eaſt ſide of the hill, (which I named Mount George) which, of courſe, would be ſheltered from the ſouth and ſouth-weſt winds; and it was my intention to continue clearing the ground in that ſituation until the middle of June, when I purpoſed ſowing it with wheat and barley. I now found that no vegetables would thrive at this ſeaſon of the year on the ſouth ſide of the mount; I therefore ordered the garden ground to be turned up and ſown with wheat. The ground which we had for ſome time been clearing to fix the tents upon, being now ready for that purpoſe, all the tents were moved to it on the 3d, and ſome of the men 3. began to build huts: the ſawyers were employed in ſawing ſcantling, and other neceſſary timber to build me a houſe. I had much reaſon to fear that the turtle were frightened away, as we had not ſeen any on the beach ſince the 14th of March, although every precaution had been uſed to prevent their being moleſted. This reſource we could not help feeling the want of, as its good effects had already been experienced by every perſon on the iſland; indeed, there was not an individual who had not the ſcurvy on landing, and ſome of the convicts had it very bad; 1788. April. but they were now quite recovered. Another unfortunate circumſtance was, that as yet we had not brought any vegetables to perfection; however, to make ſome amends for this accident, we found a vaſt number of cabbage-trees, the excellence of which are well known: they are a very good ſubſtitute for other vegetables, but one tree produces only a ſingle cabbage.

The wheat, which was ſown in the garden ground on the 2d, was
4. entirely eat up with rats by the 4th; they did not leave a ſingle grain in the ground. As I had no cats, and only one dog, theſe vermin were likely to prove a ſerious nuiſance; however, in order to rid ourſelves of them as much as poſſible, I cauſed all the empty caſks to be converted into traps.

Behind the hill where the ſettlement was fixed, there was a very large ſwamp, occaſioned by the overflowing of the rivulet: at the head of this ſwamp there is a fine valley, in which a number of plantain or ba-
5. nana trees were found on the 5th; and a ſmall ſpot being near them which would not coſt ſo much pains or trouble to clear as many other places, I judged this would be a very good place for a garden; eſpecially as the ſurrounding hills entirely ſheltered it from the ſea winds, and, from the appearance of the banana trees, I expected they would thrive very well when cultivated; at preſent, they were in thick cluſters, choaking each other; and being covered with wild vines and aquatic ſhrubs, their growth was conſiderably retarded. Some fruit was found on them, but the birds had deſtroyed it before it was ripe.

The

1788. April. 6.

The ſixth, being Sunday, I performed divine ſervice; and as ſome irregularities had taken place, that did not merit corporal puniſhment, being anxious to prevent any ill behaviour, which might render ſuch a ſtep neceſſary, I read the following orders for the preſervation of regularity and decorum.

ORDERS.

As it is highly neceſſary, for the preſervation of good order, regularity, and cleanlineſs, to eſtabliſh certain rules and regulations, the following are to be obſerved and performed with the ſtricteſt attention.

I. No perſon is to abſent himſelf from public worſhip, which will begin every Sunday morning at eleven o'clock, in the commandant's houſe, when every one will come clean and orderly, and behave themſelves devoutly.

II. The hours of work are as follow: until further orders, to begin work at day-light, and work till half paſt ſeven; at half paſt eight, to work again until half paſt eleven; and then to work again at two until ſun-ſet.

III. In order to encourage the cultivation of gardens, every one will have the Saturdays to clear away and cultivate gardens for themſelves; and thoſe who are induſtrious will be encouraged, but thoſe who miſapply that indulgence will be deprived of it.

IV. On application, at the proper time of the year, ſeeds will be diſtributed to thoſe who have cleared away garden ground; and thoſe

CHAP. XI.

1788. April.

who raiſe the greateſt quantity of ſeeds and vegetables will be encouraged and rewarded.

V. The women are to ſweep round the houſes or tents every morning, and to cook the victuals for the men; and every perſon is ſtrictly forbid cleaning any fiſh or fowls in or near the houſes, but to go to the ſea-ſide for that purpoſe.

VI. Every perſon is ſtrictly forbid going near Turtle Bay, and thoſe who are found in it, or going there, will be inſtantly and ſeverely puniſhed.

VII. The women are to collect the dirty linen belonging to the men every Friday, and to return each man his proper linen, waſhed and mended, on the Sunday morning.

√ VIII. No perſon is to cut down or deſtroy any banana tree.

IX. Exchanging or ſelling cloaths by the convicts is ſtrictly forbid. As their cloathing is the property of the crown, they are not to diſpoſe of it. A diſobedience of this order will be deemed a theft, and meet with a ſuitable puniſhment. It is recommended to every one to be careful of their cloathing and bedding, as accidents may happen which may prevent a ſpeedy ſupply.

X. Great care is to be taken of all the tools; each man taking his axe or hoe to his tent, or delivering them to the ſtore-keeper, that they may not be injured by the weather.

CHAP. XI. 1788. April.

XI. As the future welfare of every perſon on this iſland depends on their good behaviour, it is recommended to them to perſevere in that willing diſpoſition to work which they have hitherto ſhewn; and above all, to be honeſt and obliging towards each other, which will recommend them to thoſe who may have it in their power, and who have a wiſh and inclination to ſerve them: but the diſhoneſt or idle may not only aſſure themſelves of being totally excluded from any preſent or future indulgences, but alſo that they will be chaſtiſed, either by corporal puniſhment on the iſland, or be ſent to Port Jackſon, to be tried by a criminal court there.

CHAPTER

CHAPTER XII.

Regular employment of the convicts.—Meet with an unlucky accident.—Thefts detected.—The robbers puniſhed.—Peſtered with rats.—Method of deſtroying them.—Live ſtock on the ſettlement.—Trees diſcovered which afford food for hogs.—Some of the ſettlers poiſoned.—Cured with ſweet oil.—A convict puniſhed for uſing ſeditious language.—Birds on the iſland. Deſcription of Arthur's Vale.—His Majeſty's birth-day kept.—Flouriſhing ſtate of the gardens.—Arrival of the Supply.—Four perſons drowned.—Proviſions and ſtores received.—Queries from Governor Phillip, and the anſwers.—Ball-Bay deſcribed.—The landing-place cleared.—Arrival of the Golden Grove tranſport.—Marines and convicts brought in the Golden Grove.—Proviſions and ſtores.

CHAP. XII. 1788. April.

THE ſettlement being now brought to ſome degree of order, I diſtributed the people into regular working parties, in order to facilitate the different operations which I was anxious to get forward as faſt poſſible. Five men were ſent to clear away ground on the north-eaſt ſide of Mount George; two were employed in clearing a road from the ground where we had pitched the tents, to the freſh-water rivulet; two ſawyers were ſawing timber to build me a houſe; two men were employed in building huts; and I ſent Mr. Altree, (the ſurgeon's aſſiſtant) to the valley which has already been mentioned, in order to make a com-

1788. April.

commencement there, but as he had only a boy to aſſiſt him, his progreſs was of courſe very ſlow.

For ſome time, the people were thus invariably employed; but the work was often retarded by colds, which was the only ſickneſs we had as yet experienced: the workmen, indeed, had been often blinded for four or five days together, by the white ſap of a tree, which getting into their eyes, occaſioned a moſt excruciating pain for ſeveral days. The beſt remedy we could apply, was Florence oil; which, dropped into the eye, deſtroyed the acrimony of the ſap. One man was totally blinded with it, for want of making timely application to the ſurgeon. On the 17th, I detected John Batchelor, one of the marines, in my 17. tent, ſtealing rum out of a ſmall veſſel, which contained what was drawn off to ſerve the officers and men belonging to the Sirius; and was kept in my tent, as I had not a more ſecure place to put it in. In the afternoon, I aſſembled the ſettlement, and puniſhed the thief with three dozen laſhes; cauſing him to be led by a halter to the place of puniſhment: I alſo ſtopped the deficiency of rum out of his allowance.

Though there was reaſon to hope that this example would deter others from committing crimes of the like nature, yet it had not the deſired effect; for on the 20th, a convict boy was detected ſtealing the ſurgeon's 20. allowance of rum, out of his tent. This boy was only fifteen years old, and was tranſported for ſeven years. I ordered him to be puniſhed with an hundred laſhes, which I hoped would have a good effect.

We now had two formidable enemies to encounter in the rat and grubworm, both which were very numerous and deſtructive: ſome wheat had been ſown in the garden ground on the 11th, and the next morning

there

1788. April. there was not a grain of it left, being all eat up by the rats; and the few potatoes and other vegetables, which eſcaped the bad effects of the ſoutherly wind, were all eat up by the grub-worm. I have before obſerved, that on our firſt diſcovering the rats to be numerous, I ordered the empty caſks to be converted into traps, and for ſome time they were very ſucceſsful, thirty or forty rats being caught for ſeveral nights together: theſe were killed, and ſcattered about the garden, to deter the reſt from coming to the place; but they ſoon grew too cunning to be caught in the traps, and too bold to be intimidated by their dead companions. I next cauſed ſome glaſs to be pounded very fine, and mixed with oatmeal, which being diſtributed about the garden, killed vaſt numbers of them. To prevent the bad effects of the grub-worm, I tried aſhes, lye of aſhes, and urine, but to no purpoſe, ſo that the women were kept conſtantly employed in picking them off the few plants we had left.

Out of ſix ewes which I brought to the iſland, five died with the ſcab, notwithſtanding every poſſible care was taken of them; and one of my ſows was poiſoned, by eating ſomething noxious in the woods. The remainder of my ſmall ſtock was likely to do very well: it conſiſted of two ewes, three ſows, two boars, four hens, one cock, three ducks, one drake, and one goat.

The ſugar-cane, two Rio Janeiro banana trees, and two orange trees, which I brought with me, were kept in tubs, until I ſhould find a ſheltered ſituation to plant them in. The wind ſeemed now to be ſet in from the ſouthward, and the weather was very raw and cold, ſo that I called this the beginning of winter. Another of my ſows was poiſoned on the 24th, ſo that I found it neceſſary to confine them in a hog-pen, 24.

1788. April.

which, in regard to feeding them, was a great inconvenience, as they uſed to provide very well for themſelves in the woods; fortunately, however, a tree was found which afforded them very good food: this tree grows to the height of eighty feet, and the branches, which reſemble thoſe of the palm-tree in their growth, fall off every year, leaving an indentation in the trunk. The leaves of theſe branches, which are twelve in number, are much like the heath-fern, from whence this tree obtained the name of the fern-tree. The middle of the tree, from the root to the apex, conſiſts of a white ſubſtance reſembling a yam, and when boiled, it taſtes like a bad turnip; this the hogs fed on very eagerly: the outſide of the trunk is hard wood, and full of regular indentations from the top to the bottom. The tree is found in great plenty in all parts of the iſland.

At the end of this month, I ſent ſome of the people to aſſiſt Mr. Altree, at the plantation in Arthur's Vale, which was the name I gave to the valley he had begun to clear; the reſt were employed in clearing the ground at Mount George, except three men, whom I ſet to dig a cellar under my houſe.

May 8.

On the 8th of May, the two ſawyers, the carpenter, and three convicts were poiſoned, by eating ſome beans, which had a very tempting appearance, and much reſembled the Windſor bean: they had gathered a quantity, which were boiled, and afterwards fried with butter: in two hours time, they were ſeized with violent gripings, retchings, and cold ſweats; fortunately, I had a gallon of ſweet oil, which, with other medicines adminiſtered by the ſurgeon, happily gave them relief; but they were ſo much weakened and exhauſted that they were not able to work for a week afterwards.

CHAP. XII. For ſome time paſt, we had ſeen no turtle, and it was probable that the cold weather had driven them to a warmer climate.

1788. May.

As we could catch no fiſh from the ſhore, I launched the boat on the 9. 9th, and ſent her into the roads to fiſh; they returned with the boat in two hours, and brought thirty-ſix very fine fiſh, weighing from ſix to eight pounds each: theſe I cauſed to be iſſued out in lieu of ſalt proviſions, at the rate of ſix pounds of fiſh for one pound of beef. The boats grapnel was left in the road, and being hooked in the rocks, we never could clear it.

This ample ſupply of fiſh was a moſt fortunate event; yet they could not be depended on as a conſtant reſource; for ſometimes it would happen, that a boat could not go without the reef for a fortnight together, on account of the very violent ſurf; but when a boat could be ſent out, there was no danger of catching a vaſt quantity.

10. On the 10th, I was obliged to inflict a puniſhment of forty laſhes on one of the convicts, for making uſe of very threatening and ſeditious language. I had received orders from Governor Phillip, to make a ſaving of the ſalt proviſions, whenever fiſh or turtle could be obtained, in order that they might laſt as long as poſſible: the putting this order in execution when the turtle were caught, produced murmuring; but, when the fiſh was iſſued on the 9th, the convict who was puniſhed, ſaid, "the people (meaning thoſe in the ſettlement) were fools for "ſuffering their ſalt proviſions to be ſtopped," and "that the convicts "would ſoon be the ſtrongeſt, and then it would be ſeen who were "maſters." As I thought this language deſerved puniſhment, I aſſembled the people, and pointed out to them, that, independent of the orders

CHAP. XII.

1788. May.

orders I had received, I ſaw the greateſt neceſſity for making every poſſible ſaving of the proviſions: I repreſented to them that misfortunes might happen to veſſels, proviſions might get ſpoiled, and many other accidents might happen, which would render it neceſſary for us to go to a ſhort allowance; and, that the greater quantity of proviſions which could be ſaved would be ſo much the better for the whole ſettlement: I concluded with aſſuring them, that I ſhould invariably attend to my orders, and put them in execution; and that a very ſevere puniſhment would be inflicted on any who preſumed to excite ſedition, or behaved improperly on that, or any other pretext.

On our firſt landing, we found a great number of pigeons, which were ſo tame, that we knocked them down with ſticks; but latterly they quitted the low boughs, and generally harboured about the tops of the pines: when plucked and drawn, they weighed from three-quarters, to one pound each. The parrots are numerous, and the ugliest bird of the kind I ever heard of; this, added to the harſhneſs of their note, makes them a very diſagreeable bird. The parroquets are entirely green, except a red tuft on their head. Hawks are numerous and of two different kinds, the grey and blue: they were great enemies to the young chickens, and it was no unuſual ſight to ſee them take up the rats. Quails and curlews are plentiful, but very ſhy. The owls, which have very handſome plumage, make a noiſe like one man calling to another, and they pronounce the word "yaho" very diſtinctly. Many of the ſmaller birds have a moſt melodious note, and their plumage is very beautiful. There are alſo a ſpecies of birds which burrow in the ground like rabbits, where they hatch their eggs, and rear their young: they are web-footed; which is rather extraordinary, and their bill is like that of other ſea-fowl; but they have not the leaſt fiſhy taſte, and

their

1788. May. their fleſh is very fine. Theſe birds never quit their holes till ſun-ſet; from which time, until midnight, the air is full of them: they afforded us many freſh meals.

I now ſet the two ſawyers and two carpenters to work in building houſes; one man was employed in making a crab to heave the boat by, another attended the live-ſtock, and the remainder were buſied in clearing ground at Mount George, and Arthur's Vale.

17. By the 17th, the rain was almoſt inceſſant, and, as I had every reaſon to ſuppoſe it would continue ſo three or four months longer, which would endanger the health of thoſe who lived in tents; I cauſed the proviſions to be removed from the ſtore-houſe to a cellar under my houſe, which was dry, and the ſtores I put into a loft; and, as five men and three women lived at preſent in tents, I put them into the ſtore-houſe, until they could build huts for themſelves. The whole ſettlement were now well ſheltered, except the ſurgeon and the midſhipman; for whom I propoſed to begin a houſe immediately.

18. On the 18th, the ſhell of my houſe was finiſhed: its dimenſions were twenty-four feet long by twelve feet wide, and eight feet under the eaves: the ſides and roof were weather-boarded. I ſent the boat out this afternoon, and ſhe returned with fifty very fine fiſh, which were iſſued out as uſual.

19. I ſet out on the 19th, with an intention of tracing the rivulet which runs through Arthur's Vale, to its ſource, and likewiſe to examine the extent of the valley; but, after wandering about the greateſt part of the day, I returned back, much fatigued, and all the cloaths torn off my back by the briars and the entangled ſtate of the woods.

9

Arthur's

CHAP. XII. 1788. May.

Arthur's Vale is ſituated between the north ſide of Mount George and the oppoſite hills: its direction is about north-north-weſt into the interior part of the iſland. The bottom of this valley, in ſome places, is not more than thirty yards wide; in others, at leaſt three hundred. The hills on each ſide are cloathed with a thick foreſt; their aſcent is not too ſteep for cultivation, and the ſoil is excellent, being a fat brown earth. A very fine rivulet runs through this vale, ſufficiently large to turn any number of mills. As the bank of the ſea-ſhore is conſiderably above the level of the rivulet, it ſinks into the earth; and, after paſſing under the bank, it forces a paſſage for itſelf through a fiſſure of the rock, on Stony Beach and Turtle Bay, between high and low water marks, where it boils up with great force, and is excellent water. As the whole of this water is not carried off by the paſſage juſt mentioned, ſufficient to keep the low ground clear, what does not paſs under the bank, overflows the lower part of the valley, for the ſpace of half a mile: this ſwamp might be drained by cutting a channel for the rivulet to empty itſelf on the ſea-ſhore; but the operation would require time and a number of hands, and, when finiſhed, it is not clear but that the force of the ſea would ſoon fill the channel up again.

I cannot aſcertain the length of this vale, but I think it runs as far as Mount Pitt, where, moſt probably, the rivulet takes its riſe. That part of the vale which I have already ſaid Mr. Altree was clearing, is half a mile from the ſettlement, near a large cluſter of plantain trees; he tranſplanted ſome of the young ſuckers, an operation which was likely to improve them much: a garden, which meaſured ninety rods was planted, and moſt of the plants were up and likely to do very well. The ſugar-cane, orange trees, and Rio Janeiro plantains, which had hitherto been kept in tubs, were now planted in the vale, and I had hopes they would thrive, as the ſituation was well ſheltered: I alſo planted a quantity of cotton ſeeds, as ſome which were ſown when we firſt came on ſhore, rotted in the ground.

1. The 1ſt of June, being Sunday, I performed divine ſervice as uſual. In the afternoon, I went in the boat, and attempted to land on Nepean Iſle, on the ſouth-weſt ſide of which is a ſmall creek that goes in a conſiderable way, with a ſmall ſandy beach at the end of it; but as there was a number of rocks in the creek, and a ſurf beating on the ſhore, I did not land. This iſland is covered with pines, which grow at a diſtance from each other: there is a reef off the ſouth-eaſt ſide, which ſtretches near a mile; within a ſhip's length of it, there is fourteen fathoms water, and nine fathoms all round the eaſt ſide, within half a mile of the ſhore. The paſſage between Point Hunter and Nepean Iſland is a very good one, there being three fathoms cloſe to Nepean Iſle, and eight fathoms in mid-channel. I ſounded cloſe along the back of the reef which runs along Sydney-Bay, and found four fathoms within a ſhip's length of the reef. I returned at ſun-ſet, having caught thirty-ſix very fine fiſh, which were iſſued out as uſual.

√

I brought only five months bread and flour to the iſland, and it being now expended to three caſks of each, which was two months bread at full allowance, and as I had near ſix months ſalt proviſions, I put myſelf and every perſon on the iſland to two-thirds allowance of flour and
2. bread on the 2d, until the arrival of more proviſions.

4. The 4th, being the anniverſary of his Majeſty's birth-day, I cauſed it to be obſerved as a holiday. The colours were hoiſted at ſun-riſe; every perſon had a good dinner, of the produce of the iſland, and I gave

the convicts ſome liquor to drink their ſovereign's health: the evening concluded with bonfires, which, excluſive of the joy we felt at the return of his Majeſty's birth-day, and the celebrating it in this diſtant part of the globe, we with pleaſure ſaw ſome large piles of wood burnt that had been along time collecting, and which were a great incumbrance to us.

At day-light in the morning of the 15th, the midſhipman and four men went out in the boat to fiſh: they were returning at nine o'clock, and in paſſing the point of the reef, the fine weather, and the abſence of ſurf, threw them ſo much off their guard, that the boat ſhipped a ſea which filled her, and waſhed John Batchelor, a marine, overboard: the boat, with the reſt of the men, drove in among the rocks to the weſtward of the landing-place, where they were ſaved with great difficulty, having received violent contuſions. The boat was got round to the crab and hove up; ſhe was much damaged, and her repairs were likely to take up a conſiderable time, as I had only two men who could aſſiſt in this buſineſs.

15. The wheat which was ſown on the north-eaſt ſide of Mount George, the 15th of June, being all rotten in the ground, except 260 blades, which I tranſplanted and put together, that patch of ground was ſown with barley on the 1ſt of July. The wheat had a very bad appearance when put into the ground, being much heated and deſtroyed by the weevil.

The labourers were employed the greateſt part of this month in clearing away and turning up ſome ground near my houſe, for a garden; its ſize about thirty rods. The barley which was ſown on the 1ſt came up

1788. July. 10. on the 10th, and every thing at the plantation had a promiſing aſpect. 15. On the 15th, the laſt caſk of beef and pork were opened, which would ſerve forty-four days at full allowance; it therefore was my intention to put every perſon to half allowance on the 28th, ſhould no proviſions ariſe before that period.

17. On the 17th, we had a moſt tremendous gale of wind from the northward, accompanied by a deluge of rain. The gales of wind were now very frequent from the ſouth-weſt and north-weſt, but it ſeldom blew hard from the eaſtward. Theſe gales generally happen about the full and change of the moon, and continue three or four days.

23. We planted upwards of one thouſand cabbages on the 23d, and every vegetable at the plantation was in a thriving ſtate: we had turneps, carrots, lettuces of three ſorts, onions, leeks, parſley, cellery, five ſorts of cabbages, corn ſallad, artichokes, and beet in great forwardneſs; but there was reaſon to fear that the potatoes and yams were quite deſtroyed by the grub-worm.

26. At five in the evening of the 26th, his Majeſty's armed tender the Supply hove in ſight, coming round Point Roſs: ſhe ran to leeward of this iſland, between Nepean and Phillip Iſles, to ride out the gale, which blew very ſtrong at weſt-ſouth-weſt. Mr. Waterhouſe, and a midſhipman belonging to the Supply, arrived at the ſettlement on the 27. 27th, with my diſpatches from the governor; they were ſent by Lieutenant Ball, who landed them in Ball's Bay. I found the Supply had brought proviſions, tools, and ſeeds of various kinds for the ſettlement. I was informed by Governor Phillip, that as the Sirius would go to the northward in the month of September, he had deferred ſending any

1788. July. more convicts until he heard my account of the iſland; and that if he thought it adviſeable to ſend more ſettlers, they would be brought in the Sirius, which ſhip he intended ſending among the iſlands, to procure ſtock for breeding. At day-light on the 28th, the midſhipman returned to Ball Bay, in order to go on board the Supply. The labourers were employed in removing ſome large ſtones from the landing-place, and making a road to roll up the caſks. 28.

I received a meſſage from Lieutenant Ball on the 29th, intimating, that as the wind was ſoutherly and blew ſtrong, he meant to anchor under the north-eaſt part of the iſland; and as I expected he would anchor in Caſcade Bay, I ſent a man acroſs the iſland on the 30th with a letter for him. 29. 30.

At ten in the morning of the 31ſt, the Supply's boat landed with ſome light articles; Lieutenant Ball ſent a carpenter in her to offer his aſſiſtance in building a convenient boat for the uſe of the ſettlement: I directed him to begin his work immediately, and ſet the ſawyers to work in ſawing plank for his uſe. The other workmen were employed in turning up a piece of ground to ſow two pecks of good ſeed wheat on, which came in the Supply. 31.

August. 1. From the 1ſt to the 4th of Auguſt, the wind blew very ſtrong from the ſouthward, which prevented the Supply from coming on that ſide of the iſland; but at ſun-ſet on the 4th, the wind veering to north-eaſt, ſhe came round Point Roſs, and anchored in the roads. The man whom I ſent on the 30th of July acroſs the iſland to find the Supply, returned this day at noon, much exhauſted and fatigued: he had loſt his way, and had been without food for three days; fortunately, the Supply 4.

was

was ſtanding in for the ſhore and ſaw him, otherwiſe he muſt have periſhed.

1788. August.

5. Landing was very ſafe in the afternoon of the 5th, and we received on ſhore a part of the proviſions and ſtores.

6. At day-light in the morning of the 6th, we hoiſted the colours as a ſignal that the landing was ſafe, and at ſeven o'clock the colours were ſtruck half ſtaff, this being the ſignal that landing was dangerous, the ſurf having conſiderably increaſed with the flowing tide. At half paſt ſeven the Supply weighed, and ſoon afterwards ſhe hove to and hoiſted her boats out, and ſent them towards the ſhore. I perceived her ſmall boat was determined to come in, and being apprehenſive that ſome accident might happen, I ordered Mr. Cunningham (the mate) into our boat, with four men, to lie within the point of the reef, in order to aſliſt the Supply's boat, ſhould any misfortune happen to her: unfortunately, our boat was ſwept away to the weſtward by the tide, and whilſt they were endeavouring to get under the point of the reef again, a heavy ſurf broke on her broad ſide and overſet her. The anguiſh I felt at this ſhocking accident may be more eaſily conceived than deſcribed: ſmall as our numbers were before, they were now decreaſed by the loſs of Mr. Cunningham, (whom I ſincerely cheriſhed as a good young man) the ſawyer, and one of the beſt of the convicts; a ſeaman belonging to the Supply was alſo drowned, and another convict narrowly eſcaped the ſame fate. Immediately after this dreadful misfortune the Supply's jolly-boat landed with three caſks of flour, and as the large boat was coming near the ſhore, I ordered ſome muſquets to be fired, on which ſhe returned on board: the Supply bore up, and ran to leeward of the iſland. At one o'clock, there being ſcarcely any ſurf, the

jolly-boat went off, and ran to leeward of the iſland, to get on board the brig.

1788. August. 7. On the 7th, I was obliged to puniſh one of the convicts with thirty-ſix laſhes, for ſtealing a hatch of eggs from under a hen which was ſitting on them. 8. At day-light on the 8th, the Supply anchored in the road, and the landing being good, we received part of the proviſions and ſtores; 10. the remainder were landed on the 10th.

11. Our new boat being finiſhed, I ſent the carpenter and Mr. Waterhouſe on board the Supply, in the morning of the 11th, with my letters for the Governor; and ſoon afterwards ſhe hoiſted her colours, and ſet ſail for Port Jackſon.

I received from Governor Phillip ſeventeen queries, which, with my anſwers to them, are as follow:

Query 1. In what time do you think the iſland will be able to ſupport the people you have with you, independent of ſupplies from this ſettlement?

Anſwer. From the excellence of the ſoil, and the preſent appearances, the iſland will produce more than a ſufficiency of grain in two years: animal food depends on the ſupply and breeding of ſtock; and cloathing on the flax-plant being brought to work.

Q. 2. Do you wiſh to have more people ſent you, and what number of men and women do you wiſh to have in addition to thoſe you have already.

CHAP. XII.

1788. Auguſt.

Anſ. With twenty more men, and women in proportion excluſive, I ſhould be able to make a little progreſs in clearing and cultivating the ground.

Q. 3. In what time do you think the iſland will be able to maintain the additional number of people you wiſh to have ſent you?

Anſ. I think in two years, but in three at moſt, as anſwered by the firſt queſtion.

Q. 4. What ground have you in cultivation?

Anſ. Two acres and an half in barley, and one acre in garden ground: in September I ſhall have an acre in Indian corn and rice.

Q. 5. Have you diſcovered the flax-plant?

Anſ. Yes: ſome bundles of the flax-plant which I put into water on the 17th of March were taken up the 27th of July, when we found that the thick vegetable of the fibres had rotted away, but ſtill they were covered with an hard woody ſubſtance, from which we have ineffectually tried to ſeparate the flaxy part, which I have no doubt would make good cordage, canvas, and linen, as it appears to be of a fine and ſtrong texture. Some lines were made of it, which were tolerably ſtrong and good; but the want of a method to ſeparate the woody part from the flax, will be a great hindrance to its being made uſeful.

Q. 6. How many acres of clear ground have you found in the iſland?

Anſ. Not a yard ſquare.

Q. 7. Have you any place round the iſland at which a veſſel of thirty or forty tons can remain at anchor in ſecurity all the year round?

Anſ. None; without removing to the lee ſide of the iſland as the wind changes. Anchorage is good all round the iſland, as the bottom is a coral ſand: at about two miles from the land the circular depth is twenty-two fathoms. An harbour might be made by cutting a channel through the reef about four hundred feet long, but it would be neceſſary to blow up ſome ſunken rocks to facilitate the entry: if it ſhould ever be thought proper to do this, five veſſels of ſeven feet draught might lie all the year round in ſecurity within the reef: they will not be able to enter but in the fineſt weather, with the wind from north-eaſt to north-weſt, and then they muſt warp in: perhaps leſs difficulty will be found when I am informed of the ſtate of the weather during the Summer months.

Q. 8. How far will it be poſſible to load any ſhip hereafter with ſpars for ſhips of the line; I mean with reſpect to the great difficulty, I am told, there is to land any thing on the iſland, or to take any thing off?

Anſ. I cannot anſwer this queſtion ſo fully as I could wiſh, until I am acquainted with the ſtate of the weather during the ſummer months. In fine weather, with the wind at north-eaſt, ſpars of any dimenſions may be ſent off from Sydney-Bay, by mooring a boat without the reef, and hauling the ſpars off. I have great reaſon to ſuppoſe anchorage will be very ſafe off Sydney-Bay in the ſummer. I think veſſels might be built and launched in Ball-Bay; and when the flax-plant can be brought to work, cordage and ſails can be made of the fineſt and ſtrongeſt ſort.

Q. 9. How does your ſtock thrive, and what does the iſland produce?

Anſ. Of the ſtock I brought with me, five ewes are dead with the ſcab, and two ſows poiſoned: the reſt are all very thriving and likely to

CHAP. XII. 1788. Auguſt.

do well. The productions of the iſland, are timber for the conſtruction of veſſels, pines for maſting them, and, when the flax-plant can be worked, a ſufficiency of cordage for the navy of Great-Britain, which needs no cultivation, as the iſland abounds with it, and freſh leaves ſhoot from the roots. Pigeons, parrots, parroquets, and other birds, are in abundance; the ſea abounds with fiſh, and probably we may have turtle during the ſummer months. A number of banana trees have been found on the iſland.

Q. 10. What live ſtock do you wiſh to have ſent you?

Anſ. Stock of any kind would be acceptable for breeding. I have no ſhe-goats. The leaves of the trees and underwood, afford ample and wholeſome food for many animals, and the fern-tree, which is very plentiful, is very good food for hogs.

Q. 11. Are thoſe who are with you ſatisfied, or do they wiſh to be relieved?

Anſ. Every one is ſatisfied, and no perſon wiſhes to be relieved.

Q. 12. What weather have you in general?

Anſ. During the months of March and April, we had very fine weather; ſince when, it has been variable; and when the wind has been at ſouth, and ſouth-weſt, the air was raw and cold. The full and change of the moon has generally been accompanied with very heavy gales of wind and torrents of rain, from the north-eaſt, or ſouth-weſt, both of which have been very violent at times. We have had no thunder or lightning, nor ice.

Q. 13. What are the prevailing winds?

Anſ. The winds have been variable: weſterly winds appear to be moſt frequent during the winter, and I have great reaſon to ſuppoſe eaſterly winds are conſtant during the ſummer.

Q. 14. Have you been at the ſmall iſlands?

Anſ. I have been round Nepean Iſland once, but could not land on it, the wind being weſterly, which made a great break in the ſmall ſandy bay which lies on the ſouth-weſt ſide of that iſle. My not having men to row, and the uncertainty of the weather, has prevented my going to Phillip iſle.

Q. 15. Are there any animals on the iſland, and of what kind are they?

Anſ. None but rats, which are diſtructive, and have been very numerous; but now they are much thinned.

Q. 16. Have you found any lime or chalk ſtone?

Anſ. None.

Q. 17. Have you been ſupplied with fiſh?

Anſ. Fiſh in great numbers, and of a large ſize, abound all round the iſland. Some turtle were caught ſoon after I landed, but the approach of cold weather drove them off. I have not been able to ſend the boat off ſo often as I wiſhed, not having men to row, but when ſhe has gone out, a plentiful ſupply of fiſh has been obtained.

At ſun-riſe on the 12th of Auguſt, we hoiſted the colours, in obſervance of the birth-day of his Royal Highneſs the Prince of Wales; 12.

and the ſame day a rood and an half of ground was ſown with a peck of ſeed wheat, which I received by the Supply.

1788. Auguſt. 17. From this time till the 17th, every perſon was employed in clearing a piece of ground to ſow the remainder of the ſeed wheat, which was brought by the Supply; and this being completed, I ſent the labourers to clear away, turn up, and plant half an acre of ground in Arthur's Vale, with Indian corn.

The frequent accidents which had happened to boats here, made me anxious to ſearch for a better landing place, or a place where landing might be practicable, when the ſurf ran too high to land in Sydney-Bay; and Lieutenant Ball having mentioned one as likely in Caſcade-Bay, on the north ſide of the iſland, I ſet out at day-light in the morning, taking three men along with me, in ſearch of it; propoſing, at the ſame time, to examine Ball-Bay in my road. 4. I left the ſurgeon commanding officer at the ſettlement, and I cannot help teſtifying the great ſatisfaction I felt at having a perſon of his character, to ſuperintend the work in my abſence, and his ſteadineſs and general knowledge, made him a valuable aſſociate. After climbing and deſcending a number of ſteep hills, and cutting our way through the thick woods which covered ſome ſmall plains, we arrived at a gully to the weſtward of Ball-Bay, about eleven o'clock; from whence we walked round to the bay by the ſea-ſhore, it being low water.

The diſtance between the two points of Ball-Bay is about a mile and a half; it goes in weſt-north-weſt, and is nearly a mile deep. At the diſtance of two hundred yards from the ſhore, the bay is entirely ſurrounded with ſteep hills, except in the center, where there is a valley, down which, a ſtream of freſh water runs, and empties itſelf on the beach. The ſides of theſe hills are cloathed with pines and the flax-plant; the beach is covered with large round ſtones, under which is a hard bottom, formed by the incruſtation of ſand and ſhells. The wind being now at ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, there was not the leaſt ſurf on the beach; and I apprehend, that when the wind blows from the ſouth-weſt, which makes very bad landing in Sydney-Bay, the landing is very good here; ſo that, ſhould I not find Caſcade-Bay a more eligible place than this, it was my intention to make a creek on the beach, by removing the ſtones for the breadth of twenty feet, until the bottom is clear, and as they are very heavy, I do not think it would be liable to fill up again.

I paſſed the remainder of the day here, and ſlept under a tent which I had brought with me. The next morning at day-light, we ſet out from Ball-Bay in order to go to Caſcade-Bay, on the north ſide of the iſland, which is not more than three miles diſtant, yet we did not arrive there before five o'clock in the afternoon, quite exhauſted and fatigued; having been under the neceſſity of cutting our way through the entangled underwood, which intercepted us in every direction. 18.

The landing place mentioned by Lieutenant Ball, is on a rock, a little detached from the iſland, and has communication with it at half tide: there is no objection to this being a very good landing place, if it were not for the almoſt total impoſſibility of getting any article of proviſions or ſtores further than the rock, which is at leaſt three hundred yards from the valley that leads down to it. Between this rock and the caſcade, there is a ſtony beach, ſimilar to that at Ball-Bay, on which landing is very good, with ſoutherly winds, and they generally prevail during the winter. Spars might be ſent off from hence with great eaſe;

1788. August. but ſhould the iſland remain ſettled, it will be neceſſary to make the landing at this place more convenient than it is at preſent. We paſſed the night in the valley above the caſcade: this valley is extenſive, and a very large deep rivulet runs through it.

19. At day-light on the 19th, we ſet out on our return to Sydney-Bay, where we arrived at four in the afternoon, with ſcarcely a rag to cover ourſelves, the cloaths being torn off our backs by the briars.

I obſerved the ſoil to be very good in every part of the iſland I viſited during the excurſion, and it was well watered; but the woods were almoſt impaſſable. There is a deal of level ground on the tops of the hills, and moſt of them will admit of cultivation; and where they are too ſteep for that purpoſe, the timber which grows on them might be reſerved for fuel.

The wheat which we had ſown on the 12th and 17th, was all out of the ground by the 24th, and had a very promiſing appearance. 24.

25. Early in the morning of the 25th, the ſurgeon, with ſix men, went to Ball-Bay, to make a commencement on the creek; taking a week's proviſions and four tents along with them.

27. I viſited this party on the 27th, and found they had made good progreſs, conſidering that their labour was greatly retarded by neap tides, and an eaſterly wind, which threw a great ſurf upon the beach.

30. The ſurgeon and his party returned on the 30th, and the next
September 1. morning, at day-light, I ſet out, with ſome men, to ſee what

further

further could be effected: we got to the bay by half paſt eight o'clock, and found the tides of the preceding day had thrown a number of looſe ſmall ſtones into the cut. As the tide ebbed, I directed the labourers to clear away a number of large ſtones which lay in the entrance of the cut; and at low water, all the ſtones were removed as far out as poſſible, which was compleated at five o'clock in the afternoon. The cut was about three feet deep, and at half tide there was upwards of ſix feet at the entrance: with any other wind than between ſouth-weſt and north-weſt, there is a ſurf on the beach, which often breaks with ſo much violence, as to render any attempt to land highly dangerous. As I found every thing done at this place, which could be effected with the ſmall number of men I had, we returned to Sydney-Bay on the 3d. 1788. September. 3.

Hitherto, the people on the ſettlement had not done much work for themſelves; and, all the good ſeed of Indian corn being ſown, I gave every perſon liberty from this time till the 14th, to clear away their gardens, and ſow them. For four days paſt, a ſingle turtle had been obſerved on the beach; I was loath to turn it, hoping it would draw others on, but finding that did not happen, it was turned on the 6th day, and brought to the ſettlement, where it was ſerved out as uſual. 6.

This turtle had been recently wounded between the ſhoulders with a kind of peg; which circumſtance, together with ſome pieces of canoes, a wooden image reſembling a man, and a freſh cocoa-nut, found in Ball-Bay, induced me to ſuppoſe that there is a conſiderable iſland undiſcovered, not far from the eaſtward of Norfolk-Iſland. The Indian-corn ſown during the laſt and preſent month, was now all up, and likely to do well.

CHAP. XII.

1788. September. 15.

I ſet off at day-light in the morning of the 15th, and went to the weſtern or rocky point. The entangled ſtate of the woods on this part of the iſland, were worſe, if poſſible, than any where elſe, but the ſoil and general appearance was much the ſame. From Point-Roſs to Rocky-Point, the ſhore is inacceſſible; conſiſting altogether of ſteep cliffs, which riſe perpendicular from the ſea. I returned at ſun-ſet, much fatigued, and my cloaths, as uſual on theſe excurſions, were torn from my back.

As the houſes and tents were ſurrounded by a thick wood, I ſet the men to make an opening to the ſea-ſide, by cutting down the trees and piling up the timber.

In the courſe of this month, we ſaw a great number of whales and thraſhers, ſome of which came cloſe to the reef: indeed, on our firſt landing here, I found the entire ſkeletons of two whales, which had every appearance of having been driven on ſhore, and the fleſh deſtroyed by rats and birds.

On counting ſome of the plants of barley, I found one grain produced 124 ſtalks; this pleaſing proſpect induced me to ſet about building a granary of eighteen feet long by twelve feet wide; and I ſet the ſawyers and carpenters to work in ſawing wood for that purpoſe: ſome of the labourers were ordered to aſſiſt them in placing the granary on poſts, others were employed in making ſhingles to cover it with, and the reſt were digging a cellar under the ſurgeon's houſe, for ſtowing proviſions: the women were employed in picking grubs off the Indian corn.

1788. October. In the beginning of October, we found a ſenſible alteration in the weather, it being very warm, except the mornings and evenings, which were ſtill cold: gales of wind were leſs frequent, and the landing was better in general than it had been for two months back. Some heavy rain fell on the 3d, which lodged the barley, that had been ſome time in ear, and the rats got to it, ſo that our return was likely to be but ſmall. The Indian corn, which was about eight inches high, ſuffered greatly from the grub-worm, which got into the plant and cut it off cloſe to the ground, deſtroying forty or fifty plants in the courſe of one night, which obliged me to keep the women conſtantly employed in picking them off: every other remedy was tried; ſuch as ſprinkling aſhes, and lye of aſhes round the roots, but with no good effect.

4. I made an excurſion to Mount Pitt in the morning of the 4th, and arrived there at noon: from the top of this mount, I had a complete view of the whole iſland, and a part of its ſea-coaſt. The whole exhibited a pictureſque ſcene of luxuriant natural fertility, being one continued thick wood, and I found the ſoil every where excellent. Within a mile of the ſummit of Mount Pitt, the ground, which is a red earth, was full of very large holes, and I fell into one of them at every ſtep, as they were concealed by the birds making their burrows aſlant. Near the ſummit of the mount, there grew a number of very large pines, which I was ſurpriſed at; it is indeed wonderful how they can withſtand the violent gales of wind which often blow here.

13. On the 13th, at day-light, we ſaw the Golden-Grove tranſport lying at an anchor in the road, and ſoon afterwards, Mr. Donovan, a midſhipman belonging to the Sirius, came on ſhore, and delivered the governor's letters: by this gentleman I alſo received a letter from Mr. Blackburn, the

CHAP. XII. 1788. October. maſter of the Supply, informing me that he ſailed from Port Jackſon on the 24th of September, being ordered by Governor Phillip to conduct the tranſport to this iſland; that he had brought Mr. Donovan, a ſerjeant, a corporal, and five private marines, two gardeners, who were ſeamen belonging to the Sirius, and twenty-one men and eleven women convicts; alſo the Supply's jolly-boat and boat's crew, to aſſiſt in unloading the Golden-Grove.

15. In the courſe of the 15th, we received on ſhore the party of marines and all the convicts; alſo moſt of the ſtores, and ſome proviſions. The
16. next day we landed 56 caſks of flour, and 18 caſks of ſalt proviſions, beſides a quantity of ſtores.

This day I turned a turtle, which weighed 200 pounds.

Towards evening, the Golden-Grove weighed, and ſtood off and on during the night. Ever ſince her arrival the weather had been fine, and not the leaſt ſurf.

CHAPTER

CHAPTER XIII.

Quantity of proviſions received by the Golden Grove.—Timber ſent to Port Jackſon.—Obſervations on the navigation near Norfolk Iſland.—Number of perſons on the ſettlement.—Nepean and Phillip Iſlands deſcribed.—Corn reaped.—A party ſent to Ball Bay.—Taſk-work of the convicts.—The free people exerciſed.—Plot to ſeize the iſland diſcovered.—Orders made public for the preſervation of regularity.—Oath of allegiance adminiſtered.—Proviſions and ſtores examined.

CHAP. XIII. 1788. October. 16.

THE flood tide running ſtrong all the morning of the 16th, and the wind being to the eaſtward, prevented the Golden Grove from working up; and though ſhe fetched Point Roſs in the afternoon, the flood making, ſhe was ſwept to leeward.

Having received inſtructions from Governor Phillip to ſend all the uſeful timber I conveniently could to Port Jackſon, I ſet the men to work in cutting ſpars, and ſawing boards for that purpoſe. At daylight in the morning of the 17th, the Golden Grove ſtood into the road 17. and anchored, but the ſurf ran ſo high that no boats could paſs before low water, which was at three in the afternoon, when I ſent the Coble off; but as the ſurf increaſed, I made the ſignal for her to be hoiſted in, and ſoon afterwards the tranſport got under weigh.

The

CHAP. XIII. 1788. October. 18. The next forenoon, the coble came on ſhore, and ſoon afterwards the Golden Grove anchored in the road. The ſame afternoon we landed eighteen caſks of flour, and ten of ſalt proviſions.

21. Landing was very good until the evening of the 21ſt, and during that time we received the whole of the ſtores and proviſions from the Golden Grove: I alſo received two ſows and fourteen young pigs belonging to the crown, and a ſhe-goat, which was the property of Mr. Collins, the judge-advocate. The proviſions received were—one hundred and twenty-ſix barrels of flour, thirty-nine tierces of beef and twenty-two tierces of pork, twenty-three firkins of butter, thirty-three caſks of peas, and five puncheons of rum, which were about ſeventeen months proviſions at the following ratio:—For one man for a week, flour, ſeven pounds: beef, three pounds and a half: pork, two pounds: butter, ſix ounces: peas, three pints. For one woman for a week, flour, four pounds and a half: beef, two pounds and a quarter: pork, one pound and a quarter: butter, four ounces: peas, two pints. It ſhould be obſerved, that the above ratio was full avoirdupoiſe weight, without any deduction whatever.

22. During the night of the 22d, we had very ſtrong gales of wind, and at day-light, I perceived the Golden Grove had left the road; I afterwards learnt that ſhe parted her cable at ten o'clock, and was not more than her own length to windward of the reef of rocks which lie off the ſouth-eaſt end of Nepean Iſland in paſſing it.

28. From this time to the 28th, we had only three days good landing, during which a number of ſpars and planks were ſent on board the Golden Grove, for Port Jackſon. Previous to the departure of that

CHAP. XIII.
1788. October.

veſſel, I wrote a letter to Mr. Blackburn, requeſting him to communicate his remarks on the navigation round theſe iſlands; as he had a better opportunity of making himſelf acquainted with it than I poſſibly could have, to which he returned the following anſwer; and, from the abilities of this officer, I believe his obſervations are very accurate.

“ North-north-weſt, about five miles from Duncombe Bay, there is a bank of coarſe ſand and coral, with ſixteen and ſeventeen fathoms on it, between which and the anchoring place there are twenty-five fathoms: there are alſo ſoundings north-eaſt from Phillip Iſle, from thirty-five to twenty-five fathoms at leaſt four leagues off; at which diſtance it is fouleſt and ſhoalleſt. The bearings, when at anchor in Duncombe Bay, were Cook's rocks eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, and the rocks off Point Howe, weſt-ſouth-weſt one quarter weſt, the landing rock ſouth, diſtance off one mile; the depth nineteen fathoms, coarſe ſand and coral. The beſt anchorage in the Caſcade Bay is with the great caſcade ſouth-weſt, and Cook's Point north-eaſt; diſtance off ſhore about a mile and a half; the ground tolerably good. Caſcade Bay is a very good road in the ſtrong ſouth-weſt wind, and very ſmooth water; the landing is eaſy, as is the acceſs to the iſland. As the ebb goes very ſtrong nine hours to the eaſtward, the moſt convenient place for anchoring off Sydney Bay, on account of the boats, is, with the body of Nepean's Iſle eaſt-north-eaſt half eaſt, or eaſt by north; the flag-ſtaff north-north-eaſt half eaſt, Point Roſs north-weſt by weſt, and the weſt end of Phillip Iſle ſouth-ſouth-eaſt nineteen fathoms; *but here the ground is rocky:* the beſt anchoring is with the middle of Nepean Iſle eaſt-north-eaſt half eaſt, the weſt end of Phillip Iſle ſouth by eaſt, the outermoſt breaker off Point Roſs north-weſt by weſt half weſt, the flag-ſtaff north by eaſt half eaſt,

CHAP. XIII.

" and Collins's Head north-eaſt by eaſt half eaſt, ſeventeen fathoms " clear ground.

1788. October.

" The tides round the iſland are very ſtrong, and from the obſerva- " tions I have been able to make, and the difficulty we always found in " the Supply of getting from Caſcade Bay round to Sydney Bay, (which " ever end of the iſland we tried at) I have every reaſon to believe that " the flood ſets ſouth-ſouth-weſt, and the ebb north-north-eaſt: it " flows about ſeven o'clock all round the iſland: now as the ebb runs " nine hours north-north-eaſt, it ſtrikes directly againſt Rocky Point, " which divides the tide, the eaſtern part runs with rapidity through " the iſlands, and then reſumes its former courſe of north-north-eaſt: " the other part goes north-north-weſt paſt Anſon Bay, round the weſt " end of the iſland, and then north-north-eaſt; ſo that in coming " from the north ſide of the iſland (unleſs the wind gives aſlant) you " have the tide right a-head which-ever end of the iſland you attempt " to get round. As to the flood it runs but three hours, and with little " ſtrength."

The maſter of the Golden Grove's obſervations, wnich I requeſted him to communicate to me, are as follow:—" The flood comes directly " from the ſouth-eaſt, ſtrikes in with Ball Bay, and ſets up through " between the iſlands: the other part, as it divides itſelf, ſets round the " north-eaſt part of the iſland; ſo that a ſhip coming round from Caſ- " cade Bay, can never work up with the wind to the ſouthward and " weſtward, as both tides take her directly on the weather bow. From " what I have ſeen of Ball Bay, I by no means like it; my reaſon is, it " is a bay that a ſhip can never get out of with an *in-blowing wind*, and " I do not think it a ſafe one to ride in: the Caſcade Bay I give much

" the preference to, as it can hardly happen but a ſhip can get to ſea " on one tack or another, and ride in very ſmooth water at anchor. I " could load the Golden Grove very well with timber or maſts, taking " the advantage of the winds in Caſcade and Sydney bays."

1788. October.

As I was very much in want of a carpenter, a man who had been diſcharged from the Sirius, and was on board the Golden Grove as a ſailor, offered to remain on the iſland on any terms, but I could make no agreement with him, not being impowered to take any ſtep of that kind; I therefore informed him, that if he choſe to remain he muſt take it on himſelf: this he with great readineſs conſented to, and I found him a great acquiſition.

The Golden Grove ſailed for Port Jackſon on the 29th. 29.

As an encouragement to the convicts who came by the Golden Grove, I gave them from the time of their landing until the 30th to build houſes for themſelves, and to clear away a little garden ground. 30. The huts were very ſoon built, being compoſed of logs, and thatched with bullruſhes and flaggs, which made them very comfortable; and as a farther encouragement, I gave ſome of them (who had the beſt characters) permiſſion to build their houſes in the vale, and to clear away ground near them for their own uſe.

CHAP. XIII.

1788. October.

The ſettlement now conſiſted of the following perſons, viz.

Mr. Stephen Dunnavan, midſhipman of the Sirius -	1	
Mr. Thomas Jamieſon, ſurgeon's firſt mate of ditto	1	
Mr. John Altree, aſſiſtant-ſurgeon - - -	1	
Roger Morley, Robert Webb, Thomas Webb, ſeamen belonging to ditto - - - - - -	3	
John Livington, carpenter, late belonging to ditto	1	
Serjeant, corporal, ſix private marines - -	8	16 free.
Male convicts - - - - - -	29	
Female convicts - - - - - -	17	
The total number, beſides two children,	62	

Soon after the departure of the Golden Grove, I made public the following extract from Governor Phillip's letter to me:—“ You will “ return any marine, convict, or other perſon, with whoſe conduct you “ are not ſatisfied; and you are at liberty to permit thoſe, whoſe good “ behaviour merits the indulgence, to work one day in the week on “ lots of land, one or two acres of ground to a convict, which you will “ cauſe to be pointed out for that purpoſe, and which they may con- “ ſider as their own property while they behave well; after the time “ for which they are ſentenced may expire, lands will be granted them, “ if they wiſh to remain as ſettlers, and you may give them ſuch part “ of the public ſtock to breed from, as you may judge proper, forbid- “ ding any perſon on the iſland ever to ſell any fowl, hog, or any other “ animal, without having firſt obtained your permiſſion; and you are “ not to permit the killing of any live ſtock until you have a ſufficient “ quantity on the iſland for your ſupport, except in caſes of ſickneſs.

“ You

1788. November.

“ You will make the report to me, when opportunity offers, of ſuch
“ who are not convicts, and who are deſirous of ſettling on the iſland;
“ and you are at liberty to permit them to cultivate ground for their
“ own benefit, not exceeding ten acres to any one perſon; they will
“ receive the indulgence of ſuch part of the live ſtock as you may
“ judge neceſſary to give them, but neither ſettler, nor any other perſon
“ on the iſland, is to be at liberty to kill any animal without having
“ obtained your permiſſion. Hereafter, grants will be made to thoſe
“ who wiſh to remain on the iſland, of a larger extent of ground.”

During the month of November, the weather was very warm, except four days, when we had ſtrong gales of wind from the ſouthward, which made it as cold as winter.

On the 14th, I planted about thirty rod of ground with Indian corn: ſome which had been planted in September was now five feet high, and the wheat grew ſo very rank that I was obliged to crop it. 14.

I went out in the coble on the 22d, and ſounded between Point Hunter and Nepean Iſle: there is a good channel, and there are not leſs than three fathoms cloſe to Point Hunter; and on the north ſide of Nepean Iſle in mid-channel, there are eight fathoms water. 22.

On the 29th, I landed on Nepean Iſland, and found it to conſiſt entirely of one maſs of ſand, held together by the ſurrounding cliffs, which are a border of hard rocks: notwithſtanding there was not the leaſt appearance of earth or mould on the iſland, yet there were upwards of two hundred very fine pines growing on it; the ſurface was covered with a kind of coarſe graſs. 29.

The

CHAP. XIII. 1788. December. The weather being now very hot, I changed the working hours, and gave the labourers from half paſt ten o'clock until half paſt twelve, to avoid the heat of the ſun: they were employed in clearing ground for cultivation, making ſhingles, cutting a road from the ſettlement to Ball Bay, and reaping wheat and barley.

The heat of the ſun ſplit the weather boarding with which my houſe was covered; and it being very leaky, I ſet the carpenters and ſawyers to work to put a new roof on, and to raiſe the houſe five feet, in order to make room for ſtores and proviſions.

2. At day-light in the morning of the 2d of December, I went in the coble to Phillip Iſle, where I landed on a rock, in a ſmall bay on the north ſide. It was with difficulty that I aſcended the firſt hills, which were covered with a ſharp long graſs that cut like a knife; this was interſperſed with bruſhwood. The ſoil is a light red earth, and was ſo full of holes, which had been made by the birds, that walking was very laborious. A ſmall valley runs the whole length of the iſland, in which, and on ſome of the hills, a few pines grow, but I think the whole iſland does not produce more than one hundred and fifty. I found no freſh water on the iſland, but probably there may be ſome, as I ſaw a number of hawks, pigeons, and parrots; but as I had only two convicts to row the boat, I left the iſland, and got to Sydney Bay in the evening.

8. On the 8th, I houſed all the barley which had been raiſed on an acre of ground, and was ſown in June and July. During the firſt of its growth, it had a moſt promiſing appearance, but when the ear was ſhot and nearly filled, ſome heavy rains in September laid a great part of it down, and the quantity deſtroyed by the rats and quails was almoſt incredible:

1788. December.

credible: there was every proſpect of getting at leaſt fifty buſhels of grain, but the whole quantity, when gleaned, yielded only ten buſhels. The barley was very fine, and 116 ears were produced from one grain. Garden vegetables throve very well, and cabbages were cut weighing twenty-ſix pounds each. I have no doubt but potatoes would thrive very well here; unfortunately, we had only two ſets on the iſland, which were brought by the Golden Grove. Moſt of the marines and convicts had now very good gardens, but the grub-worm was a great and perpetual enemy to their vegetables.

It has already been obſerved, that 260 plants of wheat were tranſplanted the beginning of June; theſe were threſhed on the 15th, and the produce was three quarts of a very fine full grain. 15.

The weather often was very favourable for landing in Sydney-Bay, and the boat was frequently ſent out; but the ſurf often roſe preſently afterwards which made it dangerous for her to come on ſhore, ſo that ſhe was obliged to go to Ball Bay, and men were ſent from the ſettlement to haul her up, which occaſioned a great loſs of time: I therefore reſolved to ſend Mr. Altree, who was a very truſty young man, a gardener, and one convict, together with three women to remain there, as they would not only cultivate the ground in the valley, but would, at all times, be ready to aſſiſt in hauling the boat up.

This party went to Ball-Bay on the 18th, where they found landing as fine as could be wiſhed, though the ſurf ran very high in Sydney-Bay; the wind being at ſouth, and blowing hard. 18.

Some

CHAP. XIII. 1788. December. 22. Some wheat was reaped on the 22d, which had been ſown on the 11th of Auguſt: the grain was very full and fine, but as it was ſown late the ſtock was not ſo fine as might have been expected.

25. The 25th, being Chriſtmas-day, it was obſerved as a holyday. The colours were hoiſted at ſun-riſe: I performed divine ſervice; the officers dined with me, and I gave each of the convicts half a pint of rum, and double allowance of beef, to celebrate the feſtival: the evening concluded with bonfires, which conſiſted of large piles of wood, that had been previouſly collected for the occaſion. Spring-tides were now at
26. the height, and I ſent every perſon on the 26th to Ball-Bay to make the cut deeper, and to clear away ſome ſtones which were waſhed into it. The wheat which was ſown the latter end of Auguſt, was reaped
29. on the 29th, and the Indian corn was nearly fit for the ſickle.

1789. January. I now began to perceive a very great difference between the work done ſince the arrival of the convicts by the Golden-Grove, and what was done before, in proportion to our numbers; the reaſon was, that when the number of convicts was increaſed, I had not perſons ſufficient to overlook them and keep them at work: I therefore adopted the plan of taſking them; for which purpoſe I conſulted thoſe whom I thought converſant in the different employments that were carrying on; and their opinions, added to what I had obſerved myſelf, determined me to fix the different taſks as follow, with which they were all contented. Six men were to cut the timber down on an acre of ground in one week: ſix men to clear away and turn up an acre of ground fit for receiving ſeed, in twenty-eight days: two ſawyers to ſaw one hundred feet of ſawing each day. At theſe taſks the convicts would have an opportunity of ſaving time to themſelves; and, as that time was to be employed in clearing gardens and ground to cultivate for their own uſe, what was thus ſaved from the public work would not be loſt to ſociety; although it was to be feared that ſome would paſs their time in idleneſs. 1789. January.

Having ſix muſquets on the iſland, excluſive of the marines arms, I thought it neceſſary to inſtruct the few free perſons I had (which were ſix) in the uſe of fire-arms, in caſe the marines ſhould be ſick, or any other exigency ſhould happen; I therefore gave orders to Mr. Dunavan to exerciſe them every Saturday morning; and the ſerjeant was to exerciſe the marines at the ſame time, or oftener: I intended that the former, after they were a little expert, ſhould fire half a dozen rounds once a month.

5. I went in the boat on the 5th, and examined the north and weſt ſide of the iſland, which I found every where ſurrounded by perpendicular cliffs. I landed on the beach in Anſon's-Bay, where I found the remains of a canoe, which had been waſhed there by the tide; a very good cocoa-nut was alſo found. This beach is very ſmall, and appeared to be a mere quickſand; there is no freſh water near it, and the bay is ſurrounded by ſteep hills, on which there grows a quantity of the flax-plant.

8. The 8th uſhered a male child into the world, and as he was the firſt born on the iſland, he was baptized by the name of Norfolk. At noon 15. on the 15th, parties were ſent out in ſearch of the cockſwain of the coble, who had loſt himſelf in the woods, as he was returning from Ball-Bay, where the boat had been hauled up the preceding day at 18. ſun-ſet: he was found on the 18th, naked and almoſt exhauſted, inſomuch that he was obliged to be carried to the ſettlement, having

received ſeveral deep cuts and bruiſes which rendered him incapable of getting out of his bed for ſome time.

1789. January.

Thomas Watts, a convict, was puniſhed with twenty-four laſhes, on 19. the 19th, for contemptuouſly refuſing to work, and being abuſive to the corporal of marines, who reprimanded him for not going to work with the reſt of the convicts.

The weather, during this month, was very fine and ſettled, and the 22. wind northerly until the 22d; from which time to the end of the month, we had conſtant heavy rain, without an hour's interval of dry weather: ſuch a continuance of rainy weather I never heard of, and it was frequently attended with heavy gales of wind from the north-eaſt.

In conſequence of ſome irregularities which had happened, I found 23. it neceſſary to aſſemble all the free people on the 23d, and to read the 24. articles of war. The next day, Robert Webb, a ſeaman belonging to the Sirius, but who was employed as a gardener on the iſland, came to me, and ſignified a wiſh to ſpeak with me in private, which being granted, he informed me that a plan had been concerted among the convicts, to ſurprize me, with the reſt of the officers, marines, and free people; and to poſſeſs themſelves of the public ſtores, and afterwards to endeavour to ſurprize the Supply, or any other veſſel that might come here, and make their eſcape from the iſland. On my interrogating him, he ſaid that Elizabeth Anderſon, a female convict, who lived with him, had given him this information the day before, and on his doubting the truth of what ſhe advanced, ſhe offered to convince him of the truth of her aſſertion, by bringing him within hearing of a convict whom ſhe would entice to relate the plan; which being agreed to by Webb, this morning (the 23d.) Elizabeth Anderſon invited William Francis (a convict) into the hut, to drink a dram, when he related the circumſtances of the plan, and how it was to be carried into execution; Webb being at this time hid from the view of Francis, by a piece of tent which was hung before the bed he lay in. As I thought it neceſſary to ſubſtantiate this information, I cauſed Robert Webb and Elizabeth Anderſon to be kept apart, and took their depoſitions on oath ſeparately, both of which perfectly agreed in every particular, and were in ſubſtance as follow:

" That yeſterday (the 22d.) between nine in the morning and noon, " Elizabeth Anderſon being waſhing, ſhe ſighed, when William Francis, " who ſtood near her, aſked what ſhe ſighed for; ſhe anſwered, ſhe " was very low; William Francis then aſked her, if ſhe could get her " liberty, whether ſhe would leave Webb, and on her ſaying yes, he " ſaid, the firſt ſhip that comes here, except the Sirius, we will every " man and woman have our liberty, to which we were all ſworn laſt " Saturday; and we (the convicts) would have had it already, if the " Sirius was not the firſt ſhip expected, and the day that Watts was " flogged was intended to have been the day for making Mr. King and " the free people priſoners." Francis added, " that it was propoſed to " take the Golden-Grove on her paſſage, as they (the convicts) were " all for it, except one man, and he was the forwardeſt in the preſent " plot. Robert Webb appearing, put an end to this converſation; " and Elizabeth Anderſon repeated to Webb all that paſſed between " her and Francis: on Robert Webb's ſuſpecting the ſtory being an " invention of hers; they agreed that he ſhould lie concealed in the " bed, which had a curtain made of a piece of tent, while ſhe ſhould " endeavour to draw from Francis a fuller account of the plan laid by

" him

CHAP. XIII.
1789.
January.

“ him and the reſt of the convicts; and this morning (the 23d.) at
“ day-light, Robert Webb being ſtill in bed, Elizabeth Anderſon got
“ up, and on ſeeing Francis near the hut, ſhe wiſhed him the ‘ good
“ morrow,’ and informed him that Webb was gone to town to grind
“ his tools; ſhe then ſaid, ‘ come Bill, ſit down and drink a little rum,
“ it will do us both good, and drink to the boys of the ſhip that will
“ take us from this place:’ to which health they both drank. Elizabeth
“ Anderſon then aſked Francis how long it was ſince they (the convicts)
“ had planned the ſcheme; he ſaid they were all ſworn on this Saturday
“ month paſt, at Thompſon’s, in the vale, excepting Widdicome and
“ Rice, (convict rope-makers,) who were Mr. King’s right-hand men,
“ and therefore not to be truſted: Lucas (the convict carpenter) had
“ not been aſked, but they were ſure he would be on their ſide, when
“ they (the convicts) got the day: Francis continued ſaying, ‘ I’ll tell
“ you how it is to be done; the whole is left to my management, and
“ the beſt time will be the firſt Saturday after the arrival of any other
“ veſſel than the Sirius. Moſt of the marines and free people will be
“ a-cabbaging *, and as Mr. King generally goes to the farm twice a
“ day, in his abſence I will ſtep into his houſe and hand out the
“ arms † to my men; then I will go out and take Mr. King, and after
“ that the other officers, and what marines are in camp, and the reſt as
“ they come in from cabbaging: we will then put them all in irons,
“ two and two together, when they will be as helpleſs as bees. We
“ will then make the ſignal for a boat, and when ſhe lands, we’ll *nab*
“ the boat’s crew; then ſend the coble off with Mr. King’s compli-
“ ments, and requeſt another boat may be ſent to carry off plank, as
“ the firſt boat was ſtove, and the coble could not carry luggage: when

---

[*] Getting the wood-cabbages.

[†] The marines arms were kept in my houſe.

1789. January.

" the ſecond boat comes, the people belonging to it will be *nabbed*, and " the two boats with the coble will be filled with our people (the " convicts) and the women, and take poſſeſſion of the ſhip. Three of " the ſailors might remain, if they were willing, and one officer ſhould " be kept to navigate the ſhip; the reſt of the officers and ſhip's company will be left on Nepean or Phillip-Iſland, with the coble, from " whence they might go to Norfolk-Iſland and liberate the commandant. " Elizabeth Anderſon then expreſſed her wiſhes that it might ſucceed, " and Francis left her."

The taking Webb and Anderſon's depoſitions, and interrogating them, took up two hours; and it being Saturday, moſt of the convicts were out getting cabbages: there was a poſſibility that the accuſation againſt William Francis might be an invention; yet, having received that information, it became neceſſary to uſe every precaution againſt a ſurprize; I therefore ordered a conſtant guard of three privates, to be commanded by Mr. Dunavan, the ſerjeant, and corporal, and a guard-houſe was built between my houſe and the ſurgeon's, in which the proviſions and ſtores were depoſited. The ſtore-houſe occupied by the marines, I removed from the water ſide nearer to my houſe. Every perſon, without exception, was ordered to live in the town, or camp, and I recalled the party who had been ſent to Ball-Bay. Being ſtill deſirous to obtain fuller proof the criminality of the parties concerned in this diabolical ſcheme, I deſired Meſſrs. Dunavan and Jamieſon to watch the return of John Bryant, a convict, who had always behaved very well: they were to interrogate him reſpecting the plan laid by the convicts, and to aſſure him of a pardon, if he would diſcover all he knew. I alſo ſent to the houſe of William Thompſon, in the Vale, to ſearch for any written agreement that might have been drawn up, but none was found; however, the perſons employed in this ſearch found a quantity of Indian corn in a cheſt in Thompſon's houſe, which, from its not being quite hard, muſt have been ſtolen from the King's grounds in Arthur's Vale, as there was no other on the iſland. The next ſtep I took was to order William Francis, John Thompſon, Samuel Picket, and Joſhua Peck to be taken into cuſtody, on their return from cabbaging.

Meſſrs. Dunavan and Jamieſon met John Bryant, and perſuaded him to diſcover all he knew about the plot; preſently afterwards, they brought him before me, when he was ſworn on the croſs, being a catholic, and I took his depoſition; the ſubſtance of which was as follows:

" That on the paſſage from Port Jackſon to Norfolk-Iſland it was " talked among the convicts to take the Golden-Grove tranſport from the " officers and crew and run away with her, and on its being propoſed " to Bryant he ſaid they could be only fools to think of ſuch a thing. " That in going out to work on the 14th of this month with all the " convicts, Samuel Picket remarked how eaſy it would be to take the " iſland, by making the commandant priſoner, when going to, or re- " turning from the farm in Arthur's Vale; after which, coming in and " ſeizing the arms, and making priſoners of the marines and other free " people. It was ſoon after agreed that the reſt of the convicts were " to be conſulted, and if they were willing, a meeting was to be " held at John Thompſon's houſe in the Vale; Samuel Picket and " Joſhua Peck being inmates of his."

The remainder of Bryant's depoſition, reſpecting how the iſland was to be taken, agreed in every particular with the teſtimony of Elizabeth Anderſon and Robert Webb.

1789. January.

I next ſent for Joſhua Peck, and examined him on oath, and after much prevarication, he gave nearly the ſame account how the buſineſs was to be conducted as the others had done, except as to the manner how the officers were to be made priſoners, which was, "that after "they had ſecured me, they were to go to Mr. Dunavan's houſe at "the entrance of the vale, and take him and conduct him to the farm, "where we were to be tied back to back; after which, one of the "convicts was to be ſent in with a meſſage as from me, to ſpeak with "the ſurgeon, ſerjeant of marines, and the reſt, and they were to be "ſecured one by one as they eame out." To Bryant and Peck, I put the two following queſtions, telling them, that as their depoſitions and examination would be ſent to the Governor, it was neceſſary that they recollected the nature of the oath they had taken, and to give a juſt anſwer. Queſtion.—Can you aſſign any reaſon for the aforeſaid plot being formed? Anſwer.—None, but the hopes of regaining our liberty. Queſtion.—Have you at any time heard any convict on the iſland expreſs any diſcontent at the conduct of officers, or on any other ground? Anſwer.—None. It was now clear to me that a ſcheme had been entered into, in which all the convicts were concerned, except the rope-makers and carpenter already mentioned; and their ſucceeding in it, ſo far as regarded the taking myſelf and the officers priſoners was not to be doubted; for, I muſt own, that I was not ſufficiently upon my guard againſt the deſcription of people I had to deal with; as the apparent ſatisfaction which they often expreſſed at being on this iſland in preference to Port Jackſon, added to the great indulgences they had frequently received from me, lulled any ſuſpicion of their having the moſt diſtant idea of the kind. The ſecond part of their plan, viz. that of taking any ſhip which might come to the iſland, was very doubtful; but had the firſt ſucceeded, the deſtruction of the proviſions and ſtores

would

1789. January. would have followed; and it is difficult to ſay what fatal conſequences would have enſued from the drunken ſtate they would have been in whilſt the rum laſted: indeed, I muſt in juſtice to them obſerve, that no ſanguinary meaſures were thought of; on the contrary, they propoſed good treatment to myſelf and the free people; but how far that intention would have been obſerved by a ſet of men of their deſcription, when in a ſtate of drunken madneſs, may eaſily be conceived.

I ordered Samuel Picket and William Francis to wear irons, and the 25. next day (Sunday), after prayers, I addreſſed the convicts, and pointed out to them the abſurdity of their plan, admitting they had made themſelves maſters of a veſſel. I endeavoured to convince them of the advantages they enjoyed on this iſland, where nothing but induſtry was requiſite to inſure them a happy and comfortable livelihood; after which, I exhorted them to let their future conduct wipe away the preſent impropriety of their behaviour: thoſe who diſtinguiſhed themſelves by a regular, honeſt, and induſtrious line of conduct, I promiſed to countenance and encourage, whilſt thoſe of a contrary deſcription were ſure to be made ſevere and dreadful examples of. I likewiſe cautioned them againſt ſtealing and plundering the grounds and gardens; aſſuring them that they would be ſeverely puniſhed on detection.

Having finiſhed my addreſs to the convicts, I cauſed the following orders to be read, in addition to thoſe which were before made public for the preſervation of order.

"The commandant ſtrictly forbids any officer, ſoldier, free perſon, or convict, male or female, ever abſenting themſelves from the camp or town for ten minutes together, without having firſt obtained leave from the officer charged with the guard, who will obtain the commandant's leave, if he ſhould think fit to grant it. The officer of the guard will take an account of the names of thoſe who are abſent on leave, on a ſlate, which will be kept in the guard-houſe for that purpoſe.

Every perſon returning from that leave, is to acquaint the officer of the guard of their return.

Every convict who is obſerved to go over the hill to the farm, without having obtained leave, or going to work there, will be fired at by the centinel.

The convicts, and not more than three together, are to build houſes for themſelves, at their leiſure hours, in ſuch places as will be pointed out.

No perſon for the future will be ſuffered to live out of the camp.

John Thompſon and Samuel Pickett are diſpoſſeſſed of their garden ground, in conſequence of their ill behaviour. Though I had not the moſt diſtant reaſon to ſuſpect any free perſon whatever, of being in the leaſt diſaffected, yet I judged it neceſſary to finiſh this affair by adminiſtering the oaths of allegiance and fidelity to the officers, marines, and free people individually, in the preſence of the convicts. The theft of the Indian corn being fully proved, on the 26th, I ordered William Thompſon to be puniſhed with fifty laſhes; and Thomas Jones, another convict, was puniſhed with thirty-ſix laſhes, for abuſe and inſolence to Meſſieurs Jamieſon and Dunavan. The whole of the convicts were now employed in cutting down trees, and clearing 26.

the

CHAP. XIII. the ground near the houſes, in order to give more room for building others.

1789. February.

As the rains were very violent, and ſeemed to be ſet in, and the heat of the weather had made much of our Indian corn to ſhoot out, I began gathering that which was ſown in September. Joſeph Long, a convict, was puniſhed with twelve laſhes on the 28th, for quitting his work and abſenting himſelf without leave.

The month of February commenced with heavy gales of wind and deluges of rain, which greatly damaged the Indian corn, and different plants that were ſeeding. The ſmall patch of barley which was cut on the 20th of laſt month, was quite ſpoiled by the conſtant rain, and the ſwamp was entirely overflowed. 6. On the 6th, we had a very heavy gale of wind from the northward, attended with lightning, which was the firſt I had ſeen ſince my arrival on the iſland. Two convicts were puniſhed on the 9th, for abſenting themſelves after ten o'clock at night from their quarters, with a bad intention. 15. The 15th, being Sunday, after performing divine ſervice, and reading the orders, I forgave the priſoners, Samuel Pickett and William Francis, for their ill behaviour in the affair of the plot; but it was my intention to ſend Francis to Port Jackſon the firſt opportunity, as he was a worthleſs, troubleſome villain.

The heavy rains had now in a great meaſure ſubſided, and the weather 16. on the 16th being fair, we embraced that opportunity of examining the proviſions which were ſtowed in the cellars. On getting up the ground tier of flour caſks from under the ſurgeon's houſe, I found a quantity of water had lodged amongſt them; and although they were well dunnaged, yet we found many of the caſks much damaged, and the flour in them ſpoiled; but the quantity loſt could not immediately be aſcertained: however, it was of the utmoſt conſequence to have the whole overlooked, and every perſon was employed till the 21ſt in cleaning the flour and ſeparating the damaged part of it from that which was dry and in good condition.

1789. February.

CHAPTER XIV.

A violent hurricane at Norfolk Iſland.—Arrival of the Supply.—Convicts ſent from Port Jackſon.—Proviſions and ſtores.—Departure of the Supply.—Robberies committed.—Employment of the convicts.—Wheat infeſted with caterpillars.—A ſtore-houſe erected.—Arrival of a party of marines from Port Jackſon.—Thefts committed.—Orders read for preſerving regularity.—A female convict puniſhed.—Pernicious effects of the grub-worm.—Gardens plundered.—A granary erected.—Wheat deſtroyed by paroquets.—Number of inhabitants on the iſland.

CHAP. XIV. 1789. February. 25. THE interval of fine weather, which gave us an opportunity of examining the ſtate of our proviſions, and cleaning the damaged flour, was ſucceeded by a hurricane that was dreadful beyond deſcription. In the morning of the 25th, we had light winds from the north-eaſt, and very diſmal, dark, cloudy weather, with conſtant torrents of heavy rain: towards noon, the wind blew a heavy gale, and kept increaſing in violence. At midnight, it ſhifted to eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, and blew with great fury, attended with conſtant deluges of rain. At four 26. o'clock the next morning ſeveral of the largeſt pines were blown up by the roots, one of which fell on the hog-ſtye and killed a very fine Engliſh ſow and a litter of ſeven pigs that were my property, and three ſows and two boars belonging to the crown. This was a ſevere loſs to young coloniſts, but a ſtill worſe accident afterwards happened, and which had nearly deprived us of our flour.

1789. February.

From four in the morning until noon, the wind increaſed to a very ſevere hurricane, with the heavieſt rain I ever ſaw or heard of. Pines, and oak-trees of the largeſt ſize, were blown down every inſtant; the roots were torn up, together with rocks that ſurrounded them; frequently leaving pits at leaſt ten feet deep. Some of the very large trees, which meaſured 180 feet in length, and four feet diameter, were thrown by the violence of the tempeſt to a conſiderable diſtance from the place where they grew; and others, whoſe roots were too deep in the earth to be torn up, bent their tops nearly to the ground. In addition to the horror of this ſcene, a very large tree fell acroſs the granary and daſhed it to pieces, ſtaving a number of flour caſks that were in it; but by the general activity of every perſon on the ſettlement, the flour, Indian corn, and ſtores were in a ſhort time collected, and removed to my houſe, with the loſs of a few pounds of flour and ſome ſmall ſtores that were blown away. The gale now raged with the moſt violent fury, which defies all deſcription: whole foreſts ſeemed, as it were, ſwept away by the roots, and many of the trees were carried to a conſiderable diſtance. By one o'clock in the afternoon, there were as many trees blown down round the ſettlement as would have employed fifty men for a fortnight to cut down. The ſwamp and the adjoining vale were overflowed, and had every appearance of a large, navigable river: the ſurf ran mountains high, but did not overflow the bank, although very near its level: in the road, the ſea ran very high, often eclipſing Nepean Iſle. At two in the afternoon, the gardener, two convict men, and one woman, who lived in the vale, came to the ſettlement, having narrowly

eſcaped

CHAP. XIV. 1789. February. eſcaped with their lives from the falling of trees, and great depth of water in many parts of the valley; and their houſes, which had been built and framed with ſtrong logs, were blown down. Three acres of ground that had recently been cleared were almoſt covered with trees: every thing in the gardens was nearly deſtroyed, and an acre of Indian corn, which was in a promiſing ſtate, and nearly fit for reaping, was laid flat and covered with water four feet deep; nay, incredible as it may appear, the violence of the wind blew up cabbages, turnips, and other vegetables by the roots; and what remained in the gardens were turned as black as if they had been burnt. At three o'clock, the wind veered round to ſouth, and moderated, and at ſun-ſet, the weather was very pleaſant.

It was a providential circumſtance that the diſcovery of the plot (as has already been related) happened previous to this dreadful ſtorm, as, on that account, the convicts had altogether been employed in cutting down large trees round the ſettlement, to make room for building other houſes: had not this been done, our houſes would probably have been deſtroyed and many lives loſt, as we had no aſylum or retreat whatever: fortunately, however, only one man was hurt; he received a violent contuſion on his right ſide by the branch of a tree falling on him. There was no appearance on any part of the iſland of ſuch a ſtorm having ever happened before. During the remainder of the month we had very pleaſant weather; the wind at ſouth-weſt, but a heavy ſurf kept ſtill running.

March. 2. On the 2d of March, at day-light, we ſaw the Supply in the road; on which I ſent Mr. Dunavan on board her: he ſoon returned, bringing letters for me from Governor Phillip, who, I learnt, had ſent twenty-one men and ſix women convicts, with three children in the Supply, to be landed on this iſland. As I had the fulleſt confidence in the few free perſons who were with me, I did not heſitate one moment in receiving the additional number of convicts who were now arrived, although ſome of them had very bad characters. By the Supply I alſo received a buſhel of potatoes, and ſome ſeed-wheat and barley, that had been ſaved at Port Jackſon; and in the courſe of the day, all the convicts and the greateſt part of the proviſions and ſtores were landed. One turn of proviſions were got on ſhore early the next morning, but the ſurf increaſing, no more boats paſſed that day. 1789. March. 3.

Landing was very practicable on the 4th, and we received the remainder of the proviſions and ſtores; alſo two three-pounders and their carriages belonging to the Supply, which ſhould have been landed when I firſt came to the iſland, but were prevented by the ſurf. The ſurf ran ſo high on the 5th, that no boats could land: at two o'clock the Supply parted her cable, and ſtood off and on during the night. The Supply's boats were employed during the 6th, in ſweeping for her anchor, as no landing could be attempted; but the ſurf abating on the 7th, we received every article on ſhore that was intended for the ſettlement. 4. 5. 6. 7.

I now ordered the ſurgeon to examine all the convicts who had lately arrived, in order to diſcover if any of them were infected with diſeaſes, or troubled with complaints of any kind; but on examination, he found them all healthy.

The Supply having ineffectually ſwept for her anchor till the morning of the 10th, ſhe made ſail for Port Jackſon at ten o'clock in the fore- 10.

noon. The ground in the road off Sydney-Bay is very ſoul in general, although there may be ſome clear ſpots. The Golden-Grove parted her cable in the road, but regained her anchor, which the Supply was not lucky enough to accompliſh; and ſhe had the additional misfortune of nearly ruining two new cables in ſweeping for it. It is ſomewhat remarkable, that the beach in Sydney-Bay has at times five feet of ſand on the ſtones, and at other times it is all cleared away: this has happened when the wind has been at ſouth-eaſt, and when the beach was filled with ſand, the wind has been at ſouth-weſt: this probably may be the caſe in the road.

I gave the convicts who were newly arrived until the 18th, to build habitations for themſelves; the others were employed at taſk-work. The numbers now on the iſland were as follows, viz.

Officers, marines, and free men, —	16
Male convicts, — — —	50
Female convicts, — —	23
Children, — — —	5
Total —	94

In order to prevent the water from overflowing the cultivated grounds in the upper part of Arthur's Vale, I ſet eight labourers to work
19. on the 19th, in cutting a water-way of ſixty rods long, by ſix feet deep.

I have hitherto forborn mentioning the numerous thefts that had almoſt daily been committed; and, notwithſtanding the utmoſt vigilance, we had not been able to detect any perſon. Gardens had been conſtantly plundered; the harneſs caſk, containing the proviſions that were daily

1789. March.

iſſued out, had been robbed; and one night an attempt was made to get into the upper part of my houſe, where the ſlops were depoſited. Great rewards had been offered to tempt one or other to diſcover their accomplices, but without effect: however, at eleven o'clock in the night of the 23d, Thomas Watſon, a convict, was detected in another convict's houſe, ſtealing a bag of flour. 23.

From the number of daring thefts which had been committed, without my being able to fix on the thief, it became neceſſary to inflict a very ſevere puniſhment on this offender; and as I had no authority to give him any very ſevere corporal chaſtiſement; after examining witneſſes upon oath, and fully proving the theft, I ordered him into confinement, with an intention of ſending him to Port Jackſon to take his trial. In order to prevent theſe depredations as much as poſſible in future, I gave orders for the convicts to be muſtered in their huts three times every night, and the hour of muſter to be conſtantly changed: this had a good effect, but did not entirely prevent robberies from being committed.

James Davis, a convict, was puniſhed with twenty-four laſhes, on the 25th, for uſing ſeditious expreſſions, and throwing away ſome fiſh which had been iſſued, in a contemptuous manner. 25.

On inſpecting the ſeed-wheat, I found the weevil had begun its depredations, on which, I ſet ſome of the labourers to winnow and clear it. On the 30th, ſome atrocious villain ſtabbed one of the hogs belonging to the crown, which occaſioned its death: this, amongſt many other actions which happened, of a ſimilar nature, ſerved to ſhew that there are wretches equal to any act of inhumanity and barbarity. 30.

CHAP. XIV.

1789. March. 31.

The ſugar-cane, which I planted ſoon after my arrival on the iſland, being in a very expoſed ſituation, I removed it on the 31ſt, and planted out 106 very good joints, which were produced from only four canes. The Indian corn, that had been damaged by the hurricane, was reaped this afternoon.

The different employments of the convicts were as follows:

At taſk-work, clearing away ground for cultivation,	30	
Sawyers, ſawing boards, for building a ſtore-houſe,	2	2 free.
Carpenters, building a ſtore-houſe, — —	2	1 free.
Blackſmith, making fiſh-hooks, and other neceſſary work,	1	1 free.
Coble-men fiſhing, — — —	3	
Gardeners, — — — —	3	1 free.
Making ſhingles, — — —	4	
Schoolmaſter, 1; officers ſervants, 3; care of ſtock, 1,	5	
Total	50	5

April. 2.

On the 2d of April, three quarters of an acre of ground was ſown with wheat, the produce of that ground which had been firſt cleared on the north ſide of Mount George. The ſeaſon for ſowing wheat was as yet rather early, but I did it to try different periods, and to ſee which would anſwer beſt.

5.

On the 5th, (Sunday) after divine ſervice, Thomas Jones, a convict, acquainted me that the term of his tranſportation expired that day. I had been informed by Governor Phillip that the different terms for which the convicts were ſentenced was not known, as the maſters of the tranſports had left the papers neceſſary for that information with their owners; but that he had wrote to England for them, and until their arrival no ſteps could be taken, as the convicts words were not ſufficient: I therefore informed Thomas Jones that he was at liberty to work for whom he pleaſed, and if he choſe to work for the public good, he would be uſed the ſame as others were, until I received further orders concerning him. 1789. April.

An acre of ground, in Arthur's Vale, was ſown with wheat on the 6th; and on the 8th, Noah Mortimer, a convict, was puniſhed with ſixty laſhes, for refuſing to work, on being ordered by the overſeer, and being abuſive. The 10th, being Good-Friday, I performed divine ſervice, and no work was done on the ſettlement. 6, 8. 10.

On the 13th, three acres of wheat were ſown with four buſhels of ſeed. Every garden vegetable, now growing, were much blighted by weſt and ſouth-weſt winds; indeed, this was a very improper time to ſow any garden ſeeds, it being the commencement of winter; but the potatoes I had by me grew out ſo very faſt, that I was obliged to ſow them all. I had found the laſt year that June and July were the beſt months for ſowing the general crop. We had a very heavy gale of wind this day from the ſouth-weſt, which was the firſt ſoutherly wind that had blown with any degree of force ſince laſt Auguſt; and the laſt year, the ſoutherly winds did not begin until the 10th of April: from which I conclude that ſoutherly and weſterly winds are not frequent in the ſummer; eſpecially as we had not one gale from that quarter during the laſt ſummer. 13.

Three acres of wheat were ſown in Arthur's vale on the 16th, and by the 21ſt eight acres of wheat were up, and had a promiſing appearance. 16. 21.

CHAP. XIV. 1789. April. 22. As there was a projection of the reef where boats uſed to land, which, if taken away, would greatly leſſen the danger of landing; I ſet ſix men to work about removing it on the 22d, with orders to continue at the employment every tide until it was finiſhed.

26. Notwithſtanding every convict had ſuffered exemplary puniſhment for their crimes, whenever they were detected; yet this was not ſufficient to keep the free people in proper ſubordination; for on the 26th, John Williams, a marine, quitted his guard, and raiſed a quarrel in a convict's houſe; the conſequence of which was a battle between himſelf and another marine: on which, I aſſembled the marines and all the other free people under arms, under the flag-ſtaff, on which the colours were hoiſted; and I puniſhed him with twenty-four laſhes, for quitting his poſt, and fighting with his comrade.

May. 7. I obſerved on the 7th of May, that all the wheat which hitherto had a very fine appearance, was blighted in many places, and particularly where it was thinneſt ſown: on examining it, I found it entirely covered with a ſmall black caterpillar, which had eat off the ſtems within an inch of the ground: theſe deſtructive vermin kept on the wheat during the whole month; they began on the lower part of the eight acres that were ſown in Arthur's Vale, and proceeded regularly through it, deſtroying every blade. We tried various methods to extirpate them, ſuch as rolling the wheat with a heavy roller, and beating it with turf-beaters, in order to kill them, but with little effect; for in an hour's time they were as numerous as ever, and daily increaſed in ſize. I found they were bred from a ſmall moth, vaſt numbers of which infeſted the air in the mornings and evenings: the number of theſe caterpillars on the wheat was incredible; and they were ſo thick in the gardens that we ſwept them in heaps: the adjoining rivulet was alſo covered with them. The whole wheat of eight acres (which was a foot high when theſe pernicious vermin firſt attacked it) was eat cloſe to the ground by the 28th, and three acres of it never grew afterwards. Having gone through the gardens and wheat, theſe deſtructive inſects left us on the 29th.

1788. May.

The carpenters had now finiſhed the new ſtore-houſe: its dimenſions were thirty feet long by eighteen feet wide, and ten feet under the eaves: the ſides were covered with weather boarding, and the roof was ſhingled. I ordered the proviſions to be brought from my houſe and from the ſurgeon's, and depoſited in the new ſtore-houſe: the ſtores were alſo removed, and lodged there.

June. 4.

The 4th of June, being the anniverſary of his Majeſty's birth-day, it was obſerved as a holiday. The colours were hoiſted at ſun-riſe: at noon, the marines and free people drew up under arms, to the right and left of the two three-pounders which were on the parade, in front of my houſe. The male convicts were alſo drawn up on the right, and the females on the left. Three rounds of the guns and muſquetry were fired; after which, the whole party gave three cheers, and were diſmiſſed. In conſideration of the behaviour of the convicts on the day when the hurricane happened, and their general conduct ſince the diſcovery of the plot, I was induced to let them partake of the general feſtivity of the day; and ordered half a pint of rum for each man, and a pint of wine for each woman, for them to drink his Majeſty's health: the officers dined at my table, and on our drinking the King's health after dinner, three rounds of the great guns were fired: in the evening bonfires were lighted up, and the front windows of my houſe were illuminated with the initials G. R. When every perſon was aſſembled, and

before

CHAP. XIV. 1789. June. before the firing began, I ordered the priſoner, Thomas Watſon, who was in confinement for a theft, (and whom I propoſed ſending to Port Jackſon to be tried) to be brought out, and in conſideration of the day I forgave him. The remaining four acres of wheat, which the caterpillars had not totally deſtroyed, were now ſhot out again, and had a very promiſing appearance.

11. On the 11th, I drilled thirty pints of wheat into ſixty roods of ground; and, as I had but little ſeed left, this was, in my own opinion, diſpoſing of it to the beſt advantage; eſpecially as it was probable that the increaſe would be equal to that which had been ſown at a broad caſt: I alſo drilled in eighteen pints of marrow-fat peas.

13. At day-light in the morning of the 13th, we perceived his Majeſty's armed tender, the Supply, in the road: the ſurf at that time ran very high in Sydney-Bay, and there being but little eaſterly wind, with a ſtrong flood-tide, ſhe could not get to Ball-Bay before three o'clock in the afternoon; when I received my letters from Governor Phillip, who informed me, that he had ſent Lieutenant John Creſſwell, of the marines, with fourteen privates, to the iſland; that Mr. Creſſwell was to put himſelf under my command; and that in caſe of my death, or abſence, the government of the iſland was to devolve on him. I had alſo the pleaſing ſatisfaction to find that my conduct was approved of by Governor Phillip.

14. The ſurf ran very high on the 14th, until three o'clock in the afternoon, when Lieutenant Creſſwell landed with his detachment and part of their baggage; but nothing elſe could be received on ſhore until the

17. 17th, when part of the proviſions and ſtores were landed. As another

boat was now become neceſſary for the uſe of the ſettlement, I wrote to Lieutenant Ball, requeſting him to ſend his carpenter on ſhore to build a coble, that being the moſt convenient ſort of boat for going out and coming into this place. The carpenter landed in the afternoon, and immediately got to work in building a boat. 1789. June.

During the 18th, all the proviſions were received on ſhore, except ſixteen caſks of flour; but the ſurf increaſing very much in the evening, I made a ſignal for the Supply to hoiſt the coble in. The ſea ran ſo very high, that no boat could land until the 21ſt, when we received the remainder of the proviſions and ſtores; after which, the boats were employed in carrying off water for the Supply, and planks for Port Jackſon. Two pecks of wheat were drilled into an acre of ground in Arthur's Vale, on the 24th; and on the next day, one acre and a quarter was ſown with half a buſhel of wheat at a broad caſt. We now had very ſtrong gales at ſouth-weſt, and at nine o'clock in the morning the Supply paſſed between Nepean Iſle and Point Hunter. The gale continuing heavy from the ſouth-weſt, I ſent a perſon round to the lee ſide of the iſland on the 26th, to look for the Supply; but ſhe could not be ſeen until day-light in the morning of the 30th, when ſhe was perceived hull down to the ſouthward, and working up to the iſland. By this time the new boat was in great forwardneſs, and my own workmen being able to finiſh it, I ſent the carpenter of the Supply on board; and at four in the afternoon that veſſel made ſail for Port Jackſon. Lieutenant Ball had orders to examine a ſhoal, which was ſeen by the maſter of the Golden Grove, on her return from this iſland in October laſt, in latitude 29° 25′ ſouth, longitude 159° 59′ eaſt of Greenwich: he was alſo to look for an iſland and ſhoal that were ſeen by Lieutenant Shortland, in the Alexander tranſport: the ſhoal, in latitude 18. 21. 24, 25. 26. 30.

1789. July. tude 29° 20′ ſouth, longitude 158° 40′ eaſt, and the iſland 28° 10′ ſouth latitude, and 159° 50′ eaſt longitude. Mr. Shortland named them Sir Charles Middleton's Iſland and Shoal, and imagined they were joined together. 1. On the 1ſt of July, the new coble was finiſhed, and her bottom payed: her dimenſions were twenty-two feet long, by ſix feet ſix inches wide. This buſineſs being compleated, the ſawyers and carpenters began to erect a houſe for Lieutenant Creſſwell, of eighteen feet long, by 12 feet wide, with a back part nine feet ſquare. The garden in Arthur's Vale being quite expoſed and open, I employed ſix men to ſurround it with a wattled hedge. Edward Gaff, a convict, was puniſhed 6. with 100 laſhes on the 6th, for ſtealing three quarts of wheat: indeed, ſcarcely a day paſſed without complaints being made of thefts, which were committed with ſuch dexterity that it was impoſſible to detect them. That thefts in ſo ſmall a ſociety ſhould ſo frequently happen was really aſtoniſhing; but when it is conſidered, that the greateſt part of that ſociety were hardened villains, the wonder will ceaſe. Eleven acres of wheat were now up in Arthur's Vale, and had a very promiſing appearance: every vegetable in the gardens were alſo in a thriving ſtate.

Nothing material happened in the courſe of this month until the 28. 28th, when a tree fell on John Bryant, a convict, which bruiſed his head ſo much that he died two hours afterwards. This man was one among the very few honeſt convicts which I had on the iſland. Two buſhels of ſeed wheat, being the remaining part of what I had left, was ſown this day, on the ſides of Mount George, on two acres of ground. Moſt of the marines who came to the iſland with Lieutenant Creſſwell, had now very comfortable huts and good gardens. In the month of August. Auguſt we had, in general, heavy gales of wind, chiefly at north-weſt and ſouth-weſt, attended with rain.

The general employment of the convicts was now as follows:

1789. August.

Clearing away ground for cultivation and other neceſſary work	30	
Sawyers ſawing ſcantlings, and boards for buildings	2	2 free.
Carpenters building a houſe for Lieutenant Creſſwell	2	1 free.
Blackſmith making and repairing neceſſary iron work	1	1 free.
Coblemen fiſhing	3	
Gardeners	2	1 free.
Making ſhingles	4	
Schoolmaſter 1, officers ſervants 3, care of ſtock 1	5	
Total	49	5

The 12th, being the anniverſary of his Royal Highneſs the Prince of 12.
Wales's birth-day, the colours were hoiſted at ſun-riſe, and it was obſerved
with the ſame ceremony as his Majeſty's birth-day, except giving
liquor to the convicts, as their recent behaviour, with regard to thefts,
had totally excluded them from that indulgence. As the wheat in Arthur's
Vale grew very rank, I was adviſed to crop it, which was done
on the 13th: however, I let three acres remain in order to ſee which 13.
way it would be moſt productive.

The carpenters having finiſhed the ſhell of Lieutenant Creſſwell's
houſe, I employed them in building an addition to the back part of my
habitation, as I was apprehenſive of its being blown down by the violent
ſouth-weſt winds, which were now almoſt conſtant. After divine
ſervice on the 16th, (Sunday) the following orders were read for preſerving 16.
regularity and good order among the inhabitants of the iſland.

CHAP. XIV.

1789. Auguſt.

ORDERS.

I. All perſons on the iſland are regularly to attend muſter and divine ſervice, unleſs prevented by ſickneſs: a diſobedience of this order will be puniſhed by extra-work, or by ſtopping a day's proviſions for the firſt offence; which, if repeated, will be puniſhed by corporal chaſtiſement.

II. No perſons are to abſent themſelves from their quarters, either by night or day, except they have obtained leave, or are going to their reſpective work; and if any one is obſerved lurking about after the watch is ſet, he will be fired at by the centinel.

III. The working hours are to be regularly attended to, and all perſons abſent from their work after the drum beats for that purpoſe, will loſe a portion of the time they may ſave from their taſks; and in caſe of a ſecond offence, they will be ſeverely puniſhed.

IV. The taſks will be continued as uſual, and the time ſaved by the gangs is at their own diſpoſal: thoſe who diſtinguiſh themſelves by employing their time in cultivating their gardens, and clearing ground for their own uſe, will meet with encouragement and reward.

V. If the overſeers, or the greateſt part of any gang, ſhould have reaſon to complain of the idleneſs of any one man belonging to that gang, and the complaint ſhould be found juſt, the offender will be ſeverely puniſhed.

VI. Thoſe who render themſelves unable to work by their neglect or obſtinacy, in not building themſelves warm huts, or who cut themſelves through careleſſneſs, will have a part of their proviſions ſtopped until they are able to go to work again.

VII. All the tools and utenſils are to be returned regularly every night to the ſtore-houſe when the retreat beats; and any perſon who is found ſecreting any tool, or any article of the King's ſtores, or committing any robbery whatever, will, on detection and conviction, receive ſuch puniſhment on the iſland as his Majeſty's Juſtices of the peace may judge the offence deſerves; or the offender will be ſent to Port Jackſon, to be tried by the criminal court, as the commandant may judge proper.

VIII. It is recommended to every one to be very careful of their cloathing, and every free perſon or convict is ſtrictly forbid buying or ſelling any article of ſlop cloathing: thoſe who diſobey this order will be proſecuted for buying or ſelling the King's ſtores, whether free people or convicts.

IX. Whenever it may be neceſſary to make any complaint, the perſon making the complaint is to inform the corporal of the guard, who will immediately report it; when the commandant (or, in his abſence, Lieutenant John Creſſwell,) will hear the complaint and decide upon it.

X. Diſobedience of orders, inſolence to officers or overſeers, or any other improper behaviour, tending to the diſturbance of the peace, or hindrance of the King's ſervice, will meet with ſevere puniſhment;

and a regular, honeſt, good behaviour, will meet with encouragement and reward.

1789. August.

His Majeſty's juſtices of the peace for this iſland, viz. the Commandant and Lieutenant John Creſſwell, (on whom the government of the iſland devolves, in caſe of the commandant's death or abſence) have appointed Roger Morley and John Altree, to hold the office of conſtables; and every perſon is ordered to be aſſiſting to either or both of them in the execution of their office. Such were the laws, which our then ſituations required.

24. Four acres of ground in Arthur's Vale were planted with Indian corn on the 24th; and, as the rats had dug up moſt of that which had been planted in the gardens, I replaced it, putting five grains of corn into each pit. During the remainder of this month, we had heavy gales of wind from the ſouth-weſt, which turned all the wheat quite black, that was growing on the ſouth ſide of Mount George: but I did not apprehend that it was otherwiſe injured than by being kept back. This gale was of longer duration, and blew with greater force than any I had hitherto obſerved.

29. On the 29th, Ann Coombs, a female convict, received fifty laſhes at the cart's tail, for defrauding Thomas Jones, of ſome proviſions: this puniſhment, however, did not deter her from committing crimes of a ſimilar nature; for the very next day ſhe was detected ſtealing two new check ſhirts from Francis Mew, a private marine, and was puniſhed with 100 laſhes.

September. The weather during the month of September was variable; we had ſome heavy gales of wind from the ſouth-weſt and eaſt-north-eaſt, but they were not of long duration.

1789. September.

Frequent notice has been taken of the deſtructive effects of the grub-worm, and they were now as troubleſome as ever. Theſe pernicious vermin are generated from the eggs of a fly, which are left on the leaves of plants: here they come to life, and daily gathering ſtrength and vigour, they deſtroy the leaves; and afterwards, falling on the ground, they cut off the roots and ſtalks. The ſurgeon, who, with great perſeverance and induſtry, had got a very good garden, and every thing in it in great forwardneſs, had all his plants and vegetables nearly deſtroyed by the grub-worm, and moſt of the other gardens ſhared the ſame fate. The miſchief done at my garden in Arthur's Vale was not ſo great, which I attributed to the quantity of cultivated ground near it; and, probably, when more extenſive pieces of ground come to be cleared, the bad effects of the grub-worm will be in a great meaſure prevented; but at preſent, theſe deſtructive vermin, and the depredations of the convicts, rendered the cultivation of gardens very diſcouraging to individuals. The corporal of marines, who was a very induſtrious young man, had cleared and planted a piece of ground, and by attention and aſſiduity, had raiſed a quantity of vegetables, beſides a very fine crop of potatoes, which would have yielded him at leaſt five buſhels; but, on the evening of the 5th, between ſun-ſet and the time of the watch being ſet, ſome villains dug up every one of the potatoes, and deſtroyed a quantity of other vegetables; and although the convicts were muſtered in their huts at ſun-ſet, and three times more during the night, yet the theft was not diſcovered until the next morning, when a very ſtrict ſearch was made, in order to find out the offender, but to no purpoſe, as the potatoes were (in the cant phraſe) *all planted*; viz. buried in the ground, ſo as to be taken out as they were wanted. This was one of the many acts of villainy that were daily committed by theſe atrocious wretches. Catherine Johnſon, a female convict, was puniſhed with 5.

CHAP. XIV. 1789. September 7. fifty laſhes on the 7th, for abuſing the ſtore-keeper, and accuſing him of theft wrongfully.

16. Two acres were ſown with Indian corn on the 16th, and the ground being quite ſhaded from the ſun, I employed a gang of labourers to cut down the trees from three acres of land, in order to let the ſun in upon the corn. 28. On the 28th, the produce of 240 ſets of potatoes, which had been planted on three roods of ground the firſt of June, were dug up, and yielded five buſhels of very fine potatoes.

October. During the month of October, the weather was in general very mild; 1. the wind chiefly from the ſouth-eaſt. On the 1ſt, the carpenters, with two men to aſſiſt them, began framing a barn, which I propoſed to erect in Arthur's Vale. The grub-worms were ſtill very numerous, notwithſtanding the women convicts were daily employed in picking them off the plants and out of the ground: they totally deſtroyed one acre of Indian corn, and cut off every cabbage and other plants as faſt as they ſprang up.

As it would be very convenient to have a path to the weſt ſide of the iſland, I employed ſix men to cut a road from the ſettlement to Mount Pitt, and from thence to Anſon-Bay, which buſineſs was completed on the 21ſt. 21.

23. I went out in the morning of the 23d, to ſurvey the weſt ſide of Sydney-Bay, in the courſe of which, I found moſt of the bones belonging to the body of one of the men who were drowned on the 6th of Auguſt, 1788: I brought them to the ſettlement, where they were interred.

October. 27. On the 27th, we had a ſtrong gale of wind from the eaſt, attended with heavy rain, which was the firſt that had happened ſince the 23d of September, and was much wanted. Fifteen acres of wheat were now in ear, and had a good appearance; and the Indian corn, of which we had ſeven acres, was in a thriving ſtate, although much thinned by the grub-worm: one acre of barley was alſo in ear, and the garden vegetables were in great forwardneſs. The grub-worm had totally diſappeared, but ſtill our calamities were not at an end; for the parroquets (of which we had myriads) were conſtantly deſtroying the wheat, and the garden productions; inſomuch that we were obliged to keep a number of perſons employed in beating them away with long poles.

November. During the month of November, the weather was hot and ſultry, with only one ſhower of rain; the wind from the eaſt-ſouth-eaſt. 9. The carpenters finiſhed the barn on the 9th: its dimenſions were 30 feet long by 16 feet wide, and 17 feet under the eaves, with a loft over it. The roof was well ſhingled, and the ſides weather-boarded: in ſhort, it was a complete building, and conveniently ſituated, being in the center of the cultivated grounds in Arthur's Vale.

13. On the 13th, Lieutenant Creſswell turned a turtle in a ſmall bay, to the weſtward of the ſettlement, which he diſtributed amongſt the free perſons and others, as far as it would go.

15. Robert Webb, a ſeaman belonging to the Sirius, went on the 15th, to the valley above the Caſcade-Bay; having obtained my permiſſion to become a ſettler, if Governor Phillip ſhould have no objection to it. Some barley which had been ſown the latter end of May, about three quarters of an acre with one buſhel and an half of ſeed, was cut this

CHAP. XIV. 1789. November. day, and the produce was twenty-three buſhels of a very fine full grain. The potatoes which were ſown during the month of September, in Arthur's vale, were all running to ſtalk, and not one potatoe formed at the roots: the fibres were very ſtrong and ſhooting out of the ground, notwithſtanding they had been well earthed: this was probably owing to the very great heat and drought which we had recently experienced. Large flocks of parroquets ſtill infeſted the wheat, and made great havock in one acre; but as it ripened very faſt, I did not apprehend much farther damage from them or the caterpillars, which were again become very numerous. As it would be neceſſary to have the hogs and poultry near the granary, during the time of harveſt, I employed a party of labourers in bringing logs to make an incloſure round the barn, and other conveniencies for the ſtock; and on the 30th, we began the wheat harveſt. 30.

December. 3. On the 3d of December, at day-light, the Supply arrived in the road, and ſoon afterwards, I received my letters from Governor Phillip. In the courſe of the day, ſix men and eight women convicts were landed, with ſome proviſions and ſtores for the ſettlement. By an order from Governor Phillip, all perſons on the iſland were to be put to two-thirds allowance of proviſions, which commenced on the 5th: the ſettlement at Port Jackſon went to this allowance in November. Having received every thing from the Supply, that veſſel ſailed for Port Jackſon on the 7th. 5. 7.

All the labourers were now employed in reaping, ſtacking, and thatching the wheat, which buſineſs was all finiſhed by the 24th. Four acres of the wheat were greatly damaged by ſome very heavy rain, which fell from the 14th to the 18th, and cauſed it to ſhoot out; but this 24.

this was put into a ſtack by itſelf for preſent conſumption. The wheat now reaped had been ſown at different periods, notwithſtanding which, it was ripe nearly at the ſame time; but the laſt ſown did not ſtock ſo well as that which was put more early in the ground: that which was ſown in drills, ſuffered much from the blighting winds; and, as this iſland is ſubject to theſe winds at all times of the year, the method of drilling wheat or barley in rows, will not anſwer ſo well as when ſown at a broad caſt. The beſt time for ſowing wheat, is from the latter end of May to the middle of June; indeed, that which was ſown in Auguſt, yielded a very large ſound grain; but, (as I have already obſerved) it did not ſtock ſo well as the other. 1789. December.

At ſun-riſe on the 25th, the colours were hoiſted, in obſervance of Chriſtmas-day; divine ſervice was performed at ten o'clock, and I ordered two hogs, belonging to the crown, to be killed and iſſued out to the free people and convicts, at the rate of one pound and an half to each perſon: and, as the crop of wheat had turned out tolerably well, I ordered two pounds of flour to each man, and the women one pound each, to celebrate the feſtival. 25.

During the month of January, the weather was very variable, with frequent ſtrong gales of wind from the ſouth-eaſt. The general employment of the labourers was clearing away ground for the next ſeaſon, and turning up the fifteen acres of wheat ſtubble, threſhing, making ſhingles, cutting logs, to make a log-houſe for the ſtore-keeper, and other neceſſary buſineſs. 1790. January.

The ſmall union flag had hitherto been uſed as a ſignal for landing, but as it could not eaſily be diſtinguiſhed from the roads, on the 11th, 11.

CHAP. XIV. 1790. January. 18. I had a flag-ſtaff fixed in the front of my houſe, the lower maſt of which was 20 feet long, and the top-maſt 36 feet; on which a large union was occaſionally to be hoiſted. Some villain ſtabbed a very fine ſow which was near farrowing, on the 18th, but though the ſtricteſt enquiry was made, I could not diſcover who was the perpetrator of this atrocious act. Moſt of the labourers were now employed in cutting down, gathering, and cleaning the Indian corn, a vaſt quantity of which was deſtroyed by the parroquets, although men were conſtantly employed in beating them off with long poles. A greater number of people were ſick during this month, than had been the caſe ſince my landing on the iſland. The complaint, in general, was a diarrhœa, but thoſe who had this diſorder were ſoon recovered. The ſurgeon was of opinion that the great change of weather which had happened, joined to the great quantity of vegetables that were daily conſumed, was the cauſe of this ſickneſs.

29. The appearance of a veſſel in the road at day-light in the morning of the 29th, cauſed the greateſt acclamations of joy through the whole ſettlement; every perſon imagining that ſhips had arrived from England; eſpecially as the Supply had been with us ſo recently: but, preſently afterwards, we perceived it to be that veſſel; and on receiving my letters from the governor, I found that no ſhips had arrived from our native country; which piece of intelligence being circulated through the ſettlement, a dejection took place equal to the joy that was viſible a ſhort time before. Twenty-two male convicts and one female arrived by the Supply, but no proviſions were ſent along with them, there being only a ſufficient quantity at Port Jackſon to ſerve until the latter end of May, at the preſent allowance; and as our crops had been good, and our reſources, with reſpect to fiſh and vegetables, were greater than at Port Jackſon, the governor had thought proper to ſend this additional number of convicts.

1790. January.

Our preſent numbers were now as follow, viz.

Civil and military,	- -	32
Male convicts,	- - -	79
Female convicts,	- -	33
Children,	- - - -	5
	Total -	149

I was alſo informed by Governor Phillip, that as it was neceſſary for the Sirius to have her full complement of officers, he had ordered me to be diſcharged from that ſhip; and had appointed Mr. Newton Fowell to be ſecond-lieutenant in my room, and Mr. Henry Waterhouſe to be third-lieutenant, inſtead of Lieutenant George William Maxwell, who was reported by the ſurgeons to be inſane.

February. 2. Having received all the convicts from the Supply, and ſent my letters for Governor Phillip on board, ſhe ſet ſail for Port Jackſon on the 2d of February.

During this month we had heavy gales of wind, with ſome intervals of fine weather, and the rain becoming frequent, I ordered ſheds to be built over the ſaw-pits, that the ſawyers might work without interruption.

Thoſe few amongſt the convicts who had been induſtrious, were now rewarded for it, as ſome had raiſed from one thouſand to fifteen hundred cobs of Indian corn; which, together with the fiſh that was procured from time to time, was of great ſervice to them now that their allowance of ſalt proviſions was reduced. The remainder of the Indian corn was got in on the 19th. 19.

Richard

CHAP. XIV.

1790. February.

Richard Phillimore, a convict, had informed me that the term of his tranſportation expired on the 16th of January; and having taken the oath adminiſtered on that occaſion, he ſignified a wiſh of becoming a ſettler: as he was a ſober, induſtrious man, I gave him time to conſider of it, and to look out for a ſituation where he would like to ſettle at: 22. he informed me on the 22d, that he ſtill was deſirous of fixing on the iſland, and had found a ſpot where he wiſhed to reſide; on which, I ſent ſome labourers to build him an houſe, and to clear away a little ground for a commencement; I alſo gave him a ſow with young, and ſome poultry, and he was fully of opinion, that in one year, or two at fartheſt, he ſhould be able to ſupport himſelf, without any aſſiſtance from the ſettlement.

March. During the month of March, we had a deal of blowing weather, and much rain; the wind generally from the ſouth-weſt. The labourers were employed in clearing ground for cultivation, huſking and ſtripping Indian corn, and other neceſſary work; and ſix men were ſawing frames for building barracks.

CHAPTER

CHAPTER XV.

The arrival of the Sirius and Supply at Norfolk-Iſland.—The loſs of the Sirius.—Captain Hunter and the crew ſaved.—A general meeting of the officers convened.—Sundry regulations adopted.—Martial-Law proclaimed.—Lieutenant-Governor Roſs takes the command.—Lieutenant King leaves Norfolk-Iſland.—Deſcription of Norfolk-Iſland.—Face of the country.—Water—Soil—Climate—Timber—Inſects—Fiſh—Seaſons—Winds—Coaſt, and Bays.—Preſent ſtate of cultivation.—General behaviour of the convicts.—Number of inhabitants on the iſland.—Grain and live-ſtock.—Lieutenant King arrives at Port Jackſon.—Finds the country greatly improved.—Manners and cuſtoms of the natives.—Vocabulary of the language.

CHAP. XV.

1790. March. 13.

AT the break of day on the 13th of March, I was alarmed with a tumultuous noiſe of huzzaing and rejoicing; on enquiry into the cauſe, I found that two veſſels were ſeen in the offing. Every one of us were now fully perſuaded that the long looked for and much expected relief was at length arrived, and we began to felicitate each other that the time was now come, when we ſhould hear news from England: ſome of us anticipated pleaſing and unpleaſing accounts from our friends in the northern hemiſphere, as we had been near three years abſent, without having received the leaſt intelligence from our relatives, or native country.

CHAP. XV.

1790. March.

As the wind blew ſtrong at ſouth-weſt, and a great ſea was running in the bay; the veſſels, (which we found were the Sirius and Supply,) bore up for Ball-Bay, to which place I went, and received from Lieutenant Ball my letters from Governor Phillip. Our expectations were once more blaſted, for, inſtead of thoſe pleaſing hopes being realized, which the appearance of the veſſels had created in the morning, we were informed that no relief had arrived, nor had any intelligence been received from England. I found by the governor's letter, that he had ſent Lieutenant-Governor Roſs in the Sirius, to take the command at Norfolk-Iſland, as the ſervice rendered it neceſſary for my returning to England, in order to give ſuch information to his Majeſty's miniſters, reſpecting the ſettlement I had eſtabliſhed, as could not be conveyed by letter. I was alſo directed to furniſh Lieutenant-Governor Roſs with copies of all ſuch orders as I had from time to time received from the governor, and which had not been put in execution; together with all the information I had acquired reſpecting the nature of the ſoil, and the mode of cultivation which had been followed; as alſo my obſervations reſpecting the climate, and the general line of conduct of the people under my direction; and to leave him ſuch rules and regulations as I had eſtabliſhed for preſerving good order and regularity among the convicts. I was farther directed to embark on board the Sirius, whoſe commander had orders to receive me on board, with all ſuch petty officers, ſeamen, and marines, belonging to that ſhip, who were not deſirous of becoming ſettlers; directions having been given the Lieutenant-Governor to that effect. Lieutenant-Governor Roſs brought with him, one captain, five ſubalterns, a number of non-commiſſioned officers and privates, with the colours: alſo a number of male and female convicts, and children; with their proportion of cloaths, proviſions, and ſtores. The two veſſels went round to Caſcade-Bay, where part of the detachment of marines,

marines and ſome of the convicts were landed; and the next forenoon, the remainder of the marines and convicts, with a great part of their baggage, were landed, and they marched to the ſettlement. The Lieutenant-Governor arrived at the ſettlement at noon. In the orders for the night, he requeſted that I would continue the command of the iſland until my departure. 1790. March.

On the 15th, the remains of the proviſions and other ſtores on the iſland were ſurveyed by Captain Johnſton and Lieutenants Creſſwell and Clark: after which, I got the receipts from Mr. Roger Morley, to whom I had given an order to act as ſtore-keeper, with the approbation of Governor Phillip. The wind blew ſtrong from the eaſt-ſouth-eaſt; and on the 16th, we had ſtrong gales from the north-eaſt, with almoſt conſtant heavy rain. The Sirius and Supply were ſeen from Mount Pitt, ſome diſtance at ſea, in the ſouth-eaſt quarter. This day, Jeremiah Leary, a convict, ran the gantlet among the convicts for a theft, and was ſeverely puniſhed. We had very ſtrong gales from the north-eaſt on the 17th, attended with almoſt conſtant rain. The two veſſels were working up for the iſland; and at one o'clock in the afternoon, the Supply came into the road, and landed a quantity of luggage, ſome ſtock, and thirteen caſks of proviſions. No landing could be attempted on the 18th, the wind ſtill blowing very ſtrong at north-eaſt; but on the 19th, the wind ſhifted to the eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, and grew more moderate; ſo that at day-light, the Supply came into the road, and the Sirius was at ſome diſtance to the ſouthward, ſtanding in for the iſland. There being very fine landing, I made the ſignal that large boats could land ſafely, and by ten o'clock every thing was received from the Supply: ſoon afterwards, the Sirius hove to, in order to hoiſt her boats out, which, being accompliſhed, ſhe made ſail; but the tide of flood 15. 16. 17. 18. 19.

1790. March.

ſtill ran very ſtrong, and ſhe could not weather the outer rock of the reef which runs off Point Roſs: after an unſucceſsful attempt to ſtay, ſhe wore and came to the wind on the ſtarboard tack: unfortunately, the wind ſhifted to the ſouth-eaſt, and the ſtrong hold which the tide had on the ſhip, forced her near the iſland, and ſhe got to the back of the reef: ſhe was now hove in ſtays, but having freſh ſtern way, ſhe tailed on the reef and ſtruck. The maſts were inſtantly cut away, and the ſurf increaſing along-ſide of her, only two boats load of proviſions could be got out: an anchor was let go, which prevented the ſhip from coming broadſide to on the reef. From noon until four o'clock, every perſon was employed in getting a hawſer from the ſhip, and faſtening it to a tree on the ſhore: a heart was fixed on the hawſer as a traveller, and a grating was ſlung to it, faſtened to a ſmall hawſer, one end of which was on ſhore and the other end on board. At five o'clock, the ſurgeon's mate came on ſhore by the grating, being hauled through a very great ſurf: he brought me a note from Captain Hunter, deſiring to know if I thought it would be ſafe for the ſailors to abide by the wreck all night. The wind was now at ſouth, and the weather had a very threatening appearance, and as the ſurf had riſen conſiderably, I thought there was the utmoſt danger of the ſhip's parting at the flowing tide, the conſequence of which muſt have been the deſtruction of every perſon on board: I therefore made a ſignal for the wreck to be quitted, and by the time it grew dark, the captain and moſt of the ſailors were on ſhore, being dragged through a very heavy ſurf; many of them received violent blows from the rocks over which they were dragged. Captain Hunter and Mr. Waterhouſe were got on ſhore together, and juſt as they got footing on the reef, the captain was ſo much exhauſted, that he had nearly quitted his hold: the firſt and ſecond lieutenant, with ſome of the ſailors, remained on board all night.

1790. March. The inſtant the ſhip ſtruck, Lieutenant-Governor Roſs ordered the drums to aſſemble all the marines and convicts: martial law was then proclaimed, and the people were told that if any one killed any animal or fowl, or committed any robbery whatever, they would be inſtantly made a ſevere example of. The officers and marines were ordered to wear their ſide-arms: guards were ſet over the barn and ſtore-houſes, and ſome other neceſſary regulations were ordered by the Lieutenant-Governor.

20. On the 20th, we had very ſtrong gales of wind at ſouth, and a great ſurf running: by four o'clock, every perſon were got out of the wreck without any other accident than receiving a few bruiſes. Thoſe who came laſt from the wreck, reported, that the beams of the lower deck were ſtarted from the ſide, and that at high water, the ſea came to the after hatchway on the lower deck, the fore part of the ſhip being under water; and that the proviſions were moſtly on deck.

21. The gale continued very ſtrong on the 21ſt, with a heavy ſurf running; but the wreck being in the ſame poſition as the preceding day, we entertained the pleaſing hopes of being able to ſave all the proviſions, and moſt of the ſhip's effects. At ten in the morning, Lieutenant-Governor Roſs, Captain Hunter, all the commiſſioned officers of marines and of the Sirius, and myſelf, aſſembled in the government-houſe, when the lieutenant governor laid the ſituation of the iſland before the meeting, and pointed out the neceſſity of a law being made, by which criminals might be puniſhed with death for capital crimes, there being no law in force on the iſland that could notice capital offences: he alſo propoſed the eſtabliſhment of martial law until further orders, which was unanimouſly agreed to; and that in all caſes where ſentence of death

was

1790. March.

was pronounced, five perſons out of ſeven ſhould concur in opinion: it was alſo reſolved, that all private ſtock, Indian corn, and potatoes ſhould be given in to the ſtore-keeper, and appropriated for the uſe of the public; and that every perſon ſhould go to half allowance of proviſions until it ſhould be known what quantity could be ſaved from the wreck; alſo, that three locks ſhould be put on the ſtore-houſe and barn; one key to be in the poſſeſſion of Captain Hunter, another in poſſeſſion of a perſon to be named by the lieutenant-governor, and the third to be kept by a perſon to be named by the convicts. Theſe reſolutions were agreed to, and ſigned by the lieutenant-governor and the reſt of the officers aſſembled.

22. At eight o'clock in the morning of the 22d, all perſons on the iſland were aſſembled near the lower flag-ſtaff, on which the union was hoiſted: the marines were drawn up in two lines, leaving a ſpace in the center, at the head of which was the union. The colours of the detachment were then unfurled, and the Sirius's crew were drawn up on the right, and the convicts on the left, the officers being in the center. The proclamation was then read, declaring, that the iſland was to be governed by martial law, until further orders: the lieutenant-governor next addreſſed the convicts, and, after pointing out the ſituation of the ſettlement, he exhorted them to be honeſt, induſtrious, and obedient: this being concluded, the whole gave three cheers; and every perſon, beginning with the lieutenant-governor, paſſed under the union flag, taking off their hats as they paſſed it, in token of an oath to ſubmit and be amenable to the martial law, which had then been declared. After this ceremony was concluded, the convicts and the Sirius's crew were ſent round to Caſcade-Bay, where a proportion of flour and pork was received from the Supply, and brought round to the ſettlement.

1790. March.

In the afternoon, John Brannagin and William Dring (two convicts) offered to go on board the wreck, in order to heave the live ſtock overboard; and having obtained the permiſſion of Captain Hunter and the Lieutenant-Governor, they went to the wreck, and ſent a number of pigs and ſome poultry on ſhore, but they remained on board; and at the duſk of the evening, a light was perceived in the after part of the ſhip; on which, a volley of ſmall arms were fired, to make them quit the wreck, or put the light out; which not being done, a three pounder ſhotted was fired into the wreck, but with no effect: on this, John Arſcot, a convict carpenter, offered to go off; and although it was quite dark, and the ſurf ran very high, yet he got on board, and obliged the other two convicts to quit the wreck by the hawſer. Arſcot hailed the ſhore, but we could not underſtand what he ſaid, except that he ſhould ſtay on board the wreck. Brannagin (one of the convicts) was drunk when he came on ſhore.

23. On the 23d, we had very ſtrong gales of wind at weſt by north, but the landing was good early in the morning, and the large coble was ſent on board the Supply, (which was in the road) with ſome of my baggage, and the officers and men belonging to the Sirius, who were going to Port Jackſon. The maſter of the Sirius, with eight men, went on board the wreck by the hawſer, and a triangle was erected on the reef, to keep the bight of the hawſer from the ground; which would greatly facilitate the landing any article from the wreck. The maſter informed Captain Hunter, by a note, that Brannagin and Dring (the two convicts) had ſet fire to the wreck, which had burnt through the gun deck; but had been happily extinguiſhed by Arſcot, who went on board to ſend them out of the ſhip: on this, they were ordered into confinement previous to their being tried for ſetting fire to the wreck.

The

1790. March. 24. The weather being moderate and pleaſant in the morning of the 24th, I went on board the Supply, along with Lieutenants Waterhouſe and Fowell, and twenty-two of the crew, belonging to the late Sirius; and at noon, we made ſail for Port Jackſon.

As I have now taken leave of this iſland, I ſhall add my general obſervations on it; and although ſeveral of them may probably have been made before, in the courſe of this journal, yet it perhaps may not be amiſs to collect them together in one point of view.

NORFOLK ISLAND.

By the mean of ſeveral meridional altitudes of the ſun, and a great number of lunar obſervations, the latitude of Sydney-Bay is 29° 04′ 40″ ſouth, and its longitude 168° 12′ eaſt, of Greenwich. The form of the iſland is a long ſquare, and it contains about fourteen thouſand acres: it is ſix miles in length and four in breadth.

Face of the country.—The iſland is very hilly, and ſome of the valleys are tolerably large, conſidering the ſize of the iſland; but moſt of them are only deep hollows, formed by the ſteep hills on each ſide, ſome of which riſe ſo perpendicular that they cannot be cultivated. There are ſome extenſive plains on the ſummits of the hills. Mount Pitt is the only remarkable hill on the iſland, and is about two hundred fathoms high. The cliffs round the iſland are about forty fathoms high, and are quite perpendicular: the baſis of them, as well as moſt of the rocks and reefs round the iſland, is a hard, firm clay, of a very fine texture. The whole iſland is covered with a very thick foreſt, choaked up with underwood, which makes it impaſſable until it is cleared away.

1790. March.

Water.—The iſland is well ſupplied with many ſtreams of very fine water, ſome of which are ſufficiently large to turn a number of mills: it is probable that moſt of theſe rivulets originate from ſprings near Mount Pitt. On a hill, near the middle of the iſland, between Caſcade and Sydney bays, there is a pond of freſh water, about half an acre: there is no rivulet near it, nor can any ſpring be perceived, yet, in the greateſt drought, it conſtantly remains full, and has a very good taſte. All theſe ſtreams abound with very fine eels.

Soil.—From the ſides of the cliffs which ſurround the coaſt, to the ſummit of Mount Pitt, there is a continuation of the fineſt ſoil, varying from a rich brown mould to a light red earth. Some large ſtones are found on different parts of the iſland.

Air.—As a proof of the ſalubrity and wholeſomeneſs of the air, it is to be remarked, that there had been ſcarcely any ſickneſs ſince I landed, nor had we any illneſs whatever, except a few colds.

Timber and trees.—There are only five ſorts of trees on the iſland which can be called timber; viz. the pine, a wood reſembling the live oak; a yellow wood; a hard black wood; and a wood reſembling the Engliſh beech. The pine-trees are of a great ſize, many of them being from one hundred and eighty to two hundred and twenty feet high, and from four to eight feet diameter ſome diſtance from the ground. Thoſe trees, which meaſure from one hundred to one hundred and eighty feet high, are in general ſound, and are without branches for eighty or ninety feet, but the upper part is too knotty and hard to be uſeful; indeed, it frequently happens, that after twenty feet have been cut off from the butt, the trees becomes rotten and ſhaky, and is alſo very brittle; for which

reaſon,

1790. March.

reaſon, no dependance can be put on them for maſts or yards. The turpentine which exudes freely from the bark, is of a milk-white glutinous ſubſtance; but it is rather remarkable, that there is none in the timber. We tried to render this turpentine uſeful in paying boats, and other purpoſes, but without ſucceſs; as it would neither melt nor burn: we alſo tried to make pitch or tar, by burning the old pines; but there being no turpentine in the wood, our efforts were uſeleſs. The pine is very uſeful in buildings, and being diſperſed in various parts of the iſland, is well calculated for ſuch buildings as hereafter may be neceſſary: from what I have been able to obſerve, it is very durable, as that which we had uſed for erecting houſes, ſtood the weather very well. Two cobles were built of this wood, one of which was built in June, 1788: ſhe was water-ſoaked, owing to our want of any kind of ſtuff to pay her with. The live-oak, yellow-wood, black-wood, and beech, are all of a cloſe grain, and durable; in general they are from fourteen to twenty inches diameter. The branches of the live-oak are fit for timbers and knees of boats or ſmall veſſels.

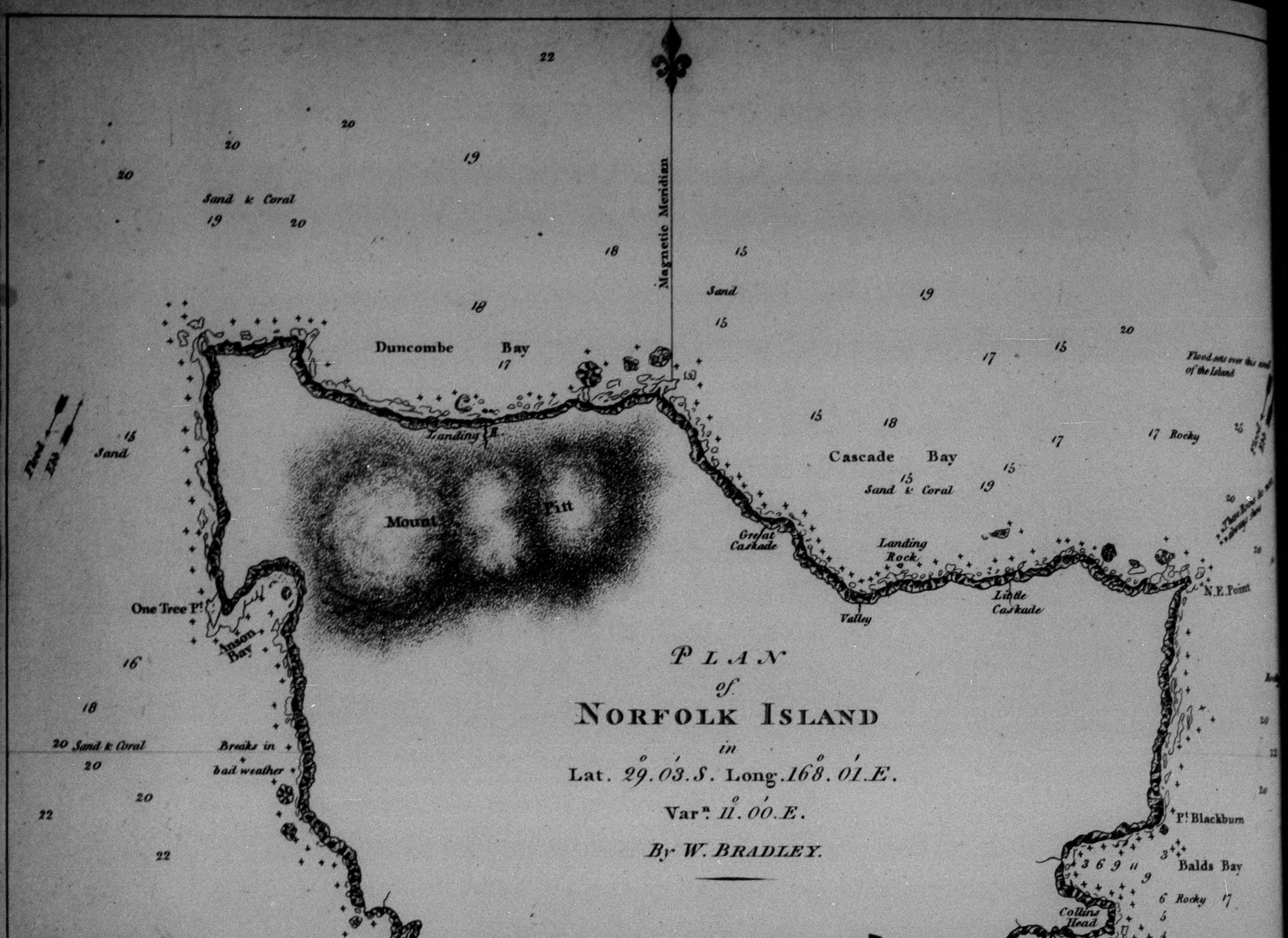
There are a variety of other ſmall trees on the iſland, but as they are not uſeful, it is unneceſſary to enumerate them here; though I ſhould not omit the fern-tree, the bark of which ſerves many purpoſes, inſtead of twine and rope. The cabbage-palm were in great plenty when I firſt landed on the iſland, but, by continual cutting, they were almoſt deſtroyed. There is a plant among the underwood, which produces a kind of pepper; its leaves are broad, and have an aromatic, pungent taſte: the core which contains the ſeed, ſhoots out between the leaf and the ſtalk, and is in general two or three inches long, and full of ſmall ſeeds, which have nearly the ſame taſte as the leaves; but, on their being dried, the ſmell and taſte leaves them: it is alſo difficult to find them in a ſtate of ripeneſs, as the parroquets deſtroy them before they can arrive at any degree of perfection. The flax-plant of New Zealand, grows ſpontaneouſly, and in great quantities on many parts of the iſland, but chiefly on the coaſts and in the vallies near the ſea: the leaves of this plant, when full grown, are from ſix to eight feet long, and ſix inches wide at the bottom: each plant contains ſeven leaves, and a woody ſtalk riſes from the center, which bears the flowers: it ſeeds annually, and the old leaves are forced off by the young one every year. The method of ſoaking and preparing European flax and hemp, had been tried, but with no other effect than ſeparating the vegetable part from the fibres; and a ligneous ſubſtance ſtill remaining, it could not be reduced to an uſeful ſtate. Some lines have been made of it, but they were not very ſtrong; though the flax appears capable of being worked into a very fine ſubſtance, if the method of preparing it were known.

Inſects.—Theſe have already been deſcribed. The ground is much infeſted by the grub-worm, which are very deſtructive to the growth of vegetables: they are moſtly troubleſome about the ſpring. Various methods have been tried to deſtroy theſe vermin, but without effect. The caterpillar has alſo been very troubleſome in the ſpring; having deſtroyed acres of Indian corn and acres of wheat: they came in upon the grain quite ſuddenly, and after remaining three weeks, they went away with the ſame rapidity.

Fiſh.—The coaſts of the iſland abound with very fine fiſh, which are principally the ſnapper, and weigh from four to eight pounds each. A few fiſh are at times caught from the ſhore; this, however, happens but ſeldom; ſo that a ſupply of fiſh muſt depend on the weather and the ſurf permitting boats to go out. In moderate weather, boats might land in Collins's-Bay, on Phillip-Iſland, where a great quantity of fiſh might be cured, from March to September; after which time the fly prevents it.

Seaſons.—The ſpring is very viſible in Auguſt, but the trees on many parts of the iſland are in a conſtant ſucceſſion of flowering and ſeeding the whole year round. The ſummer is very hot: I had no thermometer to determine the degree of heat, but it is exceſſive. From the 23d of September, 1789, to the 22d of February, 1790, not one drop of rain fell, excepting on two days in December; but it ſhould be remarked, that we had no drought in the former year. All the grain, and the European plants ſeeded in December. From February to Auguſt may be called the rainy ſeaſon; not that I think there is any regular time of rains during theſe months, as the weather is ſometimes very fine for a fortnight together; but when the rain does fall, it pours in torrents. I do not recollect more than three claps of thunder, or lightning, during the time I remained on the iſland. The winter, (which may be ſaid to commence in April, and end in July,) is very pleaſant; there is never any froſt; but when the ſouth-weſt winds blow, which are very frequent and violent in theſe months, the air is raw and cold. It is very remarkable, that during ſome days in December and January, the weather has been much colder than in the winter months. The ſouth-eaſt, and eaſt winds are very parching and dry, as no dew falls when thoſe winds prevail.

Winds.—During the winter months, the wind is moſtly from ſouth to weſt, blowing with great violence for a week together; afterwards it veers round to the ſouthward and ſouth-eaſt, which brings fine weather for a few days, then it veers to eaſt, north-eaſt, and north-weſt, blowing



Plan of Norfolk Island in Lat. 29°.03'.S. Long. 168°.01'.E. Varn. 11°.00'.E. By W. Bradley.
Magnetic Meridian
Duncombe Bay
Landing R.
Mount Pitt
Cascade Bay
Sand & Coral
Great Caskade
Landing Rock
Valley
Little Caskade
N.E. Point
Flood sets over this end of the Island
One Tree Pt.
Anson Bay
Breaks in bad weather
Rocky Pt.
Rocky Pt. Splits the E.tern tide, which sets strong over the Rocks lying off it & along the shore both ways as the land lies.
Crofswell Bay
Hoisted only when Landing is safe.
Pt. Hunter
Pt. Blackburn
Balds Bay
Rocky
Collins Head
Sand & Mud
Coral
Rocks
Bradley's Rocks
Sydney Bay
Nepean I.
14 Rocks
18 Sand & Coral
Sand
Flood
Ebb
Nautic Miles

Published Decr. 21st 1792 by John Stockdale.

in heavy gales, and generally accompanied with violent torrents of rain: after which it ſhifts to ſouth-weſt: indeed, I do not remember one inſtance of the wind coming to the north-eaſt, round by weſt. The ſouth-eaſt wind blows during the ſummer with very little variation, and ſometimes very ſtrong.

Coaſts of the iſland.—The coaſts of the iſland are in general ſteep to, and (excepting Sydney, Anſon, Ball, and Caſcade Bays,) are inacceſſible; being ſurrounded by ſteep cliffs, which riſe perpendicularly from the ſea. A number of large rocks lie ſcattered about cloſe to the ſhore, on which a continual ſurf breaks with great force.

SYDNEY-BAY, (which was ſo named after Lord Viſcount Sydney,) lies on the ſouth ſide of the iſland, and here the ſettlement was formed: this bay is formed by Point Hunter and Point Roſs, which lie eaſt half north, and weſt half ſouth of each other, and are about a mile and three-quarters aſunder. A reef of clay and coral extends from Point Hunter, at the diſtance of 150 yards from the ſhore, and parallel to it, for about three-quarters of a mile: cloſe to the back of this reef, there is four fathoms water; it terminates abreaſt of the ſettlement with a corner, round which is the landing place; but, as the ſurf breaks with great violence on the reef, it ſometimes breaks into the paſſage off the corner, ſo that landing is then impoſſible. The landing in this bay, entirely depends on the ſtate of the ſea without, and the direction of the wind; great attention ſhould alſo be paid to the ſignals from the ſhore. I have ſeen the landing, for a month together, as good as could be wiſhed; and ſometimes a very heavy ſurf would continue for a fortnight: on the whole, the beſt time for landing is from half ebb to half flood, and an eaſterly, north-eaſt, and north-weſt wind, generally make ſmooth water.

1790. March.

water. There is another reef off Point Roſs, which ſtretches about half a mile into the ſea; and no veſſel ought ever to go within the outer breaker of this reef, and the ſouth point of Nepean-Iſle. The tide ſets right through between the iſlands, and when the flood runs to the weſtward, it ſets very ſtrong round Nepean-Iſland into the bight of Sydney-Bay; therefore all veſſels ought to be particularly cautious not to go within Nepean-Iſland with an inblowing wind: ſhould the wind be from the eaſtward or weſtward, veſſels might ſtand very cloſe in; but even this ought not to be done, except for the purpoſe of taking a boat up, and then the tide muſt be conſidered. The paſſage between Point Hunter and Nepean-Iſland is a very good one, there being three fathoms water cloſe to Nepean-Iſle, and nine fathoms in mid-channel. There lies a rock off Point Hunter in the direction of ſouth-weſt with one fathom and a half on it, but it is out of the paſſage. The tide occaſions a very ſtrong race between the iſlands, which makes it very difficult for veſſels to have communication with the ſhore, as they cannot anchor, the bottom being rocky. The ebb runs nine hours to the eaſt, and the flood three hours to the weſt, but at times, the flood has been obſerved to run five hours: it flows in this bay at ſeven hours and an half, full and change, and riſes ſeven feet perpendicular.

ANSON-BAY, (which was named after George Anſon, the member of parliament for Litchfield,) is a ſmall bay with a ſandy beach: the landing here is tolerably good in ſettled weather, and when the ſea is quite ſmooth; but as the interior parts of the iſland are ſo very difficult of acceſs from thence, no ſhip's boats have ever landed there.

BALL-BAY, (which was named after Lieutenant Henry Lidgbird Ball,) goes in about three-quarters of a mile: the beach is formed of large looſe ſtones, which renders beaching boats here dangerous, though it often happens, that the landing here is very good when the ſurf has increaſed ſo much in Sydney-Bay as to render landing there impracticable. A good landing place was cleared away here, but in the courſe of three months the ſtones were waſhed into it again, although many of them weighed two hundred pounds each. This bay is ſurrounded by very ſteep hills, which renders the acceſs to the ſettlement from hence rather difficult.

CASCADE-BAY.—The ſouth-weſt winds, which generally prevail during the winter months, make this the beſt ſide of the iſland for landing on at that ſeaſon. A good landing place may eaſily be made, where any thing might be landed from half ebb to half flood. It is the intention of the lieutenant-governor to erect a ſtore-houſe, and make a good landing place; indeed this would have been done before, but the want of hands prevented it. The Golden-Grove and Supply have both lain at anchor in this bay, bringing the great Caſcade to bear ſouth-weſt, at one mile from the ſhore, in ſeventeen fathoms coral and ſand, but the bottom is foul, as there is great reaſon to ſuppoſe it is all round the iſland.

Preſent ſtate of cultivation.—The proper time for ſowing wheat or barley is from May to Auguſt: that which is ſown in ſheltered ſituations, ſhould be ſown in May, June, and July: and that which is ſown in places that are expoſed to the ſea-winds on the ſouth ſide of the iſland, ſhould not be ſown before July; and if ſo late as Auguſt, it would yield well. The wheat, which has been ſown, produced more than twenty fold; and, I think in future, it will yield a ſtill greater increaſe. We have found a buſhel and an half of ſeed ſufficient for an acre of ground

newly

1790. March.

newly broke up. Two buſhels of barley ſown in May on an acre of ground yielded twenty-four buſhels. Indian corn ſhould be planted from June until Auguſt, in places not much expoſed to the ſea winds: it yields well, and is in my opinion the beſt grain to cultivate, on account of the little trouble attending its growth, and the manufacturing it for food.

The ſugar-cane grows very ſtrong, and I think will come to perfection; although it ſuffers much from the blighting winds, and the grub-worm. Vines, orange, and lemon trees, are in a very thriving ſtate: the banana trees found growing on the iſland, will, I make no doubt, thrive very well, when thoſe which have been planted out from the old trees come to perfection; indeed ſome of them have already yielded good fruit. That uſeful article of food, the potatoe, thrives amazingly, and two crops a year may be obtained with eaſe: I have ſeen 120 potatoes at one root, 80 of which were larger than an hen's egg. Every kind of garden vegetable (which the grub ſpares,) grows well and comes to great perfection: cabbages weigh from ten to twenty-ſeven pounds each: melons and pumpkins alſo grow very fine. I think ſituations might be found on the iſland, where cotton and indigo will thrive: of the latter, there are two trees, both which are very large and fine, but the ant deſtroys the bloſſom as faſt as it flowers. Rice has been ſown twice, viz. once each year, but the ſouth-eaſt winds blighted a great part of it: that which eſcaped the blight, yielded a great increaſe. The quantity of ground cleared and in cultivation on the 13th of March, 1790, was thirty acres belonging to the crown, and about eighteen acres cleared by free people and convicts, for their gardens.

It was my intention to put as many labourers as could be ſpared from other neceſſary work, to clear ground for cultivation; and I had reaſon

1790. March.

to believe that I ſhould have had from fifty to ſeventy acres ſown with grain by the end of October: I purpoſed to continue clearing ground in Arthur's Vale, and on the hill round it, in order to have all the cultivated lands belonging to the public as much connected together as poſſible; this would have anſwered much better for the growth of wheat, Indian corn, or barley, than their being ſown in confined ſituations; which experience had ſhewn were not at all productive: the parroquets and other birds would not have deſtroyed ſo much of the grain before it was got in, and it might be much better guarded from thieves than if the cultivated grounds were diſperſed in different parts of the iſland: another very material reaſon for clearing all the ground in this particular ſituation was, that the barn was ſituated in the center of the vale.

I propoſed building a ſtrong log ſtore-houſe at Caſcade-Bay, and making the landing place there more eaſy of acceſs; which, from the increaſed number of the inhabitants on the iſland, was now become abſolutely neceſſary; eſpecially as landing there is much oftener practicable than in Sydney-Bay: indeed, I ſhould have got this buſineſs done, but that it would have been a great hindrance to cultivation, which I ever thought was the principal object to attend to. The other buildings which I meant to erect, were barracks for the ſoldiers, of 54 feet long by 16 feet wide; a granary, 36 feet long by 20 feet wide, and a ſtore-houſe, 60 feet long by 24 feet wide; all which, I hoped, would have been completed by the enſuing December.

Reſpecting the flax, although we made repeated trials, yet, having no perſon converſant in the preparation of it, I found it could not at preſent be brought to an uſeful ſtate: but I may venture to ſay, that if proper flax-dreſſers could be ſent to New Zealand, to obſerve their

CHAP. XV.

1790. March.

method of manufacturing it, they might render it a valuable commodity, both to furniſh the inhabitants with cloathing, and for other purpoſes.

It was my intention to have built an houſe and a ſhed on Phillip-Iſland, and, after landing three or four months water on it, to have ſent ſix convicts with a boat to catch and cure fiſh; this would have been a great reſource for Norfolk-Iſland; but the fiſh muſt have been cured from April to September, on account of the fly.

I apprehend, from the goodneſs of the ſoil, that Norfolk-Iſland is very capable of maintaining at leaſt one hundred families, allowing to each an hundred acres of ground, and reſerving two thouſand acres for fuel: with induſtry, they would have in a ſhort time, all the neceſſaries of life, except cloathing, and that muſt depend on the flax of the iſland, or the growth of European flax.

The want of a ſafe harbour for veſſels to lie in, is a very great inconvenience, and renders it difficult to have acceſs to the iſland; indeed, veſſels may load and unload, by going to the lee-ſide, and embracing other favourable opportunities, but unfortunately the vaſt quantity of coral rocks which cover the bottom, render anchorage very unſafe: however, ſhould the ſettlement at Port Jackſon be continued, in the courſe of a few years theſe difficulties will ſcarcely be thought on, when compared with the advantages ariſing from the quantity of grain that there is every reaſon to ſuppoſe may be drawn from this iſland, for the ſupport of the inhabitants of New South-Wales.

General behaviour of the convicts, and other remarks.—The few convicts that firſt landed with me, in general behaved well; but, as their

1790. March.

numbers increaſed, they renewed their wicked practices: the moſt artful and daring thefts were now almoſt daily committed, and the perpetrators could ſeldom be diſcovered; and nothing but the certainty of meeting with a very ſevere puniſhment, and the muſtering them frequently during the night in their huts could prevent theſe thefts in any degree whatever: indeed, they were often troubleſome, and ſome of them were incorrigible, notwithſtanding every encouragement was held out to them, and the indulgencies they received were fully ſufficient to convince them that they would be treated according to their deſerts: ſome few of them were ſuſceptible of the advantages ariſing from induſtry and good behaviour; thoſe of this deſcription had the ſatisfaction of enjoying a quantity of Indian corn, potatoes, and other vegetables, which were a great aſſiſtance to them at the time they were put to ſhort allowance of proviſions; and ſome of them had cleared from one to three acres of ground, which they propoſed ſowing with Indian corn and potatoes: theſe formed a reſpectable ſet of convicts, compared to the greater part, who were idle, miſerable wretches.

When I firſt landed on the iſland, the convicts were kept at day-work, having ſtated times for their dinners and other meals: this method anſwered very well whilſt there were few to look after; but when their numbers increaſed, I had not people of confidence to overlook them and keep them at work: I therefore judged it would be more eligible to taſk them, taking the opinion of thoſe whom I thought moſt converſant in the different kinds of work that were going forward.

CHAP. XV.

1790. March.

The numbers of inhabitants I left on Norfolk Iſland were as follow:

Civil, military, and free — —	90
Belonging to the Sirius — —	80
Male convicts — — —	191
Female convicts — —	100
Children — — —	37
Total —	498

The quantities of grain, potatoes, and live ſtock I left were as follow:

Wheat, - - -	from 250 to 300 buſhels.
Barley - - - - -	6 buſhels.
Indian corn - - -	130 to 140 buſhels.

Potatoes, one acre, would be ready to dig in May.

Hogs, large and ſmall, belonging to the public, 26, beſides 18 hogs, a quantity of poultry, 3 goats, and 1 ewe, my property; and ſome ſtock belonging to individuals.

Before I take my final leave of this iſland, (where I remained two years) I cannot help acknowledging the great aſſiſtance I have received from the few officers I had with me; nor was this propriety of conduct confined to the officers alone, as all the marines and other free people were ſteady and regular in their behaviour; and it gives me a ſenſible ſatisfaction to remark, that, excepting on one or two occaſions, I never had any reaſon to be diſſatisfied with any of the few free perſons I had under my command. Excluſive of this general approbation of the good conduct of the free people, I muſt particulariſe Mr. Creſſwell, the officer of marines; Mr. Stephen Dunavan, midſhipman; and Mr. Thomas Jamieſon,

1790. March. Jamieſon, ſurgeon's mate, of the Sirius, I feel the greateſt ſatisfaction in ſaying that a conſtant, uniform propriety of conduct, and a readineſs in forwarding the ſervice, were ever zealouſly ſhewn by theſe gentlemen.

24. April. 4. At noon on the 24th, the Supply made ſail, and we arrived at Port Jackſon on the 4th of April.

When I left Port Jackſon in February, 1788, the ground about Sydney-Cove was covered with a thick foreſt, but on my arrival at this time, I found it cleared to a conſiderable diſtance, and ſome good buildings were erected. The governor, the lieutenant-governor, the judge-advocate, and the greateſt part of the civil and military officers were comfortably lodged. The governor's houſe is built of ſtone, and has a very good appearance, being ſeventy feet in front. The lieutenant-governor's houſe is built of brick, as are alſo thoſe belonging to the judge and the commiſſary: the reſt of the houſes are built with logs and plaiſtered; and all the roofs are either covered with ſhingles or thatched. The hoſpital is a good temporary building: the ſoldiers were in barracks, and the officers had comfortable huts, with gardens adjoining to them; but unfortunately, theſe gardens afford but little, as there is not more than two feet of ſoil over a bed of rocks, and this ſoil is little better than black ſand; and to this inconvenience muſt be added, the depredations of rats and thieves. At the diſtance of an hour's walk from Sydney-Cove, the ſoil is better in ſome places, and theſe are occupied by the officers and others, as their farms: there are alſo brick-kilns and a pottery, both which articles they make very well, but a great inconvenience ariſes in their not being able to glaze the earthenware.

From the little I ſaw of the ſoil about Sydney-Cove, I think it is very bad, moſt of the ground being covered with rocks, or large ſtones, which are uſed for building, and when cut, greatly reſemble the Portland ſtone; they are eaſily worked, and harden very much after being wrought. A little below Sydney-Cove, there is another, called Farm-Cove, at the head of which there are about fifteen acres of ground in cultivation, but the ſoil is very indifferent.

Governor Phillip, it ſeems, had made ſeveral excurſions, in order to inform himſelf more fully about the nature of the ſoil, and to find out a place more proper for cultivation, than the land about the lower part of the harbour; and, at length, had fixed on a ſituation at the head of it, about eleven miles from Sydney-Cove. The ſoil here was found to be much better than at Sydney-Cove, and a number of convicts were ſent there in 1789, with a captain's guard, in order to prevent any diſputes with the natives, and to preſerve regularity amongſt the convicts. I accompanied Governor Phillip to this place, which is named Roſe-Hill,
9. on the 9th: we leſt Sydney-Cove at eight in the morning, and arrived at Roſe-Hill before noon. About two miles below this ſettlement, the harbour becomes quite narrow, being not more than ten or twelve yards acroſs, and the banks are about ſix feet high: here, the country has the appearance of a park. In rowing up this branch, we ſaw a flock of about thirty kangaroos or paderong, but they were only viſible during their leaps, as the very long graſs hid them from our view. We landed about half a mile from the ſettlement, and walked up to it. This ſettlement is on an elevated ground, which joins to a fine creſcent, as regular as if formed by art; it is probable that this creſcent, and the regular ſlopes which ſurround the ſettlement, have been formed by very heavy rains. The ſoil is loam, ſand, and clay: the trees are not ſo large

1790. April.

here as lower down the harbour, but the large roots lying on the ground render it difficult to clear. A fine ſtream of freſh water runs into the head of the harbour, which, in the winter, and when heavy rains fall, ſometimes riſes ſeven or eight feet, and becomes a rapid torrent. A redoubt is conſtructed here, in which are very good barracks for officers and ſoldiers: there is likewiſe a ſtore-houſe. On the oppoſite ſide of the brook, there is a farm-houſe, where a ſervant of Governor Phillip's reſides, who is charged with the ſuperintendence of the convicts and the cultivation of the ground; to which charge he is very equal, and is of the greateſt ſervice to the governor, as he has no other free perſon whatever to overlook any piece of work carrying on by the convicts. Near to this farm-houſe, there is a very good barn and a granary. The convicts houſes form a line at ſome diſtance, in front of the barracks, with very good gardens before and behind each houſe: indeed, the whole, joined to the pleaſantneſs of the ſituation, makes it a beautiful landſcape. In 1789, the quantity of ground ſown with wheat here, and at Sydney-Cove, was twenty-two acres; with barley, ſeventeen acres; flax, Indian corn, and beans, three acres. The quantity of wheat raiſed was two hundred buſhels; of barley, ſixty buſhels; flax, beans, and other ſeeds, ten buſhels: the wheat is a fine full grain. This year (1790) near one hundred acres will be cleared at Roſe-Hill, of which forty are to be ſown with wheat.

After dinner, I accompanied the governor from Roſe-Hill to Proſpect-Hill, which is about four miles diſtant: we walked through a very pleaſant tract of country, which, from the diſtance the trees grew from each other, and the gentle hills and dales, and riſing ſlopes covered with graſs, appeared like a vaſt park. The ſoil from Roſe-hill to Proſpect-Hill is nearly alike, being a loam and clay. It is remarkable, that

although

1790. April.

although the diſtance between theſe two places is only four miles, yet the natives divide it into eight different diſtricts. Proſpect-Hill is a ſmall elevation, which commands a very extenſive proſpect of the country to the ſouthward: a range of very high mountains bound the view to the weſtward: theſe mountains, which lie nearly north and ſouth, are about forty miles from Proſpect-Hill; and the intervening country is a thick foreſt: the northernmoſt of theſe mountains is called Richmond-Hill, at the foot of which the Hawkeſbury takes its riſe from a bed of freſh water coal. A river has been diſcovered by Captain Tench, of the marines, which runs near the foot of Lanſdown-Hills; its direction appears to be north and ſouth, but how far it runs to the ſouthward cannot be aſcertained, though there is great reaſon to ſuppoſe it runs a conſiderable way, as it does not empty itſelf into Botany-Bay; it therefore appears probable that it may come into the ſea about Long-Noſe, or Cape St. George, where there is an appearance of a good harbour.

There were at this time three of the natives who lived at Port Jackſon, viz. a man about twenty-eight years old, a girl about thirteen, and a boy about nine years old. The man was taken by ſtratagem, by Lieutenant Bradley, who enticed him and another native to the boat by holding up a fiſh: they were both ſecured, a number of the natives being at the ſame time on the ſhore; theſe threw a number of ſpears, and although they are only made of wood, yet one of them went through four folds of the boat's ſail, and ſtruck the apron of the boat's ſtern with ſuch violence as to ſplit it. One of theſe natives made his eſcape preſently afterwards, but the other grew reconciled to his ſituation, and lives with the governor: he is a very intelligent man, and much information may, no doubt, be procured from him, when he can be well

1799. April.

underſtood. Mr. Collins, the judge-advocate, is very aſſiduous in learning the language, in which he has made a great progreſs. This native has no leſs than five names, viz. "*Bannelon, Wollewarre, Boinba,* "*Bunde-bunda, Wogé trowey,*" but he likes beſt to be called by the ſecond: he is a ſtout, well made man, about five feet ſix inches high, and now that the dirt is waſhed from his ſkin, we find his colour is a dark black: he is large featured, and has a flat noſe; his hair is the ſame as the Aſiatics, but very coarſe and ſtrong: he is very good-natured, being ſeldom angry at any jokes that may be paſſed upon him, and he readily imitates all the actions and geſtures of every perſon in the governor's family; he ſits at table with the governor, whom he calls "*Beanga,*" or Father; and the governor calls him "*Dooroow,*" or Son: he is under no reſtraint, nor is he the leaſt aukward in eating; indeed, conſidering the ſtate of nature which he has been brought up in, he may be called a polite man, as he performs every action of bowing, drinking healths, returning thanks, &c. with the moſt ſcrupulous attention. He is very fond of wine, but cannot bear the ſmell of ſpirits, although they have often tried to deceive him, by mixing very weak rum or brandy and water, inſtead of wine and water; but he would inſtantly find out the deception, and on theſe occaſions he was angry: his appetite is very good, for he ſoon began to perceive the difference between a full and a ſhort allowance: he walks about conſtantly with the governor, who, to make him ſenſible of the confidence he placed in him, always took off a ſmall ſword which he uſually wore, and gave it to Wolle-warrè, who put it on, and was not a little pleaſed at this mark of confidence. His dreſs is a jacket, made of the coarſeſt red kerſey, and a pair of trowſers; but on Sundays, he is dreſt in nankeen. The governor's reaſon for making him wear the thick kerſey is, that he may be ſo ſenſible of the cold as not to be able to go without cloaths.

CHAP. XV. 1790. April.

Wolle-warrè has had a wiſe, who, it ſeems, died a ſhort time before he was taken: he ſometimes mentions this circumſtance, and it occaſions a momentary gloom; but this his natural gaiety ſoon diſſipates: he ſings, when aſked, but in general his ſongs are in a mournful ſtrain, and he keeps time by ſwinging his arms: whenever aſked to dance, he does it with great readineſs; his motions at firſt are very ſlow, and are regulated by a diſmal tune, which grows quicker as the dance advances, till at length he throws himſelf into the moſt violent poſture, ſhaking his arms, and ſtriking the ground with great force, which gives him the appearance of madneſs. It is very probable that this part of the dance is uſed as a ſort of defiance, as all the natives which were ſeen when we firſt arrived at Port Jackſon, always joined this ſort of dance to their vociferations of "*woroo, woroo,*" go away.

To what I have already ſaid, reſpecting this man, a few more particulars will be added in the following vocabulary, which Mr. Collins permitted me to copy.

The native boy lived with Mr. White, the ſurgeon, who, with that humanity for which he is diſtinguiſhed, cured both the boy and girl of a confluent ſmall-pox, which ſwept off hundreds of the natives in the winter of 1788. This dreadful diſorder, which, there is no doubt, is a diſtemper natural to the country, together with the difficulty of procuring a ſubſiſtance, renders the ſitutation of theſe poor wretches truly miſerable.

The girl lived with the chaplain's wife, and both ſhe and the boy were very tractable; but the girl at times would be out of temper, and could not bear to be thwarted.

I ſhall now add a vocabulary of the language, which I procured from Mr. Collins and Governor Phillip; both of whom had been very aſſiduous in procuring words to compoſe it; and as all the doubtful words are here rejected, it may be depended upon to be correct *.

Allocy, *To ſtay.*
Annegar, *To aſk any thing.*
A-ra-goon, *A war ſhield.*
Ar-row-an, *Diſtant, or far off.*

Bòe, *or* Bo-y, *Dead.*
Bourbillie remul, *Buried.*
† Bado-burra, *or* Burra-bado, *To pour water.*
Bado-go-bally-vuida, *I am dry, or I want water to drink.*
Barong-boruch, *A belly-full.*
Boor emil diow, *To put on.*
Bo-me, *To breathe.*
Bo-gay, *To dive.*
Boorana, *Yeſterday.*
Boora-Carremay, *A fine day.*
Beal, *or* Bidgeree, *Good.*
Byalla, *To ſpeak.*
Bomar, *A grave.*
Bourra, *A cloud, or the clouds.*
Bengalle, *Ornaments in general.*
Barrong, *The belly.*
Booroow, *The teſticles.*
Boon-abbiey, *To kiſs each other.*
Berille, *The finger*
Bib-be, *The ribs.*
Boot Boot, *The heart.*
Bur-ra, *A fiſh-hook.*
Bur-boga, *To riſe.*
Bir-ra, *The cheek.*
Bin-ning, *The leg.*
Bin-yang, *A bird.*
Bee-an-bing, *A quail.*
Ba-ra-goo-la, *The flood-tide.*
Birrang, *The ſtars.*
Be-anga, *A father.*
Boon-ya, *To kiſs.*
Ban-ga-ray, *The red kanguroo.*
Bo-ra-ya, *To ſing.*
Bur-ra-doo, *or* Moona, *A louſe.*
Ba-rin, *An apron worn by young females.*
Bin-ny, *With young.*
Bul-mie, *To clap hands in dancing.*
Ba-na-rang, *The blood.*
Barbuka, *To get up.*
Boming, *A bird called the red-bill.*
Bun-ya-dil, *To ſinge the beard off.*
Bolwara, *To ſtare, or open the eyes.*
Bur-ra-nè, *To-morrow.*
Baggy, *The ſkin.*
Boo-roo-an, *An iſland.*
Bò-ye, *Death, or a ghoſt.*

---

* This Vocabulary was much enlarged by Captain Hunter.

† It ſhould be obſerved, that in ſpeaking, Wolle-warrè frequently changes the poſition of his words, as in Bado-burra: ſo when walking one night from Proſpect-Hill to Roſe-Hill, we frequently ſtumbled againſt the roots, and he exclaimed "Wère Wadè, and Wadè Wère," bad wood, or bad roots.

Cowull, *The male of animals.*
Car-re-nar-e-bille, *To cough.*
Cannadinga, *To burn.*
Can-no-can, *Any vegetable fit to eat.*
Cà-ma, *To call.*
Carre-mílle-bado, *To ſoak, or waſh in water.*
Coing-bibo-la, *The ſun-riſe.*
Coing-burra-go-lah, *The ſun-ſet.*
Camurra, *A day.*
Chiang, *or* Chang-ulah, *To chew.*
Cot-ban-jow, *Broken.*
Cot-bànìè, *or* Cot-barry, *To cut.*
Carra-duin, *A fiſhing-line.*
Canno, *A belly-full.*
Caberra, *The head.*
Cad-lwar, *or* Col-liang, *The neck.*
Corungun, *A nail.*
Carra-mah, *A gut.*
Camye, *A ſpear, or lance.*
Ca-la-ra, *A large fiſh-gig, with four prongs.*
Ca-rall, *The black cockatoo.*
Ca-ra-ga-rang, *The ſea.*
Ca-ra-goo-la, *The ebb-tide.*
Cow-ee, *To come.*
Can-ning, *A cave in the rock.*
Can, *A ſnake, guana, or lizard.*
Ca-la-ba-ran, *A large ſword, or ſcymetar.*
Ca-ra-goon, *A centipede.*
Cud-yal, *Smoak.*
Ca-ban, *An egg.*
Cal-loo-a, *To climb.*
Cur-ra-yura, *The ſky.*
Cot-ban-la, *It is broke.*
Cot-ban, *To break.*

Diera, *A bone.*
Din, *and* Din aillon, *Women.*
Derra-bangel-dion crelli bow, *To take off, or imitate.*
Dyennibbe, *Laughter.*
Dère-nignan, *To ſneeze.*
Didgerry-goor, *I thank you.*
Didgerry goor Wogul Banne, *I thank you for a bit.*
Die, *Here.*
Diàm-o-wau, *Where are you?*
Dara, *The teeth.*
Diwarra, *The hair.*
Da-ma-na Beril, *The hand and fingers.*
Duralia, *A hearn.*
Doo-roy, *The graſs.*
Doo-ra, *A muſquito.*
Doo-ra-gy-a, *To ſpit.*
Door-a-lang, *To prick.*
Dir-gally, *To ſcratch.*
Dar-ra-Burra-Boorià, *To pick the teeth.*
Dooroow, *A ſon.*

Eo-ra, *Men or People.*
Era-mad-ye-winnia, *To ſnatch.*
Eranga, *T'other ſide of the hill.*
Eri, *Full.*
Elabi-la-bo, *To make water.*
E-roo-ka, *To ſweat.*
E-li-mang, *A ſmall ſhield, made of bark.*

Gall Gall, *Small-pox.*
Gnoowing, *The night*
Gna-oong, *The noſe ornament.*
Gnia-na, *To ſigh.*
Go-wally, *A ſhag, or cormorant.*
Goomun, *The fir-tree.*
Godie-by, *Rotten, or decayed.*
Go-roon, *A muſcle.*
Gorey, *Juice.*
Gnia, *I myſelf!*
Ger-rub-ber, *Any thing that gives fire, as a gun, &c.*
Gorai, *The ear.*
Gor-rook, *The knee.*
Gading, *The arm.*

Gwo-meil, *Feathers.*
Gnal-loa, *To ſit.*
Go-ril, *A parrot.*
Ga-ra-way, *A white cockatoo.*
Girra-girra, *A fiſhing-gull.*
Gwarra, *The wind.*
Gur-gy, *The fern-root*
Gon-yi, *A houſe or hut.*
Goor-ing, *A female child.*
Gwee-ang, *Fire.*
Gar-ree, *To cough.*
Go-mi-ra, *A hole.*
Goon-gan, *A barbed ſpear, for cloſe fighting.*
Gur-go, *A meteor, or ſhooting ſtar.*
Gong-ara, *Ornamental ſcars on the body.*
Gweè-rang, *Ornaments made of reeds, and ſtrung round the waiſt or neck.*
Gna-ra, *A knot in a line.*
Goora, *To drown.*
Gu-na-murra, *A ſtink, or bad ſmell.*
Gitte-Gittim, *To tickle.*
Go-roo-da, *To ſnore when aſleep.*

Ilga, *To leap.*
Jamel Jamel, *A hawk.*

Kalga, *The mouth.*
Kamai, *A ſpear.*
Kibba, *A rock.*
Ka-ra-ma, *To ſteal.*

Mogo, *A ſtone hatchet.*
Mulla, *A man.*
Moola, *Sick, to vomit.*
Maugerry, *Fiſhing.*
Murray, *Every thing large.*
Murray-nowey, *The Sirius.*
Murray-cara-diera, *Swelled wriſt.*
Mediey, *I do not know.*
Maracry, *or* Mar-ry-ang, *The emu.*
Mullin-ow-ule, *To-morrow morning.*
Murray-yannadah, *Full moon.*
Marroway, *To creep.*
Manioo, *To pick up any thing.*
Morun-gle, *Thunder.*
Moor-rone, *A large fly that bites.*
Morungle-birrong mongle, *Struck with thunder and lightning.*
Murong, *Sand.*
Man-ye-ro, *I do not know.*
Mi, *The eye.*
Murray-can-na dinga mi, *The effect of the hot burning ſun on the eye.*
Menoe, *The foot.*
Me-noe-wa, *The feet.*
Moo-tang, *A ſmall fiz-gig.*
Mur-tin, *Milk.*
Med-yanq, *A ſore.*
Ma-gra, *Fiſh.*
Mang-a, *Lightning.*
My-ang-a, *A fly.*
Mong, *An ant.*
Man-a-ro, *The navel.*
Moo-tang, *Living.*
Me-gal, *Tears.*
Ma-na-ran, *The teeth of the kanguroo ſtuck in the head with gum as an ornament.*
Mawn, *A ghoſt or apparition.*
Moono, *The bill of a bird.*
Mo-ro, *A path or road.*
Min-ney, *To ſcrape.*
Myi-mogro, *To ſhut the eyes.*
Maur, *To take hold.*

Narrong, *Any thing ſmall.*
Nowey, *A canoe.*
Narrong nowey, *The Supply.*
Narra-dew, *To hear.*
Noone, *Now.*
Nogur, *The noſe.*
Naga, *The liver.*
Nar-ra-mee, *A net.*

Nan-ga-ra, *To ſleep.*
Nabanq, *Womens breaſts*
Nul-la, *The forehead.*
Na-ro-wang, *A paddle.*
Nang-oon, *A bone or piece of wood thruſt through the ſeptum of the noſe.*
Nam-mel, *A ſinker for a fiſh-line.*
Narri-keebu, *Stand on the rock.*

Oôna, *The elbow.*

Pyalla-pya-bow, *To fight or beat.*
Pan-nie-jeminga, *To give one the hand.*
Patanga, *An oyſter.*
Paddewah, *A fiſh called a flat-head.*
Parry-buga, *To-morrow.*
Paran-banie-diow, *Eating (the act of).*
Pa-boo-nang, *A black ant.*
Parra-berry, *Empty.*
Par-rangle, *The throat.*
Pan-ne-ra, *The blood.*
Pow-book, *An owl.*
Pan-na, *Rain.*
Pa-ta-ga-rang, *The large grey kanguroo.*
Pil-lia, *To laugh.*
Pe-mall, *Earth or clay.*
Po-cul-bee, *The flag or iris of this country.*

Teura, *A muſquito.*
Teura-dieny, *Muſquito bite.*
Tag-go-rah-yago, *To ſhiver.*
Taboa-millie, *Painted white.*
Tonga-doro, *You muſt ſay.*
Talling, *or* Ta-lang, *The tongue.*
Tamira, *The hand.*
Tarra, *The leg.*
Tarong, *The ſhoulder.*
Troo-gad-ya, *A large gull.*
Ta-ga-ra, *Cold.*
Tingo, *A dog.*
Tonga, *To weep.*
Tang o-ra, *To dance.*
Te-re-nang, *To ſneeze.*
Ta-ra, *Teeth.*
Ter-ra-wan-a, *A magpie.*
Ta-lang-a, *To yawn.*
Ter-ral, *Feathers uſed as an ornament for the head.*
Taman, *A berry.*
Toon, *The tail of a bird, or any animal.*
Tan-naing, *Mine.* (*My property.*)

Ury-diow, *To ſit nearer any one.*

Wering, *Female.*
Womerraa, *To run.*
Womerra-berra, *To jump.*
Wère, *Bad.*
Wadby, *To ſwim.*
Warre-wee, *To ſtand.*
Wanne-bow, *To throw away.*
Waltegal, *A large fiſh.*
Woolamie, *A fiſh called a light-horſeman.*
Waré, *Where.*
Wogan-minnering, *Cutting off.*
Womar, *A throwing-ſtick.*
Wea-ja-minga, Wea-jow-inia, Wianga, *Relating to the giving of any thing.*
Wal-lu-merun-wea, *Will you have any more?*
Walloo-bu-diown, *To turn when walking.*
Woroo-woroo! *Go away, or an exclamation of defiance.*
Willin, *The lips.*
Wallo, *The chin.*
Woo-da, *A club.*
Wee-de, *To drink or ſuck.*
Wan-aree, *The eyebrow.*
Wee-lang, *Lips.*
War-ra, *The breaſt of a man.*
Wa-gan, *A crow.*
Wir-gan, *A bird called fryar.*
Wad-dy, *A ſtick or tree.*

Wong-ara, *A male child.*
Wy-anga, *A mother.*
Wo-la-ba, *A young kanguroo.*
Waregal, *A large dog.*
Wy-a-jenuriga, *Give me.*
Wur-ra, *A rat.*
Wil-bing, *To fly, or the wing of a bird.*
Wa-ra-bee, *A cockel.*
Worgye, *To whiſtle.*
Wya-bo-in-ya, *Take this.*
We-ring, *The female of animals.*
Wa, *Where.*
Wong-ara jug-ga-me, *A child carried on the ſhoulder.*

Yenu, Yenmow, Yenminia, Yen, *The termination of the verb—to walk.*
Yu-ru-gurra, *Hungry.*
Yenna, *Gone.*
Yennibun, *Walking away.*
Yagoona, *To-day.*
Yannadah paragi, *New moon.*
Yery, *or* Curna, *To throw.*
Yery-dioma, *To fall down.*
Ya-ban, *To ſing.*
Yarre, *or* Yerring, *A beard.*
Yer-ra, *A ſword.*
Yen-our-yenna, *Go away.*
Yo-ra, *A number of people.*

Goang-un, *A ſpear about eight feet long, with four barbs on each ſide.*—The natives make uſe of this ſpear when they advance near their adverſary, and the thruſt, or rather the ſtroke, is made at the ſide, as they raiſe the ſpear up, and have a ſhield in the left-hand. A wound from this ſpear muſt be mortal.

The only colours we have as yet diſcovered they have any knowledge of, are—Red, *Morjal*; White, *Taboa*; Black, *Nand*; Green, *Boolga.*

The females of each tribe are diſtinguiſhed by the word "*Leon,*" added to the name which diſtinguiſhes the chief: it is ſuppoſed that the word "*Gal,*" ſignifies *tribe*, and the word preceding it is the word of diſtinction; probably, it is the place where the tribe reſides.

The following inſtances may ſerve to confirm theſe ſuppoſitions.

MEN.	WOMEN.	MEN.	WOMEN.
Camera-gal.	Cameragal-leon.	Norongera-gal.	Norongera-gal-leon.
Cadi-gal.	Cadigal-leon.	Wallume-de-gal.	Wallume-degal-leon.
Won-gal.	Wongal-leon.	Borogegal-yurrey.	Borogegal-leon.
Gwea-gal.	Gwea-gal-leon.	Gommerigal-tongara.	Gommerigal-leon.
Boora me di-gal.	Booramedigal-leon.		

CHAP. XV.

1790. April.

We have every reaſon to believe, that the natives are divided into tribes, and that the perſons belonging to each tribe derive their name from the chief. We have heard much of *Camme-ro-gal*, who lives in the interior part of the country, and is a great warrior. Wolare-warrè muſt have had ſome ſevere conflicts with this chief, as he ſhewed ſeveral ſcars which proceeded from wounds that he had received from him.

The tribe of Camerra inhabit the north ſide of Port Jackſon. The tribe of Cadi inhabit the ſouth ſide, extending from the ſouth head to Long-Cove; at which place the diſtrict of Wanne, and the tribe of Wangal, commences, extending as far as Par-ra-mata, or Roſe-Hill. The tribe of Wallumede inhabit the north ſhore oppoſite Warrane, or Sydney-Cove, and are called *Walumetta*. I have already obſerved, that the ſpace between Roſe-Hill and Proſpect-Hill is diſtinguiſhed by eight different names, although the diſtance is only four miles.

Wolare-warré has given us to underſtand, that there are apparitions in the country which he calls "*Manè*:" he deſcribes them as coming up with a ſtrange noiſe, and catching hold of any one by the throat: he made uſe of many words on this occaſion, and pointed up to the ſky: he alſo informed us, that theſe apparitions ſinge the beards and the hair: this, he deſcribes as a very painful operation, rubbing his face after every application of the brand.

They put their dead, for ſome time, in a fire, after which they are laid at length in a grave, dug very clean out, the bottom being firſt very carefully covered with long graſs, or fern; the body is then put in, and covered over with long graſs, and the grave is then filled with earth, the mould riſing above it as in England.

No ſigns of any religion have been obſerved among them, yet they are not entirely ignorant of a future ſtate, as they ſay the bones of the dead are in the grave, and the body is in the clouds; or, as thoſe we have had with us may have been miſunderſtood, they probably mean that the ſoul is in the clouds: Wolare-warrè once aſked the judge-advocate, if the white men went to the clouds alſo. The ſun, moon, and ſtars, they call *Werè* (bad): the native girl once went into very violent convulſions on ſeeing a falling ſtar, and ſaid that every body would be deſtroyed, although ſome who were about her obſerved, that ſhe particularly alluded to the "*Murray nowey*," the Sirius.

CHAP. XV.
1790. April.

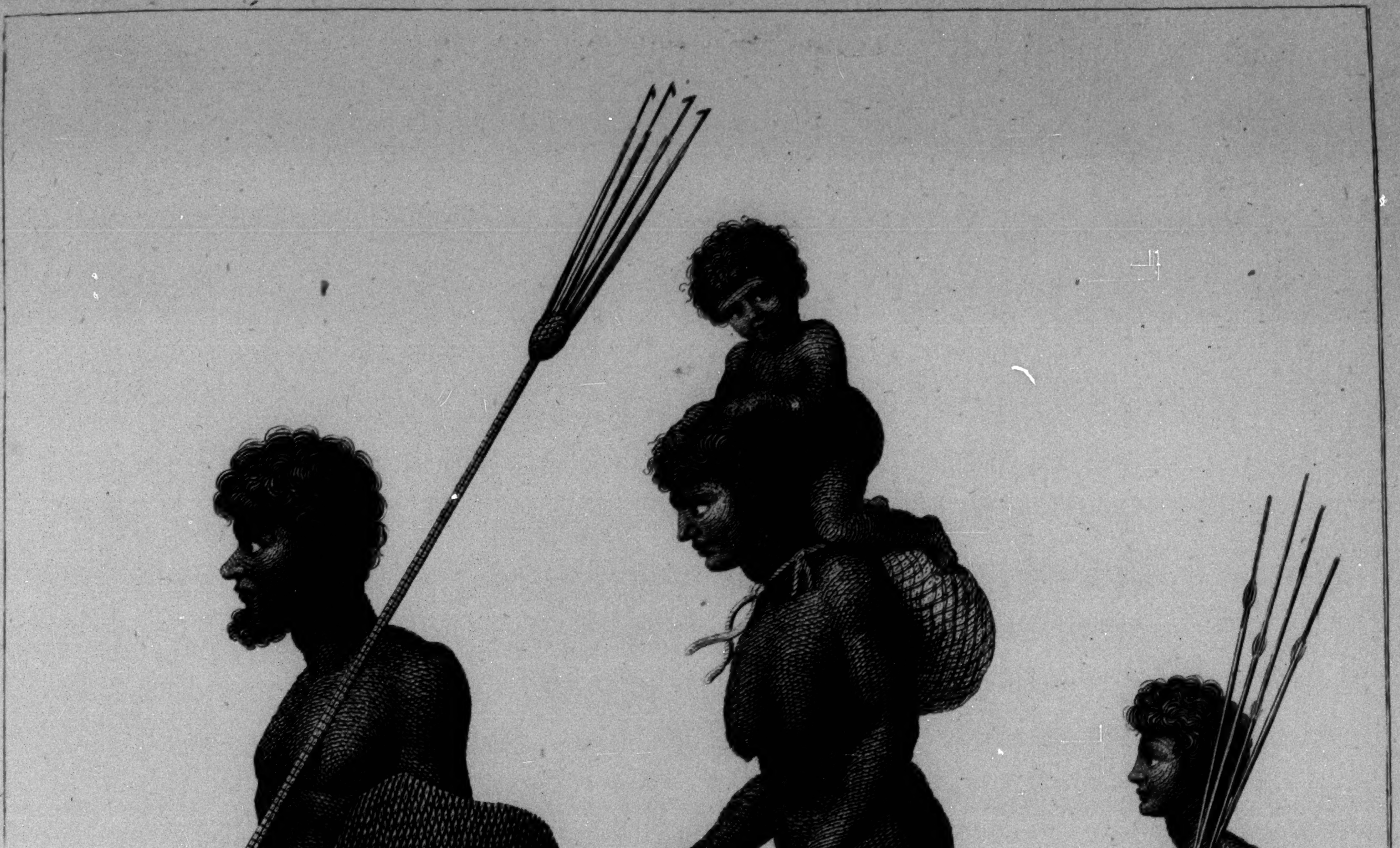
The Emu, (Maroang) the Patagorang, and the Menagine, (a ſmall animal) are all named "*Goa-long*," which term is ſuppoſed to mean an animal, as Wolarewarrè uſes it in contradiſtinction to a bird or a fiſh: on being aſked, if the Emu was a bird, (Binyan) he ſhook his head, and ſaid, "*Goa-long*." He calls Governor Phillip, *Beanga* (father); and names himſelf, *Dooroow* (ſon): the judge and commiſſary he calls *Babunna* (brother). He ſings a great deal, and with much variety: the following are ſome words which were caught—"E eye at wangewah-"wandeliah chiango wandego mangenny wakey angoul barre boa lah "barrema." He throws the ſpear ninety yards with great force and exactneſs. In counting the numerals, he cannot reckon beyond four; viz. One, Wogul, or Ya-ole; Two, Bulla and Yablowxe; Three, Boorooi, or Brewè; Four, Cal-una-long. On laying down a fifth object, he named it with the reſt, "*Marry-diolo*." He calls the four principal winds by the following names:—The North, Boo-roo-way; The South, Bain-marree; The Weſt, Bow-wan; The Eaſt, Gonie-mah.

The

CHAP. XV.

1790. April.

The natives ſing an hymn or ſong of joy, from day-break until ſun-riſe. They procure fire with infinite labour, by fixing the pointed end of a round piece of ſtick into a hole made in a flat piece of wood, and twirling it round ſwiftly betwixt both hands, ſliding them at the ſame time upwards and downwards until the operator is fatigued, when he is relieved by ſome of his companions, who are all ſeated in a circle for that purpoſe, and each takes his turn in the operation until fire is procured: this being the proceſs, it is no wonder that they are never ſeen without a piece of lighted wood in their hand.



From a Sketch by Governor King *Blake Sculpt.*

A FAMILY OF NEW SOUTH WALES

Publish'd by I. Stockdale Piccadilly, Novr. 15 - 1792

CHAPTER XVI.

Lieutenant King ſails for Batavia.—Meets with a dangerous ſhoal.—Diſcovers Tench's-Iſland.—A deſcription of the inhabitants.—Prince William-Henry's Iſland deſcribed.—Touches at Kercolang.—A deſcription of the inhabitants, their cloathing and utenſils.—Paſſes through the Streights of Salayer.—Arrival at Batavia.—Interview with the governor.—Batavia deſcribed.—Situation and extent.—Manners and cuſtoms of the inhabitants.—Government and police.—Annual exports.—Departure from Batavia.—Mortality amongſt the ſailors.—Arrival at the Iſle of France.—An account of that iſland.—Sails from the Iſle of France.—Arrival in the Engliſh Channel.

CHAP. XVI.

1790. April.

HAVING received the diſpatches for his Majeſty's principal Secretary of State, and for the Secretary of the Admiralty, from Governor Phillip, together with his order for me to go on board the Supply, and to proced in her to Batavia, and from thence, to make the beſt of my way to England, with the above diſpatches, and Lieutenant Ball having alſo received his orders, I took my leave of the governor, and at noon on the 17th of April, we ſet ſail; carrying with us the fervent prayers 17. of thoſe we left behind, for our ſafety. From this time till the 22d, 22. we had variable weather, the wind in general from the ſouth-eaſt. Lieutenant Ball was directed to call at Norfolk-Iſland, if it did not occaſion

CHAP. XVI. 1790. April. occaſion him too much loſs of time; but, as the winds ſeemed to hang to the eaſtward, there was every probability of loſing at leaſt a fortnight; and, as the Supply did not carry any thing which could be of the leaſt aſſiſtance to thoſe on the iſland, he thought proper to proceed on the voyage, and accordingly bore up in order to go to the weſtward of the ſhoal ſeen by the Golden-Grove, in latitude 29° 25′ ſouth, and 159° 59′ eaſt longitude: Lieutenant Shortland alſo ſaw another ſhoal, as hath already been mentioned, which may probably be the ſame, if they exiſt: this, however, ſeems to be a matter of doubt, as Lieutenant Ball, in July, 1789, cruized in theſe and the adjacent latitudes and longitudes for a fortnight, and could not ſee the leaſt appearance either of an iſland or ſhoals; although Mr. Blackburn, the maſter of the Supply, who was at that time on board the Golden-Grove, is very confident that a ſhoal was ſeen in that veſſel. We had very heavy gales of wind from eaſt until the 28th, with violent ſqualls, attended with rain: the air in 28. general thick and hazy, and a high hollow ſea running. At one o'clock on the 28th, we perceived a great alteration in the ſea, which was become ſo ſmooth, that at four o'clock it was, comparatively ſpeaking, ſmooth water: at half paſt five, the man who was ſtationed at the maſt-head, ſaw breakers in the ſouth-eaſt, which were found to be a ſhoal, bearing from ſouth-eaſt by eaſt to eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, about ſeven miles diſtant: it appeared to trend ſouth-ſouth-eaſt and north-north-weſt; and the north end ſeemed to break off ſuddenly in a ſmall bluff.

The man at the maſt-head had ſeen this ſhoal a conſiderable time before he ſpoke of it, and, when aſked why he did not mention it ſooner, he ſaid that he took it for the reflection of the ſetting-ſun; forgetting that the ſun, if it had been viſible, ſet to the weſtward: this circumſtance occaſioned Lieutenant Ball to name it "*Booby ſhoal:*" its latitude is 21° 24′ ſouth, and the longitude, by the time-keeper, 159° 24′ eaſt of Greenwich. Immediately after paſſing this ſhoal, we found the ſame high hollow ſea running as we had in the morning. 1790. April.

May. 3. At noon on the 3d of May, our latitude was 12° 13′ ſouth, and the longitude, by the time-keeper, 161° 33′ eaſt. We were now drawing near the ſituation in which Lieutenant Shortland had diſcovered land, and being ſurrounded by birds, and a number of trees floating about the veſſel, we were induced to ſuppoſe ourſelves not far diſtant from it. In the evening of the 4th we ſounded, but got no ground with 150 fathoms of line. 4. The next morning high land was ſeen, bearing from north-north-weſt to weſt-north-weſt, ſeven or eight leagues diſtant; it ſeemed to trend about north-north-eaſt, and ſouth-ſouth-weſt. 5. At noon, the latitude was 11° 7′ ſouth, and the longitude 162° 34′ eaſt: the northernmoſt land bore north by weſt, five leagues diſtant: it appeared like a ſmall iſland covered with trees; and in the center of it there is a conſpicuous mount, formed by ſome very high trees: the land to the weſtward, which extends from this iſland as far as north-weſt a quarter north, is low, and in clumps like iſlands. The weather now was very hot and ſultry, with dark heavy clouds all round the horizon: we had alſo a great deal of thunder and lightning, attended with heavy rain. In the afternoon of the 6th, 6. we perceived the northernmoſt land to be two ſmall iſlands, which appeared to trend north-north-eaſt and ſouth-ſouth-weſt; the main land lying a little to the weſtward of them. The eaſternmoſt of theſe two iſlands Lieutenant Ball named Sirius's-Iſland; it is ſituated in 10° 52′ ſouth latitude, and 162° 30′ eaſt longitude: the other was named Maſſey's-Iſland. We obſerved by the land, that a very ſtrong current, or tide, ſet us faſt to the northward. It is unfor-

CHAP. XVI. 1790. May. tunate that the changeable ſtate of the wind and weather did not permit us to range this coaſt, by hauling in with the land, as ſomething might have probably been diſcovered, without occaſioning any loſs of time. In the evening we had very heavy ſqualls, attended with rain, thunder, and lightning. At eight o'clock the next morning, we ſaw land, which had the appearance of a large high iſland, lying along the ſhore: Lieutenant Ball named it Smith's-Iſland; it is ſituated in 9° 44′ south latitude, and 161° 54′ eaſt longitude. 8. On the 8th, at day-light, the land bore from weſt by ſouth to ſouth by weſt, ſeven or eight leagues diſtant: Smith's Iſland then bearing ſouth-ſouth-eaſt ten leagues.

This land in general is very high, and appears well wooded: there is the appearance of a number of openings, reſembling bays or harbours; but our diſtance from ſhore was too great to aſcertain any obſervation of that kind. At noon our latitude was 9° 00′ ſouth, and the longitude 161° 41′ eaſt; and the land trending away to the north-weſt, it was evident that we had rounded the eaſt part of that iſland which Lieutenant Shortland coaſted on its ſouth ſide, from the latitude of 10° 44′ ſouth longitude 161° 41′ eaſt, to 6° 55′ ſouth latitude, and 156° 30′ eaſt longitude.

As Lieutenant Shortland made the land on the oppoſite ſide of this iſland in latitude 10° 44′ ſouth, longitude 161° 30′ eaſt, and the Supply being this day in latitude 9° 00′ ſouth, longitude 161° 41′ eaſt; there remains a ſpace between the ſituation of the two veſſels, which, reduced to bearings and diſtances from theſe latitudes and longitudes, will give ſouth 6° eaſt; diſtance 104 miles: now, the Supply was ten leagues off ſhore, and, admitting the Alexander (Lieutenant Shortland's ſhip,) to have been four leagues, it will make the breadth of the iſland 62 miles, and its length and bearings will be ſouth 57° eaſt, and north 57° weſt, 436 miles.

1790. May.

The eaſtern extremity of this land is an iſland about 18 miles in circuit, lying at a ſmall diſtance from the main iſland: I have before obſerved that it was named Sirius-Iſland, between which, and the Queen Charlotte's Iſlands, there cannot be many leagues, ſuppoſing Captain Carteret's longitude to have been right.

The north-eaſt coaſt of this iſland Lieutenant Ball named "*Ball's Maiden Land*;" and the paſſage between Sirius and Queen Charlotte's
Iſlands, "*Supply's Paſſage.*" At day-light in the morning of the 9th, 9.
land was ſeen, bearing from ſouth to weſt, eleven leagues diſtant; it
was very high, and there appeared to be a number of openings in it.
Our latitude at noon on the 10th, was 7° 16′ ſouth, and the longitude 10.
162° 23′ eaſt. We now daily found the veſſel ſet conſiderably to the
northward and weſtward, and on the 16th ſhe was ſet 48 miles weſt- 16.
north-weſt during the 24 hours.

A different kind of ſea-fowl was ſeen about the veſſel to any we had
hitherto met with; it was of the ganet kind; the back, wings, and
head being a gloſſy black, and the breaſt entirely white. At ten o'clock
in the morning of the 19th, we ſaw an iſland bearing weſt by north 19.
ſix or ſeven leagues diſtant: the latitude at noon, was 1° 44′ ſouth, and the longitude 150° 39′ eaſt. With a fine breeze at eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, we ſteered for the iſland, as it lay directly in our courſe, and ſoon perceived that it was inhabited, as we ſaw a number of people ſtanding on the ſouth point, and a great many canoes were coming off to meet us; but as the veſſel approached them they paddled towards the ſhore; yet they

CHAP. XVI.

1790. May.

ſeemed deſirous to have ſome communication with us, and the veſſel being hove to, in a ſhort time they came near us, but no invitation or intreaty could prevail on them to come along-ſide: at length, two of the canoes, which had ſeven men in each, and two others, with two men each, came cloſe under the ſtern, but none of them would venture on board, and it was with great difficulty they were perſuaded to come near enough to receive a ſtring of beads which were let down over the ſtern; after this, they all paddled on ſhore. During the time theſe canoes were near the veſſel, the beach on the iſland was covered with natives; and on the ſouth point of the iſland, a man ſtood alone, with a long pole in his hand, which had ſomething large at the end of it, and which he ſeemed to uſe as a ſignal to thoſe in the canoes. Theſe canoes appeared to be made out of a large tree, and were well ſhaped, with a hook made of wood at each end, the uſe of which we could not poſſibly gueſs: the largeſt of them appeared to be about 28 feet long. Each canoe had a long out-rigger, to prevent them from overſetting.

The natives who were in the canoes, were the ſtouteſt and healthieſt looking men I ever beheld; their ſkin was perfectly ſmooth and free from any diſorder: they were quite naked, and of a copper colour; their hair reſembled that of the New-Hollanders. Some of their beards reached as low as the navel, and there was an appearance of much art being uſed in forming them into long ringlets; ſo that it ſhould ſeem as if the prevailing faſhion on this iſland was that of keeping the beard well combed, curled, and oiled. Two or three of the men had ſomething like a bead or bone ſuſpended to a ſtring, which was faſtened round the neck. The ſize and very healthy appearance of theſe people excited our admiration very much; indeed it is wonderful how ſo ſmall a ſpot of ground can ſupport the vaſt number of inhabitants we ſaw on

1790. May.

the iſland, all of whom appeared equally ſtrong and handſome as thoſe who were in the canoes. The iſland cannot be more than two miles in circumference: it is low, but entirely covered with trees, many of which are the cocoa-nut; we likewiſe ſaw a number of large trees which bore a very fine red bloſſom, but the red was ſo very conſpicuous, that I am inclined to think the leaves were of that colour. Theſe trees reached to the margin of a very fine ſandy beach, which entirely ſurrounds the iſland; a great number of canoes were lying on the beach, and, from the number of natives we ſaw there, beſides what were in the canoes, there cannot be leſs than a thouſand inhabitants on the iſland. Lieutenant Ball named this place *Tench's Iſland*, after Captain Watkin Tench of the marines: it is ſituated in 1° 39′ ſouth latitude, and 150° 31′ eaſt longitude. After lying-to near an hour, and finding we could have no farther intercourſe with the natives, without conſiderable loſs of time, we bore up and kept on our courſe, ſteering weſt by north. At ſun-ſet, we ſaw another iſland bearing weſt by north, Tench's Iſland bearing eaſt half north. 20. The next morning at day-light, the iſland ſeen the preceding evening, bore from ſouth by weſt, to weſt by ſouth, about three leagues diſtant; on this, we altered our courſe, in order to run along the ſhore. This iſland is pretty high, and appears to be about 70 miles in circumference, if I may judge from the length of its eaſt ſide, which I meaſured by angles. It is well wooded, and there were a number of clear cultivated tracts of ground, on which ſomething was growing that had the appearance of Indian corn, or ſugar-cane. As we ran along ſhore, we could not perceive any place of ſhelter for a veſſel on the eaſt ſide of the iſland, but there probably is on ſome part of it. The iſland is ſurrounded by a ſandy beach, on which the ſurf beats with ſome violence: a number of canoes were lying on the beach, and ſome parts of the ſhore were covered with the natives; but none of them attempted

CHAP. XVI. 1790. May. to come off, although the veſſel was not more than a mile and a half from the ſhore. We ſaw ſeveral houſes amongſt the trees, which appeared to be large and well conſtructed. This iſland has a luxuriant and pictureſque appearance, and there can ſcarcely be a doubt but it is very fertile and well peopled. The natives were quite naked, and ſeemed to be the ſame ſort of people we had ſeen at Tench's Iſland; and their canoes were apparently of the ſame conſtruction. At ten o'clock in the forenoon, being abreaſt of the ſouth-eaſt point of the iſland, we bore up and made ſail, ſteering weſt-north-weſt. Lieutenant Ball requeſting me to name this iſland, I called it *Prince William-Henry Iſland*, in honour of his Royal Highneſs the Duke of Clarence. In making this iſland from the eaſtward, a very high mount riſes in the center of it, which Lieutenant Ball named *Mount Phillip*, in honour of Governor Phillip: it lies weſt-north-weſt from Tench's-Iſland, and is ſituated in 1° 32′ ſouth latitude, and 149° 30′ eaſt longitude.

22. At midnight on the 22d, we had a perfect deluge of rain, but it did not continue more than a quarter of an hour. We had now a vaſt number of tropic birds and ganets round the veſſel: the ſea was covered with trees of the largeſt ſize, which had both roots and branches to them; there were alſo cocoa-nut trees, ſugar-cane, bamboo, and a variety of other drift wood: many of the trees were ſo large, that we could plainly ſee them at the diſtance of two leagues: moſt of the roots lay to the weſt-north-weſt, from which circumſtance, and the veſſel being conſiderably to the weſtward of account by the time-keeper, we were induced to ſuppoſe that a ſtrong current ſet in that direction. We June. 4. ſteered weſt-north-weſt until the 4th of June, with moderate breezes from the eaſtward, and pleaſant weather: the ſea was conſtantly covered with large entire trees, junks of wood, bamboos, and a variety of other

drift

drift wood and rock weed. Our latitude at noon on the 4th, was 4° 33′ north, and the longitude, by the time-keeper, 127° 58′ eaſt.

1790. June. 5. At day-light the next morning, we ſaw an iſland bearing north-weſt, which is called *Kercolang* in the charts; finding we could not weather the ſouth end, we bore up to go to the northward of it. At noon, it bore from north 68° weſt to ſouth 41° weſt: our latitude was 4° 25′ north, and the longitude, by lunar obſervation, 126° 50′ eaſt. Another iſland, called *Kerolang* in the charts, bore from north to north 14° eaſt; having a remarkable hummock on the eaſt end of it.

6. At eight o'clock in the morning of the 6th, being cloſe under the eaſt ſide of Kercolang, we ſaw a canoe with a matt ſail coming towards us: the natives ſoon came under the ſtern without any ſigns of fear. There were twelve Malays in this canoe, who were all cloathed: the outriggers of the canoe, which were long and ſlight, would not permit them to come alongſide, but a jacket and a hatchet being given them, and ſigns made for them to go on ſhore and bring ſomething to eat, they left the veſſel and went towards the ſhore, where we followed them. Before they landed, a ſtill larger canoe, with fifteen Malays in it, went to the canoe which had left us; and as we were not more than two miles from the ſhore, Lieutenant Ball and myſelf went in the jolly-boat and joined the two canoes; on this, two of the Malays jumped out of the canoes into our boat, and went immediately to the oars: ſuch a ſtep could not be miſunderſtood, it was ſaying, "we put ourſelves entirely "in your power without any precaution." When we came near the beach, obſerving the ſurf to break on it, we made ſigns for the canoes to go on ſhore, and bring us ſome cocoa-nuts and plantains, as we ſaw vaſt quantities on the trees. They were very deſirous for our boat to

land;

CHAP. XVI.

1790. June.

land; but that not being agreed to, they left a native in the jolly-boat, and one of our men went on ſhore in the canoe: he ſoon returned with ſeveral canoes which were laden with cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, ſweet potatoes, rice, a little flour, and ſeveral other articles, all which we purchaſed for axes and other barter: ſoon afterwards we returned on board, and were followed by upwards of an hundred canoes. At noon, a breeze ſpringing up from the northward, we made ſail, and many of the canoes followed us to a conſiderable diſtance. The latitude of the north end of Kercolang is 4° 28′, and the longitude of the center 126° 31′ eaſt. This iſland is between eighty and one hundred miles in circumference, and is in general of a very good height: the face of the country ſeems to be ſteep hills and extenſive vallies, and every part of it was covered with trees and verdure: there were alſo ſome cultivated grounds which had a very pleaſant appearance. Theſe Malays wore no crid or creſs, nor did we ſee any offenſive weapons amongſt them, excepting two which were on the beach, who had ſomething like halberts in their hands, but whether they were of iron or wood we could not diſcern. The houſes ſtood on poſts; they appeared to be well built, and neatly thatched: their canoes were alſo neatly made, being hollowed out of trees, with bamboo outriggers on each ſide to prevent them from overſetting; a piece of wood is left at the ſtern, which projects like a proa, to break the water before it comes to the bow: each canoe has a maſt, on which they hoiſt a ſquare piece of matt as a ſail. Their fiſhing-hooks and lines are moſtly European, and it is poſſible that there is a Dutch reſident on the iſland, as we ſaw a ſmall Dutch flag placed before a houſe to the northward of the place where we went with the boat; though it is natural to ſuppoſe, that if any European had been there, he would have come to the boat, or that the natives would have made us underſtand there was one on the iſland. The cloathing theſe people in general wore, was made of a coarſe kind of callico, though ſome of them wore ſilk, and moſt of them had ſomething reſembling a turban round their heads; a few, indeed, wore a Chineſe pointed hat. There can be no doubt but the Dutch ſupply theſe people with cloathing and other neceſſaries, which, of courſe, muſt be for ſome production of the iſland. I ſhewed one of the natives ſome cloves, and he gave me to underſtand that they had the ſame. I do not think the Dutch ſend very often to this iſland, from the extreme avidity the natives ſhewed in purchaſing our hatchets and cloathing: they are mild, and apparently a quiet people, and the confidence they placed in us was ſufficient to prove that ſtrangers were not unwelcome gueſts among them. 1790. June.

From the 6th to the 10th, we had freſh gales of wind at weſt, with very heavy ſqualls and much rain, which often obliged us to clew all up. During the laſt four days we only got eight leagues on our courſe, and there being every appearance of a continuation of weſterly winds, (this being the ſouth-weſt monſoon in the China ſeas) with heavy ſqualls, or rather tornados of wind and rain, which endangered the maſts: on the 10th, Lieutenant Ball relinquiſhed the purpoſe of going through the ſtreights of *Macaſſer*, and adopted that of making the paſſage between *Celebes* and *Gilolo*, through the *Moluccas* and the ſtreights of *Salayer*; accordingly, at ſix in the morning, we bore up for the ſouth point of *Lirog*, which lay ſouth-eaſt by eaſt twelve or fourteen leagues diſtant. 10.

At day-light on the 12th, we ſaw the iſland of *Morotia*, which bore from ſouth 31° eaſt, to ſouth 4° eaſt. At noon, we were in 2° 36′ ſouth latitude, and 127° 51′ eaſt longitude: in a chart of Hamilton Moore's, there is an iſland without a name laid down exactly in that ſituation; but, as the weather was very clear, and no ſuch land could 12.

be

1790. June. be ſeen, the exiſtence of it is very doubtful. The weather was now extremely pleaſant, with light winds from ſouth by weſt to ſouth-eaſt. 14. At noon on the 14th, Gilolo bore from ſouth by weſt half weſt, to eaſt by north: there is a chain of ſmall iſlands laying the whole length of theſe bearings about two leagues from Gilolo; between which and that iſland, there appears to be good ſhelter. 16. On the 16th, we were directly oppoſite three remarkable conical hills; they are very high; the ſouthernmoſt lies in 1° 30′ north latitude, and 127° 5′ eaſt longitude. The land near this ſituation is high and well wooded, with ſome cultivated ſpots: the ſhore appears bold to. At midnight, we had a perfect deluge of rain, attended with loud thunder and very fierce lightning, which laſted two hours; after which, the weather became ſerene and pleaſant. 17. The next morning, the iſland of *Ternate* bore ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, and a little to the northward of it there appears to be a large and ſafe harbour, on the iſland of Gilolo, which now bore eaſt by ſouth five or ſix leagues diſtant. Ternate riſes in a high conical mount; its latitude is 00° 50′ north, and the longitude 127° 4′ eaſt. A very pleaſant little iſland lies about two miles to the north-north-weſt of Ternate, which, in the charts, is called *Heri*; it is pretty high, and not more than two miles in circumference. The cultivated ſpots on this iſland, contraſted with the brown ſhade of the trees, and the interſperſed ſituation of the houſes, give this little ſpot a moſt pictureſque appearance: it appeared, as well as Ternate, to be in a perfect ſtate of cultivation; and from the number of houſes we ſaw, they muſt both be well inhabited. The latitude, at noon, was 1° 2′ north, and the longitude 126° 49′ weſt: Heri then bore ſouth-eaſt by eaſt; the peak of Ternate, ſouth-eaſt half ſouth; the ſouth point of Tidere, ſouth by eaſt; and Makian, ſouth-ſouth-eaſt. All theſe iſlands are very high; they riſe in peaks, and are well cultivated. We ſaw a vaſt number of fires

CHAP. XVI.

on Ternate, which probably were lighted for a ſignal. Beſides the iſland of Makian, which is not more than two miles in circumference, there are a number of other ſmall iſlots, which form a conſiderable group, and they were all cultivated. A number of boats were paſſing from one iſlot to another, with ſome Europeans in them. The weather was exceſſive hot and ſultry; the thermometer, when in the open air and ſhade, being 91°. 1790. June. 13.

19. On the 19th, we perceived a great ripling on the water, which appeared to be a ſtrong current, and we afterwards found it had ſet the veſſel conſiderably to the weſtward. At noon, the north-weſt point of *Manere* or *Batachina* bore eaſt-north-eaſt nine leagues diſtant; its latitude is 0° 16′ ſouth, and the longitude 126° 41′ eaſt. At noon on the 20th, an iſland a head, which we took to be *Pulo Oubi*, bore eaſt half ſouth about twelve leagues diſtant, and *Stemo Sulla*, ſouth-ſouth-weſt thirteen leagues: the latitude was 1° 17′ ſouth, and the longitude 126° 22′ eaſt. Hitherto, we had found the currents ſet us to the weſtward; but in the morning of the 21ſt, a ſtrong ripling of a current ſet the veſſel conſiderably to the eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, which may eaſily be accounted for: the paſſage between New Guinea and Aigeu was quite open, and bore from us ſouth-eaſt, and I think that the current we now felt is an out-ſet; and as we had experienced a ſoutherly current ever ſince we made the iſland of Morotia, it may be preſumed that there is an indraught between the Celebes and Gilolo; and an out-ſet between Gilolo, New Guinea, and Aigeu, which is called "*Pitt's Paſſage*." 20. 21.

In the afternoon, the boat was hoiſted out in order to try the current, when it was found to ſet eaſt by ſouth, at the rate of a mile and an half an hour; however, the current among theſe iſlands is by no means

certain,

CHAP. XVI.

1790. June. 22.

certain, as we found, on the 22d, a ſtrong current or tide ſetting to the north-weſt. A great number of very large whales were ſeen, which moved exceeding ſlow, and came very near the veſſel. At noon, the center of *Burro* bore ſouth, and the ſouth point of *Sulla Beſſi*, north 76° weſt. Burro is a very high iſland, and may be ſeen at the diſtance of twenty leagues with great eaſe.

As the following latitudes and longitudes were taken with great exactneſs, they perhaps may not be unacceptable.

	South latitude.		Eaſt longitude.	
	°	'	°	'
Eaſt point of Burro	3	7	126	38
Weſt point of ditto	3	4	125	41
North-eaſt point of Sulla Mangol	2	0	126	3
South point of Sulla Beſſi	2	29	125	57

23. In the afternoon of the 23d, being clear of the ſouth point of Burro, we found a ſtrong ſouth-eaſt trade, with which we ſteered ſouth-ſouth-weſt. We paſſed a great quantity of drift wood, and ſome very large trees with both roots and branches to them, ſome of which were ſo large as to be taken for veſſels.

25. In the morning of the 25th, we ſaw two ſmall iſlands bearing ſouth-eaſt about ſix miles diſtant; we imagined them to be the northernmoſt of the ſmall iſlands, called *Touchaeilly*, in the charts: ſoon afterwards, we ſaw land bearing ſouth-weſt, which we took to be *Bouton*, but we ſoon perceived it to be three iſlands lying nearly north and ſouth. At this time, our longitude, by the time-keeper, was 123° 39′ eaſt, and

the

1790. June.

the latitude, by two altitudes, was 5° 36′ ſouth. Concluding the iſlands we ſaw in the morning were thoſe of St. Matthew's, and the others *Touchaeilly*, we bore up in order to run between the northernmoſt and middle of three iſlands in ſight. In our run from Burro to St. Matthew's Iſland, we found a ſtrong current ſetting to the ſouth-eaſt. St. Matthew's Iſlands are ſituated in 5° 23′ ſouth latitude, and 123° 51′ eaſt longitude. With a moderate breeze from the ſouth-eaſt, we ſteered weſt-ſouth-weſt between the Toucaheilly Iſlands; and at noon on the 26th, we paſſed a ſandy key, which had a tuft of green buſhes on its north end, and its ſouth end runs off in a long ſpit for three or four miles, on which the ſea breaks very high. Theſe iſlands are covered with wood, and well cultivated. At four o'clock in the afternoon we hove to, and ſoon afterwards a ſmall proa came alongſide loaded with cocoa-nuts, which we purchaſed. The people in this canoe gave us to underſtand, that the iſland on our ſtarboard hand was called *Combado*, and that on the larboard *Toucambaſo*. At half paſt four, we made ſail, and ſoon afterwards, a man, who was ſtationed at the maſt-head, ſaid he ſaw a ſhoal a-head of the veſſel; on this we looked out, and ſaw a reef about ſix miles diſtant, extending from the weſt-north-weſt as far as the eye could reach in a ſouth-eaſt direction: on this, we hauled the wind and lay under Combado during the night. The next morning, we made ſail and ſteered weſt-north-weſt, looking out for the ſhoal and running along its eaſtern ſide about four miles diſtant. This reef is very large, and its eaſtern ſide is bound with rugged rocks, and when the water is ſmooth there is no breaker on it. At four in the afternoon, we rounded the ſhoal at two miles diſtance, and ſteered for the ſouth end of *Bouton*, which we paſſed early the next morning, and ſoon afterwards paſſed the ſtreights, ſteering weſt half north. When you are to the eaſtward of Camborra, the entrance of the ſtreights of Bouton may be

26.

27.

28.

CHAP. XVI. 1790. June. known by three ſmall iſlands which lie off the eaſt point that forms the ſtreights, one of which is large, and the other two are ſmall: off the large one lie ſeveral rocks, but at no great diſtance. The only chart we had on board, which took any notice of theſe iſlands and the ſhoal, was one of Hamilton Moore's, which we found tolerably correct, except in ſome inſtances where the iſlands are miſplaced, as *St. Matthew's Iſlands*, *Toucambeſſis*, the ſouth end of *Bouton* and *Kercolang*, with ſome other trifling differences; however, upon the whole, it may be called a good chart. 28. At day-light, the iſland of Salayer bore from ſouth 40° weſt to north 80° eaſt, and the entrance of the ſtreights north 70° weſt. On entering the ſtreights, we found a very ſtrong ripling of the ſea, which we were apprehenſive were overfalls; but we found it was a ſtrong current ſetting to the weſtward. At noon, being through the ſtreights, we hauled up weſt by ſouth. The beſt paſſage through theſe ſtreights is between the two ſmall iſlands, the ſouthernmoſt of which lies cloſe to *Salayer*. The iſland of Salayer appears to be well inhabited, and cultivated to advantage, as each piece of ground was fenced in, and the houſes appeared to be very good ones. The courſe from the ſtreights of *Salayer* to *Cambona* is eaſt by ſouth eighty-four miles: they lie weſt by north half north, and eaſt by ſouth half ſouth, about five miles through: the entrance to the weſtward is in 5° 45′ ſouth latitude, and 120° 3′ eaſt longitude. This latitude was determined by a good meridional altitude, and the longitude by the time-keeper and lunar obſervations, ſo that there is a very conſiderable miſtake in Hamilton Moore's chart reſpecting the poſition of theſe ſtreights. At three in the afternoon, a man, who was ſtationed at the maſt-head, ſaid he ſaw a great ripling, and on looking over the ſide, the bottom was diſtinctly ſeen; on this, we hauled off to the ſouthward, and hove the lead, but got no ground, and the veſſel going very faſt, we immediately loſt ſight of the bottom, and ſoon afterwards ſteered weſt by ſouth. At the time we were on this bank, the ſouth end of Salayer bore ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, and the north end, eaſt. In my opinion, ſhips going through the ſtreights of Salayer from the weſtward, ſhould bring the north point of *Salayer* to bear eaſt, or eaſt half north, with which courſe there could be no riſk from that bank. We now ſteered weſt by ſouth, and having run ſixty-ſix miles in that direction from the ſtreights of Salayer, on the morning of the 29th, we ſaw ſome high land on the Celebes, bearing north-eaſt nine leagues diſtant; this muſt be the land between the ſouth-weſt point of Celebes, and the iſlands called, by Captain Carteret, *Tonakiky*; ſo that the end of Celebes from the ſtreights of Salayer to the ſouth-weſt point cannot be more than twenty leagues, as Mr. Dalrymple has already obſerved in a ſmall pamphlet. Lieutenant Ball directed the veſſel to be kept north-north-weſt, in order to make the land plainer; but the charts we had on board differed ſo much in the poſition and extent of the land, and ſome time might perhaps be loſt in looking for Tonakiky, to take a departure from, Mr. Ball determined on bearing up and running in that parallel of latitude which was likelieſt to keep the veſſel clear of danger, viz. 5° 45′ or 5° 50′ ſouth. At noon, the obſerved latitude was 5° 48′ ſouth, and the longitude 118° 44′ eaſt. At half paſt two in the afternoon, having ſteered weſt twelve miles ſince noon, we ſaw what we took for *Tonyn*'s Iſlands, or *Sarras*, bearing north. Hamilton Moore's chart places the ſouth end of this ſhoal in 5° 58′ ſouth, but it cannot be farther than 5° 40′ ſouth at moſt, as we were now in latitude 5° 48′, and the iſland could only be ſeen from the maſt-head, bearing north: the longitude of the ſouth end of theſe iſlands and ſhoal (if there be any) is 118° 11′ eaſt. On the 30th, at ten in the forenoon, we ſaw the great *Solombo* bearing north by weſt half weſt two leagues diſtant. On ſounding, we ſtruck the ground

1790. June.

29.

30.

with

CHAP. XVI. 1790. July 1. with 32 fathoms, over an oozy bottom. The next morning, the iſland of *Lubeck* bore from ſouth 14° weſt to ſouth 55° weſt, five leagues diſtant. This iſland is conſiderably miſplaced in the charts. A very good altitude was got at eight in the morning, for the time-keeper, and a very good meridional altitude was alſo taken for the latitude; which, with the bearings of Lubeck in the morning and at noon, places it in 5° 50′ ſouth latitude, and 112° 22′ eaſt longitude. 3. On the 3d, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the iſles of *Cariman Java* were ſeen, bearing ſouth 79° weſt. During the night, the weather was very ſqually, attended with much thunder and lightning. The latitude of Cariman Java is 5° 56′ ſouth, and the longitude 110° 12′ eaſt.

5. At half paſt three o'clock in the morning of the 5th, we ſaw a ſmall iſland bearing weſt half ſouth, not more than a mile and a half from the veſſel; on this we hauled our wind to the ſouthward, and tacked occaſionally until day-light. We ſounded with twenty-ſix fathoms, over a bottom of blue mud. This iſland is called in the charts *Pulo Packit:* it is very low and covered with trees. There are two iſlands laid down in Dunn's and Moore's charts, but we only ſaw one iſland, and a rocky reef: this iſland is laid down in Dunn's chart in 6° 18° ſouth, but its real latitude is 5° 50′ ſouth: this miſtake had very near proved fatal to the Supply, but it being a moon-light night, the danger was diſcovered, though at the diſtance of two miles only. Ships bound to the weſtward, or to Batavia from Carimon Java, ſhould ſteer weſt half north, or weſt by north, to avoid the ſhoal to the northward of Pulo Packit. In the afternoon, ſeeing a brig at anchor under the land, we bore up in order to ſpeak her, and in ſtanding in, had regular ſoundings to ſeven fathoms. I went with Mr. Ball on board the brig, where we learned that the point of *Pamonakan* bore ſouth-ſouth-weſt from us; on this,

we returned on board the Supply and made ſail, and in the afternoon of the 6th, we anchored in Batavia Road. Upwards of thirty Dutch ſhips were lying there, beſides a number of ſnows and Chineſe junks. 1790. July. 6.

7. The next morning, I waited on the general, at the requeſt of Lieutenant Ball, and ſettled the ſalute, which took place at five in the evening, when the Supply ſaluted the fort with nine guns, which were returned by an equal number.

8. On the 8th, Lieutenant Ball waited on the general, accompanied by the Shebander and myſelf. As the general could not ſpeak any other language than Dutch, and the Shebander could not ſpeak ſufficient Engliſh to explain himſelf, I was obliged to interpret between Lieutenant Ball and the latter; and I beg here to remark, that during this converſation, which was in the general's office, we were not aſked to ſit down; indeed, had the general been polite enough to have made the offer, there was not a ſecond chair in the room; ſo unuſual a thing is it to be ſeated in the general's preſence, when talking to him on buſineſs.

After Lieutenant Ball had ſignified his buſineſs, and the ſervice he was ſent on, a number of frivolous enquiries were made reſpecting the ſetlement at New South Wales; and much aſtoniſhment was expreſſed, that we came from that country and could not tell *what became of the Bounty, Lieutenant Bligh's ſhip*.

No other anſwer could be got, than that the council were to be requeſted to permit Lieutenant Ball to purchaſe whatever he wanted, and to hire a veſſel to carry what he might want to Port Jackſon: this being ſettled we took our leave. The Shebander drew up a requeſt, which

Lieutenant

CHAP. XVI.

1790. July.

Lieutenant Ball ſigned, and the next day it was preſented to the council, (at which the director-general preſided, on account of the general's indiſpoſition) when every thing was granted; but they refuſed to interfere in taking up a veſſel, or in purchaſing proviſions, ſaying, that thoſe matters were to be managed by Lieutenant Ball. As every veſſel here either belonged to the company, or were too flimſy to go on ſuch a voyage, it was for a ſhort time doubtful whether one could be procured: at length, the Shebander hearing that a ſnow of 250 tons or upwards lay at a port called *Samarre*, on the eaſt ſide of Java, he offered her to Lieutenant Ball; ſaying that he would purchaſe her and fit her out completely, if Mr. Ball would contract with him to pay eighty rix-dollars a ton for the voyage; the Shebander to take all riſques upon himſelf, with reſpect to the loſs of the veſſel. As the neceſſity for a ſupply of proviſions was very great, and as there was no other veſſel to be procured, Lieutenant Ball was obliged to make the agreement, and the ſnow was ſent for. Proviſions were eaſily purchaſed, and at a cheap rate: very excellent beef and pork at ſix-pence per pound. Of flour, there was little to be procured, as all the people here eat rice, Europeans as well as natives.

Batavia has been ſo very well and ſo fully deſcribed in Captain Cook's firſt voyage, that any attempt of mine to deſcribe this vaſt and ſplendid ſettlement may be deemed ſuperfluous; however, as theſe pages may probably fall into the hands of ſome who have read no other account, I ſhall ſubjoin what few remarks occurred to me during my ſtay there.

According to the beſt accounts I could obtain, the city and its environs cover a ſpace of eight ſquare miles: it is ſituated about half a mile from the ſea-ſhore, and has communication with it by a canal, which will admit veſſels of eight feet draught of water. The city ſtands on a flat, which extends forty leagues to the foot of the neareſt mountains. Two large rivers, which are divided into a number of canals, run through all the principal ſtreets of the city, and on both ſides of the different roads: theſe canals are navigable for large boats; they are planted with trees on each ſide, which are kept cut in the form of a fan. The ſtreets are all drawn at right angles, and are in general wide, with very good pavements; along the ſides of which a double row of trees are planted, which greatly prevents the circulation of air, and tends very much to increaſe the natural unhealthineſs of the place. Within the paſt four years, moſt of the canals which contained putrid water have been filled up, and great attention is now paid to removing dirt and other nuiſances. All the houſes are well built; indeed, ſome of them are magnificent buildings, and are finiſhed with elegant neatneſs; which, added to the great cleanlineſs obſerved by the inhabitants, renders them very agreeable retreats from the intenſe heat which is conſtant here.

1790. July.

No European can do without a carriage, the paint of which, and his other equipage, denote the rank of the owner; to whom the neceſſary reſpect muſt be paid by people of an inferior rank; for a noncompliance with this cuſtom, a fine is levied by the Fiſcal. The town is but indifferently defended, as the fortifications are irregular and extenſive, and the walls (which are painted) are very low: it is ſurrounded with a deep and wide canal, but the beſt defence of this ſettlement is its extreme unhealthineſs. The citadel, or caſtle, ſtands on the right of the city: in it are depoſited a vaſt quantity of cannon and other munitions of war: the governor-general, and the reſt of the company's ſervants, have apartments in it, and here the governor and council meet twice a week, to tranſact public buſineſs.

The police of this city is ſtrictly attended to, and is calculated to preſerve great order and regularity; but it is attended with ſome mortifying and degrading circumſtances, which Europeans find great difficulty and repugnance in complying with; however, the inhabitants and the company's ſervants muſt obſerve its rules with a ſcrupulous attention, not only to avoid paying the fines, but alſo to avoid the reſentment of thoſe who have it entirely in their power to advance or retard their promotion.

The ſuburbs are inhabited by the Chineſe and Portugueſe: the houſes of the former are very numerous, but they are low and dirty. The number of Chineſe reſident in and about Batavia in 1788, was 200,000: it is theſe people who are the ſupport of this important ſettlement; and if they were obliged to abandon it by any impolitic meaſure, it would ſoon loſe its ſplendor. The Chineſe carry on every trade and occupation; the better ſort are very rich, but they are ſubject to great exactions from the company, or their ſervants. They are ſuffered to farm the duties of exportation and importation, for which they pay the company 12,000 rix-dollars in ſilver money per month. All goods belonging to the company are exempt from duties, but thoſe of every other perſon pay eight per cent.

About three quarters of a mile from the city is the Chineſe burying-ground, conſiſting of fifteen or twenty acres: for the annual rent of this ground they pay 10,000 rix-dollars, and, at the end of every ten years, they repurchaſe it for a very great ſum, which in general is regulated by the governor and council. A perſon of conſequence aſſured me, that the Chineſe pay a tax of 20,000 rix-dollars a year, for the privilege of wearing their hair queued; and, beſides what I have already mentioned, theſe induſtrious people are ſubject to many more exactions.

CHAP. XVI. 1790. July.

The Chineſe are ſubject to a ſet of officers (appointed by the governor and council) who are Chineſe, and are previouſly choſen by that people: they are called captains and lieutenants, and hear all complaints, and their ſentence is deciſive; but caſes of property, above a certain ſum, and all felonies, are taken cognizance of by the fiſcal and court of juſtices. The police eſtabliſhed among them is ſo very good, that, except in caſes of property, the fiſcal or juſtices are ſeldom troubled with a Chineſe criminal. They trade to every part of India, and the number of large junks which arrive annually from China, is between thirty and forty. It is remarkable that the Chineſe are the only ſtrangers which are not affected by the unhealthineſs of this place: indeed, much may be ſaid in favour of their temperance and regular manner of living, although one would imagine that the cloſe manner in which a number of them live together could not fail to produce diſeaſes, but it certainly does not.

The roads, or rather handſome avenues, which lead from the different gates of the city, are lined with buildings, where nature and art have been exhauſted to render them elegant and commodious beyond deſcription: each houſe has a large garden, in which a degree of elegance and convenience is obſervable, equal to what there is in the magnificent piles which they ſurround. Theſe houſes are inhabited by the principal people of Batavia, where they paſs moſt of their time, and thoſe amongſt them who have no inducement to return to Europe, and who enjoy their health, may ſpend their days very comfortably here.

July.

The government of this iſland, and indeed of all the Dutch poſſeſſions in India, is lodged in the governor-general, who is aſſiſted by a number of counſellors, called " counſellors of India," or " *edele heerens:*" twelve of theſe counſellors muſt reſide at Batavia, but the number is not fixed; at this time, there is one who governs at each of the following places, viz. Cochin, Ceylon, Macaſſer, and at the Emperor's court at *Jamarre*, or Java, where, I am told, 400 European cavalry are kept, to *do honour* to the emperor.

The council meet every Tueſday and Friday in the council-room at the caſtle; the general preſides, but, if prevented by ill health or any other circumſtance, the director-general ſupplies his place, who, as well as the edele heerens, are received into the caſtle, and conducted to the council-room with great pomp and ceremony. Every thing relating to the civil and military government, commerce, and every other concern of the company, is tranſacted by this council, but the governor-general has a plenary power to put into execution any meaſure he may judge neceſſary for the good of the company.

The preſent governor-general, whoſe name is William Arnold Alting, has been reſident upwards of thirty years at Batavia, eleven of which he has been governor-general: I am told his private character is very amiable and reſpectable, but how any man poſſeſſed of common feelings, can ſuffer ſuch humiliations from thoſe around him, I cannot conceive. When any perſon approaches the general to ſpeak to him, his behaviour and addreſs muſt be the moſt abject imaginable, and the reſpect and profound ſubmiſſion which every ſervant of the company, and every inhabitant muſt neceſſarily aſſume on theſe occaſions, are little ſhort of the adoration paid to the Divinity: this homage is carried to ſo great a height, that when the general enters the church, although the congregation may be at prayers, yet every perſon is obliged to get up and face him until he is ſeated in his pew, bowing as he paſſes.

1790.
July.

The deference paid to the ſeveral ranks, is not confined to carriages, but extends to the cloathing of individuals, as no perſon under the rank of an *edele heeren* is permitted to wear velvet: there are a number of other diſtinctions in dreſs equally ridiculous, but they ſeem to be wearing away: a few years ago, the women were ſtrictly forbid wearing any European dreſs, and ordered to conform to the Malay cuſtom.

At the time I was at Batavia, there were only five European women on the iſland of Java, the reſt being born of Malay or Creole mothers; and it is really diſtreſſing to ſee how much they affect the manners of their Malay ſlaves in chewing beetle, and other actions equally diſagreeable. Their dreſs is a looſe white or flowered muſlin robe, which is open and large, reaching to the wriſts and neck: but if the adjuſtment of their garments does not take up much time at the toilet, the arranging of their hair makes ſufficient amends for it: they have in general very thick long black hair, which is gathered into a knot on the back part of the head, and is ſo nicely combed that not a ſingle hair is out of its place; round this a wreath of diamonds is fixed, which is more or leſs valuable, according to the circumſtances of the wearer. In the evenings, a large wreath of jeſſamine is alſo put round the hair, which gives a very agreeable perfume. Not more than two women in Batavia could ſpeak any other language than Dutch or Malay, the former of which they underſtand very imperfectly, always preferring Malay.

1790. July.

The office of ſhebander is a principal one in this place, and is a ſituation of much profit; no ſtranger can tranſact the leaſt buſineſs without his permiſſion; the exports and imports are entirely regulated by him; every boat which goes into the road pays him a certain ſum; he alſo regulates and comptrols the Chineſe in the receipt of duties: this poſt is very laborious, but is alſo very lucrative.

Nineteen thouſand pekul * of tin are brought every year from *Palambam*, or Sumatra, to the company's ſtores on *Onruſt*, which is ſent in their ſhips to China. The company ſend annually from hence to Europe 20,000 pekul of pepper, for which they pay on an average two ſtivers and an half per pound, and ſell it in Europe for fourteen ſtivers per pound: they alſo export annually 200,000 pekul of coffee, at two ſtivers and an half per pound, which is ſold in Holland at ten ſtivers per pound.

Onruſt is a very ſmall iſland, about a quarter of a mile in circumference, and ſituated about two leagues and an half from Batavia: here the company's ſhips refit and heave down, there being very good wharfs for that purpoſe, at which five ſhips may heave down at one time; there are alſo large machines for diſmaſting veſſels. Small as this iſland is, there are generally from five to ſix hundred people on it; of which number, one hundred are European carpenters, but, excepting a few officers and a few other Europeans, the reſt are ſlaves. The *baas*, or maſter carpenter, is the commandant of the iſland: an under merchant is alſo reſident here, to receive and take care of the tin, pepper, and coffee, which is brought into the company's ſtores here, from Sumatra and different parts of Borneo and Java. Onruſt is ſurrounded

---

* A pekul is equal to 130 pounds.

1790. July. by guns, and there is a kind of citadel on it; but as no troops are kept there, in the war, the carpenters were trained to the uſe of great guns.

It is ſuppoſed that Onruſt is more healthy than Batavia, and it may be ſo; but when I ſay that twenty men are conſtantly employed in making coffins for thoſe who die on this iſland, it cannot be ſuppoſed to have a very healthy ſcite.

During my ſtay at Batavia, I lived at the hotel, which was the governor-general's houſe at the time Captain Cooke was here: it is a large and ſpacious building, divided into two parts, one of which is occupied by ſtrangers, and the other by Dutch. Every perſon, who is a ſtranger, is obliged to live at this hotel: the terms are three rix-dollars a day, for which you have good lodging, and a well furniſhed table is provided. Gratitude induces me to ſay, that I received the greateſt attention and civility from many of the firſt people at Batavia, who, not content with ſhewing me every politeneſs in their power during my ſtay there, extended their good offices to me after my departure.

21. On the 21ſt of July, the *Snelheid*, a packet of 140 tons, belonging to the company, arrived at Onruſt, and I made application to the governor and council for a paſſage to Europe in that veſſel: on this, the captain of the packet was ordered to receive me, for which I paid 190 rix-dollars into the company's cheſt. The order to the captain ſpecified, that in conſideration of that ſum being paid, I was to have a paſſage to Europe in the Snelheid, and to be accommodated and victualled as a ſailor: I therefore found myſelf neceſſitated to make a further agreement with the captain for the uſe of half of his cabin, (Mr. Andrew Millar, late commiſſary of ſtores and proviſions at Port Jackſon having

1790. July. the other half) for which I was to pay him 300 rix-dollars, and my proportion of what proviſions were laid in by him, above what the company allowed.

Being informed that the packet would be diſpatched in a few days, I 31. went to Onruſt on the 31ſt, in order to be in readineſs. Lieutenant Ball expected to ſail for Port Jackſon on the 8th of Auguſt, and the ſnow which he had taken up was to be diſpatched on the 24th.

Auguſt. 4, 5. The captain of the packet having received his final orders, we ſailed from Onruſt on the 4th of Auguſt; and in the evening of the 5th, were clear of the ſtreights of Sunda.

It was now that the peſtiferous air of Batavia began to ſhew itſelf; for the veſſel had not been five days at ſea before ſix men were taken ill with the putrid fever; and very ſoon afterwards, the captain, his two mates, and all the ſailors, except four, were incapable of getting out of their beds; and what aggravated the horror of this ſituation was, that the ſurgeon, who indeed knew very little of his profeſſion, was ſo ill that he could not even help himſelf: in this dilemma, I found it abſolutely neceſſary to uſe every means for ſelf-preſervation; and having obtained the conſent of the captain (who was not yet delirious) and the chief mate, I ſpoke to the only four men who were well, and repreſented to them, that going below would ſubject them to the infection; I aſſured them that I would never go below myſelf, except on extraordinary occaſions, when I ſhould uſe every precaution againſt the infection; and I further obſerved, that the preſervation of our lives and the veſſel, with the recovery of thoſe who were ſick, depended on their conforming to my orders; and that I hoped, with God's aſſiſtance, not only to preſerve them

1790. August.

them in health, but to get the veſſel into a port. They promiſed me implicit obedience, and I began to make a tent on the after part of the quarter deck, for us to lie under. I had great difficulty to make them relinquiſh the drams of new arrack, of which they got ten a day; but this was effected, and in lieu of it, I gave to each man three large wine glaſſes of port wine, with two tea-ſpoons full of bark in each glaſs: fortunately, I had a ſmall ſupply of thoſe articles, as there were not any medicines on board. Three of the ſick men ſoon died of the putrid fever, their faces being covered with purple ſpots: I ordered them to be laſhed up in their hammocks, and hove overboard with their cloaths, making thoſe who performed that office, waſh themſelves very freely with vinegar, and fill their noſes with tobacco. The captain was now delirious, as were moſt of thoſe who were ſick.

On the 12th, I obtained the captain and chief mate's conſent to bear up for the Iſle of France, when we ſhould get into the latitude of it. The chief mate's complaint terminating in an intermitting fever, I prevailed on him to lie under the tent; and by a plentiful adminiſtration of bark and port wine, he became able to keep a day watch. 12.

On the 14th, my friend and companion Mr. Millar was taken ill, and the captain and moſt of the ſailors were dying, not having had any medicine adminiſtered to them during their illneſs: three or four among them, of a ſtrong conſtitution, were in a ſtate of raving madneſs, uttering dreadful imprecations againſt the doctor, ſo that I was obliged to order them to be laſhed in their hammocks, and they died a few days afterwards. 14.

1790. August. Being in 18° 46′ ſouth latitude, and 80° 59′ eaſt longitude, after ſome perſuaſion, the chief mate conſented to bear up for the Iſle of France; it may, indeed, be thought ſtrange that he ſhould heſitate one moment in our preſent diſtreſſing ſituation: however, going to the Iſle of France did not deſtroy the hopes he had formed, when he objected to bearing up. 27, 28. Between the 12th and the 27th, five men died; and on the 28th, Mr. Millar departed this life: the whole were carried off by a moſt malignant putrid fever.

29. On the 29th, we made the Iſland of Mauritius, and anchored the ſame day at the entrance of the north-weſt harbour. The captain and three ſailors died as we were carrying them on ſhore.

Moſt providentially, we had a ſucceſſion of the fineſt weather and the faireſt winds we could have wiſhed, from the time we left the ſtreights of Sunda until our arrival at the Iſle of France; and another great conſolation was, that the veſſel was perfectly tight.

From the direction of the wind being at ſouth-eaſt, all veſſels going to the north-weſt harbour, muſt luff cloſe round the gunner's quoin, and haul over for the iſland, taking care to avoid the reefs with which the ſhore is lined, and on which the ſurf breaks with great violence. A continuation of forts and batteries extend from the harbour's mouth as far as it is poſſible for any veſſel to fetch; though, independent of theſe forts, landing here muſt be attended with much danger, from the conſtant ſurf which breaks on the reefs already mentioned; and as the wind always blows out of the harbour, every veſſel is obliged to warp in. No veſſel ought to touch at this iſland during the hurricane months,

CHAP. XVI.

1790. Auguſt.

months *, as the harbour cannot afford ſhelter for more than ſix or eight veſſels. In 1788, ſix large ſhips were wrecked in this harbour. At this time there were lying in the harbour, *La Thetis*, of 38 guns, commanded by Compte M'Namarra, Chef de Diviſion; *La Nymphe*, 38 guns, Le Compte de Forineaux, Chef de Diviſion; *La Meduſa*, 38 guns, Le Compte de Roſſilly; three American veſſels, and a great number of French merchant ſhips.

The revolution of this iſland, which had taken place about three weeks before our arrival, was attended with great exceſſes by the people, who carried Le Compte M'Namarra to the gallows, where he was near being executed. The governor, *Le Compte de Conway*, had reſigned his government to a Monſieur *De Cauſſigny*, commandant of Bourbon, who arrived here only three days before us. Monſieur de Conway waited the equipment of La Nymphe frigate, in which ſhip he propoſed returning to France.

The town of Port Louis is large, and covers a deal of ground, but the houſes are in general paltry buildings. Here are large ſtores, and every thing neceſſary for the equipment of fleets. The number of inhabitants on the iſland, exclusive of the military, is about 8000; and blacks, 12,000.

Freſh proviſions, eſpecially butchers meat, are very ſcarce here; what there is coſts 20 ſous per pound; but turtle is procured from *St. Branden*, and ſold at a much cheaper rate.

---

* October, November, and December.

The

1790. Auguſt.

The general object of cultivation on this iſland is the indico, of which from four to five crops a year are procured: one perſon ſent to Europe 30,000 lb. in 1789, of a very ſuperior quality. Attempts have been made here to rear cochineal, as the iſland abounds with the plant which the inſects lie on, but a ſmall bird deſtroys the inſect. The ſoil of this iſland is little ſuperior to that at Port Jackſon. At the diſtance of three leagues from the port, is *le gardin du Roi*, which is kept with the utmoſt care: a gardener lives here at the King's expence, who rears the plants, and diſtributes them, gratis, to the coloniſts. This year the following plants were to be diſtributed to thoſe who choſe to aſk for them.

300	True acacias.
150	Bibeaux.
84	Avocayers.
10	Baobabs.
180	Bibaciers.
80	Bilembiers.
300	Badamiers.
17	Brindaonniers.
86	Cocoa-nut trees.
50	Camphor trees.
104	Caneficiers.
148	Caramboliers aigres.
50	Ditto - doux.
10	Quince trees.
200	Dolbiers.
20	Foccias.
4163	Clove trees.
50	Illipes.
50	Jamiers.
12	Jaquiers, large kind.
8	Jambou—boles.
3000	Jambou—roſadiers.
92	Lataniers nains de la chine.
23	Longaniers.
20	Lit-chis, groſſe eſpee.
36	Sapotes, negros de Moluquas.
30	Tata-mapacas of Madagaſcar.
3000	Small voakoas.
80	Mangoſtans.
56	Molavis.
1544	Nutmeg trees.
218	Sweet oranges.
4	Peach trees.
50	Perchers.

1790. August.

40 Rangouſtans.
400 Rouſſias.
40 Savonniers des Antillas.
80 Spirceas de la China.
300 Sagoutiers.
145 Wova-jourindis of Madagaſcar
40 Wouau guaſailliers.

It ſhould be obſerved, that 550 of the nutmeg trees were reſerved for *Cayenne*, *St. Domingo*, *Martinico*, and the Seyehilles.

I cannot omit mentioning the great civilities I received from Meſſieurs De Conway, M'Namarra, Fourneaux, Roſſilly, and in ſhort all the reſpectable people here, who all did their utmoſt to perſuade me to take my paſſage in La Nymphe frigate: Monſieur de Fourneaux very politely offered me half his cabin, and no inducement was wanting to make me accept it; beſides, there was a probability of the fever not being totally eradicated in the packet; but as I heard of a miſunderſtanding between England and Spain, I thought it my duty to remain with that veſſel. I mention this circumſtance for no other reaſon than to expreſs my gratitude to the above officers for their polite attention to me during my ſhort ſtay at this iſland.

The packet being thoroughly cleanſed, and a freſh crew entered, which was compoſed of all nations, we ſailed on the 21ſt of September, September. 21. having only four ſailors on board out of the twenty-ſix, which came from Batavia, the reſt being either dead, or left at the hoſpital with little hopes of recovery. Nothing material happened during our paſſage from the Iſle of France until our arrival at the Cape of Good Hope, on the 9th of October. October. 9. Here I found Lieutenant Riou waiting for orders from England. As I underſtood that all veſſels belonging to the Dutch Company were ſtrictly forbid ſtopping at any port, or having commu-

CHAP. XVI. 1790. October. nication with any veſſels during their paſſage from the Cape to Amſterdam, I wrote a letter to Mr. Van de Graff, the Dutch governor, repreſenting my being charged with diſpatches, and requeſting that the captain might be permitted to heave the veſſel to, off the moſt convenient port in the Engliſh channel, in order to land me with the diſpatches: this requeſt he very readily granted, giving the captain an order for that purpoſe, and furniſhing me with a copy of it. Five large French ſhips put in here loaded with ſlaves from the eaſt coaſt of Africa, and bound to the Weſt-Indies. 20. On the 20th of October, La Nymphe frigate arrived here from the Iſle of France, and the ſame day the packet ſailed. November. 2. On the 2d of November, we paſſed the Iſland of St. Helena, with a ſtrong gale at ſouth-eaſt; and 7. on the 7th, we ſaw the Iſland of Aſcenſion. We croſſed the equator in 20° 18′ longitude weſt of London. The ſouth-eaſt trade carried us as far as 5° north latitude, when we got the north-eaſt trade, which did not come to the eaſtward of north-eaſt until we got near the weſtern iſlands. After a pleaſant voyage of two months from the Cape of Good Hope, I arrived in December 20. England on the 20th of December, having been abſent on the public ſervice, in various ſtations, and in different places, in the ſouthern hemiſphere, three years and ſeven months.

Here ends Lieutenant King's *Journal*, which, as it gives an authentic account of the firſt ſettlement of a new colony, in a very diſtant region, muſt ever be intereſting to thoſe, who delight in tracing the origin of nations. The following Narrative was taken from the official diſpatches of Governor Phillip, and forms a continuation of the hiſtory of the people and country under his charge, from the concluſion of his late Voyage to the lateſt period.

CHAPTER XVII.

The Lady Juliana Tranſport arrives at Port Jackſon.—Loſs of the Guardian.—A ſettlement made at Sydney-Cove.—A ſtate of the ſettlements at Sydney-Cove and Roſe-Hill.—A general return of male convicts, with their employments.

CHAP. XVII. 1790. June.

THE Lady Juliana tranſport, which ſailed from England in September, 1789, arrived at Port Jackſon on the 3d of June, 1790, bringing ſupplies from England, and alſo diſpatches from the Guardian at the Cape of Good Hope; which having ſailed from England in Auguſt, ſtruck unhappily on the 23d day of December, 1789, in 44° ſouth latitude, and 41° 30′ eaſt longitude, on an iſland of ice. By the unfortunate loſs of the Guardian the colony was deprived of thoſe liberal ſupplies, which had been ſent from England, the want of which threw the ſettlement back ſo much, that it will require a length of time to put it in the ſituation it would have been in, had the Guardian arrived before Governor Phillip was obliged to ſend away the Sirius, to give up labour, and to deſtroy the greateſt part of the live ſtock.

Neverthele ſs, the ſettlers had little to apprehend from the natives; againſt whom, no one ever thought any defence neceſſary, more than what out-houſes and barracks afforded: indeed, at the firſt landing, a barrier would have been very deſirable; but at that time, and for months afterwards, the ſligheſt defence could not have been made, without

CHAP. XVII.

1790. June.

out neglecting what was ſo abſolutely and immediately neceſſary, for ſecuring the ſtores and proviſions. There is, however, little reaſon to think that the natives will ever attack any building, and ſtill leſs to ſuppoſe they will attack a number of armed men: not that they want innate bravery, but they are perfectly ſenſible of the great ſuperiority of fire-arms. Setting fire to the corn was what was moſt feared, but this they had never attempted; and, as they avoided thoſe places, which were frequented by the coloniſts, it was ſeldom that any of them were now ſeen near the ſettlement. If the natives ſhould find any cattle in the woods, they undoubtedly would deſtroy them, which miſchief is all that the ſettler would have to apprehend. They naturally attack the ſtrangers, who go out to rob them of their ſpears, and of the few articles they poſſeſs; and who do this too frequently; ſince the puniſhments that the delinquents ſometimes meet with are not attended with the deſired effect.

The ſituation of Port Jackſon, between two harbours, ſo that if a ſhip fall in with the coaſt in bad weather, a few miles either to the northward or to the ſouthward, ſhe can find immediate ſhelter, is a great advantage; and it perhaps will be found hereafter, that the ſeat of government has not been improperly placed. Governor Phillip obſerves, that they, as firſt ſettlers, laboured under ſome inconvenience from not being able to employ the convicts in agriculture on the ſpot where the proviſions and ſtores were landed; but this was the only inconvenience, as having the convicts at ſome diſtance from the military was attended with many advantages.

When the governor firſt arrived, he had little time to look round him, as his inſtructions particularly pointed out, that he was not to delay the

1790. June.

the diſembarking of the people, with a view of ſearching for a better ſituation than what Botany-Bay might afford. He was obliged to look farther, but did not think himſelf at liberty to continue his ſearches after he had ſeen Sydney-Cove. Had he ſeen the country near the head of the harbour, he might have been induced to have made the ſettlement there, but nothing was known of that part of the country, until the creek which runs up to Roſe-hill was diſcovered, in a journey that the governor made to the weſtward, three months after they landed; and although he was then fully ſatisfied of the goodneſs of the ſoil, and ſaw the advantages of that ſituation, moſt of the ſtores and proviſions were landed, and it required ſome little time to do away the general opinion, that ſuch a ſituation could not be healthy, and that he was inclined to think himſelf, until he had examined the country for ſome miles round, and was ſatisfied that there was a free circulation of air, in the goodneſs of which, few places equal it. The numbers of people, who had been ſettled at Roſe-Hill, on an average for eighteen months, exceeded one hundred; and during that time they had only two deaths: a woman, who had been ſubject to a dropſy, and a marine, who had been there but a very ſhort time before he died.

It is in that part of the country, that the governor propoſed employing the convicts in agriculture, and in the neighbourhood of which, he propoſed fixing the firſt ſettlers who might be ſent out.

The impoſſibility of conveying ſtores and proviſions for any diſtance inland obliged the governor to mark out the firſt townſhip near Roſe-Hill, where there is a conſiderable extent of good land: the ſea-coaſt does not offer any ſituation within their reach at preſent, which is calculated for a town, whoſe inhabitants are to be employed in agriculture.

In

1790. June.

In order to know in what time a man might be able to cultivate a ſufficient quantity of ground to ſupport himſelf, the governor, in November, 1789, ordered a hut to be built in a good ſituation, an acre of ground to be cleared, and once turned up: it was then put into the poſſeſſion of a very induſtrious convict, who was told, if he behaved well, he ſhould have thirty acres. This man had ſaid, that the time for which he had been ſentenced was expired, and he wiſhed to ſettle: he has been induſtrious, has received ſome little aſſiſtance, and in June, 1790, informed the governor, that if one acre more were cleared for him, he would be able to ſupport himſelf after next January: this was much doubted, but it was thought he would do tolerably well, after being ſupported for eighteen months. Others may prove more intelligent, though they cannot well be more induſtrious.

The river Hawkeſbury will, no doubt, offer ſome deſirable ſituations, and the great advantages of a navigable river are obvious; but before a ſettlement can be made there, proper people to conduct it muſt be found, and they muſt be better acquainted with the country.

The Lady Juliana being the only veſſel, which was at that time in the country, Governor Phillip was obliged to ſend her to Norfolk-Iſland with a part of the proviſions; and had not that ſhip been chartered for China, he propoſed ſending the Sirius's officers and men to England in her; but this intention was laid aſide, as the maſter of her informed him, that it would be attended with a loſs of more than ſix thouſand pounds to the owners, and conſequently might occaſion an expence to government, which would exceed what attended their remaining a few months longer in the country: beſides, he was not willing to break through the charter-party, as other ſhips were coming out. As

the

1790. June.

the Lady Juliana was to touch at Norfolk-Iſland with proviſions, and one of the ſuperintendants profeſſed himſelf to underſtand the cultivation and dreſſing of the flax-plant, the governor ſent thither moſt of the women who came out in that ſhip, and he intended to ſend an equal number of male convicts, when other ſhips ſhould arrive.

Of the ſuperintendants ſent out in the Guardian, for the purpoſe of inſtructing the convicts in agriculture, five only arrived in the Lady Juliana, and of the five ſuperintendants who arrived, one only was a farmer; two ſaid that they were uſed to the farming buſineſs when ſeventeen and nineteen years of age, but they were then unable, from the knowledge they formerly obtained, to inſtruct the convicts, or direct a farm. The two gardeners were ſaid to be loſt, having left the Guardian in a ſmall boat after the unfortunate accident, which deprived the colony of her invaluable cargo.

The Neptune, Surprize, and Scarborough tranſports arrived at Port Jackſon the latter end of June, 1790, with about ſix hundred caſks of beef and pork, which were ſent round from the Guardian, and nineteen convicts, who had been tranſported in that ſhip.

In order to aſcertain the time in which it is probable the colony will be able to ſupport itſelf, it will be neceſſary to point out thoſe circumſtances, that may advance or retard the ſettlement. It will depend on the numbers who are employed in agriculture, and who, by their labour, are to provide for thoſe that make no proviſion for themſelves.

Governor Phillip did not reckon on the little labour which may be got from the women, though ſome were employed in the fields; as the greateſt

1790. July.

greateſt part would always find employment in making their own, and the men's cloathing, and in the neceſſary attention to their children. The ground, which the military may cultivate, will be for their own convenience. The providing of houſes and barracks for the additional number of officers and ſoldiers, the rebuilding of thoſe temporary ones, which were erected on their firſt arrival, and which muſt be done in the courſe of another year, as well as the building of more ſtore-houſes and huts for the convicts as they arrive, employed a conſiderable number of hands, and works of this kind will always be carrying on.

Temporary buildings on their firſt landing were abſolutely neceſſary; but they ſhould be avoided in future; as, after three or four years, the whole work is to be begun again; and the want of lime greatly increaſes the labour of building with bricks, as the builders are obliged to increaſe the thickneſs of the walls, which cannot be carried to any height; at the ſame time, if very heavy rains fall before the houſes are covered in, they are conſiderably damaged.

The annexed return will ſhew in what manner the convicts are employed at preſent; and the governor had increaſed the number of thoſe employed in clearing the land for cultivation, as far as it would be poſſible to do it before January, 1791, except by convaleſcents, from whom little labour could be expected. He hoped next year, that a very conſiderable quantity of ground would be ſown with wheat and barley: but the ſettlement has never had more than one perſon to ſuperintend the clearing and cultivating of ground for the public benefit, or who has ever been the means of bringing a ſingle buſhel of grain into the public granary. One or two others had been ſo employed for a ſhort time, but were removed, as wanting either induſtry or probity;

and

and if the perſon who has at preſent the entire management of all the convicts, who are employed in clearing and cultivating the land, ſhould be loſt, there would be no one in the ſettlement to replace him.

1790. July.

It was originally ſuppoſed that a ſufficient number of good farmers might have been found amongſt the convicts to have ſuperintended the labours of the reſt; and men have been employed who anſwer the purpoſe of preventing their ſtraggling from their work; but none of them were equal to the charge of directing the labour of a number of convicts, with whom moſt of them were connected by crimes, which they would not wiſh to have brought forward. From their former habits of life, it may eaſily be ſuppoſed, that few of the convicts would be good farmers.

From what has been ſaid, it may be ſeen how impoſſible it was to detach a body of convicts to any diſtance, if there had been any neceſſity for it. The land at Roſe-Hill is very good, and in every reſpect well calculated for arable and paſture ground, though it be loaded with timber, the removal of which requires great labour and time; but this is the caſe with the whole country, as far as had been ſeen, particular ſpots excepted. As the good land could not at preſent be cultivated by the coloniſts, it was reſerved for the firſt ſettlers that ſhould come out.

The conſequence of a failure of a crop, when the colony can no longer expect ſupplies from Great-Britain, is obvious; and to guard againſt ſuch conſequences, it would be of great uſe to have a few ſettlers, to whom great encouragement ſhould be given. The fixing the firſt ſettlers in townſhips would, indeed, tend to prevent that increaſe of live ſtock, which might be raiſed in farms at a diſtance from villages, where the ſtock would be leſs liable to ſuffer from the depredations, which

may

CHAP. XVII.

1790. July.

may be expected from the ſoldier and the convict, and againſt which there is no effectual ſecurity.

The many untoward circumſtances which the colony had hitherto met with were done away; and at length there was reaſon to hope, that after two years from July, 1790, they would want no farther ſupply of flour, though various accidents might render a ſupply neceſſary after that period. How long a regular ſupply of beef and pork would be neceſſary depended on the quantity of live ſtock which might be introduced into the ſettlement, and on its increaſe, of which no judgment could be formed. A town was now laid out at Roſe-Hill, of which the principal ſtreet was to be occupied by the convicts: the huts were building at the diſtance of one hundred feet from each other, and each hut was to contain ten convicts. In theſe huts they will live more comfortably than they could poſſibly do if numbers were confined together in larger buildings; and having good gardens to cultivate, and frequent opportunities to exchange vegetables for little neceſſaries which the ſtores do not furniſh; theſe accommodations will make them feel the benefits they may draw from their induſtry. Some few inconveniences, indeed, enſue from the convicts being ſo much diſperſed, but their being indulged with having their own gardens is a ſpur to induſtry, which they would not have, if employed in a public garden, though entirely for their own benefits, as they never ſeemed to think it was their own; and it was not obſerved, that many of thoſe who had been for ſome months in huts, and conſequently were more at liberty than they would be if numbers were confined together, had abuſed the confidence placed in them, any farther than the robbing of a garden.

A GENERAL RETURN of MALE CONVICTS, with their reſpective employments, on the 23d of July, 1790.

AT SYDNEY.

40	Making bricks and tiles.
50	Bringing in bricks, &c. for the new ſtore-houſe.
19	Bricklayers and labourers employed in building a ſtore-houſe and huts at Roſe-Hill.
8	Carpenters employed at the new ſtore, and in building huts at Roſe-Hill.
9	Men who can work with the axe, and who aſſiſt the carpenters.
2	Sawyers.
9	Smiths.
10	Watchmen.
40	Receiving ſtores and proviſions from the ſhips.
12	Employed on the roads—moſtly convaleſcents.
18	Bringing in timber.
4	Stone-maſons.
10	Employed in the boats.
3	Wheelwrights.
6	Employed in the ſtores.
38	Employed by the officers of the civil and military departments at their farms. Theſe men will be employed for the public when the relief takes place.
2	Aſſiſtants to the provoſt marſhal.
3	Gardeners and labourers employed by the governor.
3	Coopers.
6	Shoe-makers.
4	Taylors.
5	Bakers.
6	Attending the ſick at the hoſpital.
3	Barbers.
3	Gardeners, and others, employed at the hoſpital.
3	Employed by the governor bringing in of wood, &c.
316	
413	Under medical treatment.
729	

AT ROSE-HILL.

2	Employed at the ſtore.
3	Servants to the three ſuperintendants.
1	Employed in taking care of the ſtock.
2	Employed at the hoſpital.
5	Men who work with the axe in building huts.
1	Baker.
1	Cook.
4	Boys variouſly employed.
1	Aſſiſtant to the provoſt marſhal.
3	Thatchers.
1	Servant to the ſtore-keepers.
1	Ditto to the aſſiſtant ſurgeon.
4	Overſeers.
25	Sick.
113	Clearing and cultivating the ground.
12	Sawyers.
179	

CHAPTER XVIII.

An excurſion into the country.—An interview with the natives.—Governor Phillip wounded with a ſpear.—A ſecond interview with the natives.—Occurrences on that occcaſion.—Five convicts effect their eſcape in a boat.—The ſettlement viſited by the natives.—Their cuſtoms.—Arrival of the Supply from Batavia.

CHAP. XVIII. 1790. Auguſt.

TOWARDS the latter end of Auguſt, 1790, ſeveral officers made an excurſion into the country, and going ſouth-ſouth-weſt from Proſpect-Hill for twenty miles, they came to a run of water, which they ſuppoſed to be the head of the Nepean river. They deſcribed the country through which they paſſed to be good land for ten miles, the reſt ordinary ground, interſected by deep ravines and a large marſh, which they ſuppoſed, formed a very extenſive piece of water, after heavy rains.

A number of convicts going out to ſearch for ſweet tea, ſome of them ſeparated from the reſt, and were loſt in the woods for ſeveral days, and one of them was never heard of afterwards. It is hardly poſſible to conceive the obſtinacy and inattention of many of theſe people, even in matters which concern only their own ſafety.

1790. September.

In the morning of the 7th of September, Governor Phillip went down the harbour to fix on a ſpot for raiſing a brick column, which might point out the entrance to ſhips which were unacquainted with the coaſt, as the flag-ſtaff could not be ſeen by veſſels until they drew very near the land, and was alſo liable to be blown down.

A riſing ground at the diſtance of a cable's length from the ſouth head was choſen, and the ſtone neceſſary for the baſe of the column being already cut, that work was immediately begun, and the party were returning to Sydney, when the governor was informed by ſome officers, who had landed in Manly-Bay, and who were going on a ſhooting excurſion, that they had ſeen *Bannelong*, a native who had ran away from the ſettlement, and who had enquired after all his friends, and received ſeveral preſents. It ſeems Bannelong, and *Colebe*, another native who had eſcaped from the ſettlement, with near two hundred others, were aſſembled in Manly-Bay to feaſt on a dead whale which was lying on the beach. Bannelong ſent a large piece of it to the governor, as a preſent, which the ſailors had in the boat: he was very glad to ſee thoſe he knew of the party, particularly a native boy named *Nanbarre*, but ſeemed afraid of being retaken, and would not permit any one to come ſo near as to lay their hands on him.

As Governor Phillip had always been deſirous of meeting with this man, and had ſought an opportunity from the day he left his houſe, he returned to the look-out, and collecting every little thing which was likely to pleaſe him, went to the ſpot where he had been ſeen. Several natives appeared on the beach as the governor's boat rowed into the bay, but on its nearer approach, they retired amongſt the trees.

CHAP. XVIII. 1790. September.

It had ever been the governor's opinion, and what he had obſerved of theſe people confirmed it, that the beſt means of obtaining the confidence of a native was by example, and by placing confidence in him; with this purpoſe, he left the judge-advocate and Lieutenant Waterhouſe, who had accompanied him in the boat, and landed himſelf, followed only by a ſeaman who had ſome beef and bread, with a few other articles which he was deſirous of giving to ſuch of the natives as might join him: after calling repeatedly on his old acquaintance by all his names, he was anſwered by a native who appeared with ſeveral others at a diſtance, and as he increaſed his diſtance from the boat, the native approached nearer, and took a number of little preſents, on their being laid down at the diſtance of a few paces; but he would not come near the governor, although in anſwer to the queſtion—"where was Bannelong?" he repeatedly ſaid he was the man; this, however, could not be believed, as he was ſo much altered: at length a bottle was held up, and on his being aſked, what it was in his own language, he anſwered, "*the King*;" for as he had always heard his Majeſty's health drank in the firſt glaſs after dinner at the governor's table, and had been made to repeat the word before he drank his own glaſs of wine, he ſuppoſed the liquor was named "the King;" and though he afterwards knew it was called wine, yet he would frequently call it King. This convinced the governor that it could be no other than Bannelong, and every method was tried to entice him to come near, but he always retired on their approaching him nearer than he wiſhed, ſo that they were preſently out of ſight of the boat, though at no great diſtance from it; but on eight or ten of the natives placing themſelves in a ſituation to prevent Bannelong being carried off, had it been attempted, he came up, together with Colebe, and held out his hand; but he was ſo changed, and appeared ſo poor and miſerable, that even then there was a doubt whether

CHAP. XVIII. 1790. September.

whether he were the man, though Colebe was well known. After ſome converſation, Governor Phillip went down to the beach, and the two officers came on ſhore; the boat's crew, with the arms, were ſtill in the boat, for as the natives kept the poſition they had taken, which ſhewed they were under ſome apprehenſions, he was afraid of alarming them. Bannelong appeared glad to ſee his old acquaintances; he was very chearful, and repeatedly ſhook hands with them, aſking for hatchets and cloaths, which were promiſed to be brought him in two days: he pointed to a ſmall fire which was burning near them, and ſaid he ſhould ſleep there the two nights until the governor's return. Knives, hats, and various other articles were given to him and Colebe; and the latter, laughing, ſhewed them that he had got the iron from his leg by which he had been ſecured when at the ſettlement: he alſo ſeemed glad to ſee his former acquaintances, and made himſelf very merry at the manner of his friend Bannelong's getting away from Sydney, by laying his head on his hand, ſhutting his eyes, and ſaying, "Governor *nangorar*," (aſleep) and imitating the manner in which his companion had ran off.

The governor and his party now began to retire towards the beach, when they were joined by a ſtout, corpulent native who had been for ſome time ſtanding at a ſmall diſtance; he approached them under ſtrong marks of fear, but this ſoon ſubſided on his being treated in a friendly manner, and he became very converſable: he ſhewed them a wound he had received in his back with a ſpear; Bannelong alſo was deſirous of ſhewing that he had been wounded in various parts of the body ſince he left the ſettlement; one of his wounds was made with a ſpear which went through his left arm, and was pretty well-healed, but another dangerous one over the left eye was not in ſo good a ſtate: theſe wounds, he ſaid, were received at Botany-Bay. After a pretty

long

CHAP. XVIII.

1790. September.

long converſation, our party were going away, but they were detained by Bannelong, who was ſtill ſolicitous to talk about the hatchets and cloaths he was to have ſent him in two days, and a native who had been ſtanding for ſome time at the diſtance of twenty or thirty yards, was pointed out by him in a manner which ſhewed he wiſhed him to be taken notice of; on this, the governor advanced towards him; and on the man's making ſigns that he ſhould not come near, and appearing to be afraid, he threw his ſword down, ſtill advancing towards him, at the ſame time opening his hands to ſhew that he had no arms.

In the courſe of this interview, they had ſtopped near a ſpear which was lying on the graſs, and which Bannelong took up; it was longer than common, and appeared to be a very curious one, being barbed and pointed with hard wood; this exciting Governor Phillip's curioſity, he aſked Bannelong for it; but inſtead of complying with this requeſt, he took it where the ſtranger was ſtanding, threw it down, and taking a common ſhort ſpear from a native who, with ſeveral others, ſtood at ſome diſtance behind him, he preſented that and a club to the governor, which gave reaſon to ſuppoſe that the ſpear which had been aſked for did not belong to him. As Governor Phillip advanced towards the man whoſe fears he wiſhed to remove, he took up the ſpear in queſtion, and fixing it in a throwing-ſtick, appeared to ſtand on his defence; but as there was no reaſon to ſuppoſe he would throw it without the leaſt provocation, and when he was ſo near thoſe with whom our party were on ſuch friendly terms, the governor made a ſign for him to lay it down, and continued to approach him, at the ſame time repeating the words—*weree weree*, which the natives uſe when they wiſh any thing not to be done that diſpleaſes them; notwithſtanding this, the native, ſtepping back with his right leg, threw the ſpear with great violence,

and

1790. September.

and it ſtruck againſt Governor Phillip's collar bone, cloſe to which it entered, and the barb came out cloſe to the third vertebræ of the back. Immediately after throwing the ſpear, the native ran off, as did Bannelong and Colebe, with thoſe that were ſtanding to the right and left; and the latter, in their retreat, threw ſeveral ſpears, which, however, did no farther miſchief. As bringing any arms on ſhore would probably have prevented an interview taking place, the muſquets had been left in the boat; but the governor having a piſtol in his pocket, he diſcharged it as he went down to the beach, as ſeveral of the natives ſtopped at no great diſtance, and the cockſwain coming up at the ſame inſtant, fired a muſquet, though there was no reaſon to apprehend the natives meant to moleſt them any farther.

The conduct of this ſavage may be ſuppoſed to do away any idea that had been formed of the natives not abuſing a confidence placed in them; and yet, there is no great reaſon to draw that inference from the accident juſt mentioned; for, it ſhould be remembered that the man who wounded Governor Phillip was a ſtranger, and might fear their taking him away, as they had carried off others; againſt which he might not think their numbers a ſufficient ſecurity; beſides, he had not joined the party, nor probably thought the friendſhip, which ſubſiſted between them and others of a different tribe, any way binding on him; for it is ſuppoſed the different tribes are in every reſpect perfectly independant of each other. This man had ſtood for ſome time peaceably and quietly, and the governor certainly was more in his power before he went to call the officers out of the boat, than at the time the ſpear was thrown; it is therefore moſt likely that the action proceeded from a momentary impulſe of fear; but the behaviour of Bannelong on this occaſion is not ſo eaſily to be accounted for; he never attempted to interfere when

the

CHAP. XVII.

1790. September.

the man took the ſpear up, or ſaid a ſingle word to prevent him from throwing it; he poſſibly did not think the ſpear would be thrown, and the whole was but the buſineſs of a moment.

A few minutes before this affair happened, nineteen of the natives had been counted round our party, and the poſition they took ſhewed their judgment: on the ground where Bannelong and Colebe joined them, the trees ſtood at the diſtance of forty or fifty feet from each other, and, had the natives kept together, ſhelter might have been found from their ſpears behind a tree; but whilſt four of them remained in front, at the diſtance of forty yards, four or five others placed themſelves on the right, and the ſame number on the left, at about the ſame diſtance; others again were planted between them and the beach, at the diſtance of ten or fifteen yards, which rendered it impoſſible either to carry off their companions or to gain ſhelter from their ſpears, if hoſtilities commenced; and though theſe people do not always keep their ſpears in their hands, they are ſeldom without their throwing-ſticks, and generally have a ſpear lying near them in the graſs, which they move with their feet as they change their ground: however, it is not likely that this diſpoſition was made with any bad intention, but merely as a ſecurity for Bannelong and Colebe; indeed, theſe men directed the manœuvre and waited till it was made, before they came near enough to ſhake hands.

It may naturally be ſuppoſed that many would be deſirous of puniſhing what was generally deemed an act of treachery, but Governor Phillip did not ſee the tranſaction in that light, and as ſoon as he arrived at Sydney, he gave the neceſſary directions to prevent any of the natives being fired on, unleſs they were the aggreſſors, by throwing ſpears; and,

CHAP. XVIII. 1790. September.

in order to prevent the party who were out on a ſhooting excurſion from meeting with an attack of a ſimilar nature, an officer and ſome ſoldiers were ſent after them: they returned the next day, and coming by the place where the accident happened, ſome of the natives appeared on an eminence; on their being aſked who had wounded the governor, they named a man, or a tribe, who reſided to the northward: the boy, Nanbarre, was their interpreter, and he ſaid the man's name was *Caregal*, and that he lived at, or near Broken-Bay. Nanbarre was alſo directed to enquire after Bannelong and Colebe, and thoſe to whom the queſtion was put, pointed to ſome people at a diſtance. One of theſe natives threw a ſpear to an officer who aſked for it, and this he did in ſuch a manner that very particularly marked the care he took it ſhould not fall near any perſon. It may be thought remarkable that, after what had happened, the natives ſhould appear in the ſight of ſeventeen armed men; and what was more extraordinary, the cockſwains of the two boats which lay at anchor all night near the beach, with ſeveral ſoldiers in them, ſaid, that after the party they landed were gone off, the natives returned, made up ſome fires, and ſlept there all night; but, as the officer who went to bring home the party that were out a ſhooting, found by the marks on the ſand, when he was returning the next morning, that he had been followed by three men and a dog, it is probable that they had others looking out likewiſe, and had the boats approached the beach in the night, they would have immediately fled into the woods. It was Governor Phillip's intention, as ſoon as he ſhould be able to go out, to endeavour to find Bannelong, and, if poſſible, to have the man given up who wounded him, or ſome of his tribe; not with a view of inflicting any puniſhment, but of detaining one or more of theſe people till they underſtood each other's language.

CHAP. XVIII.

1790. September.

Some days after this affair, as ſeveral officers were going down the harbour, they ſaw ſome natives, and amongſt them Bannelong and his wife; on this, the boat's head was put to the rocks, and he came down, ſhook hands with ſeveral of the party, and enquired if the governor was dead; they told him no; on which he promiſed to come and ſee him; ſaid he had beat the man who wounded him, and whoſe name he told them was *Wil-le-me-ring*, of the tribe of Kay-yee-my, the place were the governor was wounded.

The native boy and girl were in the boat, and through them this converſation was held: the girl pointed out one of the natives who ſhe ſaid was her father: none of theſe people ſhewed any ſigns of fear, though they ſaw the officers were armed, and the girl was very deſirous of remaining with them; ſhe was now of an age to want to form a connection with the other ſex, which ſhe had no opportunity of doing in the clergyman's family where ſhe lived, and very innocently told him, when ſhe aſked to go away, that ſhe wanted to be married. As it would be difficult to prevent her getting away, if ſhe was determined to go, it was thought moſt prudent to conſent to her leaving the ſettlement, and ſhe was told that ſhe would be permitted to go, and to take all her cloaths with her; and that whenever ſhe choſe to come and ſee her friends, whatever ſhe wiſhed for ſhould be given her; at the ſame time, ſeveral reaſons were urged, that were likely to induce her to remain in her preſent ſituation a few months longer, as ſhe did not ſufficiently underſtand the language to explain their intentions towards the natives ſo fully as could have been wiſhed.

On the 16th of September, a ſhoal of fiſh appeared on the coaſt, which extended as far as the eye could reach, and part of them entering the harbour

1790. September.

bour, as many were caught at two hauls with the ſeine, as ſerved the whole ſettlement: there were not leſs than three thouſand, which, on an average, weighed about five pounds each. As a party were going to viſit Bannelong, ſome fiſh were ſent him, which he received, and appeared free from any apprehenſions; and the ſame afternoon, the commiſſary and Governor Phillip's orderly ſerjeant, for whom he had always ſhewed great friendſhip, went with an additional ſupply: they found him on the rocks with his wife, who was fiſhing, and though on their firſt approach he ran into the woods, yet as ſoon as he knew them he returned, and joined them when they landed, bringing down his wife, as he had done to thoſe who viſited him before, and on theſe occaſions, he ſhewed that he was ſtill fond of a glaſs of wine.

Governor Phillip was ſo well recovered of his wound, as to be able to go in a boat on the 17th, to the place where Bannelong and his wife then reſided: he found nine natives on the ſpot, who informed him that Bannelong was out a fiſhing; the native girl was in the boat, and her father being among the natives, a hatchet and ſome fiſh were given him; in return for which, he gave the governor a ſhort ſpear that had been pointed with a knife, which the natives now uſed when they could procure one, in preference to the ſhell. The party had juſt left theſe people, and were going farther in queſt of Bannelong, when they perceived four canoes coming towards them, in one of which was the perſon they wanted; on this they returned to the Cove. As ſoon as Bannelong had laid up his canoe, he came to the boat, and held up both his hands, to ſhew that he had no arms: preſently afterwards, the party landed, and he joined them very readily, aſked Governor Phillip where he was wounded, and ſaid that he had beat the man who wounded him, and whoſe name he repeated: being told that the man would be

1790. September.

killed for this treacherous action, he deſired it might be done. A hatchet, ſome fiſhing-lines, and ſeveral other articles were given him, and he wanted to have ſome preſents that were brought for his wife *Ba-rang-aroo*, but this being refuſed, he readily went to fetch her: a petticoat, and ſeveral other little preſents were given to the lady, and a red jacket with a ſilver epaulet, which Bannelong uſed to wear when at the ſettlement, were now given him, which pleaſed him more than any thing elſe: on being aſked to dine with Governor Phillip the next day, he readily conſented, and promiſed to bring his wife: he likewiſe pointed out a youth and two men to whom hatchets had been given, and ſaid he would bring them with him alſo.

Bannelong's wife, Ba-rang-aroo, appeared to be older than himſelf, and had had two children by a former huſband, both of which were dead: this probably was the woman he had ſo often mentioned when at the ſettlement, and whom he had taken as a wife ſince he left it; ſhe likewiſe had been twice wounded by ſpears, one of which had paſſed through her thigh.

Though Bannelong probably might be glad that Governor Phillip was not killed, yet there is no doubt but that the natives throw their ſpears, and take a life in their quarrels, which are very frequent, as readily as the lower claſs of people in England ſtrip to box, and think as little of the conſequences.

Mau-go-ran, the father of the native girl who lived with the clergyman, had a bad wound on the back of his head, which he told the ſurgeon who dreſſed it, was done by a ſpear: it ſeems a diſpute had taken place amongſt theſe people, about ſharing the whale, in which ſeveral lives

1790. September.

were loſt, and this man got his wound; and on the girl naming to her father a youth at *Kay-yee-my*, who ſhe ſaid would marry her, he told her not to go there, for they had quarrelled, and would throw ſpears, and that they would alſo throw ſpears at any white man; indeed, if this man's information could be depended on, the natives were very angry at ſo many people being ſent to Roſe-hill; certain it is, that wherever our coloniſts fix themſelves, the natives are obliged to leave that part of the country.

The weather being now very dry, the natives were employed in burning the graſs on the north ſhore oppoſite to Sydney, in order to catch rats and other animals, whilſt the women were employed in fiſhing: this is their conſtant practice in dry weather.

Though Bannelong did not pay Governor Phillip a viſit, as he had promiſed, he readily joined thoſe he ſaw in different parts of the harbour, notwithſtanding they were armed, and went in his canoe to the long-boat, though he ſaw ſeveral muſquets in her: his wife was along with him in the canoe, and he gave thoſe in the boat to underſtand that he would pay the governor a viſit; probably the fear of being detained had hitherto prevented him, but whilſt there was the leaſt chance of his coming voluntarily, Governor Phillip was not willing to take him a ſecond time by force, as it was likely he would ſoon be reconciled to paſs a conſiderable part of his time at Sydney, when he found he could be his own maſter, and go and come when he pleaſed.

On the 19th, Governor Phillip went to Roſe-hill and returned to Sydney in the evening. The corn looked better than could be expected; but, the earth was ſo parched up by the dry weather that they could not

get

CHAP. XVIII.

1790. September.

get the remainder of their Indian corn into the ground until ſome rain fell. The weather for the laſt fortnight had frequently been cloudy and unſettled, and ſome light ſhowers of rain had fallen at different times, but very little compared to what the ground required, or what might have been expected at this ſeaſon. In the night of the 24th it began to rain, and ſome ſmart ſhowers fell the next day, which enabled them to ſow the remainder of their Indian corn; it was alſo of great ſervice to the wheat and the vegetables in the gardens.

The column intended as a mark for the entrance of the harbour was now finiſhed; it ſtands (as has already been obſerved,) on a cliff, a cable's length from the ſouth-head: it is a brick column on a ſtone baſe, and riſes to the height of thirty feet.

In the night of the 26th of September, five convicts took a punt from Roſe-Hill, in which they came down to the look-out, where they exchanged the punt for a four-oared boat, and got off undiſcovered. Theſe people certainly meant to go along the coaſt to the northward, and to attempt getting to ſome of the Friendly iſlands; but this project muſt be almoſt impoſſible, and there was every reaſon to ſuppoſe they would periſh in a very few days.

As Governor Phillip and a party were going to Roſe-Hill towards the latter end of September, a native was ſeen on one of the points; and being aſked where Bannelong was, he replied, *Memilla* (at Memill): on this, they rowed up to the iſland, and when they drew near the rocks, Bannelong came down to the boat, and brought his wife without the leaſt appearance of fear, though they were the only perſons on the iſland. There was no fiſh in the boat, but they were glad of ſome bread, and preſently afterwards the governor and his party left them, and from the confidence Bannelong now placed in his viſitors, there was no doubt but he would ſoon come to the ſettlement as uſual. On the governor's return, two days after this meeting, Bannelong had left the iſland. The governor again went to Roſe-Hill on the 6th of October, and on his return he was repeatedly called to by Bannelong, who was on the north ſhore with ſeveral officers; and the ſurgeon, in whom he placed great confidence, being of the party, perſuaded him to come over to the governor: he brought three natives in his canoe, and they were all well pleaſed with hatchets and fiſhing-lines which were given them. It ſeems Bannelong's wife had oppoſed his coming, and finding her tears had no effect, ſhe flew into a violent paſſion, and broke a very fine fiz-gig, for which ſhe would probably have been very ſeverely chaſtiſed on her huſband's return, but for the interference of the ſurgeon, who carried theſe people back to their cave on the north ſhore, where they intended to reſide for ſome time. Bannelong appeared very much at his eaſe, and not under the leaſt apprehenſion of being detained; promiſing, when he went away, to bring his wife over, which he did two days afterwards: his ſiſter and two men came likewiſe, and a third ſoon followed: blankets, and ſome cloathing were given them, and each had a belly-full of fiſh; Bannelong ſat down to dinner with Governor Phillip, and drank his wine and coffee as uſual. The governor bought a ſpear from one of his viſitants, and endeavoured to make them underſtand that ſpears, lines, birds, or any thing they brought ſhould always be purchaſed; at the ſame time he promiſed Bannelong a ſhield, for which he was to bring a ſpear in return, as accuſtoming theſe people to barter was judged the moſt likely means of bringing them to reſide amongſt the coloniſts. The next day, a large party came over for the ſhield, but it was not finiſhed: two men of this

1790.
October.

party

CHAP. XVIII.

1790. October.

party were owned by the native girl, who lived with the clergyman, as her brothers, and for whom ſhe procured two hatchets, which appeared to be the moſt valuable articles that could be given them. When Bannelong came for his preſent, thoſe who accompanied him, after ſtaying a ſhort time, went away, but he ſtaid dinner, and left the place highly delighted with his ſhield, which being made of ſole leather and covered with tin, was likely to reſiſt the force of their ſpears. As it was late in the afternoon before Bannelong thought of departing, his wife and ſiſter, with two men, came over in their canoes to fetch him, ſo that there was every appearance of theſe people being perfectly reconciled, and no doubt could be entertained but that they would viſit the ſettlement as frequently as could be wiſhed.

Some days after this interview, a canoe with Bannelong's ſiſter and ſeveral young people coming to one of the points of the cove, the girl who had now lived ſeventeen months with the clergyman's wife, joined them, and was ſo deſirous of going away that it was conſented to: the next day ſhe was ſeen naked in a canoe, but ſhe put on a petticoat before ſhe joined the clergyman and ſome others who went to viſit her; ſhe appeared to be pleaſed with having her liberty, and the boy, Nanbarre, who was of the party that went to ſee her, now wiſhed to ſtay with the natives all night; he was left behind, but the next morning he returned to the ſurgeon, with whom he lived, and having fared but badly, did not ſeem inclined to go to them again.

The very little rain, which had fallen ſince the latter end of June, had deſtroyed all their hopes of good crops, and which they had every reaſon to expect till the beginning of September: at preſent, there was the appearance of rain, though it was feared, that it would come too late to be of any great ſervice to the corn, though it might ſave the few vegetables they had in the gardens which were parched up. Some rain fell on the 14th and 15th of October, but it was barely ſufficient to refreſh the ground.

The natives now viſited the ſettlement daily, and Bannelong, who had not been there for ſeveral days, came early in the morning of the 17th, but took leave of Governor Phillip after breakfaſt, ſaying, that he was going a great way off, and would return, with two young men who were with him, after three days: there was reaſon to ſuppoſe that he was going to fight.

If the natives of this country be leſs civiliſed than the inhabitants of the neighbouring iſlands, they are much honeſter; for they very ſeldom attempt to take any thing by ſtealth; and, it is certain, that when a thief is caught, they beat him to death with ſticks. On the 18th, Governor Phillip was informed, that Colebe, with two little girls and two young men who had before been at the ſettlement, were waiting at the next cove to ſee him; on this, he went to the place: a hatchet was, as uſual, deſired and given, and Colebe promiſed to come to dinner the next day.

A convict had been miſſing ſome time, and was reported to have been killed by the natives: thoſe who could have given any information of this man muſt have been with him, and conſequently expected puniſhment, if they were known, for having left their huts contrary to orders; it was, therefore, impoſſible to fix the report on any individual, and no information could be gained by thoſe who were ſent to ſearch the country for ſome miles round; but two parties of the natives had been

ſeen

CHAP. XVIII.

1790. October.

ſeen, one party conſiſting of about forty, the other not more than half that number: ſoon afterwards, Bannelong, with fixteen men and boys, were met by a ſerjeant and three men who had been ſent after the convict that was miſſing; Bannelong preſſed them very much to return with him and kill a native who was well known from having loſt an eye, and who was ſuppoſed to be a leader of the tribe that reſide about Botany-Bay; but this requeſt not being complied with, the natives continued their route, and Colebe, who was of the party, came to dine with the governor as he had promiſed, Bannelong and ſeveral others accompanying him. At dinner, Bannelong obſerved that his ſhield was a good one, and ſaid, that he had been to fight the man who had ſome time before wounded him, and that his ſpear had gone through both the ſhield and hand of his antagoniſt; he alſo ſaid, that the people he had been to fight with had killed the man who was loſt: however, admitting that to be the caſe, it is more than probable that he had been found by the natives ſtealing their ſpears or gum, and which the convicts continued to procure, and contrive to ſecrete until ſhips arrive.

On the 18th of October, the Supply armed tender returned from Batavia: they had loſt a lieutenant, the gunner of the Sirius, and ſeveral ſeamen at that unhealthy ſettlement. The commander of the Supply had intended to go through the ſtreights of Macaſſer; but when to the weſtward of Kercolang, meeting with ſtrong gales from the weſtward, he bore away to the ſouthward, running down near the ſmall iſlands which are on the weſtern coaſt of Gillola; and going to the weſtward of the iſland of Bouro, to the ſouthward of Bouton, and between Salayer and Celebes, had fine weather and favourable winds.

1790. October.

Ships leaving the coaſt of New South Wales for Batavia, between the months of April and September, ſhould keep to the ſouthward, and go between New Guinea and Gillola; they then might make their paſſage in ſeven or eight weeks, probably in leſs time. The Supply was eighty days on her paſſage, and ſixty-four on her return. On the 28th of October, two convicts ſuffered death for robbing a hut, and dangerouſly wounding a man who endeavoured to prevent their carrying away his property.

The ſettlement had now ſome heavy ſhowers of rain, and the weather continued ſhowery for ſeveral days, but the long drought had deſtroyed a very conſiderable part of the wheat and barley.

The native girl, who had left the ſettlement, returned, after being abſent fourteen days; but though ſhe appeared to have fared badly, and had been beat by her friend Colebe, yet ſhe would not remain at Sydney more than two days, after which ſhe returned to her companions.

It now appeared, that Governor Phillip did not wrong the natives in ſuppoſing that they treated their women with very little tenderneſs; for Bannelong had beat his wife twice very ſeverely in a ſhort time, and for which, as far as could be learnt from the girl, he had very little reaſon: ſtill ſhe appeared very fond of him, and he profeſſed great affection for her, but laughed when he was told that it was wrong to beat a woman: he now viſited the ſettlement daily, with his wife, ſeveral children, and half a dozen of his friends, and Colebe was generally one of the party.

Several of theſe people had recently a diſpute, in which one of them received two ſevere wounds in the head from a ſpear, and two others

CHAP. XVIII.

1790. October.

were wounded in the head by hatchets; but the parties appeared two days after the affray as good friends as ever.

It has already been obſerved, that the natives have ſome idea of a future ſtate, and that they believe in ſpirits; the following circumſtance leaves no doubt but that they likewiſe believe in charms:—Bannelong's wife one day complaining of a pain in the belly, went to the fire and ſat down with her huſband, who, notwithſtanding his beating her occaſionally, ſeemed to expreſs great ſorrow on ſeeing her ill, and after blowing on his hand, he warmed it, and then applied it to the part affected; beginning at the ſame time a ſong, which was probably calculated for the occaſion: a piece of flannel being warmed and applied by a bye-ſtander, rendered the warming his hand unneceſſary, but he continued his ſong, always keeping his mouth very near to the part affected, and frequently ſtopping to blow on it, making a noiſe after blowing in imitation of the barking of a dog; but though he blew ſeveral times, he only made that noiſe once at every pauſe, and then continued his ſong, the woman always making ſhort reſponſes whenever he ceaſed to blow and bark. How long this ceremony would have continued was uncertain, for Governor Phillip ſent for the doctor, and ſhe was perſuaded to take a little tincture of rhubarb, which gave her relief, and ſo put an end to the buſineſs.

Bannelong, with his wife and two children, who appeared to have been adopted by him when their parents died, now lived in a hut built for them on the eaſtern point of the cove; they were frequently viſited by many of the natives, ſome of whom daily came to the barracks: all of them were very fond of bread, and they now found the advantage of coming amongſt the ſettlers.

The

CHAP. XVIII.

1790. October.

The Supply immediately after her arrival began to refit, as Governor Phillip was deſirous of ſending to Norfolk Iſland ſome proviſions, and many little articles which were wanted, and with which he now had it in his power to ſupply them; but on ſtripping the lower maſts, the foremaſt was found to be ſo bad that it was neceſſary to get it out, and when examined, it proved to be ſo much decayed that they were obliged to cut ſeveral feet off the head of the maſt, and ſeveral feet from the heel: the tops, likewiſe, were ſo much decayed, that they could not be repaired, ſo that new ones were to be made.

It had hitherto been the opinion at Sydney, that the cuſtom of loſing the front tooth amongſt the natives was confined to the men only, but a woman was lately ſeen who had loſt the front tooth, and two women were met with who had the ſeptum of the noſe perforated; one of them was Barangaroo, who now viſited the ſettlement daily, in company with her huſband, and ſeemed to be pleaſed as though ſhe thought herſelf dreſt when her noſe was occaſionally ornamented with a ſmall bone or a bit of ſtick: ſhe is very ſtrait and exceeding well made; her features are good, and though ſhe goes entirely naked, yet there is ſuch an air of innocence about her that cloathing ſcarcely appears neceſſary.

Theſe people are frequently ornamented, or, to ſpeak more properly, disfigured with broad white marks under the eyes and on the breaſts; but they ſeem to have another motive for uſing this mode of ornament, beſides a wiſh of appearing handſome, though as yet it had not been diſcovered. The red earth is likewiſe frequently uſed, generally about the noſe and under the eyes.

CHAPTER XIX.

Fruits in ſeaſon deſcribed.—The manners of the natives.—Diſputes with them.—Arrival of a veſſel from Batavia.

CHAP. XIX. 1790. November.

THE new moon, in the beginning of November, brought a few hours thunder, and rain for a ſhort time, which they ſtill continued greatly to want.

Several fruits peculiar to the country were now in ſeaſon: that which was ſuppoſed to be the fruit Captain Cook calls a cherry, the natives call *mizooboore*; the taſte of it is inſipid, and it differs little from another fruit ſimilar in its appearance, but ſomething ſmaller, and which, as well as the former, is found in great abundance: there is likewiſe a third ſort which differs as little in appearance and taſte. Though there is little variety either in the ſhape or taſte of the fruits juſt mentioned, yet, it is very remarkable that the trees on which they grow are of very different kinds. The fruits, or berries, juſt mentioned, have ſo inſipid a taſte, that they are held in very little eſtimation by our coloniſts; but that is not the caſe with the acid berry, which is about the ſize of a currant, and grows on a tree, the leaves of which reſemble the broom: the acid of this fruit, even when ripe, is very ſtrong, and is, perhaps, the pureſt in the world: it is pleaſant to the taſte, and Governor Phillip found it particularly ſo when on a journey in hot weather:

1790. November.

weather: the ſurgeon held it in great eſtimation as an antiſcorbutic; and, with a large proportion of ſugar, it makes excellent tarts and jellies. There is alſo another fruit, which, when ripe, is of a tranſparent red colour, about the ſize of a currant, and ſhaped like a heart: it has an agreeable flavour, leaving an aſtringency on the palate, and cannot be otherwiſe than wholeſome, as the ſettlers had ate great quantities of it at times, without any pernicious conſequences.

There is likewiſe a nut, which had violent effects on thoſe who ate it unprepared: the natives ſoak it in water for ſeven or eight days, changing the water every day; and at the expiration of that time they roaſt it in the embers; but the kernel is taken out of the hard ſhell with which it is encloſed, previous to its being put into the water: it is nearly equal to the cheſnut in goodneſs.

Boorong, the native girl who had lived with the clergyman, returned to him again, after a week's abſence: ſome officers had been down the harbour, and ſhe was very happy to embrace that opportunity of getting from the party ſhe had been with. By her own account, ſhe had joined the young man ſhe wiſhed to marry, and had lived with him three days; but he had another wife, who the girl ſaid was jealous, and had beat her; indeed, evident marks of this appeared about her head, which was ſo bruiſed as to require the ſurgeon's attention: in return for this unkind treatment, it ſeems her favourite had beat his wife. But opportunities were not now wanting to ſhew that the women are in general treated very roughly; for Colebe brought his wife to viſit Governor Phillip, and though ſhe was big with child, and appeared to be within a very few days of her time, there were ſeveral wounds on her head, which ſhe ſaid he had lately given her: he ſeemed to be pleaſed that ſhe could ſhew her marks, and took ſome pains to inform the governor that he had beat her with a wooden ſword.

1790. November.

Early in the morning of the 13th of November, ſixteen of the natives viſited the ſettlement, and ſome fiſh being diſtributed amongſt them, they made a fire in the governor's yard, and ſat down to breakfaſt in great good humour: thoſe that were ſtrangers, appeared highly delighted with the novelties that ſurrounded them. Amongſt the ſtrangers, there was a woman whoſe ſkin, when free from dirt and ſmoke, was of a bright copper colour; her features were pleaſing, and of that kind of turn, that had ſhe been in any European ſettlement, no one would have doubted her being a Mulatto Jeweſs. Bannelong, who had been for two days with ſome of his party at Botany-Bay, came along with theſe people and brought his wife with him: ſhe appeared to be very ill, and had a freſh wound on her head, which he gave Governor Phillip to underſtand ſhe had merited, for breaking a fiz-gig and a throwing ſtick. The governor's reaſoning with him on this ſubject had no effect; he ſaid ſhe was bad, and therefore he had beat her; neither could it be learned what inducement this woman could have to do an act which ſhe muſt have known would be followed by a ſevere beating; for Bannelong either did not underſtand the queſtions put to him, or was unwilling to anſwer them. When theſe people had finiſhed their breakfaſt, they all went to the hoſpital to get the womens' heads dreſſed; for beſides Bannelong's wife, a woman who was a ſtranger, had received a blow on the head, which had laid her ſcull bare: after this buſineſs was over, moſt of them returned and ſat down in the yard at the back of Governor Phillip's houſe; but Bannelong went into the houſe as uſual, and finding the governor writing, ſat down by him: he appeared very much out of humour, and frequently ſaid that he was going to beat a woman with a hatchet which he held in his hand: it was impoſſible to perſuade him to ſay he would not beat her, and after ſome time he got up, ſaying that he could not dine with the governor, as he was going to beat the woman: Governor Phillip then inſiſted on going with him, to which he made no objection, though he was given to underſtand that he would not be ſuffered to beat any woman, and they ſet off for his hut at the point. The governor took his orderly ſerjeant along with him, and they were joined by the judge advocate.

CHAP. XIX.
1790. November.

Though Bannelong had frequently ſaid he would kill the woman, when Governor Phillip was endeavouring to perſuade him not to beat her, yet, it could not be believed that he had any ſuch intention; nor did they ſuppoſe there would be much trouble in preventing his beating her; however, fearing he might ſtrike her a blow with the hatchet which muſt have been fatal, it was taken from him before they got to the hut, and as he ſeemed unwilling to part with it, the governor gave him his cane; but his expreſſions and his countenance ſoon made them think even the cane too much for him to be truſted with, and that was taken from him alſo.

On their arrival at the hut, they found five men, two youths, and ſeveral women and children: ſome of theſe people were on the graſs before the door of the hut, and though the governor fixed his eyes on Bannelong, in order to find out the object of his revenge, and whom he determined to protect, yet this furious ſavage ſeized a wooden ſword, and ſtruck a young female, who was either aſleep, or ſeeing him coming had hid her face, over the head, and repeated his blow before the weapon could be wreſted from him; he then got a hatchet, which was likewiſe taken away.

CHAP. XIX. 1790. November.

Reaſoning with him was now out of the queſtion; the ſavage fury which took poſſeſſion of him when he found himſelf kept from the girl, who was lying ſenſeleſs, is not to be deſcribed: he had now got another wooden ſword, but the judge-advocate and the ſerjeant held him, and what paſſed being obſerved from the Supply, Lieutenant Ball and the ſurgeon of the hoſpital, came over to the ſpot armed, and the poor girl was put into the boat without any oppoſition on the part of the natives, who had armed themſelves the moment they ſaw Governor Phillip and his party interfere, and one of them repeatedly preſſed him to give Bannelong the hatchets and ſword which had been taken from him.

None of theſe people, either men or women, (the two youths excepted, who appeared to be much frightened,) ſhewed the leaſt concern at the girl's fate, though they muſt have known, that Bannelong intended to kill her, and they certainly armed in his defence.

When the boat was gone off with the girl, our party returned to the governor's houſe, ſeveral of the native men and boys joining them, as well as Bannelong; and, after ſome time, when his paſſion began to ſubſide, Governor Phillip gave him to underſtand, that he was exceedingly angry with him for attempting to kill a woman, and tried to divert him from his purpoſe by threats, telling him that if he did kill her, or even beat her any more, he ſhould loſe his life; but threats had no greater effect than entreaties, and all his anſwers ſhewed that he thought himſelf greatly injured by having his victim taken from him; ſaying that ſhe was his, that her father was the man who had wounded him over the eye, that all their tribe were bad, and that the governor ſhould ſee he would kill her; and when the judge-advocate reaſoned with him, and told him that if he killed the girl the governor would kill him, he

marked

1790. November.

marked with his finger thoſe parts of the head, breaſt, and arms, where he ſaid he would wound her, before he cut her head off: in this reſolution he went away, and the girl was removed in the evening from the Supply to Governor Phillip's houſe, where a young man who lived with Bannelong deſired to remain with her, and, from the tenderneſs he ſhewed her when Bannelong was not preſent, was ſuppoſed to be her huſband; though he had not dared to open his lips, or even to look diſſatisfied, when her life was in danger.

Several of the natives came to ſee this girl, and (except the ſuppoſed huſband) they all appeared very deſirous that ſhe might return to the hut, though they muſt have known that ſhe would be killed; and, what is not to be accounted for, the girl herſelf appeared deſirous of going.

After an abſence of two days, Bannelong returned to the governor's houſe, apparently in good humour, and ſaid he would not beat the girl; at the ſame time he gave them to underſtand, that he had again beat his wife about the head, and that he had received a ſevere blow on the ſhoulder from a club in return; on this, Governor Phillip propoſed their going to the hoſpital to have his own ſhoulder and his wife's head dreſt, but this he refuſed, ſaying, that White (the ſurgeon) would ſhoot him, and that he durſt not ſleep in the houſe which had been built for him, as the ſurgeon would ſhoot him in the night; this ſtory was not told without many threats on his part; and during the recital, he twice went out to fetch a ſpear, which the governor had made him leave in a back room, in order to ſhew that he was not afraid, and that he would uſe it if he ſaw the ſurgeon; however, Governor Phillip ſoon convinced him that he was not to be ſhot unleſs he killed the girl, or threw ſpears

at

1790. November.

at the white men. The moment Bannelong was ſatisfied that the ſurgeon was ſtill his friend, he ſaid he would go to him for a plaiſter for his ſhoulder, and another for his wife's head; but, as the governor wiſhed to be preſent when they firſt met, he ſent for the ſurgeon, whom Bannelong received as uſual, gave him part of what he was eating, and went with him to the hoſpital; after which, he went to the ſurgeon's houſe, and the girl being there to whom he had lately ſhewn ſo much animoſity, he took her by the hand, and ſpoke to her in a friendly manner; but this attention ſo exaſperated his wife, and put her in ſuch a rage, that thoſe who were preſent at the time could not, without ſome difficulty, prevent her from knocking the girl on the head with a club which ſhe had taken from one of the men for that purpoſe; nor did her huſband ſeem inclined to prevent her till he was ſpoke to, when he gave her a pretty ſmart ſlap on the face; on this, his wife left them crying with paſſion, and came over to the governor's houſe, where the girl was now brought for greater ſecurity, and was followed by ſeveral men. Governor Phillip had ordered the girl to be put into his maid ſervant's room, with which Bannelong ſeemed pleaſed, and deſired him to let the young man who had remained with her at the ſurgeon's, ſtay there likewiſe: in the mean time, his wife was very noiſy, and uſed many threats; ſhe had got her huſband's ſpears, which ſhe ſat down upon, and would not give them up to a ſoldier, whom the governor had ordered to take them from her, until force was uſed; and when the ſoldier had them, Bannelong wanted to take them from him, ſaying he would give them to the governor: they were then delivered to him, and he immediately gave them to Governor Phillip, making ſigns for them to be put into the houſe: this, at a time when there was a guard of ſoldiers drawn up in the yard, and when he was telling his companions, that the ſoldiers would fire, ſhewed that he placed ſome confidence in the governor; though at the ſame time,

1790. November.

time, he was very violent, and appeared very much inclined to uſe his club againſt thoſe who prevented his going into the houſe; and one of the natives who was generally his companion, ſeemed ready to ſupport him in any attempt he might be diſpoſed to make; on this they were given to underſtand, that if any of the ſoldiers were ſtruck, they would be put to death, and Governor Phillip immediately ordered them all to be turned out of the yard, except Bannelong and the young man he had deſired might remain with the girl: Bannelong's wife was turned away amongſt the reſt, but this did not prevent his ſtaying to dinner, and behaving with the ſame indifference as if nothing had paſſed; and, in the evening when he was going away, a ſcene took place which was little expected: the young man who had been ſo deſirous of remaining with the girl, would now go away, and the girl cried, and forced her way out of the room to go with Bannelong: ſhe was brought in again, and told if ſhe went away ſhe would be beat, but Bannelong ſaid he would not beat her, neither was his wife angry with her now; and the young man preſſed Governor Phillip very much to let her go, ſaying Barangaroo would not beat the girl, as her paſſion was over, and ſhe was now very good.

As the information of Barangaroo's anger having ſo entirely ſubſided, could only have been brought by a boy, who had returned to the houſe in the afternoon, the governor was not the leaſt inclined to let the girl go away; but there was no poſſibility of detaining her unleſs ſhe was confined, and there appeared ſo much ſincerity in Bannelong's countenance, when he ſaid ſhe ſhould not be beat, that leave was given, and the moment the girl was without the gate, ſhe ran towards Bannelong's hut, without waiting for thoſe who were going along with her.

Governor

CHAP. XIX. 1790. November.

Governor Phillip himſelf was fully perſuaded that Bannelong would keep his word, but the general opinion was, that the girl would be ſacrificed; and in the evening, a conſiderable number of natives being ſeen about the hut, gave riſe to various ſtories; but the next day, Bannelong came to dinner, and ſaid, he had ſent the girl to her father, which was afterwards confirmed by others. How Bannelong got this girl into his poſſeſſion could not be learnt; but it appeared ſhe was the ſame girl whom he went to look after when he ran away from the ſettlement: ſhe appeared to be about fifteen years of age, and when ſhe went away, her wounds were in a fair way of doing well: fortunately for her, the weapon which had firſt preſented itſelf when Bannelong beat her, was a boy's wooden ſword, and made of very light wood; but theſe people pay little attention to wounds, and even thoſe which by the faculty are deemed dangerous, do not ſeem to require the common attention of cloſing the lips of the wound and keeping it clean; this ſhews that they muſt be of a moſt excellent habit of body.

Governor Phillip having occaſion to go to Roſe-Hill, Bannelong ſaid he would accompany him: accordingly they ſet out, and ſtopped at the point, in order to take Barangaroo into the boat; but ſhe refuſed, and perſuaded her huſband not to go. On the governor's return to Sydney, he was informed that this party had been lamenting the loſs of a brother, who had been killed by one of the Cammeragals: the women were crying in the uſual manner, but their grief was not of long duration, and Bannelong went to breakfaſt with ſome officers, who, hearing the womens' cries, had gone to the hut to learn the cauſe; and as they were going down the harbour to look after a ſmall boat belonging to the hoſpital, which had been loſt, with five convicts, he deſired them to land him on the north ſhore, in order, it was ſuppoſed, to collect all his friends,

CHAP. XIX.
1790.
November.

and revenge his brother's death: however, he was ſeen ſoon afterwards with ſome of the Cammeragals, who were collecting the wild fruits which were now in ſeaſon; ſo that he muſt have been miſunderſtood as to his intention of fighting with the Cammeragals; nor can we account for his being frequently with a tribe whom he always ſpoke of as bad, and deſired Governor Phillip to kill; and what was equally myſterious, a man belonging to the Botany-Bay tribe had for more than a fortnight ſlept at his hut, though he ſaid the man was bad, and ſpoke of him as his enemy.

The party who went in ſearch of the boat found the wreck of her, and one of the bodies; as the boat had been ſeen under ſail when it blew hard, it ſhould ſeem that the men ſent in her did not know how to manage her, and were driven on the rocks. Several natives aſſiſted in ſaving the oars and other articles that were driven aſhore; and Colebe, who was on the ſpot, exerted himſelf greatly on this occaſion, and ſaved the ſeine, which was entangled amongſt the rocks: for theſe ſervices, they were all rewarded with blankets and ſome cloathing; but, however well you may cloath theſe people, they generally return naked the next day. Of all the cloaths and the multiplicity of other articles which had been given to Bannelong, very little now remained in his poſſeſſion; his ſhield, and moſt of his cloaths, were, by his own account, ſent a great diſtance off; but whether he had loſt them, or given them away, was uncertain.

In the evening of the 21ſt of November, Bannelong and his wife came to Sydney, and he requeſted leave to ſleep in Governor Phillip's houſe, as there were a great number of people at *Tubow-gule*, the point on which their hut ſtood. Bannelong told the governor, that the Cam-

CHAP. XIX.

1790. November.

meragals had killed his *friend*, or *relation*, for we are not clear that theſe words in their language, which had been ſuppoſed to mean Father or Brother, are made uſe of by the natives in that ſenſe: he ſaid, they had burnt his body, which he ſeemed to lament; and being told, that Governor Phillip would take the ſoldiers and puniſh them, he preſt him very much to go and kill them: indeed, from the firſt day he was able to make himſelf underſtood, he was deſirous to have all the tribe of Cammeragal killed, yet he was along with that tribe when Governor Phillip was wounded, and, as hath already been obſerved, was ſeen with them ſince the loſs of his friend, or brother. After Bannelong and his wife had ſupped they retired to ſleep in a back room, and he was particularly anxious for the governor to lock the door and put the key in his pocket; from which circumſtance, it is probable he had other reaſons for coming that evening to ſleep at the governor's houſe, beſides that of having a number of people at his own habitation.

When Governor Phillip's gueſts left him, the girl who lived with the clergyman went away with them, and ſlept at their hut, nor would ſhe probably have returned till ſhe was compelled by hunger, or had received a beating; but being ſeen the next morning in a canoe, fiſhing, ſhe very readily returned with the perſon who had been ſent to look after her.

Many of the ſmall ſtreams of water in different parts of the harbour were dried up, and at Sydney, the run of water was ſmall, but it afforded ſufficient for the uſe of the ſettlement; nor was there any reaſon to ſuppoſe they would ever want water. At Roſe-Hill, the ſettlers never can be under any apprehenſions on that head, and though from the ſtream being ſmall in dry weather, the water has an unpleaſant taſte, occaſioned

1790. November.

by a number of dead trees falling into the brook, yet that may be prevented hereafter: it will alſo be neceſſary, at ſome future period, to make a dam acroſs the creek, in order to prevent the tides making the water brackiſh at the lower part of it: when that is done, it will not be a difficult matter to carry a run of water at the back of thoſe houſes which are ſituated at the greateſt diſtance from the brook.

A new ſtore at Roſe-Hill, which the workmen had been building for ſome time paſt, was tiled in on the 25th of November, and a barrack of the ſame dimenſions (100 feet by 24 feet 6 inches) was immediately begun. At the latter end of the month, the weather was unſettled, with frequent ſhowers of rain: moſt of the barley was now ripe, and they began to houſe it. The 3d of December was a day of conſtant rain, which continued during the night.

December.

Governor Phillip had recently ordered a ſmall hut to be built for his own accommodation at Roſe-Hill, and he was going to remain there a few days, when ſeveral of the natives were deſirous of accompanying him, amongſt whom were Bannelong and Colebe: the governor got into his boat with three of them, and Bannelong, going to fetch his cloak, was detained by his wife; however, as they were going out of the cove, he appeared on the rocks, and got into the boat notwithſtanding her threats; but, the moment the boat put off, ſhe went to her canoe, which was a new one, and after driving her paddles through the bottom, ſhe threw them into the water, and afterwards went off to their hut, probably to do more damage. The huſband had endeavoured to pacify her, and promiſed ſeveral times not to be abſent more than one night; as it was likely that he would prefer remaining behind, though he appeared unwilling to aſk to be landed, it was propoſed to him, and

after

CHAP. XIX.

1790. December.

after picking up the paddles which his wife had thrown away, he was put on ſhore: the governor then proceeded to Roſe-Hill, with Colebe and two other natives, none of whom ever opened their lips during this altercation: indeed, none of theſe people have ever been ſeen to interfere with what did not immediately concern themſelves.

The three natives ſlept that night at Roſe-Hill, and though fed very plentifully, yet, the next morning, they were very deſirous of returning; on this, Governor Phillip ſent the boat down with them, on the return of which he fully expected to hear that miſtreſs Barangaroo's head was under the care of the ſurgeon; but, to his great ſurpriſe, both ſhe and her huſband came up in the boat the next morning, and Bannelong ſaid he had not beat her; but whether he was deterred by what had ſo frequently been ſaid to him on the ſubject, or from ſome other cauſe, could not be known: however, a reconciliation had taken place, and they both dined with the governor in great good humour. Every thing this couple wiſhed for was given them, and they had both fiſh and *baggaray*; but after dinner was over, the lady wanted to return, and Bannelong ſaid ſhe would cry if ſhe was not permitted to go; ſo that late in the afternoon, the governor was obliged to ſend the boat down with them.

It is rather ſingular that none of the natives like Roſe-Hill, probably becauſe fiſh is ſeldom procured there: both Arrabannu and Bannelong, whilſt they lived with Governor Phillip, always appeared to diſlike going there, and after the firſt day, would be continually preſſing him to return to Sydney.

1790. December.

Lieutenant Ball, who commanded the Supply, had been ill for ſome time; and when Governor Phillip returned from Roſe-Hill on the 11th of December, the ſurgeon informed him that there were little hopes of Mr. Ball's recovery: at the ſame time he was told, that his game-keeper had been brought in ſo dangerouſly wounded by a ſpear, that there was little probability of ſaving his life.

It ſeems the game-keeper went out with three others, one of whom was a ſerjeant; and in the heat of the day, they retired to a hut which they had made with boughs, and went to ſleep. One of them waking, and hearing a noiſe in the buſhes, ſuppoſed it to be ſome animal; but on their coming out of the hut, four natives jumped up from amongſt the buſhes and ran away: the game-keeper, ſuppoſing one of them to be a man who had been at Sydney, as he appeared to have been ſhaved and his hair cut, followed them without his gun, (though the moſt poſitive orders had been given for no one ever to join the natives unarmed) calling on them to ſtop, and he would give them ſome bread; and obſerving that one of thoſe who followed him from the hut had a gun in his hand, he bid him lay it down, ſaying, that the natives would not hurt him: the game-keeper had now advanced forty or fifty yards before his companions, and was not more than ten yards from one of the natives, who ſtopped; and getting on a tree which had been burnt down, and was lying on the ground, he ſurveyed thoſe who approached him: in a moment he found they were unarmed, ſo, fixing his ſpear, he threw it at the man who was neareſt to him: the ſpear entered on the left ſide, and penetrated the lower lobe of the lungs: it was barbed, and conſequently could not be extracted till a ſuppuration took place. Immediately after throwing the ſpear, the native fled, and was ſoon out of ſight of the man who followed him. As they were eleven miles

from

CHAP. XIX.

1790. December.

ſrom Sydney when this accident happened, it was not without ſome difficulty that the unfortunate game-keeper could be brought in after his ſtrength failed him: he was of the catholic perſuaſion, but on being brought to the hoſpital, he deſired to have the clergyman ſent for, to whom he confeſſed that he had been a bad man, and deſired his prayers; but, at the ſame time, he declared that he had never killed or wounded any native, except once; when, having had a ſpear thrown at him, he diſcharged his piece, which was loaded with ſmall ſhot, and poſſibly wounded the man who threw the ſpear: this declaration, made at the time he requeſted the ſurgeon not to attempt taking out the ſpear, until he had aſked pardon of his God, whom, he ſaid, he had often offended, added to the teſtimony of thoſe who were with him, left no room to doubt that the native had taken the advantage of their being unarmed, without having received any kind of provocation.

The natives had been frequently told, that numbers of them would be killed if they continued to throw ſpears; and both Bannelong and the girl who lived with the clergyman had repeatedly ſaid, that the tribes which reſided about Botany-Bay and the inland parts near the head of that harbour, always killed the white men; yet, as it was evident that they had generally received ſome provocation on the part of our ſettlers, Governor Phillip was unwilling to proceed to extremities whilſt there was a poſſibility of avoiding it: many of the natives had recently viſited the ſettlement; they had all been well received, and ſome of their children frequently remained there for ſeveral days, without their parents ever ſeeing them; and if any of them were going where their children would be an incumbrance, they uſed to leave them at Sydney. Bannelong, Colebe, and two or three others, now lived at Sydney three or four days in the week, and they all repeatedly deſired thoſe natives might be killed who threw ſpears; at the ſame time, Governor Phillip began to ſuſpect, though very unwillingly, that there was a great deal of art and cunning in Bannelong; he had lately been at Botany-Bay, where, he ſaid, they danced, and that one of the tribe had ſung a ſong, the ſubject of which was, his houſe, the governor, and the white men at Sydney: the people of that tribe, he ſaid, would not throw any more ſpears, as they and the Cammeragals were all friends, and were good men; this was only a few days after he had ſaid that he liked his houſe at the point, becauſe the Botany-Bay men and the Cammeragals would not come to it on account of the white men; and had, as uſual, whenever thoſe tribes were mentioned, requeſted the governor to kill them all.

The game-keeper was well known to thoſe natives who frequented Sydney, and when they ſaw him at the hoſpital, they expreſſed great marks of ſorrow, all the women and ſeveral of the men ſhedding tears. Colebe, who, it ſeems, underſtood the nature of wounds, and their method of drawing teeth, ſaid, that the ſpear muſt remain for ſome time before it was drawn out, as it was barbed: at the ſame time he made ſigns that the man would die.

It appeared rather extraordinary that the natives ſhould immediately know the man who wounded the game-keeper, and his tribe; they ſaid, his name was *Pemullaway*, of the tribe of *Bejigal*, and both Colebe and Bannelong promiſed to bring him to the ſettlement; but the former, after remaining at Sydney that night and part of the next day, went off, as was ſuppoſed, to Botany-Bay; and Governor Phillip going down the harbour, in conſequence of a number of natives being ſeen armed at the look-out, found Colebe there, who returned to Sydney the next day, and

CHAP. XIX.

1790. December.

did not ſeem inclined to give himſelf any trouble about Pemullaway, but left the governor's houſe after dinner, to go, as he ſaid, to his wife, who was at Botany-Bay. Bannelong had not appeared for ſome days; he was ſaid to be gone to aſſiſt at the ceremony of drawing the front tooth from ſome young men, and as he went to the diſtrict in which the Cammeragals reſide, there can ſcarcely be a doubt but that the tooth is paid as a tribute.

The native girl who lived with the clergyman, had left his houſe ſome time, and now reſided with the Cammeragals: on going away, ſhe promiſed to return with the young man ſhe wanted to marry, and his preſent wife; from which circumſtance it ſeems pretty clear, that when a native can procure two women, the cuſtom of the country allows them to have two wives; and there is ſome reaſon to ſuppoſe that moſt of their wives are taken by force from the tribes with whom they are at variance, as the females bear no proportion to the males.

It became abſolutely neceſſary to put a ſtop to the natives throwing ſpears, againſt which it was impoſſible to guard in going through the woods, and Governor Phillip wiſhed to do it with as little ſeverity as poſſible; yet he was well convinced that nothing but a ſevere example, and the fear of having all the tribes who reſided near the ſettlement deſtroyed, would have the deſired effect: for this purpoſe, a party were ſent out on the 14th of December, conſiſting of two captains, two lieutenants, four noncommiſſioned officers, and forty privates: the ſurgeon, and a ſurgeon's mate belonging to the Sirius, went with the party, and the three perſons who were with the game-keeper when he was wounded, went as guides. The governor's motive for ſending ſo large a party was, that if a number of the natives ſhould be found together,

CHAP. XIX.

1790. December.

gether, they might be deterred from making any reſiſtance, or attempting to reſcue thoſe who might be ſecured as priſoners. The officer who commanded this party was directed to proceed to the ſpot where the game-keeper had been wounded, and to ſearch for the natives in that part of the country; ſix of whom were to be ſecured and brought in as priſoners; or if that was found impracticable, ſix of them were to be put to death; ſpears, and all other weapons which they happened to meet with, were to be deſtroyed and left on the ground, that the natives might ſee it was intended as a puniſhment inflicted on them; particular attention was alſo to be paid to the women and children, who were not to be injured on any account whatever; and, as Governor Phillip wiſhed to impreſs the natives with an idea that no deceit was ever uſed, and that they might always depend on having protection after it had been once offered; on this occaſion, none of the party were ever to hold up their hands, (which, amongſt the natives, is a ſignal that they come as friends) nor to anſwer that ſign of friendſhip if made to them.

It was more than probable that the man who threw the ſpear would not be found, though Colebe had ſaid he might eaſily be known by the toes of his left foot having been bruiſed with a club; and there was reaſon to fear that the innocent might ſuffer; but the natives had lately behaved with a boldneſs and inſolence on ſeveral occaſions, which it was abſolutely neceſſary to check, and the puniſhments inflicted on a few, would, in the end, be an act of mercy to numbers.

A ſuppuration taking place in the game-keeper's wound, the ſpear was taken out; it was armed with ſmall pieces of red ſtone, and had penetrated ſeven inches and an half into his body, though the point was broke off by ſtriking againſt a rib: from this circumſtance, ſome

CHAP. XIX. 1790. December.

judgment may be formed of the force with which theſe ſpears are thrown. They generally are armed for ſeven or eight inches from the point, with ſmall bits of ſharp ſtone, bone, or ſhells; and, ſince our ſettling amongſt them, bits of glaſs bottle: theſe are fixed on with the yellow gum, which is ſoftened by fire, and afterwards grows hard and firm, making a very good cement; this the natives alſo uſe to ſtop the leaks in their canoes.

The ſpear with which the game-keeper was wounded, being ſhewn to one of the natives, he immediately named the tribe to whom it belonged; which ſhews that ſome of them arm their weapons differently from others, and that they are all marked; this, as they have no places to ſecure them in, effectually prevents their robbing one another.

The party who had been ſent out in ſearch of the natives, returned on the 17th of December, without being able to get near any of them, as they all fled at their approach, and eluded their purſuit. They found Colebe near the head of Botany-Bay, where he was ſtriking fiſh, and ran ſome riſk of being ſhot. The ſame afternoon, the veſſel arrived which had been hired at Batavia to bring proviſions to the colony, having been eighty-eight days on her paſſage, and buried ſixteen of her crew.

In the evening of the 22d, a party were again ſent out towards the head of Botany-Bay; they were to endeavour to ſecure ſome of the natives, and had the ſame orders as were given before on that head. They left the parade in the evening, and hopes were entertained that they would be able to ſurprize ſome of the natives at their fires; but they did not ſee a ſingle inhabitant during two days which they remained out.

1790. December. 23.

Colebe had left his wife at Botany-Bay, and ſhe came over to Sydney on the 23d of December, bringing an infant with her not more than two or three days old; the child was laid on a piece of bark, and both the parents appeared to treat it with great tenderneſs: they took up their reſidence for that night in Governor Phillip's houſe, and a family, who accompanied Colebe's wife, gave an opportunity of obſerving, that the marriage ceremony in this country, whatever it may be, is not very binding: this man belonged to the tribe who reſide about Botany-Bay, but he had occaſionally lived at Sydney for ſome time paſt, and a woman whoſe name was *Mawberry*, had been his wife; but, it ſeems, he had broke her arm with beating her, and had turned her away; and he had got another woman for a wife, who came along with him, bringing alſo a child about three years of age. Mawberry, his firſt wife, happened to be at the governor's houſe when he came in, and did not ſeem pleaſed at the meeting.

This man, with his wife and child, after remaining at Governor Phillip's two days, were going away; and, as uſual, had bread and fiſh given them for their journey; but, it ſhould ſeem, that they could not agree, for he took away his firſt wife, and left the woman and child who came along with him behind. The poor woman ſhed tears when Governor Phillip enquired into the matter, and, after repeatedly uſing the word *yalloway*, which is a term of execration, ſhe ſaid ſhe would live with his ſervants, which ſhe was permitted to do. Beſides this perſon, Governor Phillip had a further addition to his family of a young woman, who for ſome time had been deſirous of being received amongſt his maid ſervants, and a youth about fourteen years of age, both of whom appeared much pleaſed with their ſituations.

The weather was ſo intenſely hot on the 27th of December, that the thermometer ſtood at 102° in the ſhade.

CHAPTER XX.

The depredations of the natives.—Bannelong's behaviour.—The Supply ſails for Norfolk-Iſland.—The quantity of proviſions brought in the Waakſamheid from Batavia.—The appearance of a prodigious number of Bats.—The return of Bannelong.—The manners of the natives further deſcribed.

CHAP. XX.

1790. December.

SEVERAL of the natives who had been pretty conſtant viſitors at Sydney for ſome weeks, were detected ſtealing potatoes on the 28th of December; and, on the perſon they belonged to, endeavouring to drive them out of his garden, a fiz-gig was thrown at him. Theſe people had lately made a practice of threatening any perſon whom they found in a hut alone, unleſs bread was given to them; and one of thoſe who were ſuſpected in the preſent inſtance, had, on ſeveral occaſions, ſhewn himſelf to be a daring fellow, who did not ſeem to dread any conſequences. As it was neceſſary to prevent theſe depredations in future, a ſerjeant and ſix privates were ſent out in order to ſecure the three natives who had been digging up the potatoes, and particularly the man who threw the fiz-gig; but not to fire on them, unleſs they made uſe of their ſpears or other offenſive weapons. Governor Phillip, accompanied by two or three officers, followed the party to a place where the natives had retired and made a fire; at which, the ſerjeant, who arrived there a few minutes before, found two men, one of whom he laid hold of, and the other was ſeized by the ſurgeon's mate of the

Sirius, who went with the party, as he knew the men they were in ſearch of: both theſe men, however, got away; and a club, which at firſt was taken for a ſpear, being thrown by one of them, three muſquets were fired. Two women and a child were found at the fire, but as it was then dark, it was in vain to look for the two men, though one of them was ſuppoſed to be wounded. The women were brought away, together with ſeveral ſticks, which the natives uſe for digging roots, and ſome other articles, in order to learn more fully who were the aggreſſors.

The women, though alarmed at firſt, yet, when they got to Governor Phillip's houſe, appeared under no concern, but ſlept that night in a ſhed in the yard, as much at their eaſe as if nothing had happened; though it was impoſſible for them to know that the men fired at were not killed; and one of them was huſband to one of the women: the other woman was ſhe who had been left at the governor's houſe, when her huſband took away a former wife.

The fiz-gig, which had been thrown at the man in the garden, being ſhewn to theſe women, they ſaid it belonged to a native who has already been noticed as a daring fellow; indeed he was ſo much ſo, that though Governor Phillip thought it neceſſary to watch for an opportunity of checking his inſolence, he could not but admire his ſpirit. Some bread and fiſh being given to the women the next morning, they went away, well pleaſed with their reception.

On the 29th of December, Bannelong made his appearance at Governor Phillip's houſe, after an abſence of ten days, and brought his wife with him: he ſaid he had been with a great number of the Cameragals,

CHAP. XX.

1790. December.

meragals, and they had drawn the front tooth from ſeveral young men, and had raiſed thoſe ſcars which the natives regard as ornaments. The largeſt of theſe ſcars are made by cutting two lines through the ſkin, parallel to each other, with a ſharp ſhell, and afterwards ſtripping off the intermediate ſkin: this operation is repeated till the wound riſes conſiderably above the fleſh, after which, it is ſuffered to heal over. Theſe ſcars, or ornaments, are not very common among the women, yet ſome have them on the arms, back, and breaſts. Bannelong had a throwing-ſtick, which he took pains to ſhew had been cut for the purpoſe of knocking out the front tooth, and there was ſome reaſon to think he had performed that office: it ſeems, he was now on good terms with the Cameragals, as he ſaid they were all good men; and being aſked if he had ſeen the man who threw the ſpear at Governor Phillip, he ſaid yes, and had ſlept with him; nor was there any reaſon to ſuppoſe he had ever beat, or even quarreled with him on that account. Bannelong's wife, who had been with him on this excurſion, was painted in a different manner to what ſhe had been ſeen before, and it appeared to have been done with a good deal of attention: her cheeks, noſe, and upper lip, were rubbed over with red ochre, on which, and under the eyes, ſome white clay was laid in ſpots; the ſmall of her back was likewiſe rubbed with red ochre, and ſhe ſeemed to be ſenſible that ſhe was finer than common. After dinner, this couple went away, and the girl who had been deſirous of living with the governor's ſervants, wanted to go along with them, which ſhe was permitted to do. This girl, who might be about eighteen years old, ſtripped herſelf before ſhe went away, but kept her night-cap to ſleep in, as her head had been ſhaved when ſhe was firſt taken into the governor's family: ſhe never had been under any kind of reſtraint, ſo that her going away could only proceed from a preference to the manner of life in which ſhe had been brought up, and which is rather ſurpriſing, as the women are certainly treated with great cruelty; this, however, the cuſtom of the country ſeems to have perfectly reconciled them to.

Two coloniſts, who had been in a boat fiſhing, returned with a piece of intelligence very little to the credit of Bannelong, who had robbed them of what fiſh they had caught; and, as they had no arms, and he had ſeveral ſpears in his canoe, along with his wife and ſiſter, they were deterred from making any reſiſtance. In conſequence of the fiſhing-boat being robbed, orders were given that no boat in future ſhould go out of the cove unarmed, and the natives were forbid ever going to the weſtern point of the cove, where they ſtole the potatoes and threw the fiz-gig.

Three convicts, who went into the woods contrary to orders, were loſt for ſeveral days; and when found, they were pretty ſeverely puniſhed: this, however, did not prevent one of theſe men from going out again, and he had now been ſo long abſent, that there was no doubt but that he periſhed from hunger: another fell into the brook at Roſe-Hill, and was drowned.

The number of deaths this year, 1790, were,

From ſickneſs, - - - - -	142
Loſt in the woods, - - - -	4
Executed, - - - - - -	4
Drowned, - - - - - -	6
The total number of deaths, -	156

CHAP. XX.

1791. January 3.

On the 3d of January, 1791, ſeveral of the natives came to Governor Phillip's houſe, and told him that the native who had been fired at on the 28th of December, was wounded and would die; it was explained to them, that the reaſon of his being fired at, was, his attempting to wound a white man: on this, they did not appear diſſatisfied. Bannelong and his wife came in ſoon afterwards, and Governor Phillip charged him with taking the fiſh from the two coloniſts, which he denied; ſaying he had been a great way off; but when the two perſons were ſent for, and he found himſelf known, he entered into a long converſation, the purport of which was, an endeavour to juſtify himſelf; and this he did with an inſolence that explained itſelf very clearly: he frequently mentioned the man who had been wounded, and threatened revenge; but appearing to recollect himſelf, he offered the governor his hand, which not being accepted, he grew violent, and ſeemed inclined to make uſe of his ſtick. One of the centinels was now called in, as it was much feared he would do ſome violent act, that would oblige Governor Phillip to order him to be put to death; for his behaviour was the height of ſavage inſolence, and would have been immediately puniſhed in any other perſon; but this man had ſo often made uſe of the word *be-ah-nah*, that they wiſhed to bring him to reaſon without proceeding to force; eſpecially, as it was ſuggeſted by an officer who was in the room, that he might not be underſtood clearly, and the governor was very unwilling to deſtroy the confidence Bannelong had for ſome time placed in him, which the ſlighteſt puniſhment or confinement would have done: he therefore told him to come near, for he was then ſtanding at ſome diſtance, but he refuſed and went away.

Bannelong had not left the governor with any intention of returning; for, in paſſing the wheelwright's ſhop, the workmen being at dinner, he ſtole a hatchet, with which, though purſued, he got clear off.

1791. January.

In the afternoon of the 3d, the ſurgeon and ſome others went to the place where the wounded native was ſaid to be, having directions to bring him to the hoſpital, if there were any hopes of his recovery.

When they got to the ſpot to which the native boy and girl, who were in the boat, directed them, two natives appeared; one of whom, having been concerned in ſtealing the potatoes, kept at a diſtance; the other came near enough to converſe with them, and ſaid, the man they were in ſearch of was dead, in an adjoining cove, whither they went and found his body. The ball had paſſed through the ſhoulder, and had cut the ſubclavian artery: the body was warm, and as his friends had left it covered with ſome boughs and fern, it was probable they did not intend either to bury or burn it. It proved to be the man who had thrown the fiz-gig; and as there was a neceſſity for firing on him, the taking place of the ball was rather to be wiſhed for.

The woman who had been deſerted by her huſband, after remaining eight or ten days at Governor Phillip's houſe, went away on the 5th of January, and was reconciled to him again; his firſt wife now lived with another man, but ſhe frequently viſited Sydney, and was ſaid to have granted favours to ſeveral of the convicts.

All the wheat and barley was now houſed, except what was ſown very late, and yielded better than could have been expected after the long drought. On the 18th, her Majeſty's birthday was celebrated with the cuſtomary marks of reſpect. The Supply, having been put into thorough repair, ſailed out of the cove on the 19th, with proviſions and ſtores for Norfolk Iſland; but the wind coming round to the ſouth-eaſt, ſhe was obliged to anchor, and did not get out of the harbour till the 22d.

The

CHAP. XX.
1791.
January.

The game-keeper, who was wounded on the 9th of December, as hath already been related, died on the 20th of January: his death was ſudden, as at one time he was thought to be in a very fair way of recovery, being able to walk about. On opening the body, it appeared that the lungs on the left ſide, which had been wounded, were entirely waſted away: the pleura firmly adhered to the ribs for ſome inches round the wound; ſeveral of the ſmall ſtones with which the ſpear had been armed, were found adhering to the ſide, and the rib againſt which the ſpear had broke, was ſplintered.

A conſiderable quantity of ground was now cleared, and large encloſures were made for cattle, which there was reaſon to hope would be brought from the Cape of Good Hope, by the ſhips daily expected to arrive with the remainder of the corps raiſed for the ſervice of this country, and the convicts from Ireland. The perſon who had hitherto ſuperintended the labour of the convicts, died on the 28th of January. This man left England with Governor Phillip, as a ſervant; but he had employed him in the public ſervice from their firſt landing, and few men, who may hereafter be placed in his ſituation, will attain that aſcendency which he had over the convicts, or be able to go through ſo much fatigue. He was replaced by a ſuperintendant who came from England in the laſt ſhips.

The Dutch veſſel, which had been hired at Batavia to bring proviſions purchaſed for the Colony, and which arrived at Port Jackſon on the 17th of December, 1790, was cleared, and was ready for ſea by the 5th of February. The proviſions brought in her conſiſted of one hundred and ſeventy-one barrels of beef, one hundred and ſeventy-two barrels of pork, thirty-nine barrels of flour, one thouſand pounds

of

CHAP. XX.

1791. January.

of ſugar, and ſeventy thouſand pounds of rice: five pounds in the hundred were to be allowed as loſs on the rice; and after that deduction, there was a deficiency of forty-two thouſand nine hundred pounds; for which, the maſter of the veſſel would only allow the commiſſary at the rate of one halfpenny a pound; or, if paid in butter, at the rate of one pound of butter for eighteen pounds of rice: he had rice and flour on board, which he called his own property; and as he was a foreigner, and particularly circumſtanced, the commiſſary was ordered to accept the butter in lieu of the deficiency of rice. This veſſel was hired by the officer, who commanded the Supply armed tender, and who was obliged to accept her at three hundred and fifty tons meaſurement, though ſhe did not meaſure three hundred tons: the freight for bringing the proviſions was fixed at twenty-eight thouſand rix-dollars; bills for which had been given at Batavia. The maſter on his arrival, ſaid, that after leaving Port Jackſon, he ſhould proceed to New Guinea in ſearch of ſpices, which that iſland was ſuppoſed to produce; he was alſo to ſtop at Timur and ſeveral other ſettlements before he returned to Batavia: at the ſame time, he offered the veſſel for ſale, or to lett her on freight; but as he conjectured that the colony wanted ſuch a veſſel, his demands were exorbitant. He firſt valued her at ſixty thouſand rix-dollars, and before he was ready to ſail, he offered her for two and thirty thouſand rix-dollars. If ſhe was hired, he talked of eleven pounds ſterling per month; but no attention being paid to any of theſe demands, he came down to forty ſhillings ſterling a ton per month, if let on freight to carry the officers and ſeamen who had belonged to the Sirius to England; that freight to be paid until the veſſel ſhould return to Batavia.——He was now ready to ſail, and finding no attention would be paid to any ſuch propoſals, he offered to ſell the veſſel for thirty thouſand rix-dollars, or to go to England on freight at forty

CHAP. XX.

1791. February.

ſhillings per ton; the veſſel to be continued in pay for two months after her arrival at Portſmouth or Plymouth; or to have twenty thouſand rix-dollars for the voyage. A conſiderable time had paſſed ſince Governor Phillip had reaſon to expect the arrival of ſome ſhips from England, and he wiſhed to ſecure a veſſel for ſending home the officers and men who had belonged to the Sirius, or to ſend for a farther ſupply of proviſions, ſhould no ſhips arrive before the month of March: the Dutch veſſel was, therefore, hired at twenty ſhillings per ton.

Two native youths who had frequently left Governor Phillip's houſe, in order to have their front teeth drawn, had now been abſent ſeveral days for that purpoſe. They were ſeen in a bay down the harbour on the 8th of February, where a conſiderable number of the natives were aſſembled, it was ſuppoſed not leſs than a hundred, including women and children. Moſt of the men were painted, and it ſhould ſeem that they were aſſembled for the purpoſe of drawing the front teeth from ſeveral men and boys. Soon afterwards, the two youths returned to the governor's; they had their heads bound round with ruſhes, which were ſplit, and the white ſide was put outwards: ſeveral pieces of reed were ſtuck through this fillet and came over the forehead; their arms were likewiſe bound round and ornamented in the ſame manner, and each had a black ſtreak on his breaſt, which was broad at one end, and terminated in a point. They had loſt their front teeth, and conſidering their manner of drawing teeth in this country, it was not ſurpriſing to ſee that one of them had loſt a piece of his jaw-bone, which was driven out with the tooth.

Both theſe boys appeared to be in pain, but they would not own it, and ſeemed to value themſelves on having undergone the operation;

though why it is performed, or why the females loſe a part of the little finger, could not as yet be learnt.

1791. February.

The weather was very cloſe and ſultry, and the natives having fired the country for ſeveral miles round, the wind, which blew ſtrong on the 12th, was heated to a very extraordinary degree, particularly at Roſe-Hill, where the country was on fire for ſeveral miles to the northward and ſouthward. Great numbers of parroquets were picked up under the trees, and the bats, which had been ſeen frequently flying about Roſe-Hill ſoon after the evening cloſed in, and were ſuppoſed to go to the ſouthward every night, and return to the northward before the day broke, now appeared in immenſe numbers: thouſands of them were hanging on the branches of the trees, and many dropped down, unable to bear the burning winds.

The head of this bat ſtrongly reſembles that of a fox, and the wings of many of them extend three feet ten inches: Governor Phillip ſaw one which meaſured upwards of four feet from the tip of each wing. Some were taken alive, and would eat boiled rice, or other food readily out of the hand, and in a few days were as domeſtic as if they had been bred in the houſe: the governor had one, a female, that would hang by one leg a whole day without changing its poſition; and in that pendant ſituation, with its breaſt neatly covered with one of its wings, it ate whatever was offered it, lapping out of the hand like a cat. Their ſmell is ſtronger than that of a fox; they are very fat, and are reckoned by the natives excellent food. From the numbers which fell into the brook at Roſe-Hill, the water was tainted for ſeveral days, and it was ſuppoſed that more than twenty thouſand of them were ſeen within the ſpace of one mile.

CHAP. XX.

1791. February.

The dry weather ſtill continued, and many runs of water which were conſiderable at this ſeaſon the laſt year, were now dried up; but the brook at Roſe-Hill, though greatly reduced, was ſtill a run of water that would ſupply more inhabitants than that ſettlement is likely to contain for many years; and in all the ponds there was plenty of good water; nor had the dry weather affected a ſpring that riſes on the ſide of a hill, the water of which is better than what the brook affords. At Sydney, the run of water was now very ſmall, but was ſufficient for all culinary purpoſes; and ſhould it hereafter be found neceſſary, wells may eaſily be made: a well at Governor Phillip's houſe was very little affected by the drought.

The natives continued to viſit Sydney after Bannelong ſtole the hatchet, and behaved in a manner that gave every one reaſon to think he never would return; this, however, was not the caſe; for, after having frequently viſited the fiſhing-boats, and made many enquiries to know if Governor Phillip was angry, and would ſhoot him, he ventured to go to the hoſpital, and ſeemed very deſirous of knowing if he might come to the governor's houſe; at the ſame time, he named a man who, he ſaid, had ſtolen the hatchet, and denied having ever uſed any threats: however, not being ſatisfied with the anſwers which were given to him, he went away; but ſome days afterwards he came to the governor's, who, happening to be in the yard when he came to the gate, ordered him away. He was ſeen ſoon afterwards, and as he appeared very deſirous of being received again, and diſclaimed any knowledge of the hatchet, or any intention of revenging the death of the native who had been ſhot, Governor Phillip appeared to believe him, and he was permitted to come into the yard, which was always open to the natives, and ſome bread and fiſh were given him; but he was no longer permitted

CHAP. XX.

1791. February.

to enter the houſe; this was putting him on a level with the other natives, and he appeared to feel his degradation; but it did not prevent him from repeating his viſits very frequently. *By-gone*, who has been mentioned as the daring fellow who lived with Bannelong, and was in company with the man who had been ſhot, ventured to come to Roſe-Hill; and as Governor Phillip wiſhed for a friendly intercourſe to be kept up with the natives, he was well received, and no notice was taken of paſt offences, ſo that he ſoon became perfectly at his eaſe.

A ſecond ſtore-houſe of brick was now tiled in, and though the crops in the ground had ſuffered from the very dry weather for the laſt eight months, it had been favourable for the buildings. The barrack at Roſe-Hill was nearly ready to receive the men, and one wing of the officers barracks was ready for tiling.

The Supply returned from Norfolk Iſland on the 26th of February, with the officers and ſeamen who had remained there after the loſs of the Sirius; and the Dutch veſſel being hired to carry them to England, ſhe began to prepare for the voyage.

In the night of the 27th, they had very heavy rain, which was highly acceptable. On the 28th, it blew very freſh, and a fiſhing boat, in working up the harbour, filled; fortunately, ſhe was an Engliſh cutter, and did not ſink. A young woman, a little girl, and two children, (all natives) were in the boat when the accident happened: the young woman had the two children on her ſhoulders in a moment, and ſwam on ſhore with them; the girl alſo ſwam on ſhore, as did ſuch of the boat's crew that could ſwim. Several of the natives ſeeing this accident as the boat drove towards the rocks, gave them every poſſible

1791. February.

aſſiſtance, without which, in all probability, one of the crew would have been drowned.——After clearing the boat, they collected the oars and ſuch articles as had been driven on ſhore in different places; and in theſe friendly offices, Bannelong was very aſſiduous: this behaviour gave Governor Phillip an opportunity of receiving him in a more kindly manner than he had done ſince his bad behaviour.

Though our coloniſts had never been able to learn the reaſon for the females loſing two joints of the little finger, they now had an opportunity of ſeeing in what manner that operation is performed. Colebe's wife brought her child to Governor Phillip's houſe a few days after it was born, and as it was a female, both the father and mother had been repeatedly told, that if the finger was to be cut off, the governor wiſhed to ſee the operation. The child was now two months old, and a ligature was applied round the little finger at the ſecond joint; but two or three days afterwards, when ſhe brought the child again, the ligature was either broke, or had been taken off: this being mentioned to the mother, ſhe took ſeveral hairs from the head of an officer who was preſent, and bound them very tight round the child's finger. After ſome time, a gangrene took place; and though the child appeared uneaſy when the finger was touched, it did not cry, nor was any attention paid to it after the ligature was applied. It has already been obſerved, that this operation always took place on the left hand of the females; but this child was an exception, for it was the little finger on the right hand on which the ligature was applied: this bandage was continued until the finger was ready to drop off, when its parents carried it to the ſurgeon, who, at their requeſt, ſeparated it with a knife.—Making love in this country is always prefaced by a beating, which the female ſeems to receive as a matter of courſe. The native girl, who ſtill reſided occaſionally at the clergyman's, had been abſent two days, when ſhe returned with a bad wound on the head, and ſome ſevere bruiſes on her ſhoulder; the girl whoſe life Governor Phillip had ſaved, returned with her; ſhe alſo had a wound on her head, and one of her arms was much bruiſed by a blow with a club: the ſtory they told was, that two men who frequently viſited the ſettlement, wanted to ſleep with them, and on their refuſing, had, as uſual on ſuch occaſions, beat them moſt unmercifully.

Bannelong, after an abſence of ſeveral days, returned to the ſettlement; and the ſervices he had rendered the boat's crew when they were in danger of being loſt, being conſidered as an atonement for his paſt offences, he was admitted into Governor Phillip's houſe; in conſequence of this reconciliation, the number of viſitors greatly increaſed, the governor's yard being their head quarters.

CHAPTER XXI.

An excurſion into the country.—Occurrences on the journey.—Surpriſing dexterity of the natives in climbing trees.—Their ſuperſtition.—Their method of curing wounds.—Their language.—Their manners and diſpoſition.

CHAP. XXI.

1791. April.

ON the 11th of April, 1791, Governor Phillip left Roſe-Hill with a party, intending to reach Hawkeſbury-River, oppoſite Richmond-Hill; and, if poſſible, to croſs the river and get to the mountains. Beſides the governor, the party conſiſted of a ſervant, and three convicts, who were good markſmen, eight ſoldiers, two ſerjeants, one captain, Lieutenant Tench, and Lieutenant Dawes; they took ſeven days proviſions with them. As a few hours heavy rain would raiſe the waters at the head of the Hawkeſbury, and render their return very difficult, if not impracticable, the party were made ſo conſiderable, that they might divide if it was poſſible to croſs the river, which the governor meant to do with only half a dozen perſons; leaving the remainder to prepare a raft of light wood, if any could be found, or to aſſiſt their return, with lines carried for that purpoſe. It was near eleven o'clock when the party ſet off, and, after croſſing Roſe-Hill creek, they went to the northward, as Governor Phillip wiſhed to ſee if, after ſo long a drought, there was any water in a ravine near to which he intended to place a ſettler, the ground being good, lying well for cultivation, and having plenty of water where the farm-houſe was intended to be fixed. This track of good ground runs to the eaſtward, and was ſeparated from the cultivated land on the north ſide of Roſe-Hill creek by a ſmall patch of bruſh-wood, and a narrow ſlip of poor ſandy ſoil.

Water being found in the bottom of the ravines, our party ſhaped their courſe ſo as to croſs a part of the country, with which they were unacquainted, going north-weſt by the compaſs, and counting their paces. Colebe, and Ballederry, the young man who has been mentioned as living chiefly at Governor Phillip's houſe, were deſirous of joining this party; and, as much information was expected from them, they were encouraged to go, and they carried their own proviſions. After paſſing ſeveral deep ravines, and going round the heads of others, over a barren country for an hour, the land grew better, and was tolerable, till one o'clock, when it again grew bad and rocky. The natives informed them that this part of the country was inhabited by the *Bidjigals*, but that moſt of the tribe were dead of the ſmall-pox. Though the country they paſſed over in their morning's walk was chiefly poor ſtony ground, it was covered with timber, and was pleaſing to the eye. At half paſt one o'clock, the party came to a low piece of ground where they found water, and which, in any future excurſion, would be a good ſleeping place. The country continued a dry, arid ſoil, and the ſurface was moſtly covered with looſe ſtones, till forty minutes paſt three o'clock, when they came to ſome pools of good water, which were very acceptable, as one of the party was taken ill. Here they made fires and laid down for the night. In the courſe of the day, they had ſeen numbers of Pattagorong, and Baggaray; in one herd, it was ſuppoſed there could not be leſs than forty.

CHAP. XXI.

1791. April.

Soon after the fires were lighted, the voice of a native was heard in the woods, hunting his dog; and, as Colebe and Ballederry were very deſirous of having an interview with him, though they ſaid the tribe of *Bu-ru-be-ron-gal*, who were bad men and their enemies, reſided near the ſpot, they frequently hallooed, and were anſwered by the ſtranger; and, as the voice drew nearer, they deſired our party would all lie down and keep ſilence. A light was now ſeen in the woods, and our natives advancing towards it, a pretty long converſation enſued between them and the ſtranger, who approached them with great precaution: a little boy who was with him carried the fire, which was a piece of the bark of the tea-tree. This boy being ſent forward firſt, joined Colebe and Ballederry, who, having told the ſtranger their names, the tribe to which they belonged, and received the like information from him, they joined, and the ſtranger was now told the names of the party who remained at the fire; at the ſame time, ſome of them were deſired to ſpeak.—— At Governor Phillip's approach, the boy ran away, and the man did not appear perfectly at his eaſe when he ſaw four or five perſons near him, though none of them were armed. They were all introduced to the ſtranger by name, and he was preſſed to come to their fire, which was forty or fifty yards diſtant; but this he declined, ſaying he would go and fetch his family, and would return in the morning. Colebe and Ballederry told this man that their party were going to the river, which he pointed out as lying in the direction they had taken. When theſe natives firſt endeavoured to make themſelves heard by the ſtranger, they had advanced ſome little diſtance from the reſt, but as he approached them they retreated, and wanted the ſerjeant, in whom they always placed great confidence, to take his gun, and go with them, which was not permitted: this ſhewed that they, as well as the other native, thought there was ſome danger in the meeting; and the caution with which

1791. April.

which the ſtranger approached them was very great; by ſending the boy before him with the fire, he could ſee if thoſe he was going to join were armed or not, whilſt the trees kept him from their view. This man had a ſtone hatchet, a ſpear, and a throwing-ſtick, which one of our natives was very deſirous of his leaving; probably as a pledge for his returning in the morning, but this he refuſed: he was a young man, of the tribe of Bu-ru-be-ron-gal, and named *Bur-ro-wan*; his hair was ornamented with the tails of ſeveral ſmall animals, and he had preſerved all his teeth. On Colebe being aſked how this man lived, he ſaid that he had no canoe, but lived by the chace. The next morning, (the 12th of April,) our party ſet off at half paſt ſix o'clock, keeping their courſe north-weſt, through a poor country, though covered with timber, till three quarters paſt eight, when they ſaw the river, which, in this ſituation, is about 300 feet wide: the banks are high, and the ſoil a light ſand, but producing fine ſtrait timber: this ſand, which in ſome places does not appear to have any mixture of mould, extends ſeveral hundred yards from the river. The party were now eighteen miles and an half from Roſe-Hill, which bore from them north 28° weſt. The current in the river was running down, and they ſet off at half paſt ten o'clock, to follow its windings, as it ran to the eaſtward. The perſon who was charged with counting his paces, and ſetting the objects to which they directed their march, had hitherto gone firſt; but the long ſedge, the dead branches which had fallen from the trees, the nettles, and a weed reſembling ivy which entangled the feet, made walking on, or near the banks of the river very fatiguing; he was therefore directed to follow the party, and to take the bearings of thoſe who went before him from time to time, ſtill counting his paces, that they might always know their ſituation in the woods, and the direction it would be neceſſary to take when they returned acroſs the country. They proceeded in an

Indian

1791. April.

Indian file, the perſon who went firſt, always falling into the rear whenever he found himſelf fatigued.

Several good ſituations were ſeen on the oppoſite ſide of the river as our party went along, and the ground appeared to be good: they alſo paſſed ſome good ſpots on their ſide of the river, and ſaw ſeveral places where the natives had ſlept on its banks. Ducks were ſeen in great numbers, but the party ſeldom got a ſhot.——In the afternoon, a creek obliged them to leave the banks of the river, and go round its head, as it was too deep to croſs: having rounded the head of this creek, they found themſelves on the borders of a river not more than eighty feet wide; the banks were low, and covered with a thick bruſh, which did not make walking leſs laborious to thoſe who went firſt. Their view was now very contracted, the ground riſing on the right ſo as to confine the proſpect to fifty or one hundred yards; and what they could ſee was moſtly a poor ſtony ſoil. In the afternoon, they fell in with one of the native's hunting-huts, which Colebe and Balledерry would have cut to pieces, had not Governor Phillip prevented them; they ſaid it belonged to their enemies, and they were much diſpleaſed at not being permitted to deſtroy it.

The natives were known to eat a grub which is found in the ſmall gum-tree, and when our party came to the creek already mentioned, a native fled on their approach, leaving his fire, and ſome decayed wood he had drawn out of the creek, for the purpoſe of procuring a large worm which is found in it, and which they eat. The ſmell of this wood is ſo ſtrong, that few Europeans are able to bear it for any length of time; indeed, it cannot be diſtinguiſhed from the fouleſt privy. At four o'clock the party halted and made fires for the night, being all pretty well tired. Juſt before they ſtopped for the night, ſeveral natives were heard, and Colebe and Ballederry wanted to join them, but they went away in their canoes. In the morning of the 13th, the party ſet off again, ſtill following the creek, which was now little larger than a good ditch, and went through a very barren rocky country, until noon, when, being at the head of the creek they croſſed it, and, after reſting ſome time, they endeavoured to go to the north-weſt, in order to fall in with the river which they had loſt by going round the creek in the afternoon of the preceding day; but they were ſoon ſtopped by a deep ravine; and the ſurgeon going to a riſing ground on the left, ſaw the country open to the weſtward, and thought he could diſtinguiſh Richmond-Hill; this led them all to the ſpot, and, from the break in the mountain, and the trending of the land, Governor Phillip imagined it to be Richmond-Hill, which they ſaw, being the ſouthern extremity of a range of hills. It bore weſt by ſouth, and appeared to be from eleven to thirteen miles diſtant, as near as could be determined.

CHAP. XXI.
1791. April.

The place from whence our party had this proſpect, was called *Tench's Proſpect-Hill*, that officer being of the party, and having from thence ſeen Richmond-Hill for the firſt time.——The ſpot where they had made the river on the 12th, being little more than four miles diſtant, it was thought beſt to return there, and from thence to trace the river to the weſtward till they got oppoſite to Richmond-Hill. The Governor was well aware of the difficulties they would have to encounter on the banks of a river where walking was laborious, and every little creek they met with would oblige them to follow it up the country till they could croſs it; but in a country like this, you may travel many miles through the woods and not get ſight of very high land, though it may not be half a mile from you.

1791. April.

Our party ſet off, in order to get back to ſleep near the head of the creek, which they had croſſed at noon, and which they ſoon attained: it was flood-tide when they got there, and they found the tide to riſe about eighteen inches, making high water at nine o'clock: this was on the night of the 13th. After croſſing the creek at half paſt ſeven o'clock the next morning, they ſhaped a courſe that was likely to carry them to the river, without being embarraſſed with the bad walking on its banks, or the windings of the creek, until they got near the ſpot, from whence they propoſed taking a freſh departure.

After croſſing the creek, and ſome very rocky ground, they had good walking over a country, full of timber and pleaſing to the eye; but the ground was poor, and the ſurface moſtly covered with ſtones. Here ſome ants neſts were ſeen, compoſed of an amazing number of ſmall ſtones, which formed a circle of five or ſix feet diameter, riſing regularly in the center to the height of twenty or thirty inches. An hour and a half's walking brought them to a ſwamp, where they ſtopped to fire at ſome ducks, and then croſſing it, they continued their courſe nearly weſt 8° north till eleven o'clock, when they came to a pool of good water.——The country was now ſandy, and preſently afterwards, they arrived on the borders of the river, and ſoon got to the place where they firſt ſtopped in the morning of the 12th. Several canoes being ſeen, our two natives were very deſirous of ſpeaking to the perſons in them, and the party were all deſired to hide themſelves in the graſs until the canoes ſhould come abreaſt of them; Colebe and Ballederry alſo concealed themſelves, but the canoes ſtopping on the oppoſite ſhore before they came near, one of our natives was told to call to them, which he did, and was ſoon anſwered by an old man, who, after a ſhort converſation, came over in his canoe, being known to Colebe.——

This man joined the party without the leaſt fear; and from the queſtions that were put to him reſpecting the river, Colebe and Ballederry concluded they had come this journey in order to procure ſtone hatchets, as the natives get the ſtones whereof they make their hatchets from that part of the river near Richmond-Hill, which the old man ſaid was a great way off, and the road to it was very bad.

Colebe and Ballederry had at firſt ſuppoſed, that Governor Phillip and his party came from the ſettlement to kill ducks and patagorongs; but finding they did not ſtop at the places where thoſe animals were ſeen in any numbers, they were at a loſs to know why the journey was taken; and though they had hitherto behaved exceedingly well, yet, as they now began to be tired of a journey, which yielded them no ſort of advantage, they endeavoured to perſuade the governor to return, ſaying, it was a great way to the place where the ſtone hatchets were to be procured, and that they muſt come in a boat.

On the party leaving this place, the old native returned to his canoe, but he joined them ſoon afterwards, and gave Governor Phillip two ſtone hatchets, two ſpears, and a throwing-ſtick: this preſent was made in conſequence of our two natives telling him who all the party were. In return for the old man's preſent, he had ſome bread, ſome fiſh-hooks, and a couple of ſmall hatchets given him. The ſpears were well made; one of them had a ſingle barb of wood fixed on with gum, the other had two large barbs cut out of the ſolid wood, and it was as finely brought to a point as if it had been made with the ſharpeſt inſtrument. The throwing-ſtick had a piece of hard ſtone fixed in gum inſtead of the ſhell which is commonly uſed by the natives who live on the ſea coaſt: it is with theſe ſtones, which they bring to a very ſharp

CHAP. XXI. 1791. April.

edge, that the natives make their ſpears. The old native followed our party in his canoe as they kept along the banks of the river, and another canoe, with a woman and child, joined him: the old man obſerving that they did not keep near enough the water's edge to have the leaſt fatigue in walking, came out of his canoe and took the lead, and he ſoon brought them to a path made by the natives, where it was very good walking, and which ran alongſide the river. It was near four o'clock when they ſtopped for the night, and were joined by a young man and a lively little boy, who they ſoon found intended, as well as the old man, to take up their reſidence with them, though their families were on the oppoſite bank, and they had two fires lighted.

Though our natives appeared to be on very friendly terms with their new acquaintances, yet they certainly had no particular affection for them, and ſpoke of them very lightly when they were out of hearing; particularly Ballederry, who ſaid the youngeſt man of the two was bad: his name was *Yal-lah-mien-di*; they ſuppoſed him to be the old man's ſon, and the child to be his grandſon. The old man called himſelf *Go-me-bee-re*, and ſaid the child's name was *Jim-bah*; they were of the tribe of *Bu-ru-be-rong-al*.

Colebe and Ballederry, in deſcribing that tribe on the ſecond day's journey, had called them *climbers of trees*, and men who lived by hunting; certainly, no perſons can better deſerve the appellation of climbers, if we may judge from what was ſeen of Go-me-bee-re, who, for a biſcuit, in a very few minutes cut his notches in the bark of a tree and mounted it with ſurpriſing agility, though an old man. Theſe notches are cut in the bark little more than an inch deep, which receives the ball of the great toe; the firſt and ſecond notches are cut from the ground; the reſt they cut as they aſcend, and at ſuch a diſtance from each other, that when both their feet are in the notches, the right foot is raiſed nearly as high as the middle of the left thigh: when they are going to raiſe themſelves a ſtep, their hatchet is held in the mouth, in order to have the uſe of both their hands; and, when cutting the notch, the weight of the body reſts on the ball of the great toe: the fingers of the left hand are alſo fixed in a notch cut on the ſide of the tree for that purpoſe, if it is too large to admit their claſping it ſufficiently with the left arm to keep the body cloſe to the tree.——In this manner do theſe people climb trees, whoſe circumference is ten or fifteen feet, or upwards, after an opoſſum or a ſquirrel, though they riſe to the height of ſixty or eighty feet before there is a ſingle branch.

Governor Phillip had occaſionally ſeen a few of the natives climb the trees at Sydney and Roſe-Hill, but this old man greatly ſurpaſſed them. In the evening, the four natives and the child took their places at the fire, and a ſcene enſued which ſhews that theſe people are not a little ſuperſtitious.

Colebe had been wounded below the left breaſt with a fiz-gig, and though it muſt have been done many years back, or the wound muſt have been ſlight, as it was difficult to diſcover any ſcar, yet it was ſuppoſed he felt ſome pain, though it probably might be occaſioned by the ſtraps of his knapſack; however, the youngeſt of the two ſtrangers was applied to for relief.——He began the ceremony by taking a mouthful of water, which he ſquirted on the part affected, and then applying his mouth, he began to ſuck as long as he could without taking breath; this ſeemed to make him ſick, and when he roſe up, (for his patient was ſitting on the ground) he walked about for a few minutes,

and

CHAP. XXI.

1791. April.

and then began to ſuck again, till it was again neceſſary for him to take breath: this was repeated three times, and he ſeemed, by drawing in his ſtomach, to feel the pain he had drawn from the breaſt of his patient; and having picked up a bit of ſtick or ſtone, which he did with ſo little caution that ſeveral of the party ſaw him, he pretended to take ſomething out of his mouth and throw it into the river.——He certainly did throw ſomething away, which muſt be what he picked up; but Colebe, after the ceremony was over, ſaid it was what he had ſucked from his breaſt, which ſome underſtood to be two barbs of a fiz-gig, as he made uſe of the word *Bul-ler-doo-ul*; but Governor Phillip was of opinion he meant two pains. Before this buſineſs was finiſhed, the doctor felt his patient's back below the ſhoulder, and ſeemed to apply his fingers as if he twitched ſomething out; after which, he ſat down by the patient, and put his right arm round his back; the old man, at the ſame time, ſat down on the other ſide the patient, with his face the contrary way, and claſped him round the breaſt with his right arm; each of them had hold of one of the patient's hands, in which ſituation they remained a few minutes; thus ended the ceremony, and Colebe ſaid he was well. He gave his worſted night cap and the beſt part of his ſupper to the doctor as a fee; and being aſked, if both the men were doctors, he ſaid, yes, and the child was a doctor alſo, ſo that it may be preſumed the power of healing wounds deſcends from father to ſon.

This affair being finiſhed, moſt of the party fell aſleep, whilſt the two doctors were amuſed by Colebe and Ballederry, with an account of the buildings at Sydney and Roſe-Hill, and in what manner the coloniſts lived: in this hiſtory, names were as particularly attended to as if their hearers had been intimately acquainted with every perſon who was

1791. April.

mentioned. Though the tribe of Buruberongal, to which theſe men belonged, live chiefly by hunting, the women are employed in fiſhing, and our party were told, that they caught large mullet in the river. Neither of theſe men had loſt their front tooth, and the names they gave to ſeveral parts of the body were ſuch as the natives about Sydney had never been heard to make uſe of. Ga-dia (the penis), they called *Cud-da*; Go-rey (the ear), they called *Ben-ne*; in the word *mi* (the eye), they pronounced the letter *I* as an *E*; and in many other inſtances their pronunciation varied, ſo that there is good reaſon to believe ſeveral different languages are ſpoken by the natives of this country, and this accounts for only one or two of thoſe words given in Captain Cook's vocabulary having ever been heard amongſt the natives who viſited the ſettlement.

Having taken leave of their new friends the *Car-ra-dy-gans* (doctors), our party ſet off at a quarter paſt ſeven o'clock in the morning of the 15th of April, and followed the natives path along the banks of the river, walking at a good pace till a quarter paſt eight o'clock, when they came to a creek which was too wide to be croſſed by cutting down a tree, and was too deep to be forded; they were, therefore, obliged to follow its windings till they ſuppoſed themſelves at the head of it, and then they endeavoured to regain the banks of the river; but they preſently found that they had only rounded a ſmall arm of this creek, the principal branch of which they continued to trace with infinite fatigue for the remainder of the day.

It was high water in this creek at forty minutes paſt twelve o'clock, and at half paſt three, they found it divide into two branches, either of which might have been croſſed on a tree; but by this time the party

were

CHAP. XXI. 1791. April.

were tired, and threatened with heavy rain, which would make their night very uncomfortable, as they had no tent; they therefore took up their reſidence at a ſpot where a quantity of timber, from trees, which had already been burnt down by the natives, promiſed them good fires with little labour.

The rain went off after a few light ſhowers, but our two natives now began to grow quite impatient to return home. Colebe talked about his wife, and ſaid his child would cry; and Balledeıry loſt all patience when the rain began, telling the governor, that there were good houſes at Sydney and Roſe-Hill, but that they had no houſe now, no fiſh, no melon (of which fruit all the natives are very fond); and there is no doubt but they would have left the party, had they been acquainted with the country through which they had to return. It was moſt likely that the greateſt part of the next day would be ſpent in getting to that part of the river which the creek had obliged them to quit, ſo that two days would be taken up in getting to the oppoſite ſide of a creek, not one hundred feet wide; it was, therefore, determined to return to Roſe-Hill, which bore from the ſleeping place ſouth-eaſt, ſixteen miles diſtant.

The river which Governor Phillip had named the Nepean in a former excurſion, was then traced for ſome miles, and he expected to have fallen in with it this journey, and to have traced it down to where it empties itſelf into the Hawkeſbury, which it is ſuppoſed to do above Richmond-Hill: indeed, during the firſt day of this excurſion, he ſuppoſed it poſſible that the river they were then tracing might be the Nepean, but what they ſaw of it afterwards, left no doubt but that they had fallen in with the Hawkeſbury ſome miles below Richmond-Hill.

1791. April.

In the morning of the 16th of April, at half paſt ſeven o'clock, Governor Phillip and his party ſet off on their return to Roſe-Hill; and, as ſoon as they were clear of the creek, they went ſouth 40° eaſt, which, they ſuppoſed, would carry them into the path leading from Roſe-Hill to Proſpect-Hill.——The face of the country where they ſlept, and for ſeveral miles in their road, was a poor ſoil, but finely formed, and covered with the ſtately white gum-tree. At noon, they came to a hollow, in which they found ſome very good water; here they ſtopped near an hour: after paſſing this gully, and a rocky piece of ground, the ſoil grew better, and they ſoon came to a brook of good water, which they had occaſion to croſs twice; the ſoil was good, and covered with long graſs: they were now drawing near to Roſe-Hill, where they arrived a little before four o'clock.

The dry weather ſtill continued, and though they had a few ſhowers, the quantity of rain which fell in the month of April, was not ſufficient to bring the dry ground into proper order for ſowing the grain; a few acres, however, of what was in the beſt condition, were ſown with wheat the laſt week in the month. This long continuance of dry weather, not only hurt their crops of corn very much, but the gardens likewiſe ſuffered greatly; many being ſown a ſecond and a third time, as the ſeed never vegetated, from the want of moiſture in the ſoil; this was a double misfortune, for vegetables were not only growing ſcarce, but ſeed alſo.

The expected ſupply of proviſions not arriving, Governor Phillip was obliged to reduce the ratio of daily ſubſiſtence; but this reduction did not extend to the women and children.

CHAP. XXI.

1791. April.

After ſaying that there were many of the convicts, who, if not attended to, ate their week's allowance of proviſions in two or three days; it will be obvious that the labour hitherto drawn from that claſs of people, muſt be greatly leſſened by the neceſſity the Governor was under of reducing even that allowance; indeed, it was felt by every individual, for the daily ratio of proviſions iſſued from the public ſtores, was the ſame to the convict as it was to the governor.

Two ſeamen, who had belonged to the Sirius, became ſettlers, and were fixed on the creek leading to Roſe-Hill, where they had ſixty acres of ground each allotted them, and they were to be victualled from the public ſtore for eighteen months. A perſon who was ſent from England to ſuperintend the labour of the convicts, alſo became a ſettler, and one hundred and forty acres of land were allotted him on the creek: he was allowed the labour of four convicts for a year, and himſelf and his daughter were to be victualled from the public ſtore for twelve months.——Several convicts, whoſe terms for which they were ſentenced were expired, were permitted to cultivate ground at the foot of Proſpect-Hill, and to thoſe who became ſettlers, Governor Phillip gave what live ſtock he could ſpare, as there was not any belonging to the public in the ſettlement; nor were individuals poſſeſſed of any conſiderable quantity of live ſtock, the greateſt part having been killed the laſt year, when they were diſtreſſed for want of proviſions; and thoſe who were able to cultivate a little maize, were glad to make uſe of it as a ſubſtitute for bread.

Little more than twelve months back, hogs and poultry were in great abundance, and were increaſing very rapidly; but, at this time, a hen that laid eggs ſold for twenty ſhillings; pork ſold for a ſhilling per pound, but

1791. April.

but there was ſeldom any to ſell; a roaſting-pig ſold for ten ſhillings, and good tobacco for twenty ſhillings per pound: tobacco, the growth of this country, which, if properly cured, would probably equal the beſt Brazil tobacco, ſold in its green ſtate, for ten ſhillings per pound: ſuch was the ſtate of the colony at this time.

All the maize was now got in, and, notwithſtanding the extraordinary drought for ſome time before, and long after it was put into the ground, the crop was not a bad one, and the cobs were remarkably large where the ground had been well prepared.

May.

In the beginning of May, the officers and men of the New South-Wales corps went into the new barrack at Roſe-Hill. The barrack for the ſoldiers had been finiſhed ſome time, but one of the wings, which was intended for the officers, could not be compleated before the end of the month. Thoſe natives who had been moſt accuſtomed to live at the ſettlement, would now leave it frequently for ſeveral days together, as they found plenty of fiſh towards the head of the harbour. The ſavage ferocity of theſe people ſhews itſelf whenever they find themſelves thwarted. Bannelong and Colebe with their wives, dined at the governor's on the 8th of May, and came in as uſual, to have a glaſs of wine and a diſh of coffee; after which they left the houſe to go and ſleep at Bannelong's hut on the point; but, in the middle of the night, Governor Phillip was called up by the cries of the young girl whom he had formerly reſcued from Bannelong: ſhe, it ſeems, had gone to ſleep in a ſhed at the back of the governor's houſe, and Bannelong, Colebe, and two others got over the paling, and were endeavouring to carry her off, which the centinels prevented; and, as Governor

Phillip

CHAP. XXI.

1791. May.

Phillip did not know at the moment, but that Bannelong and thoſe who were with him, had returned to ſleep in the yard after he went to bed, and before the gate was locked, they were permitted to eſcape; which, indeed, could only have been prevented by ordering them to be put to death.

One of theſe men was ſeen the next day, and, being taxed with attempting to carry off the girl, he denied the charge; as the natives always do when they are not caught in the fact. Bannelong and Colebe were not ſeen for a week, and the latter appearing firſt, when accuſed, ſaid he was aſleep at the time, and laid the blame on Bannelong, who coming ſoon after, and not being able to make any excuſe, or to deny being in the yard, appeared ſullen; and when Governor Phillip told him that he was angry, and that the ſoldiers ſhould ſhoot him if he ever came again to take any woman away, he very cooly replied, that then he would ſpear the ſoldier; at the ſame time, he ſaid he was very hungry; and, as no advantage would have followed puniſhing him, he was ordered ſomething to eat, after the threat had been repeated of his being ſhot, if ever he came again in the night.

It was probable, that the diſpleaſure of Governor Phillip with Bannelong would have a better effect than any corporal puniſhment, which might only lead him to revenge himſelf on ſome of thoſe who frequently went into the woods unarmed; at the ſame time, orders were given for the centinels to fire on any of the natives who might be ſeen getting over the paling in the night, and the ſleeping of the women in the yard when their huſbands were not with them was diſcouraged.

The girl was aſked if the natives were going to take her away in order to beat her,—ſhe ſaid no, it was to force her to ſleep with them; at the ſame time theſe men had left their own wives at their fires.

CHAP. XXI.

1791. May.

The Supply had now ſo far exceeded the time in which ſhe generally made the voyage to and from Norfolk-Iſland, that fears were entertained for her ſafety, but they were removed by her arrival on the 30th of May. As ſhe was the only veſſel in this country, it was not without great concern that Governor Phillip found the neceſſary repairs ſhe wanted would require more time than he could have wiſhed her to remain in the harbour.

CHAPTER XXII.

A ſecond excurſion into the country.—The firſt grants of land to ſettlers.—A barter with the natives eſtabliſhed.—The arrival of ſeveral veſſels from England.—A new harbour diſcovered.—The names of the firſt ſettlers.

CHAP. XXII. 1791. June.

THE weather continuing dry, two officers (Tench and Dawes,) who were with Governor Phillip on his laſt excurſion, and two ſoldiers, ſet off in the beginning of June, 1791, to trace the Hawkeſbury, from the place where the former party were turned off by the creek: they got oppoſite Richmond-Hill on the 5th day after their departure, and were aſſiſted in croſſing the river by a native, who lent his canoe to one of the ſoldiers that could not ſwim; but they afterwards found the river ſo very ſhallow near the fall, that the water did not reach above the ancles. It has already been obſerved, that when the floods come down from the mountains, the flat country near the head of the Hawkeſbury is, in many places, under water, and the river, in that part, riſes to a great height.——It now appeared that the Nepean does, as was ſuppoſed, empty itſelf into the Hawkeſbury; and, in Governor Phillip's opinion, the fall and the ſudden contraction of that noble river are very ſufficient reaſons for confining its name from where it empties itſelf into Broken-Bay up to the fall; and for continuing the name given to the river (Nepean) which was diſcovered in going weſtward from Proſpect-Hill.

1791. June.

The buildings at Roſe-Hill being carried on ſo far as to form hereafter a regular town between Roſe-Hill and the landing-place in the creek, Governor Phillip named it *Parramatta*; the name given by the natives to the ſpot on which the town was building. Grants of land were now given to thoſe who became ſettlers; and thoſe who had been permitted to clear ground in their leiſure hours, and on one day of the week which was allowed them for that purpoſe, went on very well.

The grants which had already been made, were, to James Ruſe, thirty acres, which is called in the grant *Experiment Farm*: to Philip Schaffer, who came from England as a ſuperintendant, one hundred and forty acres; called in the grant, the *Vineyard*: to Robert Webb and William Reid, who were ſeamen, lately belonging to the Sirius, ſixty acres each, and which were called in the grants, *Webb* and *Reid's Farms*.

On the 4th of June, the anniverſary of his Majeſty's birth-day was celebrated, and, on this occaſion, an addition was made to the daily ratio of proviſions; a pound of pork and a pound of rice were given to each man, half that quantity to every woman, and a quarter of a pound of pork, with half a pound of rice to every child.

Some refreſhing ſhowers of rain had lately fallen, but not ſufficient to bring up the wheat that was ſown in April and the beginning of May; however, ſome came up well where the ground, lying low, had a little moiſture in it.

The Supply's main-maſt being got out was found very rotten, and that veſſel wanted repairs which they found difficult to give her.

CHAP. XXII.

1791. June.

A ſoldier of the New South Wales corps, going from Parramatta with ſome of his comrades for the purpoſe of procuring ſweet tea, left them to go after a pattegorong, and loſt himſelf in the woods: after roving about for ſome time, he ſaw a number of the natives, who fled on ſeeing his gun, except one that had frequently viſited the ſettlement, and was known by the name of *Botany-Bay Colebe*. This man joined the ſoldier, and was followed by one of his companions; the ſoldier, to gain their good-will, and in hopes of inducing them to ſhew him the way to Parramatta, offered them ſome of his cloaths, which were not accepted; he made them underſtand where he wanted to go, but they were on the point of leaving him till he offered his gun, which the native, who was known at the ſettlement, took, and then conducted him to Sydney; making him underſtand that Parramatta was a great way off.

When they drew near to Sydney, Colebe returned the ſoldier his gun, and, bidding him tell *Beanah*, (the governor) that he was *Botany-Bay Colebe*, he left him, without even taking what the ſoldier had firſt offered him as a preſent.

As the natives frequently caught more fiſh than was neceſſary for their own immediate uſe, and ſuch of them as had lived amongſt the coloniſts, were very fond of bread, rice, and vegetables; ſome pains had been taken to make them carry the ſurplus of what fiſh they caught near the head of the harbour, to Parramatta, and exchange it for bread, &c. Several of them had carried on this traffic lately, and Governor Phillip had reaſon to hope that a pretty good fiſh-market would be eſtabliſhed the enſuing ſummer.——Amongſt thoſe who thus bartered their fiſh, was a young man that had lived ſome months with the governor, but had left him from time to time in order to go a fiſhing: his canoe was a new one, and the firſt he had ever been maſter of, ſo that it may be ſuppoſed he ſet no ſmall value on it. CHAP. XXII.

1791. June.

Strict orders had been given, that the natives' canoes ſhould never be touched, and the intereſt which both the ſoldiers and the convict had in inducing them to bring their fiſh, which they exchanged for a very ſmall quantity of bread or rice, would, it might have been ſuppoſed, have ſecured them from inſult; but this barter had not been carried on many days, when the young man juſt mentioned, came to Governor Phillip's hut at Parramatta in a violent rage, ſaid the white men had broke his canoe, and he would kill them: he had his throwing-ſtick and ſeveral ſpears, and his hair, face, arms, and breaſt were painted red, which is a ſign of great anger: it was with ſome difficulty that he was made to promiſe not to kill a white man; which he at length did, on the governor's telling him, that he would kill thoſe who deſtroyed his canoe. A ſhort time afterwards, the villains were diſcovered and puniſhed: they were convicts, and the young native ſaw the puniſhment inflicted, yet it was thought neceſſary to tell him that one of the offenders had been hanged, with which he appeared to be ſatisfied; but, whilſt theſe men were under examination, his behaviour ſhewed, that he thought it belonged to him to puniſh the injury he had received; and three weeks after the loſs of his canoe, when every one thought he was ſufficiently repaid for his misfortune by ſeveral little articles, which Governor Phillip had given him, by his ſeeing the aggreſſor puniſhed, and by his ſuppoſing one of them had been put to death, he took his revenge; which confirmed the general opinion, that theſe people do not readily forgive an injury until they have puniſhed the aggreſſor. A convict, who ſtrayed ſome diſtance from the ſettlement, was met by two young native men, a woman, and two children, who paſſed by him, but immediately

CHAP. XXII.

1791. June.

mediately afterwards he was wounded in the back with a ſpear; ſeveral ſpears were thrown at him, and he received a ſecond wound in the ſide; however, he got away; and as it did not appear that the natives followed him to get his cloaths, or attempted to take any thing from him, there was no doubt but the canoe being deſtroyed was the cauſe of this attack; eſpecially as the ſame evening, when Governor Phillip was returning from Parramatta to Sydney, he ſaw ſome natives aſſembled round a fire, and aſking them who it was that wounded the white man, he was immediately anſwered, *Balledерry*; (the owner of the canoe which had been deſtroyed) he was alſo told the name of the young man who was with him, and of the women and children: indeed, it is not a little extraordinary, that theſe people always tell the names of thoſe who have thrown a ſpear, or who have ſtole any thing, if the queſtion is aſked them, though they know that you intend to puniſh the offenders; and it cannot be from a principle of ſtrictly adhering to truth; for, ſhould one of them be charged with doing any thing wrong, he is ſure to deny it, and to lay the blame on another who is not preſent; and it is not only ſurpriſing that they ſhould always tell the name of the offender, but that they do it openly; nay, often in the hearing of women and children. The deſtruction of this canoe was very unfortunate, as it was likely to prevent the natives carrying up their fiſh to barter; and no canoe was ſeen in the creek for ſome time afterwards. Balledеrry, the owner of the canoe, was one whom Governor Phillip had hopes of attaching to himſelf, and intended bringing him to England.

Hawks and crows were now frequently ſeen in great numbers, though, at times, ſeveral months would paſs without one of either ſpecies being ſeen. At Parramatta, after the wheat was ſown, the crows were very troubleſome, and though frequently fired at, they did great damage. On the 21ſt of June, they had rain, which continued till the morning of the 24th, and, at times, was very violent; indeed, more rain fell in three days than had done in many months paſt, ſo that the low grounds were thoroughly ſoaked.

1791. July.

On the 9th of July, our coloniſts had the pleaſure of ſeeing the ſignal made for a ſail, and the next day, the Mary Ann tranſport anchored in the cove, having on board one hundred and forty-one women, and ſix children, all very healthy, ſome few excepted, who had diſorders which were contracted in England, and only three perſons died on the paſſage.

This veſſel had paſſed through the Downs on the 25th of the preceding February, and ſtopped eight days at St. Jago. By this ſhip our coloniſts received ſome ſtores, and nine months proviſions for the women who came in her: they had alſo the ſatisfaction of hearing that the Gorgon, whoſe arrival had been expected for twelve months back, was ſafe, and was to ſail for the colony a week after the Mary Ann.

Two pounds of rice were now added to the weekly ratio of proviſions, the ſtores not admitting a greater addition; for though an ample ſupply of proviſions might reaſonably be expected by the middle of the enſuing month, yet their ſituation did not admit their truſting to the various accidents, which had hitherto been ſo very unfavourable to the colony: however, they were now convinced, that from the plan propoſed by government for furniſhing the ſettlement with proviſions until it could ſupport itſelf, there was no reaſon to fear in future thoſe inconveniences which they had already laboured under.

CHAP. XXII.

1791. July.

In the night of the 16th of July, a ſerjeant, going the rounds, found the door of the ſpirit cellar open, and the centinel in the cellar, drawing off wine: this man, being ordered for trial, offered himſelf as an evidence for the crown, and charged two of his comrades with having frequently robbed the ſtore, of which there was not the leaſt doubt: however, the only evidence againſt theſe men being that of an accomplice, it was not ſufficient to convict them, and he ſaved his own life by being admitted as an evidence for the crown. He was afterwards tried by a batallion court-martial, (as being a marine, he could not be tried by a general court-martial) and ſentenced to receive corporal puniſhment, and to be drummed out of the corps. The men he had accuſed were the two who had been charged with robbing the ſtore at Roſe-Hill, by one of thoſe marines who ſuffered death for robbing the ſtore at Sydney in 1788, at which time, likewiſe, they eſcaped, the only evidence againſt them being an accomplice under ſentence of death.

The rice which they received from Batavia was not of the beſt kind, and was very full of dirt and wevil when landed; and the wevil had now increaſed to ſuch a degree that a very conſiderable quantity of rice was deſtroyed: indeed, what remained had been thought too bad to iſſue to the garriſon, had the ſtores admited of its being given to the hogs. Five pounds of this rice were eſtimated as only equal to two pounds of flour, with reſpect to the nouriſhment it afforded, and this eſtimation was deemed pretty juſt.

It being the intention of government, that as the time for which the convicts were ſentenced, expired, they ſhould be permitted to become ſettlers; thoſe who choſe to accept this bounty were received as ſuch,

and

1791. July.

and lands were granted them in the following proportion; viz. Thirty acres to the ſingle men, fifty acres to thoſe who were married, and ten acres more for every child. It had been propoſed to victual and cloath them from the public ſtore for twelve months, from the time they became ſettlers; but to encourage thoſe who firſt offered themſelves, Governor Phillip promiſed to cloath and ſupport them for eighteen months from the public ſtores: they were to have the neceſſary tools and implements of huſbandry, with ſeeds and grain to ſow the ground the firſt year; two young ſow pigs were alſo to be given to each ſettler, which was all the governor's ſtock would afford, and it has already been obſerved, that they had no live ſtock in the ſettlement belonging to the crown. On theſe conditions, twenty-ſeven convicts were admitted ſettlers; twelve of them were fixed at the foot of Proſpect-Hill, four miles from Parramatta, and fifteen, at ſome ponds, an eligible ſituation about two miles to the northward of thoſe ſettlers who were placed on the creek leading to Parramatta.

In laying out the different allotments, an intermediate ſpace, equal to what was granted the ſettler, was retained between every two allotments, for the benefit of the crown; and as this ſet them at ſome diſtance from each other, and there being a wood between every two ſettlers, in which the natives might conceal themſelves, if they were inclined to miſchief, ſeveral muſquets were diſtributed amongſt the ſettlers, and they took poſſeſſion of their allotments on the 18th of July, and began to erect their huts: however, very few days elapſed before a large body of the natives appeared in the grounds of one of the new ſettlers at Proſpect-Hill, who, alarmed at the ſight of a number of natives, (by his account more than a hundred) fired off his muſquet and retreated; this, of courſe, encouraged them, and they advanced, and ſet fire to

CHAP. XXII. his hut, which was nearly finiſhed.——On hearing the report of a muſquet, another ſettler took up his arms, and running to the ſpot, fired on the natives, who retired to ſome diſtance.

1791. July.

As ſoon as this affair was known at Parramatta, a party of ſoldiers were detached, who, getting ſight of about fifty of the natives, obliged them to diſperſe. This circumſtance induced Governor Phillip to deviate from the royal inſtructions, which pointed out in what manner the allotments of land were to be made; and as the only means of enabling the ſettlers to defend themſelves againſt ſimilar accidents, he granted all thoſe intermediate lands which had been reſerved for the uſe of the crown, to the ſettlers: by this means, all the land would be cleared of timber, ſo that the natives could find no ſhelter, and, in all probability, there would be little danger from them in future: however, a noncommiſſioned officer and three privates were detached to each ſettlement, with orders to remain there until the lands were cleared. In making this arrangement, no additional ground was given to the ſettler, but their allotments were brought more into a ſquare, and the ground not occupied at preſent, would be granted to others in future. When theſe ſettlers were placed at ſuch a diſtance from Parramatta, it was on account of the ſoil being good, and that their live ſtock and gardens might not be ſo liable to depredations as they would have been if nearer the town.

On the 1ſt of Auguſt, the Matilda tranſport anchored at Sydney, with cloathing, proviſions, and two hundred and five male convicts. She ſailed from England on the 27th of the preceding March, in company with four others, and parted with them the firſt night. Although this ſhip had made ſo good a paſſage, ſhe buried twenty-four convicts; twenty were ſick, and many were in ſo emaciated a ſtate, that ſcarcely any labour could be expected from them for ſome months. The Matilda had loſt three days in endeavouring to get into St. Jago; ſhe lay nine days at the Cape of Good Hope, and was two days at anchor on the Coaſt of New South Wales, within an iſland in the latitude of 42° 15′ ſouth, where the maſter found very good anchorage and ſhelter for five or ſix veſſels. This iſland, by the maſter's account, lies twelve miles from the main.

1791. August.

Off Cape Dromedary, he ſaw a ſmall iſland, which bore ſouth-weſt by weſt, ſeven miles from the cape; within which, he was of opinion, two or three ſhips would find good ſhelter. An enſign and twenty privates, of the corps raiſed for the ſervice of this country, came out in the Matilda, and a ſerjeant died on the paſſage.

Governor Phillip intended to have ſent the Matilda to Norfolk Iſland, with the ſtores, proviſions, and convicts ſhe had brought out, as ſoon as the ſick were landed; but ſhe being leaky, her cargo was put on board the Mary Ann, with one hundred and thirty-three male, and one female convict; and that veſſel ſailed on the 8th of Auguſt. A noncommiſſioned officer, and eleven privates of the New South Wales corps, were ſent for the ſecurity of the ſhip, and they were to remain on the iſland.

Ballederry, the young native who abſented himſelf after wounding a man, in revenge for ſome of the convicts having deſtroyed his canoe, had lately made ſeveral enquiries by his friends, whether Governor Phillip was ſtill angry; and they were always told in anſwer to thoſe enquiries, that he was angry, and that Ballederry ſhould be killed for wounding a white man; yet this did not deter him from coming into the cove in a

canoe,

1791. August.

canoe, and the governor being informed of it, ordered a party of ſoldiers to go and ſecure him; but Bannelong, who was preſent at the time, ſeeing the ſoldiers go towards the point, gave him the alarm, and he went off. Governor Phillip was in the garden at the time Bannelong was talking to the young man who was in his canoe going out of the cove, and gave him to underſtand, that Ballederry ſhould be killed; on which, he immediately called to him, and ſaid, the governor was ſtill very angry: Ballederry, on hearing this, went off pretty briſkly to the other ſide of the harbour, but, in anſwer to the threats of puniſhment, ſpears were mentioned, though he was then at ſo great a diſtance that the governor could not diſtinguiſh whether it was himſelf or the ſoldiers which he threatened: certain it is, that theſe people ſet little value on their lives, and never fail to repay you in kind, whether you praiſe or threaten; and whenever a blow is given them, be it gentle or with force, they always return it in the ſame manner.

The Atlantic tranſport, Lieutenant Bowen, who was one of the agents to the tranſports, arrived on the 20th of Auguſt. This ſhip ſailed from Plymouth the 23d of March, in company with the Salamander and the William and Ann, but ſhe parted with the former veſſel on the 5th of July, and with the latter on the 12th. Theſe veſſels had been to Rio de Janeiro, where they anchored the 28th of May, and ſailed from thence on the 12th of June, 1791.—The Atlantic's paſſage may be reckoned a very good one, particularly from Rio de Janeiro to the South Cape, which was only ſixty-nine days. This veſſel brought out a ſerjeant and ſeventeen privates, belonging to the New South Wales corps; alſo proviſions, ſtores, and two hundred and two male convicts. One ſoldier was loſt in a gale of wind, and eighteen convicts died on the paſſage:

few

ſew of the convicts were ſick when landed, but many of them were very weak, and in a few days, forty were under medical treatment.

1791. August.

Lieutenant Bowen had ſtood into a bay on this coaſt, which has been mentioned as promiſing a good harbour, and of which he gave the following particulars.—" The latitude where he made his obſervation was " 35° 12′ ſouth, the entrance from a mile to a mile and a half wide; " the ſouthernmoſt point of which is an iſland, almoſt connected with " the main land; the north point is pretty high, and riſes perpendicularly out of the ſea. It is the ſouthern extremity of a peninſula, " that at firſt was taken for a long low iſland: the entrance runs in " weſt-north-weſt for about a mile, and then turns ſuddenly round to " the northward, forming a very capacious baſon, three or four miles " wide, and five or ſix miles in length. The ſoundings, as far as they " could be examined, were very regular, with a bottom of ſlimy ſand; " the depth, for a conſiderable extent round the middle of the bay, is " from thirteen to fourteen fathoms. The weſt ſide, and the head of " the bay, is a white ſandy beach; the eaſtern ſhore is bold and rocky. " There is a ſmall ledge or ſhoal in the middle of the entrance, bearing " about ſouth from the ſecond point on the north ſhore, on which there " was conjectured to be twenty feet water *."

The Salamander arrived on the 21ſt; ſhe brought out twelve privates belonging to the New South Wales corps, and one hundred and fifty-four male convicts, with ſtores and proviſions. Moſt of the convicts on board this ſhip were in a weak emaciated ſtate; and they complained that they had not proper attention paid to them, after parting company

---

* It does not appear that there is any ſhoal in the entrance, as it has ſince been examined by the Maſter of the Matilda.

with

CHAP. XXII.

1791. Auguſt.

with the agent. The maſter of the Salamander was ordered to proceed to Norfolk-Iſland, with the convicts, ſtores, and proviſions he had brought out; but unfortunately it had not been foreſeen that it might be expedient to ſend ſome of theſe ſhips to land their cargoes at that place, and it was therefore neceſſary to clear this veſſel of the greateſt part of the ſtores, in order that they might be ſtowed in ſuch a manner as to permit the landing of the cargo, where, there being no good anchorage, it muſt be done with the ſhip under ſail, and ſubject to blowing weather, where there was a neceſſity of keeping her always in proper trim for working.

On the 23d of Auguſt a number of natives viſited the ſettlement, and ſix men, with ſeven or eight and twenty women and children came to Governor Phillip's houſe; amongſt whom ſome bread was dividing, when he was informed that Ballederry was on the oppoſite ſide of the cove, with a number of the natives, and that he was armed, as were moſt of his companions. Whether his coming in, after what had paſſed, proceeded from an opinion that Governor Phillip would not puniſh him, or from ſuppoſing himſelf ſafe whilſt ſurrounded by ſo many of his countrymen, it was thought neceſſary to order him to be ſeized, as ſoon as thoſe who were then in the yard eating what had been given them ſhould be gone; for, as Ballederry could not be taken without their hearing the diſpute, it was probable they would ſuppoſe themſelves in danger, and make uſe of their ſpears againſt thoſe who were treating them with kindneſs; in which caſe ſome of them muſt have ſuffered; indeed, this was the more likely to happen, as ſeveral of theſe men and women were ſtrangers, who had now come to Sydney for the firſt time.

This party were going to dance at Botany-Bay, and, having finiſhed their meal, and received ſome fiſh-hooks, they ſet off; immediately after which, a party of ſoldiers were ordered out to ſecure Ballederry; but before they got ſight of him, the boy Nanbarre had heard what was going forward and left the place: on this, a ſerjeant with a party were ſent after him; they came up with ſeveral natives, who joined them in a friendly manner, and, whilſt they were talking to the ſerjeant, one of them attempted to wreſt a firelock from a ſoldier, and immediately afterwards a ſpear was thrown, ſuppoſed to be by Ballederry. Two muſquets were then fired, by which a native was wounded in the leg; but unfortunately it was neither the man who attempted to take the muſquet, nor the perſon who threw the ſpear.——Soon afterwards, the natives were ſaid to be aſſembled near the brick-fields; an officer was therefore ordered out with a ſtrong party to diſperſe them, and to make a ſevere example of them, if any ſpears were thrown; but they never ſaw a native, for the boy Nanbarre, true to his countrymen, on ſeeing the ſoldiers form on the parade, ran into the woods, and ſtripping himſelf, that he might not be known, joined the natives, and put them on their guard; after which, he returned, and ſeeing the governor go paſt with ſome officers, whilſt he was hid in a buſh, he afterwards ſhewed himſelf to an officer's ſervant, and aſked where the governor and the ſoldiers were going, and being told, he laughed, and ſaid they were too late, for the natives were all gone.

Bannelong came in ſoon afterwards with his wife, and though he was told that the ſoldiers were gone out to puniſh Ballederry for wounding a white man, yet this intelligence did not prevent him from eating a hearty dinner; and when he was going away, he left a large bundle of ſpears, fiz-gigs, and various other articles under Governor Phillip's care.

1791. Auguſt

It might be ſuppoſed that the natives, after being fired at, and one of them being wounded, would not have truſted themſelves again at the ſettlement for ſome time: this, however, was not the caſe: they very well underſtood that nothing more was intended than to puniſh the perſon who wounded the white man, and that they would not have been fired on, had not a ſpear been thrown at the party, who, they well knew, were looking for Ballederry; and, on the 24th, more than twenty of them called at Governor Phillip's houſe, in their way from Botany-Bay to the lower part of the harbour, where moſt of them reſided; and others went to thoſe with whom they were acquainted, with the ſame freedom as if nothing had happened. On enquiry being made after the man who had been wounded, they ſaid he was gone to his tribe. Several of theſe people remained at the ſettlement all night, and amongſt them were two ſtrangers, who ſeemed as much at their eaſe as thoſe who were old acquaintances.

Bannelong's wife was now very near her time, which gave our coloniſts an opportunity of ſeeing the preparations the women of New South Wales make on theſe occaſions: ſhe had two nets hanging from her neck, one of which being new, Governor Phillip was deſirous of obtaining, and it was given him, after ſhe had taken a large piece of the bark of the tea-tree out of it, nicely folded up, and which was intended to lay her infant upon; this ſeems to be the only preparation, which is made by lying-in women in that country.

The bark of the tea-tree is thick in proportion to the ſize of the tree, and is compoſed of a great number of layers of very thin bark, in appearance not unlike the bark of the birch-tree; but it is ſo very ſoft, that nothing this country affords can be better calculated for the purpoſe

for

1791. August.

for which it was intended: Bannelong, however, deſired to have a blanket for the child, which was given him, and the next day, a net made in the Engliſh manner, which appeared more acceptable to his wife than the one ſhe had parted with. He told Governor Phillip that his wife intended doing him the honour of being brought to bed in his houſe; but the governor at length perſuaded him that ſhe would be better accommodated at the hoſpital.

The women do not appear to ſuffer any great inconvenience, while in this ſtate, and they all ſeem beſt pleaſed with having boys: Bannelong often ſaid his was to be a ſon.

A diſorder had frequently been ſeen amongſt the natives, which had the ſame appearance as the itch, and yielded to the ſame remedies; it was now ſo common, that nearly the whole of them were infected with it, and ſeveral boys were cured at the hoſpital by rubbing in of brimſtone. Bannelong was a perfect Lazarus, and though he was eaſily perſuaded to go to the hoſpital and rub himſelf, yet it was not poſſible to make him ſtay there till he was cured.

On the 28th of Auguſt, the William and Ann tranſport anchored in the cove. This veſſel brought out ſtores and proviſions, with a ſerjeant and thirteen privates belonging to the New South Wales corps, and ſeveral of their wives and children; alſo one hundred and eighty male convicts: ſeven died on the paſſage, and thirty-ſix were ſick when they landed.

The continuance of the dry weather gave our coloniſts reaſon to fear that their crops would ſuffer more this year than they did the laſt: it

was

CHAP. XXII. 1791. Auguſt. was now the ſeaſon for putting the maize into the ground, which was ſo extremely dry that there was little probability of its vegetating, if ſown, before ſome rain fell: the ſun alſo began to have great power, and ſeveral ponds, adjoining to which Governor Phillip had placed ſeveral ſettlers, were loſing their water very faſt.

It has already been obſerved, that on ſome particular days, the winds were heated to ſuch a degree as to be almoſt inſupportable, which had always been imputed to the country round the ſettlement being fired by the natives. Early in the morning of the 31ſt of Auguſt, the wind was northerly, and heated as though it came from the mouth of an oven, though no fires could then be ſeen; however, as the day advanced, ſmoke appeared over the hills, and in the evening, a conſiderable tract of country was ſeen to be on fire; ſome natives were likewiſe burning the ground on the north ſide of the harbour, oppoſite the ſettlement: this firing of the country, which the natives conſtantly do when the weather is dry, renders any obſervation made by the thermometer very uncertain. But if the 31ſt of Auguſt was an unpleaſant day, the evening made ample amends, for it began to rain, and continued raining until the next day at noon.

Although few of the convicts were ſick when they were firſt landed from the tranſports, yet many of them were extremely weak from long confinement, and a few days carried numbers of them to the hoſpital. September. The ſurgeon's returns, on the firſt of September, were two hundred and eighty-five convicts under medical treatment: ſeveral ſoldiers and ſeamen were likewiſe in the hoſpital with a fever of a bad ſort, which was ſuppoſed to be brought on board by the convicts.

1791. September.

On the 4th of September, the Salamander ſailed for Norfolk-Iſland, with one hundred and ſixty male convicts, ſome ſtores, and proviſions: two non-commiſſioned officers, and eleven privates of the New South Wales corps went as a guard.

The Mary-Ann tranſport returned from Norfolk-Iſland on the 8th, having landed all the ſtores, proviſions, and convicts ſafe; but they had loſt a boat in going off from the iſland: the ſailors, however, were all ſaved.

A number of emu's had been ſeen lately, and this appears to be the ſeaſon in which they breed, as a neſt was found near ſome freſh water, at the head of the harbour, containing fourteen eggs. The neſt was compoſed of fern, but it had more the appearance of a quantity of fern collected for a perſon to ſit on, than a neſt. Soon after taking theſe eggs, an old emu was ſeen near Proſpect-Hill with ſome young ones; ſeveral of the ſettlers chaſed them, and the young birds were taken: they did not appear to be more than a week old, and great pains were taken to rear them, but they died, after being in Governor Phillip's poſſeſſion near five weeks. Thirteen of theſe old birds were ſeen together in the courſe of this month, but it was a conſiderable time ſince an emu had been ſhot.

The pattagorong and baggaray frequently ſupplied our coloniſts with freſh meals, and Governor Phillip had three young ones, which were likely to live: he has not the leaſt doubt but theſe animals are formed in the falſe belly, having frequently ſeen them in that ſituation, when they were ſo ſmall, that it did not appear poſſible for them to be placed there by the female for the purpoſe of gaining ſtrength, which is the general opinion, and for which purpoſe it is ſuppoſed nature has given

them

CHAP. XXII. 1791. September.

them the falſe belly; indeed, the idea of their being formed in the falſe belly, and not in the womb, ſeems to be confirmed from the following particulars, communicated to Governor Phillip by a perſon who had a male and a female opoſſum in his poſſeſſion near two years.

"On the 10th of May, I diſcovered the young one in the belly of "the female opoſſum, apparently not larger than the end of my little "finger. I do not exactly recollect when I had examined before, but "I am ſure it could not have been long, as I made a conſtant practice "of ſearching for what I then found, but always had much difficulty "in introducing my finger, the female contracting the orifice ſo extremely cloſe. The belly of the female had for ſome days been obſerved to be increaſing in ſize, and on the 15th of Auguſt, I ſaw "a young one, for the firſt time, the mouth, or opening of the falſe "belly, being very much dilated. In the firſt week of September, it "was compleatly haired, and it ventured out, getting on the mother's "back, but on the leaſt alarm, it inſtantly returned to the falſe belly. "On the 18th of September, I obſerved the young one eating ſowthiſtle, and it continued on the mother's back, but at night it got "into the falſe belly. From the day I firſt ſaw the young one until "now, I have generally ſeen the mother licking it with her tongue, "and it is to be remarked, that ſhe has driven the male away from her "ſince the 15th of Auguſt."

Notice has already been taken of thoſe perſons who became ſettlers, and of the quantity of land allotted them; however, as the ſubjoined table ſhews every particular reſpecting them in one point of view, it may not, perhaps, be unacceptable.

SETTLERS.

THE FIRST SETTLERS.

Names.	When became Settlers.	Quantity of land granted.	Place where.
Philip Schaffer.	Superintendant. 30th March, 1791.	One hundred and forty acres.	On the north ſide of the creek leading to Parramatta.
	The following were all marines or ſailors.		
Robert Webb.	Ditto.	Sixty acres.	
William Reid.	Ditto.	Ditto.	
Robert Watſon.	5th April.	Ditto.	Norfolk Iſland.
John Drummond.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
James Proctor.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
Peter Hibbs.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
Owen Cavenaugh.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
James Painter.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
William Mitchell.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
William Hambly.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
Charles Heritage.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
Samuel King.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
William Mitchell.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas Bramwell.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas Biſhop.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John M'Carthey.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Lawrence Richards.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Munday.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas Chipp.		Ditto.	Ditto.
William Strong.		Ditto.	Ditto.
James M'Manus.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas O'Bryen.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Richard Knight.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Abraham Hand.		Ditto.	Ditto.
William Dempſey.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas Sculley.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Barrisford.		Ditto.	Ditto.
James Redmond.		Ditto.	Ditto.
William Tonks.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas Halfpenny.		Ditto.	Ditto.
William Standley.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Gowen.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas Dukes.		Ditto.	Ditto.
James Williams.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Daniel Standfield.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Roberts.		Ditto.	Ditto.
William Simms.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Foley.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Patrick Connell.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Redman.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas Spencer.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Scott.		Ditto.	Ditto.

THE CONVICT SETTLERS.

Names.	When became Settlers.	Quantity of land granted.	Place where.
James Ruſe.	30th March, 1791.	Thirty acres.	Parramatta.
Charles Williams.	18th July.	Ditto.	South ſide of the creek leading to Parramatta.
James Stuart.	Ditto.	Twenty acres.	Ditto.
George Liſk.	Ditto.	Thirty acres.	Four miles to the weſtward of Parramatta.
William Kilby.	Ditto.	Fifty acres.	
William Butler.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
John Nicholls.	Ditto.	Thirty acres.	Ditto.
John Ramſay.	Ditto.	Fifty acres.	At the ponds, two miles to the north-eaſt of Parramatta.
Mathew Everingham.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
John Summers.	Ditto.	Thirty acres.	Ditto.
John Richards.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
William Field.	Ditto.	Fifty acres.	Ditto.
Joſeph Biſhop.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
Curtis Brand.	Ditto.	Thirty acres.	Ditto.
John Silverthorn.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Four miles to the weſtward of Parramatta.
Thomas Martin.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
Samuel Griffiths.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
James Caſtles.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
Joſeph Morley.	Ditto.	Fifty acres.	Ditto.
William Hubbard.	Ditto.	Ditto.	At the ponds, two miles to the north-eaſt of Parramatta.
John Anderſon.	Ditto	Ditto.	Ditto.
William Elliott.	Ditto.	Thirty acres.	Ditto.
Joſeph Marſhall.	Ditto.	Ditto.	Ditto.
Edward Varndell.	Ditto.	Thirty acres.	At the ponds, two miles to the north-eaſt of Parramatta.
Simon Burn.	17th Auguſt.	Fifty acres.	At the northern boundary farms, two miles from Parramatta.
John Brown.	Ditto.	Sixty acres.	Ditto.
William Moulds.	Ditto.	Thirty acres.	Ditto.
John Baffen.	Ditto.	Fifty acres.	
John Williams.	Ditto.	Ditto.	
Edward Pugh.	Ditto.	Seventy acres.	Four miles to the weſtward of Parramatta.
William Pariſh.	Ditto.	Sixty acres.	Ditto.
Robert Forreſter.		Ten acres.	Norfolk Iſland.
James White.		Ditto.	Ditto.
William Croſs.		Ditto.	Ditto.
James Walbourne.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Benjamin Fentum.		Ditto.	Ditto.

THE CONVICT SETTLERS.

Names.	When became Settlers.	Quantity of land granted.	Place where.
Peter Woodcock.		Ten acres.	Norfolk Iſland.
Edward Kimberly.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Welch.		Ditto.	Ditto.
William Bell.		Ditto.	Ditto.
John Turner.		Ditto.	Ditto.
Thomas Kelley.		Thirty acres.	At the ponds, two miles to the north-eaſt of Parramatta.
William Parr.		Fifty acres.	At the northern boundary farms, two miles from Parramatta.
John Herbert.		Sixty acres.	Four miles to the weſtward of Parramatta.

CHAPTER

CHAPTER XXIII.

Arrival of the Gorgon, and ſeveral tranſports at Port Jackſon.—The number of convicts brought out in theſe veſſels.—A whale-fiſhery eſtabliſhed on the Coaſt of New South Wales.

CHAP. XXIII.

1791. September.

ON the 21ſt of September, 1791, the Gorgon, Captain John Parker, came into the harbour. She ſailed from Spithead on the 15th of the preceding March, had ſtopped at Teneriff, St. Jago, and the Cape of Good Hope; and having received on board as much of the proviſions and ſtores, which were of the Guardian's cargo, as the ſhip could ſtow, together with three bulls, twenty-three cows, four rams, ſixty-two ewes, and one boar; ſhe left the Cape on the 30th of July. Captain King returned in this ſhip, his Majeſty having been pleaſed to give him the rank of maſter and commander in the navy, with a commiſſion as Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Iſland, in conſideration of his uſeful ſervices.

The chaplain of the New South Wales corps, and ſeveral who were appointed to civil employments, came out likewiſe in the Gorgon, and as ſhe was to bring out ſtores and proviſions, her lower deck guns were left in England, and her complement reduced to one hundred men. Of

the

1791. September.

the cattle received on board the Gorgon, at the Cape of Good Hope, three bulls, ſix cows, three rams, and nine ewes died on the paſſage; one cow died ſoon after landing, and the ewes were ſeverely afflicted with the ſcab, but it was hoped they would ſoon recover: the bulls all dying was an unfortunate circumſtance; however, our Coloniſts had a bull calf and patience ſtill left. Seed and a variety of fruit-trees in good condition were likewiſe received by the Gorgon; and when ſhe left the Cape, five tranſports were preparing to leave it for this colony. Thirty male convicts were on board the Gorgon, and aſſiſted in working the ſhip, her complement as a ſtore-ſhip being only one hundred men, officers included. On the 26th of September, the Queen tranſport, having Lieutenant Blow on board as an agent, arrived from Ireland with proviſions, and one hundred and twenty-ſix male, and twenty-one female convicts: ſeven male convicts and one female died on the paſſage.

The Active tranſport arrived the ſame day with proviſions, and one hundred and fifty-four male convicts: both theſe ſhips brought a part of the Guardian's cargo from the Cape of Good Hope, and detachments from the New South Wales corps.

The weather ſtill continued ſhowery, and the gardens began to promiſe plenty of vegetables; the wheat alſo, which, it was feared, would have been loſt by the long continuance of dry weather, improved greatly in appearance: nearly all the maize was put into the ground, and the greater part of it was up. The weather had lately been very unſettled, but better than what Governor Phillip ever found it in the Brazils at this ſeaſon of the year.

The

CHAP. XXIII.
1791. October.

The ſurgeon's return of ſick was greatly increaſed ſince the arrival of the laſt veſſels; for though the number of ſick convicts were not conſiderable when landed from the ſhips, they were, in general, greatly emaciated, and appeared ſtarved, and worn out with confinement. The return of ſick on the 1ſt of October was three hundred and four convicts. One ſoldier, fifteen male, and one female convict, with three children, died in the laſt month; and two convicts were loſt in the woods.

The Albemarle tranſport, Lieutenant R. P. Young as agent, arrived on the 13th, and the Britannia came in the next day: the Albemarle brought out twenty-three ſoldiers and one woman of the New South Wales corps, two hundred and fifty male, and ſix female convicts, one free woman, a convict's wife and one child. Thirty-two male convicts died on the paſſage, and forty-four were ſick on their arrival. The Britannia brought out thirteen ſoldiers, one woman, and three children of the New South Wales corps, and one hundred and twenty-nine male convicts. One ſoldier and twenty-one convicts died on the paſſage, and thirty-eight were ſick when landed.

When theſe veſſels came in, the Admiral Barrington tranſport was off the port, but it blowing hard on the night of the 14th, that ſhip was not in ſight the next day.

The convicts on board the Albemarle, during the paſſage, attempted to ſeize on the ſhip, and the ringleader, having knocked down a centinel, and ſeized his ſword, got on the quarter-deck, and was going to kill the ſeaman at the helm; but the maſter of the ſhip, hearing a noiſe, took up a blunderbuſs, which was loaded, and diſcharged it at

the

1791. October.

the villain, who finding himſelf wounded, dropped the ſword and ran away. Many of the convicts had got their irons off, and were ruſhing aft for the quarter-deck; but, on ſeeing their leader wounded, they ran forward and hid themſelves, ſo that the whole buſineſs was put an end to in a few minutes. After a ſhort converſation amongſt the officers, two of the ringleaders were hanged, and two ſeamen, who had furniſhed the convicts with knives, and who were to have conducted the ſhip to America after all the officers and ſhip's company, with the ſoldiers, had been put to death, were landed at Madeira, in order that they might be ſent to England: they were both Americans, and one of them had a ſuperficial knowledge of navigation.

The Admiral Barrington arrived on the 16th of October. This ſhip brought out a captain, three noncommiſſioned officers, and twenty-four privates of the New South Wales corps, with two hundred and ſixty-four male convicts: four women came out with their huſbands, who were convicts, and two children. Ninety-ſeven were ſick on board this ſhip.

The whole number of convicts embarked on board the ten tranſports, including thirty in the Gorgon, were one thouſand ſix hundred and ninety-five males, ſixty-eight females, and eleven children; of whom, one hundred and ninety-four males, four females, and one child died on the paſſage.

What proviſions were in the ſtore, added to thoſe which were brought out in theſe tranſports, would not furniſh many months proviſions for this colony; Governor Phillip, therefore, took the Atlantic into the ſervice as a naval tranſport.

The

CHAP. XXIII.

1791. October.

The Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Iſland, Captain Paterſon, of the New South Wales corps, with part of his company, twenty-nine marines who had been diſcharged to become ſettlers; ſeveral convicts, whoſe time of tranſportation being expired, were admitted as ſettlers, with thirty-three male, and twelve female convicts, and a conſiderable quantity of ſtores and proviſions were embarked on board the Atlantic, for Norfolk Iſland, under the direction of Lieutenant Bowen, as naval agent; who, after landing what he had on board for the iſland, had orders to proceed to Calcutta, where he was to load with proviſions for the colony.

The great number of ſpermaceti whales that had been ſeen on the coaſt of New South Wales, induced the maſters of thoſe veſſels which were fitted out for that fiſhery, and intended, after landing the convicts, to proceed to the north-weſt coaſt of America, to try for a cargo here: indeed, the maſter of the Britannia, a veſſel belonging to Meſſieurs Enderbys, of London, who have the merit of being the firſt that adventured to the South Seas for whales, aſſured Governor Phillip, that he had ſeen more ſpermaceti whales in his paſſage from the ſouth cape to Port Jackſon, than he had ever ſeen on the Brazil coaſt, although he had been ſix years on that fiſhery.

No time was loſt by the maſters of theſe ſhips in getting ready for ſea: the Britannia ſailed on the 25th of October, in company with the William and Ann: the Mary Ann and the Matilda ſailed the day before, and the Salamander ſailed on the 1ſt of November. The Britannia returned from her cruize on the 10th of November, being the firſt ſhip which had ever fiſhed for whales on the coaſt of New South Wales.

November.

I

The following letter from the Maſter of the Britannia, to Meſſrs. Enderbys, his owners, we ſubjoin for the reader's ſatisfaction, becauſe it ſhews the firſt introduction of a whale-fiſhery, on the coaſt of New South Wales.

Ship Britannia, Sydney, Port-Jackſon,
November 29, 1791.

Meſſrs. Samuel Enderby and Sons,

Gentlemen,

" I have the pleaſure to inform you of our ſafe arrival in Port Jackſon, in New South Wales, October 13, after a paſſage of fifty-five days from the Cape of Good Hope. We were only ſix weeks from the Cape to Van Diemen's Land, but met with contrary winds after we doubled Van Diemen's Land, which made our paſſage longer than I expected. We parted company with our agent the next day after we left the Cape of Good Hope, and never ſaw him again till we arrived at Port-Jackſon, both in one day. The Albemarle and we ſailed much alike. The Admiral Barrington arrived three days after us. I am very well myſelf, thank God, and all the crew are in high ſpirits. We loſt in all on our paſſage from England twenty-one convicts and one ſoldier. We had one birth on our paſſage from the Cape. I tried to make and made the iſland of Amſterdam, and made it in the longitude of 76° 4′ 14″ eaſt from Greenwich, by a good lunar obſervation: my intention was to run cloſe to it to diſcover whether the ſealing buſineſs might not have been carried on there; but the weather was ſo bad, and thick weather coming on, I did not think it prudent to attempt it, likewiſe to loſe a night's run, and a fair wind blowing. The day before we made it we ſaw two ſhoals of ſperm-whales. After we doubled the ſouth-weſt cape of Van Diemen's Land, we ſaw a large ſperm whale off

CHAP. XXIII.

1791. November.

off Maria's-Iſlands, but did not ſee any more, being very thick weather and blowing hard, till within fifteen leagues of the latitude of Port Jackſon. Within three leagues of the ſhore, we ſaw ſperm whales in great plenty: we ſailed through different ſhoals of them from twelve o'clock in the day till after ſun-ſet, all round the horizon, as far as I could ſee from the maſt-head: in fact, I ſaw a very great proſpect in making our fiſhery upon this coaſt and eſtabliſhing a fiſhery here. Our people were in the higheſt ſpirits at ſo great a ſight, and I was determined, as ſoon as I got in and got clear of my live lumber, to make all poſſible diſpatch on the fiſhery on this coaſt.

"On our arrival here, I waited upon his Excellency Governor Phillip, and delivered my letters to him. I had the mortification to find he wanted to diſpatch me with my convicts to Norfolk-Iſland, and likewiſe wanted to purchaſe our veſſel to ſtay in the country, which I refuſed to do. I immediately told him the ſecret of ſeeing the whales, thinking that would get me off going to Norfolk-Iſland, that there was a proſpect of eſtabliſhing a fiſhery here, and might be of ſervice to the colony, and left him. I waited upon him two hours afterwards with a box directed to him: he took me into a private room, he told me he had read my letters, and that he would render me every ſervice that lay in his power; that next morning he would diſpatch every long-boat in the fleet to take our convicts out, and take our ſtores out immediately, which he did accordingly, and did every thing to diſpatch us on the fiſhery. Captain King uſed all his' intereſt in the buſineſs; he gave his kind reſpects to you. The ſecret of ſeeing whales our ſailors could not keep from the reſt of the whalers here, the news put them all to the ſtir, but have the pleaſure to ſay, we were the firſt ſhip ready for ſea; notwithſtanding they had been ſome of them a month arrived before us. We went out,

in

CHAP. XXIII.

1791. November.

in company with the William and Ann, the eleventh day after our arrival. The next day after we went out, we had very bad weather, and fell in with a very great number of ſperm whales. At ſun-riſing in the morning, we could ſee them all round the horizon. We run through them in different bodies till two o'clock in the afternoon, when the weather abated a little, but a very high ſea running. I lowered away two boats, and Bunker followed the example; in leſs than two hours we had ſeven whales killed, but unfortunately a heavy gale came on from the ſouth-weſt, and took the ſhip aback with a ſquall, that the ſhip could only fetch two of them, the reſt we were obliged to cut from, and make the beſt of our way on board to ſave the boats and crew. The William and Ann ſaved one, and we took the other and rode by them all night with a heavy gale of wind. Next morning it moderated, and we took her in; ſhe made us twelve barrels. We ſaw large whales next day, but were not able to lower away our boats; we ſaw whales every day for a week after, but the weather being ſo bad, we could not attempt to lower a boat down: we cruized fifteen days in all, having left our ſixty ſhakes of butts on ſhore with the Gorgon's cooper, to ſet up in our abſence, which Captain Parker was ſo kind as to let us have, and wanting to purchaſe more caſks of Mr. Calvert's ſhips, and having no proſpect of getting any good weather, I thought it moſt prudent to come in and refit the ſhip, and compleat my caſks and fill my water, and by that time the weather would be more moderate. The day after we came in, the Mary-Ann came in off a cruize, having met with very bad weather, ſhipped a ſea, and waſhed her try-works overboard. He informed me, he left the Matilda in a harbour to the northward, and that the Salamander had killed a forty barrel whale, and loſt her by bad weather. There is nothing againſt making a voyage on this coaſt but the weather, which I expect will be better next month; I think to make another

month's

CHAP. XXIII.

1791. November.

month's trial of it. If a voyage can be got upon this coaſt, it will make it ſhorter than going to Peru; and the governor has been very attentive in ſending greens for refreſhment to our crew at different times. Captain Parker has been kind, and has given me every aſſiſtance that lay in his power; he carries our long-boat home, as we cannot ſell her here: he will diſpoſe of her for you, or leave her at Portſmouth: he will wait upon you on his arrival in London. Captain Ball, of the Supply, who is the bearer of this letter, has likewiſe been very kind, and rendered us every ſervice that lay in his power; he will wait upon you likewiſe.

The colony is all alive, expecting there will be a rendezvous for the fiſhermen. We ſhall be ready to ſail on Tueſday the 22d, on a cruize. The Matilda has ſince arrived here; ſhe ſaw the Salamander four days ago: ſhe had ſeen more whales, but durſt not lower their boats down: ſhe has been into harbour twice. We have the pleaſure to ſay, we killed the firſt four whales on this coaſt. I have encloſed you the certificates for the convicts, and receipts for the ſtores. Captain Nepean has paid every attention to me, and has been ſo kind as to let us have a cooper: he dines with me to-morrow. I am collecting you ſome beautiful birds, and land animals, and other curioſities for you. The ſhip remains tight and ſtrong, and in good condition. I will write you by the Gorgon man of war; ſhe ſails in about a month or ſix week's time.

I am, Sirs,

Your humble ſervant,

THOMAS MELVILLE.

The

CHAP. XXIII.

1791. November.

The Matilda and the Mary-Ann tranſports returned from their fiſhing-cruize on the 10th of November. Theſe veſſels had run to the ſouthward in ſearch of ſeals, and met with very bad weather, but ſaw no fiſh. The Matilda had put into Jervis-Bay, which, according to the maſter's account, is a very fine harbour, the anchorage very good, and capable of receiving the largeſt ſhips. Theſe two veſſels, after refitting, ſailed again to try for fiſh on this coaſt.

Our coloniſts began to reap the barley on the 22d of November, and the wheat was getting ripe.

The Supply armed tender, after having been under repair from the time ſhe returned from Norfolk-Iſland, was found, on a ſurvey, to be in ſo bad a ſtate, that the beſt repair which could be given her in this country, would only render her ſerviceable for ſix months longer; Governor Phillip, therefore, ordered her to England, and ſhe ſailed on the 26th of November.

From the debilitated ſtate in which many of the convicts were landed from the laſt ſhips, the number of ſick were greatly increaſed; the ſurgeon's returns on the 27th, being upwards of four hundred ſick at Parramatta; and the ſame day medicines were diſtributed to one hundred and ninety-two at Sydney. To the number of ſick at Parramatta, upwards of one hundred may be added, who were ſo weak that they could not be put to any kind of labour, not even to that of pulling graſs for thatching the huts. Forty-two convicts died in the month of November, and in theſe people nature ſeemed fairly to be worn out; many of them were ſo thoroughly exhauſted that they expired without a groan, and apparently without any kind of pain.

CHAP. XXIII.
1791. November.

Showers of rain had been more frequent lately than for many months paſt, but not in the abundance which the ground required; and, from the extreme dryneſs of the weather, and from the ground not being ſufficiently worked before the maize was put into it, a great number of acres were likely to be deſtroyed. This was one of the many inconveniencies the ſettlement laboured under, from the want of people to employ in agriculture, who would feel themſelves intereſted in the labour of thoſe that were under their direction, and who had ſome knowledge as farmers.

The following parcels of land were in cultivation at Parramatta, in November, 1791.

Acres.	Roods.	Perches.	
351	2	5	in Maiſe.
44	1	8	Wheat.
6	1	30	Barley.
1	0	0	Oats.
2	0	3	Potatoes.
4	2	0	Not cultivated, but cleared.
4	2	15	Moſtly planted with vines.
6	0	0	The governor's garden, partly ſown with maize and wheat.
80	0	0	Garden-ground belonging to individuals.
17	0	0	Land in cultivation by the New South Wales corps.
150	0	0	Cleared, and to be ſowed with turnips.
91	3	2	Ground in cultivation by ſettlers.
28	0	0	Ground in cultivation by officers of the civil and military.
134	0	0	Incloſed, and the timber thinned for feeding cattle.

The above grounds were meaſured by David Burton, the public gardener, who obſerves, that the ſoil in moſt places is remarkably good, and only wants cultivation to be fit for any uſe, for the ground that has been the longeſt in cultivation bears the beſt crops.

1791. November.

Of the convicts who were received by the laſt ſhips, there were great numbers of the worſt of characters, particularly amongſt thoſe who came from Ireland, and whoſe great ignorance led them into ſchemes more deſtructive to themſelves than they were likely to be to the ſettlement. Some of theſe people had formed an idea that they could go along the coaſt, and ſubſiſt on oyſters and other ſhell-fiſh, till they reached ſome of the Chineſe ſettlements: others had heard that there were a copper coloured people only one hundred and fifty miles to the northward, where they would be free.——Full of theſe notions, three parties ſet off; but, after ſtraggling about for many days, ſeveral of them were taken, and others returned to the ſettlement. Governor Phillip was leſs inclined to inflict any puniſhment on theſe people, than to puniſh thoſe who had deceived them by the information of "not being far from ſome of the Chineſe ſettlements, and near people who would receive them, and where they would have every thing they wanted, and live very happy:" theſe reaſons moſt of them aſſigned for going into the woods, and where ſome of them ſtill remained, dreading a ſevere puniſhment if they returned: a general pardon was therefore promiſed to all thoſe who came back within a certain time, as ſeveral were ſuppoſed to be lurking in the woods near the ſettlement; however, ſome of theſe wretches were ſo prepoſſeſſed with the idea of being able to live in the woods and on the ſea-coaſt until they could reach a ſettlement, or find a people who would maintain them without labour, that ſeveral who were brought in when almoſt famiſhed, and carried to the hoſpital, went away again as ſoon as they were judged able to return to their labour; and although what would be called a day's work in England is

very

November. very ſeldom done by any convict in the ſettlement, yet ſome of them declared that they would ſooner periſh in the woods than be obliged to work; and forty were now abſent. In order to give thoſe who might be ſtill lurking near the ſettlement an opportunity of returning, all the convicts were aſſembled, and a pardon was promiſed to all who returned within five days; at the ſame time they were aſſured that very ſevere puniſhment would be inflicted on any who were taken after the expiration of that time, or who ſhould in future attempt to leave the ſettlement.——Several appeared ſenſible of the lenity ſhewn them when their irons were taken off, but ſome of them appeared capable of the moſt deſperate attempts, and even talked of ſeizing on the ſoldiers arms; they were, however, informed, that no mercy would be ſhewn to any who were even ſeen near thoſe that might make an attempt of the kind.

All the whalers who came into the harbour to refit, ſailed again by December. the 1ſt of December, and the Albemarle and the Active tranſports ſailed on the 2d for Bombay, where they were to load with cotton for England.

A new ſtore was now covered in at Sydney, which was the beſt that had been built in the colony; and was intended for the convicts cloathing and the implements of huſbandry: it has a ſecond floor, and is eighty feet in length by twenty-four feet in breadth. A building of fifty-ſix feet by twenty-four was likewiſe covered in at Parramatta, and was intended for a place of worſhip, until a church could be built.

The idea of finding a Chineſe ſettlement at no great diſtance to the northward, ſtill prevailed amongſt the Iriſh convicts; and on the 4th of December, two of them ſtole the ſurgeon's boat, but they only got a few miles to the northward of the harbour when they were obliged to

1791. December.

run her on ſhore. Some officers who were out a ſhooting, ſaw this boat on the beach, and ſtove a plank in her, that ſhe might not be carried away; they alſo ſaw the two men, who ran into the woods; however, a convict who had been ſix weeks in the woods, and was ſcarcely able to walk, gave himſelf up to the officers, and, with their aſſiſtance, was able to return to Sydney.

Many of thoſe convicts who left the ſettlement, as has already been related, came back; ſome were ſtill miſſing, and ſeveral were ſaid to be killed by the natives. The miſerable ſituation of thoſe who returned to the ſettlement, would, it was believed, moſt effectually prevent any more excurſions of the like nature.

On the 5th of December, the Queen tranſport returned from Norfolk-Iſland, with the lieutenant-governor of the territory, who was relieved by Lieutenant-Governor King; a detachment of marines who had been doing duty on the iſland; a party of the New South Wale corps, who were relieved by Captain Paterſon, and ſome convicts, whoſe times for which they had been ſentenced were expired.——By the 7th, the Gorgon was nearly ready for ſea, and the detachment of marines who came from England in the firſt ſhips was ordered to hold themſelves ready to embark, except one captain, three lieutenants, eight non-commiſſioned officers, and fifty privates, who were to ſtay at Port Jackſon until the remainder of the New South Wales corps ſhould arrive: thoſe marines who were deſirous of becoming ſettlers, remained likewiſe, to the number of thirty-one.

Governor Phillip had frequently been ſolicited by Bannelong, to receive Ballederry, the native who wounded a convict in June, 1791, into

CHAP. XXIII. 1791. December.

favour again, but he always refuſed; however, on the 14th of December, he was informed that Ballederry was extremely ill. The ſurgeon had been to ſee him, and found him in a fever; and the firſt queſtion he aſked was, whether the Governor was ſtill angry, or if he would let him be brought to the hoſpital to be cured. Bannelong had fetched the ſurgeon to Ballederry, and returned with him to Governor Phillip; who ſaying he was not angry, and telling him to bring his companion to the ſettlement, he ſaid he would; ſo, early the next morning, Ballederry was brought in. At firſt, he ſeemed under great apprehenſions, but they preſently ſubſided, on the governor taking him by the hand, and promiſing that when he was recovered he ſhould reſide with him again. Poor Ballederry appeared to be very ill, and went with the ſurgeon to the hoſpital.

Of thoſe convicts who were received from the laſt ſhips, one hundred and fourteen males, and two females, died before the 15th of December: the number of ſick had conſiderably decreaſed lately; the ſurgeon's liſt being now reduced from ſix hundred and two to four hundred and three.

The Matilda and the Mary-Ann tranſports came into the harbour on the 16th; theſe ſhips had been out but nine days. The Matilda had been into Jervis-Bay, but had not ſeen any ſpermaceti whales. The Mary-Ann fell in with one ſhoal; it was in the evening when all the boats were abſent from the ſhip: the maſter was in hopes they ſhould have the fiſh about them the next morning, but he had the mortification to find that a current had driven the ſhip fifty miles to the ſouthward.

The Gorgon dropped down the harbour on the 17th of December, Captain Parker intending to ſail the next day. The detachment under the command of Major Roſs were embarked, agreeable to the orders which had previouſly been given.

Here cloſes the Journal of Governor Phillip; which contained the lateſt accounts from New South Wales; being received by the Gorgon, that left Port Jackon in December, 1791.

The following Journal of Lieutenant Ball of the Supply, is ſubjoined; becauſe it contains an account of a voyage from Port Jackſon by the route of Cape Horn, which was made in a ſhorter time than had ever been performed by any other veſſel.

CHAPTER

CHAPTER XXIV.

The Supply leaves Port Jackſon.—Receives ſome damage in a ſtorm.—Doubles Cape Horn.—Paſſes Staten's land.—Anchors at Rio Janeiro.—Refreſhments procured.—Departure from Rio Janeiro.—Proceeds towards England.—Arrives off the Lizard.—Particulars reſpecting Norfolk-Iſland.

CHAP. XXIV. 1791. November. 26. HAVING received orders from Governor Phillip to get the Supply ready for ſea, I had every thing in readineſs by the 25th of November; and early the next morning, we weighed anchor, and ſtood out of Sydney Cove, with a moderate breeze at eaſt-north-eaſt, and pleaſant weather. I had a Kanguroo on board, which I had directions to carry to Lord Grenville, as a preſent for his Majeſty. Governor Phillip, accompanied by Captain John Parker, of the Gorgon, breakfaſted on board the Supply the morning of our departure; and ſoon afterwards they left us, and proceeded to the look-out at Port Jackſon. At four o'clock in the afternoon, we loſt ſight of the land, and ſtood to the ſouthward, with a moderate breeze at north-eaſt. In the forenoon
29. of the 29th, the wind ſhifted to the ſouthward, and blew a very ſtrong gale, which brought us under low ſail, but at five o'clock the weather grew moderate. A vaſt number of birds were about the ſhip, and a land bird, of a ſingular kind, was caught: our latitude, at noon, was 38° 31′ ſouth, and the longitude 154° 23′ eaſt.

1791. December. 2. On the 2d of December, we ſaw a whale; our latitude, at noon, was 44° 21′ ſouth, and the longitude, by lunar obſervation, 156° 20′ eaſt: the variation of the compaſs, 10° 00′ eaſt. I now ordered the ſhip to be well cleaned every day between decks, being firmly convinced that cleanlineſs conduces very much to preſerve the health of ſeaman. On the 4th, we had light, variable winds, chiefly from the northward: the latitude, at noon, was 47° 10′ ſouth, the longitude, by obſerved 4. diſtances of the ſun and moon, 160° 20′, and the variation of the compaſs 11° 20′ eaſt. In the afternoon, a thick fog came on, with light drizzling rain, which continued till the forenoon of the 5th, when the 5. fog diſperſed, and the weather cleared up. We ſaw ſome rock weed, and a great number of blue petrels and albatroſſes were about the ſhip. In the afternoon, we paſſed more rock weed, and ſaw a number of whales. On the 6th, we had a freſh gale from the ſouthward, and ſaw 6. a vaſt number of petrels; albatroſſes, &c. were about the veſſel: we paſſed a great quantity of rock-weed, and perceiving the water to change colour, we hove to, and ſounded, but got no bottom with 120 fathoms of line. The wind continued to blow ſtrong from the ſouthward, which brought on a very high, irregular ſwell, and occaſioned the ſhip to labour and work very much: we ſtill paſſed vaſt quantities of rock-weed, and had a number of birds about the ſhip. The latitude, at noon on the 8th, was 50° 44′ ſouth, and the longitude, by the time- 8. keeper, 172° 56′ eaſt. The ſhip laboured greatly, which occaſioned her to make water in her top-ſides. Great numbers of petrels, gulls, albatroſſes, &c. were daily ſeen about the ſhip, and a whale was ſeen in the afternoon of the 10th. The wind continued to blow from the 10. ſouthward, ſtrong and in ſqualls, until the 12th, when it ſhifted to the 12. northward and weſtward. The latitude, at noon, was 53° 56′ ſouth, and the longitude, by the time-keeper, 188° 49′ eaſt.

CHAP. XXIV.
1791. December.

At two o'clock in the morning of the 13th, the ſhip was pooped
with a very heavy ſea, which entirely ſtove in the two midſhip windows
of the ſtern, and filled the cabin with water, great part of which ran
13. down into the bread-room. In the afternoon of the 14th, a violent
14. ſquall came on from the weſtward, which at ſix o'clock increaſed to a
perfect ſtorm, with an exceeding high ſea; this occaſioned me to keep
the ſhip before it, and I found her ſteer very well; indeed, much better
than I could poſſibly have expected in ſuch a ſituation. The weather
16. continued ſqually, with hail and ſnow, until the morning of the 16th,
when the wind ſhifted to the ſouthward, and the weather grew more
moderate. The latitude, at noon, was 52° 58′ ſouth, and the longitude
20. 207° 09′ eaſt. On the 20th, we paſſed a large patch of ſea-weed; ſeveral
gulls and divers ſea-birds were at that time about the ſhip. Portable
ſoup, eſſence of malt, and ſour krout were now ſerved out to the ſhip's
company. The weather was thick and foggy, which prevented us
22. from getting any obſervation until the 22d, when our latitude, at noon,
was 53° 59′ ſouth, and the longitude, by the time-keeper, 231° 36′ eaſt.
A number of ſheerwaters and petrels were about the ſhip. We had fre-
24. quent ſqualls, attended with hail and ſnow. On the 24th, the wind
ſhifted to the eaſtward, and the weather was more moderate, but on the
27. 27th, it again got to the weſtward, blowing ſtrong, and in violent
ſqualls, attended with ſnow and hail. A great number of albatroſſes,
blue petrels, and ſheerwaters were about the ſhip; a high, irregular ſea
cauſed her to labour much, and ſhe made a deal of water in her topſides.
The latitude, at noon, was 57° 32′ ſouth, and 245° 42′ eaſt longitude.
29. On the 29th, the longitude, by the time-keeper, was 259° 16′ eaſt,
and by account 256° 50′ eaſt; at the ſame time the latitude was 56° 30′
ſouth. The wind was ſtill to the weſtward, attended with very heavy
31. rain. In the morning of the 31ſt, the wind blew ſtrong from the
northward.

northward. Great numbers of gulls were about the ſhip, and we paſſed a deal of rock-weed.

1792. January. 1, 2. During the 1ſt and 2d of January, 1792, the wind was variable, frequently ſhiſting from north-north-weſt to weſt-ſouth-weſt and ſouth-eaſt by eaſt. 3. At noon on the 3d, we were in 56° 15′ ſouth latitude, and 281° 57′ eaſt longitude. 4. The next forenoon, we ſaw a ſeal, and had a number of albatroſſes about the ſhip: we now had ſtrong gales from the north-eaſt quarter, attended with ſnow and ſleet. 5. A heavy ſquall came on in the morning of the 5th, and in hauling down the main-top-maſt ſtayſail, the brails broke, and the ſail was blown in pieces, the greateſt part of which fell overboard before it could be got down and ſtowed. In the afternoon, we ſaw ſeveral gulls, a ſeal, and ſome ſhell-drakes. 6. At noon on the 6th, we ſaw Cape Horn, bearing weſt-ſouth-weſt half weſt, and the northernmoſt land in ſight, weſt half ſouth, diſtant ſix or ſeven leagues. At that time, our latitude was 56° 02′ ſouth, and the longitude 291° 45′ eaſt. 7. At eight o'clock in the morning of the 7th, we ſaw Staten Land, bearing from north by weſt to north-weſt by weſt half weſt, twelve or thirteen leagues diſtant: at noon, the north point bore north, a little weſterly, diſtant about eight leagues. In the afternoon, ſeveral whales were ſeen near the ſhip, the body of Staten Land then bore ſouth-ſouth-weſt. The wind, which for ſome days had been to the ſouthward, ſhifted, in the morning 8. of the 8th, to north-weſt, with a moderate breeze and fine weather. In the afternoon, we paſſed ſome pieces of ſea-weed, amongſt which was a ſeal; we alſo ſaw another ſeal and ſome penguins: ſeveral whales and large flocks of blue petrels were about the ſhip. 9. The next forenoon, we paſſed ſome ſea-weed and a number of penguins; on which we ſounded, but got no ground with 100 fathoms of line. Our latitude,

1792. January. tude, at noon, was 52° 58′ ſouth, and longitude, by the time-keeper, 296° 13′ eaſt. We ſounded again in the evening, but got no ground with 145 fathoms of line. At midnight, we had a calm for about two hours, the weather thick and foggy, with thunder and lightning to the 10. ſouthward. Early in the morning, the fog cleared a little, and a light breeze ſprung up from the northward. Many ſeals and whales were about the ſhip; and in the afternoon, we ſaw a number of penguins. At eight o'clock in the evening we ſounded, and had 96 fathoms of water, over a bottom of fine ſand and mud. During the night, we had moderate breezes from the ſouthward, attended with ſmall rain. In the 11. forenoon of the 11th, we ſaw a great number of whales, and ſeveral penguins. During the afternoon and night, we had ſtrong gales from 12. the ſouthward, attended with frequent ſqualls. The next forenoon, we ſaw ſeveral large patches of ſea-weed: the wind ſtill continued to blow very ſtrong from the ſouthward, which occaſioned a high ſea; and the ſhip rolling very much, occaſioned her to make a deal of water in her 13. upper works. In the morning of the 13th, the weather grew more moderate: we ſaw a port Egmont hen, and ſeveral pieces of rock-weed. At noon our latitude was 45° 46′ ſouth, and the longitude 302° 49′ eaſt. 15. On the 15th, the weather grew moderate, the wind to the northward. 16. Some obſerved diſtances of the ſun and moon on the 16th, gave 305° 46′ eaſt longitude; the latitude at that time was 42° 34′ ſouth. In the 17. afternoon of the 17th, we had a ſtrong appearance of a current, and paſſed a large number of whales. The next day, the water being diſcoloured, we ſounded with 160 fathoms of line, but got no ground. The wind ſtill kept to the northward, with moderate breezes and fine weather. Eſſence of malt and vinegar were ſerved to the ſhip's company on the 24th, and every precaution was taken to preſerve their 24. health. In the evening, we had much lightning to the northward: the

1792. January. wind blew freſh from the north-eaſt, and we had frequent heavy ſqualls attended with rain. Towards noon on the 26th, the wind grew light and variable: the latitude was 32° 20′ ſouth, and the longitude 311° 02′ eaſt. In the evening, we had much lightning to the northward: towards midnight, a freſh breeze ſprung up from the ſouth-eaſt. The next forenoon, we ſaw a turtle and ſeveral flying-fiſh; and at ſix o'clock in the afternoon, we ſaw a brig to the northward, and ſoon afterwards ſpoke with her. At ſix o'clock in the morning of the 28th, we ſaw the land bearing from north-weſt to weſt-ſouth-weſt. We ſounded in 26 fathoms of water, over a bottom of ſoft mud. At eight o'clock, ſome high level land bore weſt half ſouth, eight or nine leagues diſtant. I ordered the jolly-boat to be hoiſted out, and we tried the current, which was found to ſet north-eaſt by north, at the rate of half a mile an hour, or nearly. At noon, we had clear ſoundings in 24, 22, 20, and 18 fathoms over a bottom of fine brown ſand and mud. At ſix o'clock, we tacked, the extremes of the land bearing from ſouth-weſt to north by eaſt; the neareſt land about four miles diſtant. During the night, we had regular ſoundings from 13 to 25 fathoms. The next morning, we tacked and ſtood towards the land, with light variable winds. At noon, the extremes of the land were from north to ſouth 50° weſt; the neareſt land about ten miles diſtant. In the afternoon, we ſaw a large turtle; and at three o'clock, we ſounded in 19 fathoms, over a muddy bottom. At ſix o'clock, the neareſt land bore north by weſt half weſt, about three leagues diſtant. During the night, we had a light breeze from the weſtward: we frequently ſounded, and had from 17 to 23 fathoms water. At noon on the 30th, the neareſt land bore north 75° weſt, eight or nine miles diſtant. We ſtood along ſhore, with a light breeze at ſouth-ſouth-eaſt; and at ſun-ſet, the land bore from north 32° weſt to ſouth 50° weſt. The next morning, we ſteered along the iſland of

26.

27.

28.

29.

30.

31.

St. Catherine;

CHAP. XXIV.

1792. February.

St. Catherine; and at four o'clock in the afternoon, were abreaſt of the
Fort of Santa Cruz: I ſent an officer on ſhore to the fort, and ſoon
afterwards we anchored in five fathoms water; the fort of Santa Cruz
bearing north-north-weſt, and the oppoſite fort north-eaſt. We ſaluted
the fort with nine guns, which was returned by an equal number. The
1. next morning, we weighed, and anchored nearer to the watering-place;
mooring the ſhip with a cable each way, (north-eaſt and ſouth-weſt)
in three fathoms and a half, over a muddy bottom. In this ſituation,
the fort of Santa Cruz bore north-north-eaſt, the oppoſite fort, ſouth-
eaſt; the point to the ſouthward of the watering-place ſouth-weſt, and
the watering-place weſt, half a mile diſtant. We erected a tent on
ſhore for the cooper, who was buſily employed in repairing our caſks,
and the other hands were employed in watering and other neceſſary
duties.

As we had now made 310° 43′ of eaſt longitude, which is equal to
20h. 42min. 52ſec. of time, we, of courſe, dropped one day, and
4. called the 5th of February, Saturday the 4th. This afternoon I ſent
two boats on ſhore for various refreſhments, having nearly completed
5. our water. In the morning of the 5th, the cutter ſwamped at her
moorings aſtern; the oars and tiller waſhed out of her, and were loſt.
7. On the 7th, moſt of our buſineſs being finiſhed, we unmoored; and
after ſtanding a little farther out of the harbour, we anchored with the
ſmall bower, in five and a quarter fathoms; the Fort of Santa Cruz
bearing north-north-weſt, and the oppoſite fort, north-eaſt. We com-
8, 9. pleted our water and every other duty on the 8th, and the next morning
weighed and made ſail. At eleven o'clock, we ſaluted the fort with
eleven guns, which was returned by an equal number: at noon, we
were abreaſt of Santa Cruz Fort. With a light breeze from the north-

ward, we were employed in turning down the harbour; and at ſeven o'clock, we came to in five fathoms, over a muddy bottom; the Iſland Averade bearing north-eaſt half north, and Santa Cruz Fort ſouth-weſt by weſt. 1792. February. 10. Early the next morning, we weighed and ſtood out of the harbour, and the wind being very light, the jolly-boat was ſent a-head to tow the veſſel: in the afternoon, a moderate breeze came on from the eaſtward. 11. At noon on the 11th, the land bore from ſouth 57° weſt, to north 82° weſt: the wind being variable, we tacked occaſionally. Our latitude was 27° 19′ ſouth, and the longitude 48° 21′ weſt. 17. 'Till the 17th, we had light winds, chiefly from the north-eaſt quarter, and fine clear weather; the wind then ſhifted to the weſtward, with frequent ſqualls and heavy ſhowers of rain. The latitude, at noon, was 29° 27′ ſouth, and 41° 14′ weſt longitude. 20. On the 20th, we had the ſhip well cleaned between decks, and thoroughly waſhed with vinegar. The variation of the compaſs was 4° 40′ eaſterly. 21. At noon on the 21ſt, a ſevere ſquall came on, attended with thunder, and very heavy rain; the wind all round the compaſs: this occaſioned us to clew up the top-ſails, and reef the foreſail; however, towards evening, the weather growing more moderate we ſet the top-ſails.

22. We opened a caſk of beef on the 22d, which was marked R. H. N° 72, and was received from the commiſſary at the victualling-office, Port Jackſon: it contained ſixty-ſix double pieces, which was four double pieces ſhort of the number there ought to have been. 23. 24. During the 23d and 24th, we had light eaſterly winds, with intervening calms, and dark cloudy weather, attended with rain. 25. On the 25th, in latitude 26° 13′ ſouth, and 31° 33′ eaſt longitude, we found 1° 22′ eaſterly variation; 27. and on the 27th the variation was 00° 45′ weſterly; the latitude being 22° 32′ ſouth, and the longitude 29° 03′ weſt. I ordered the cables to

CHAP. XXIV. be hauled up, the tier to be well cleaned, and waſhed with vinegar. The wind now hauled to the weſtward, with a moderate breeze and clear 1792. February. weather. On the 28th, the wind ſhifted to the northward, and at one 28, 29. o'clock in the morning of the 29th, a very ſevere ſquall came on from north-north-eaſt, attended with heavy rain: ſoon after day-light, the weather moderated.

We now had a ſettled eaſterly wind and fine weather, until the morn- March. 6. ing of the 6th of March, when the wind blew ſtrong and in ſqualls, 7. and continued very unſettled till the afternoon of the 7th, when it grew moderate. The latitude was 14° 26′ ſouth, and the longitude 23° 02′ 12. weſt. On the 12th, we were in 02° 11′ ſouth latitude, and 25′ 16″ weſt longitude, and in the afternoon we ſaw a ſail to the northward; we bore up and ſpoke her; ſhe proved to be the Cleopatra, of Boſton, bound to Calcutta. I ordered the jolly-boat to be hoiſted out and ſent on board her; at ſix o'clock the boat returned, we got her on board, and 16, 18. made ſail. From the 16th to the 18th, we had ſqually unſettled weather, attended with thunder, lightning, and heavy rain. Our latitude at noon 20. on the 20th, was 08° 45′ north, the longitude 30° 16′ weſt, and the variation by azimuth 7° 52′ weſt: the wind blew ſtrong from the north- 22. eaſt, which occaſioned a very high ſea. On the 22d, John Miles was puniſhed for ſleeping on his watch, neglect of duty, and contemptuous 28. behaviour. In the morning of the 28th, having a ſtrong gale of wind at eaſt, we clewed up the ſails, and kept the veſſel before the ſea, whilſt the maſts were ſtayed, and the rigging ſet up; which being completed, and the weather growing moderate, we made ſail. During the forenoon, we ſaw a deal of gulph weed. Our latitude was 20° 25′ north, and the longitude 37° 06′ weſt.

On the 1ſt of April, we muſtered the ſhip's company, and read the
articles of war to them: our obſervation at noon, gave 29° 14′ north
latitude, the longitude was 39° 05′ weſt, and the variation of the com- 1792. April. 1.
paſs 07° 45′ weſt. On the 5th, we had 11° 04′ weſterly variation; our 5.
latitude, at that time, was 35° 39′ north, and the longitude, by lunar
obſervation, 36° 16′ weſt. The trade wind had now left us, and we
had ſtrong breezes generally from the north-weſt quarter. The vari-
ation, by azimuth, on the 13th, was 22° 00′ weſt; the latitude at noon 13.
being 47° 09′ north, and the longitude 17° 46′ weſt. In the morning
of the 15th, we ſaw ſeveral veſſels ſtanding to the weſtward, and at ten 15.
o'clock, ſpoke a ſloop from Briſtol, bound to Saint Michael's. At ſix
o'clock in the afternoon of the 17th, we ſounded and ſtruck the ground 17.
in ſixty-five fathoms, over a bottom of fine ſand, mixed with black
ſpecks. Our latitude at noon, on the 19th, was 49° 23′, and the lon- 19.
gitude, by lunar obſervation, 6° 56′ weſt. At four o'clock in the
morning of the 20th, we ſaw the land, bearing north-north-weſt, and 20.
at noon the Lizard bore from north-north-eaſt, to north-eaſt by eaſt,
five miles diſtant.

The following particulars, reſpecting NORFOLK-ISLAND, which comprehend the ſubſtance of Lieutenant-Governor King's lateſt diſpatches, being dated the 29th of December, 1791; and which were received the 30th of November 1792, by the William and Anne tranſport, that ought to have touched at Port Jackſon, but was forced by contrary winds to bear away for England.

THE wheat harveſt at Norfolk-Iſland was finiſhed by the 10th of December, 1791; when about one thouſand buſhels of wheat were got in, and well thatched in ſtacks. The Indian corn had ſuffered by a ſeries of dry hot weather ever ſince the preceding July.

1791.

Lieutenant-Governor King finding great inconvenience from the ſize and conſtruction of the frame of a ſtore-houſe, which was 80 feet long by 24 feet wide, as well as from its ſituation, it being near the ſhore, determined to build one, 40 feet by 24, on the Terrace, at Mount-George: he had alſo found it neceſſary to build a goal, oppoſite the barrack-yard, and another at Queenſborough.

A good road has been made to the landing rock in Caſcade-Bay, ſo that now, any thing may be landed with the greateſt ſafety.

Eighteen copper bolts, ſix copper ſheets, two ſixteen-inch cables, two hundred weight of lead, one fiſh-tackle fall, twenty pounds of chalk, three rudder chains, two top-chains, and iron-work of various ſorts, had been ſaved from the wreck of the Sirius; the greateſt part of theſe articles, Lieutenant-Governor King propoſed ſending to Port Jackſon.

Ten ſettlers, who lately belonged to the Sirius, were doing exceedingly well, but there was reaſon to fear that great part of the marine ſettlers, when the novelty of their ſituation was gone off, would have neither ability nor inclination to improve the portions of ground allotted them: they had already been extremely troubleſome, and the lieutenant-governor had been under the neceſſity of impoſing heavy fines on two; the firſt, for beating the watch and uſing inflammatory language, and the ſecond, for cruelly beating a convict woman.

The convict ſettlers were all doing very well, and were quiet, attentive, and orderly: they were increaſed to the number of forty; the whole number of ſettlers on the iſland were eighty, and it will be difficult to fix more until the ground is farther cleared.

1791.

A quantity of coral and other teſtaceous ſubſtances, with different kinds of ſtones, were burnt forty-eight hours, and produced a very fine white lime, much ſuperior to any lime made of chalk, and it proved a very tough cement.

Eighteen convicts, under the direction of an overſeer, who is a ſettler, were employed in making bricks. A bricklayer was much wanted, as one who was ſent in the Queen, died on the paſſage.

Lieutenant-Governor King finding it neceſſary to diſcharge Mr. Doridge, the ſuperintendant of convicts at Queenſborough, has appointed Mr. D'arcy Wentworth to ſucceed him: Mr. Wentworth had behaved with the greateſt attention and propriety as aſſiſtant-ſurgeon, which duty he ſtill continued to diſcharge. Mr. W. N. Chapman was appointed ſtore-keeper at Phillipſburgh.

A corporal and ſix privates were ſtationed in a houſe with a good garden to it, on an eminence commanding Queenſborough, and a ſerjeant and ten men were fixed in a ſimilar ſituation at Phillipſburgh, and they were kept as ſeparate from the convicts as poſſible.

The lieutenant-governor had been under the neceſſity of appointing a town-adjutant and inſpector of out-poſts, and he named Lieutenant Abbott for theſe duties; he alſo eſtabliſhed rules and regulations for the obſervance of every perſon on the iſland, and for keeping a night-patrole: a deputy provoſt-marſhal was alſo appointed.

1792.

The wreck of the Sirius went to pieces on the 1ſt of January, 1792, and every thing poſſible was ſaved out of her. The ſame day, every

CHAP. XXIV.

1792. January.

perſon on the iſland went to a reduced allowance of proviſions, but the fiſh daily caught was ſufficient to ſerve all the inhabitants three times over.

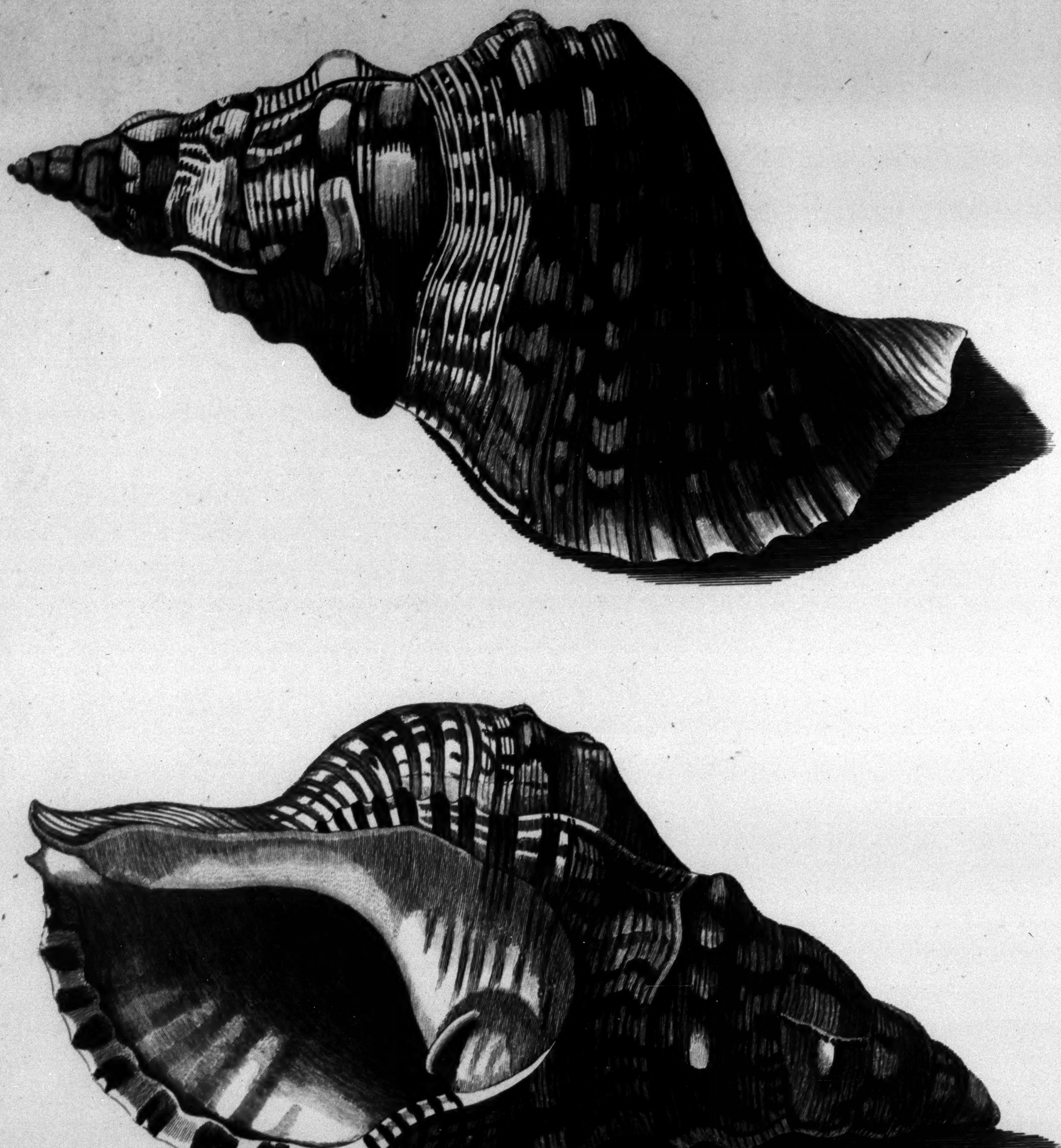
Some of the ſettlers were permitted to employ the convicts as their ſervants, on condition of maintaining them without the aid of the public ſtore; and ſome of the convicts were allowed to work for themſelves, on the ſame condition.

It will be abſolutely neceſſary to eſtabliſh a court of juſtice, as corporal puniſhments have but little effect; although robberies were confined only to a particular claſs of convicts, and were by no means general.

By the 15th of January, two hundred and ſixty buſhels of Indian corn were gathered in; a number of acres were then in different ſtates of growth, which were likely to yield about three hundred buſhels more. The wheat thraſhed well, and yielded plentifully. The granary was finiſhed, and every endeavour was uſed to keep the wevil out of it.

THREE

Plate 1.



P. Mazell del. & Sculp.

Published Sepr. 22. 1792 by I. Stockdale Piccadilly

THREE NON-DESCRIPT SHELLS,

FROM

NEW SOUTH WALES,

NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF

HENRY CONSTANTINE NOWELL, Esq.

PLATE I.

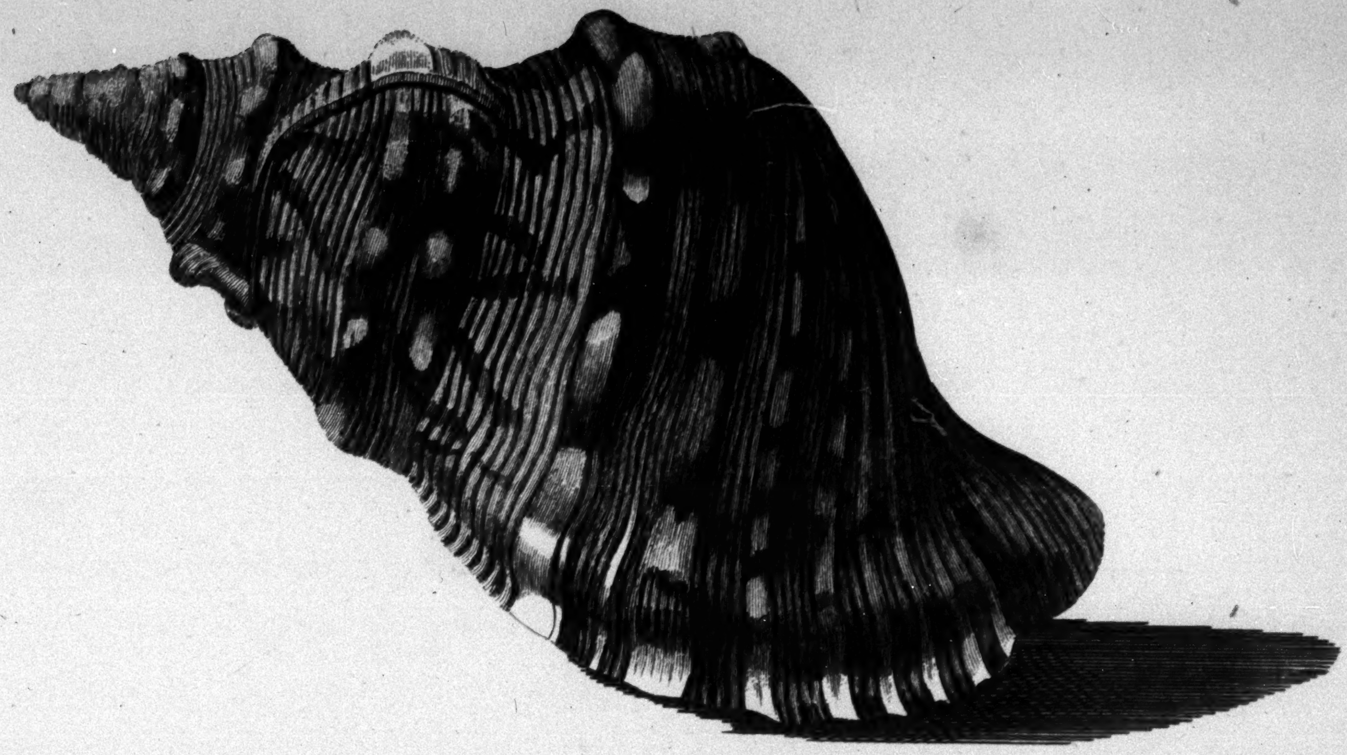
Is a ſpecimen of the common *Buccinum* of New South Wales; it is in great preſervation, and its principal merit conſiſts in the ſuperficial *rugæ* being much ſharper and better defined than they are in that ſpecies of ſhell from any other known part of the world.

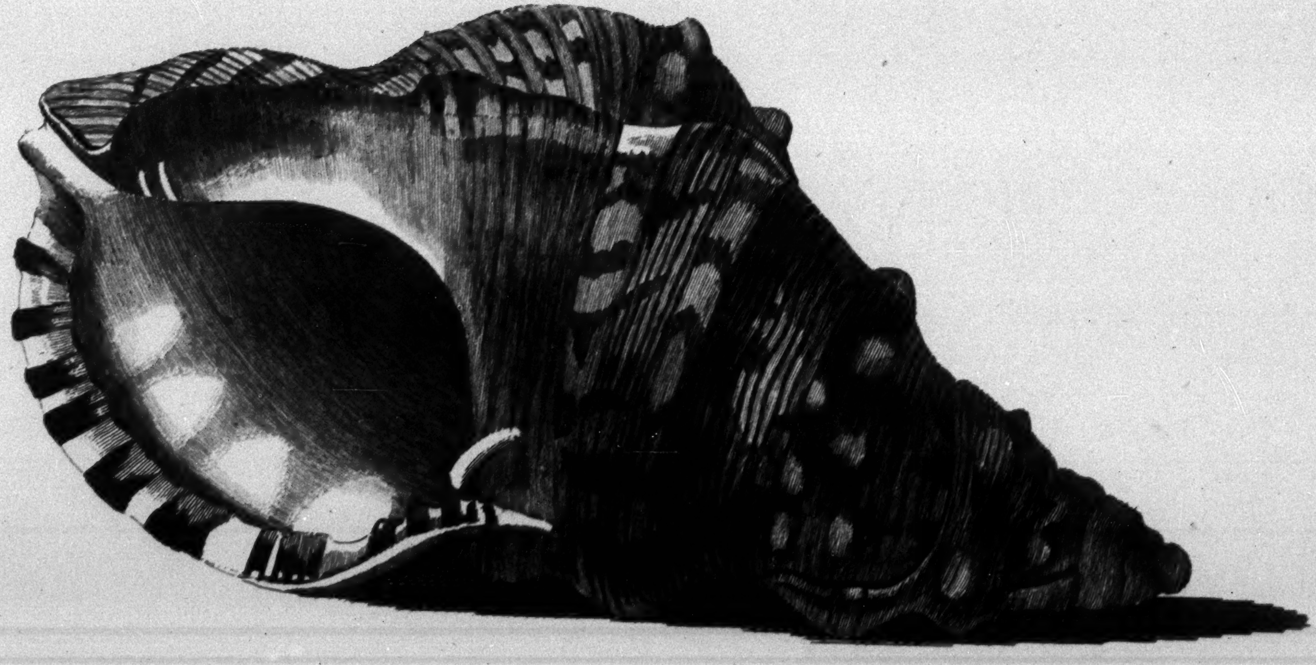
PLATE

PLATE II.

Is a ſpecimen of the *Scarlet Buccinum*, from the ſame place; leſs ſharp in the *rugæ*, but ſingular from the beauty of its colour.

Plate 2.

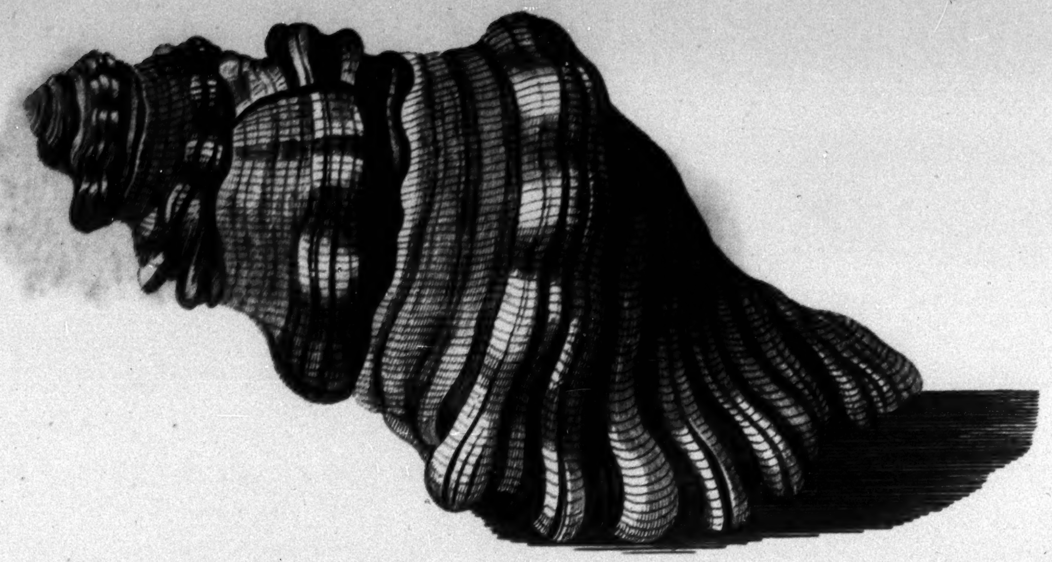


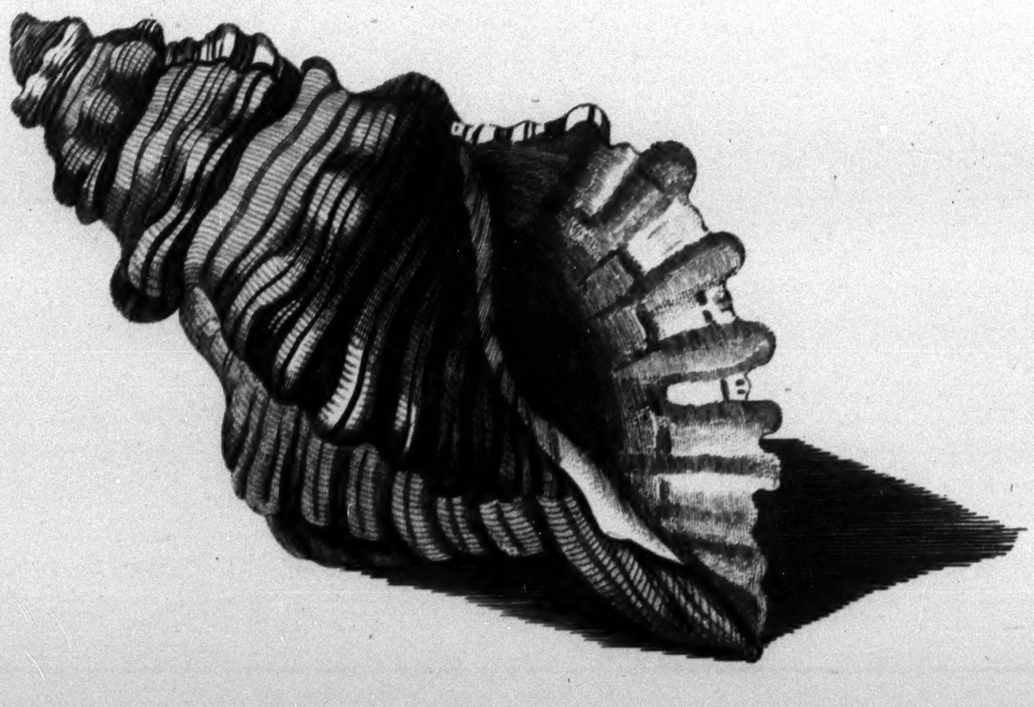


P. Mazell del. & Sculp.

Publiſhed Sepr. 22. 1792 by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly.

Plate 3.





P. Mazell del & Sculp.

Publish'd Sept. 22. 1792 by J. Stockdale, Piccadilly

PLATE III.

Is the *Straw Coloured Buccinum,* likewiſe from New South Wales. Its *rugæ* are remarkably ſharp; its mouth of the moſt opake white that can be conceived, and ſingularly ſtriated by tranſverſe purple ſtripes.

FINIS.